



# 나는 군주다

I am the monarch

철종금 판타지 장편소설

I AM

THE MONARCH

BOOK 01

*Cheol Jonggeum*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

**I am the Monarch**

(나는 군주다)

by

**Cheol Jonggeum**

(철종금)

# Synopsis

---

Roan who ran away 20 years ago from the rural village in the aim of becoming a Great General who will rule the world.

However, all he got 20 years later was just a handful of money and a low position that is a 1st legion's spearman.

At the end, he becomes a cold corpse in the battlefield.

But somehow, he came back in the past.

“Alright. This time, I won't become a Great General but a Monarch.”

His previous life's aim was becoming a Great General.

Actually, he only became a spearman.

This time, his life's aim is becoming the Monarch.

“Then I guess I'd become at least a general, right?”

Roan who remembers what happened the 20 years.

Now starts his unstoppable march in becoming a Monarch.

# Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

---

First Edition: October 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Subak @ [KobatoChanDaiSuki](#)

Translation Edit by st8\_lupe. @ [KobatoChanDaiSuki](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Prologue

---

‘In the end it becomes like this.’

A strengthless laugh.

However, i’m not surprised or feel unfair.

Because I knew that I was going to die like this.

“Whew.”

He let out a long breath.

The steam rising coming from his mouth rises to the sky.

“There was a bastard alive over there.”

Looking at the steam of his breath, some enemy soldiers came walking to him.

‘Just let me be. There’s a hole in my stomach, anyways.’

He wanted to say that but he just let it be.

He remembered the spring from 20 years ago.

‘Was I 18 years old when I ran out of the town saying that I would become a great commander that would command the entire world?’

After that, he kept going to the battlefield for 20 years.

And the result of that was that he only had a bit of money in his hands and that he belonged to the first corps of spearmen.

‘What great general. I’m going to die freezing. Damn it.’

His life passed through like a revolving lantern.

‘What would have happened if I had participated in that surprise tactic? No, if I had enrolled when they were enlisting soldiers in the region of Bate? No, no. If I went west in that winter when there was the monster subjugation?’

A crossroad with plenty of choices.

At that time, he chose one side without hesitating.

But the results weren’t that good.

And because of that, he had a hole in his stomach and was waiting to die.

Soon, he could see the evil expressions of the enemy soldiers very close.

‘Damn it.’

The curse ran through his throat.

Stab.

A steel sword stabbed his chest.

“Damn.....it.”

His voice without strength rolled outside his mouth.

Roan of the first corps of spearmen from the Rinse kingdom died like that.

# Chapter 1 : Return (1)

---

“Huff!”

The clogged breath exploded.

“Huff. Huff . Huff”

His chest beat like he had run the whole day.

‘Did I die?’

He felt strange.

His senses felt dull just like when he had just woken up from a dream, and his head hurt as if it would split.

At that time, he felt a strong impact in the back of his head.

Thwack!

“This bastard of a newcomer slipping out! You dare to get asleep while we are on standby for battle?”

Roan looked back with his cloudy eyes while touching the back of his head.

“Oh? Are you glaring at me right now?”



A robust man with a square chin.

He couldn't see well because his field of vision bothered him, but Roan could know who he was.

“Mister Pete?”

It was certainly Pete.

The senior of the 7th corps rose unit he was first in 20 years ago.

‘But he died in the monsters subjugation 20 years ago.....’

Roan frowned.

‘In the end, you meet dead people again.’

At that moment, he stood up and extended his hand, feeling glad to see him again.

“It’s been a long time. Nice to see you.”

A greeting while he smiled.

However, Pete’s expression wasn’t that good.

“This bastard!”

A punch flew along with a curse.

Thwack!

“Kugh!”

Roan rolled after being hit.

A severe pain could be felt.

‘Damn it. Can you feel pain even after you die?’

He moved his chin.

At that time, he saw his right hand and his body.

A really feeble body.

On top of that, the back of his hand was soft and clean.

‘What is this? Do you get younger when you die?’

Everything made him question.

At that time, someone hurriedly came to him and stopped him.

“Roan. Are you crazy? Why are you so suddenly like this?”

A noise so small it seemed it was whispering to him.

Roan slowly turned his head and looked at the owner of the voice.

“Pierce?”

A surprised expression.

Roan’s face was much more surprised than when he saw Pete.

“Why are you here.....? No, you got younger on top of that?”

Pierce didn’t die.

On top of that, he couldn’t die.

Because after he became duke of Rinse kingdom, he didn’t show himself in dangerous places like battlefields.

However, he couldn’t understand more than anything how he got young. It made him remember the first time they met 20 years ago.

“Are you crazy?”

Pierce slapped him with a hurried expression.

Slap.

At that moment, Roan felt that his consciousness got clearer.

Just like the fog in his head was lifted.

And the dull senses became sharp just like before.

When that happened, he could clearly see the scene before him.

‘Is this the rose troop’s barracks?’

He was certain.

He was certain that it was the barracks the rose troop used 20 years ago.

It wasn’t a thing such as heaven or hell.

On top of that, the people that were seated in a line on the floor.

They were all familiar faces.

‘My comrades from the rose troop from 20 years ago? What happened? Did I not die?’

A confusing situation.

However, his thoughts didn’t last for long.

“This bastard!

Because Pete approached him and kicked him.

Bang.

“Kugh.”

Roan rolled in the floor and quickly curled himself.

He hid his vitals by instinct.

But fortunately, Pete couldn’t continue kicking him.

It was because the entrance of the barracks opened and a middle aged man with scary eyes appeared.

“What are you doing!”

A sharp voice.

Roan recognized the owner of that voice even without looking at him.

‘Squad commander Tane.’

His head started to roll.

‘I didn’t die.’

He slowly pinched the inner sides of his thigh.

An intense pain.

‘It’s not even a dream.’

Then only one thing remains.

‘Did I return to the past?’

It was difficult to believe, but it had the highest probabilities.

If that also wasn’t it, maybe the past 20 years of his life was just a

dream.

‘Whatever it is, i’m still alive.’

It was enough for him with just that.

Roan slowly stood up from that place and returned to his seat.

Tane frowned but he didn’t keep talking.

He didn’t have the leisure to do so right now.

“Everybody prepare. We will pass through Ale village and reach Pedian’s plain.”

At that moment, everybody’s faces became distorted.

“Oh damn. For it to be Ale village.”

“If we went to Varen’s castle I was planning to densely ease myself.”

“That bar last time was fine, right?”

“Yes. The female owner killed it.”

They talked among themselves and soothed their regretful feelings. Tane clapped.

Clap!

“Everybody shut your mouths and move quickly! Oliver take care of the newcomers.”

“Yep!”

Oliver that was tall and had a slim body replied in a loud voice and approached Roan.

“Everybody take your helmets and your armor.”

At his words, the newcomer soldiers including Pierce started to slowly equip their armor.

Oliver looked at Roan and said as if he was growling.

“You stupid bastard. You too wear it quickly. I’m looki.....”

He couldn’t finish his words.

Roan had skillfully equipped the armour and even finished organizing his luggage in an instant.

‘What is this bastard? Why is he so skilled?’

Oliver was at a loss of words for a moment.

Only looking at how he was packing the luggage was even a step higher than himself.

‘I did these kind of things for 20 years.’

Roan put a bitter smile.

Oliver wanted to say something else, but as he had nothing to

point out he turned back with a disappointed face.

At that time, Pierce's voice rang through his ear.

“Roan.”

A voice so small it seemed he was whispering him.

As Roan looked back Pierce pointed the luggage bag and put a pitiable face.

‘You really are the same as 20 years ago.’

He was also like this back then.

Pierce at that time was timid and didn't have any talent. But on top of that he had a small body so he always asked him for help.

Roan walked towards him and shook his head after packing his luggage in the bag.

‘For this guy to become the duke of Rinse kingdom surpassing the commander in chief.....’

Just looking at him right now, was something unbelievable.

‘He was lucky. His life became better when he became apprenticed to the genius spearman Reil Baker.....’

At that moment, Roan's eyes became round wide.

His fingers trembled.



“Roan. What happened?”

Pierce put on a worried expression but it wasn't a situation where he could mind that.

‘If it's true that I returned to the past, then I know what's going to happen from now on.’

Although he didn't remember all of the small details and accidents, he did remember the news that made the world shake.

Especially, the battles and wars he faced the past 20 years. He remembered it all clearly to the point that if he was asked to make a report of it, he could write it all down.

Thump thump.

His heart beat faster.

‘I can become one.’

His two eyes became filled with hot passion.

‘This time, I can become one.’

Roan's face became bright red.

‘This time, I can really become a great commander. A great commander that can really command the entire nation.’

His smile became dim.

‘No, no.’

The memories, experiences and information he had weren’t in the level to satisfy him only with being a great general.

Grip.

He strongly clenched his fist.

‘At least, I should become a monarch.’

From old times, they said to dream bigger.

The objective of his past life was becoming a great commander.

But he became a spearman.

So the objective in this life was becoming a monarch.

‘If that’s so, won’t I at least become a commander?’

On top of that, the starting line in this life was already different.

Because he knew what was going to happen from now on.

‘First.....’

He remembered the memories from 20 years ago.

The first battle.

That fierce memory.

At that moment, Roan’s face froze.

“Damn.”

He remembered.

The heartbreaking and miserable first battle.

## Chapter 2 : Return (2)

---

20 years passed, but he remembered perfectly.

‘Excluding me and Pierce, all of the newcomers died.’

It wasn’t only them, but Oliver and squad commander Tane had also lost their lives.

‘We got attacked near Ale town by the goblins.’

A gorge that got narrower.

That was where those bastards were hiding in ambush.

The rose troop that was moving carelessly almost got swept up.

‘What can I do?’

Tell the commander the truth that the goblins were hiding to ambush them?

‘It would be fortunate if he doesn’t cut off my neck.’

There was no way they would listen to the words of a newcomer without any proof.

No, in the first place he wouldn’t even meet him.

‘Should I tell squad commander Tane?’

It wasn't a good option.

In his memories, he didn't really have a friendly character.

'Then, do I have to look how the squad gets annihilated?'

He couldn't do so.

He didn't want to also ruin this life.

Then, Roan's face brightened

'Ah! There was that.'

The corner of his mouth slowly rose.

He looked at Tane as if he was waiting for something with eager eyes.

"Ah! Also....."

Tane, that was packing his luggage, yelled with an expression as if he had remembered late.

"Is there someone that's familiar with the zone of Ale? Someone that lived for long in that zone, or spent a long time."

'This is it!'

Roan took a step and raised his right hand.

“I know it well.”

“You?”

Tane frowned.

‘The guy who was being hit by Pete.’

Pete wasn’t the type to get violent with no reason.

Then that meant that this guy in front of him had a problem.

‘Troublesome.’

The role of guide was certainly important.

If he made a mistake, he could put in danger all of the squad.

“Do you really know well the zone of Ale?”

“Yes! I do. I can go from here, Ellin’s fortress, to Ale village with my eyes closed.”

“Mmm.”

Tane frowned and looked at Roan.

‘Well, the decision is made by the adjutant.’

He didn’t keep thinking for long.

In the first place, he wasn't the type to do so.

"Fine. What's your name?"

"It is Roan."

"You pack your things immediately and follow me."

Tane walked and looked at general Lander.

"Lander. If you finish your preparations go to the drill ground with the guys."

"Yes. Understood."

Lander smiled as if telling him not to worry and nodded. Tane hit his chest and went outside.

Roan hurriedly followed his back.

As he went outside the barracks, a familiar smell tickled the tip of his nose.

'The smell of war. No, the smell of death.'

Ironware, bonfire, horses, sweat, guys and blood.

A smell that had many things mixed.

It was a smell he sensed for the past 20 years until he got sick of it.

It was a disgusting smell, but somehow a corner of his heart got more comfortable.

‘The more you get to like this smell, the closer you are to death.’

Roan smiled bitterly and shook his head.

At that time, Tane that was one step ahead of him asked bluntly.

“Where are you from?”

“I’m from a small town in the mountains that’s in the borders of the mountain ranges of Grain.”

“Grain mountain range..... It’s a rough place.”

Tane talked like that and continued his steps.

‘A guy from Grain’s mountain range know the zone of Ale well?’

A feeling he got deceived.

‘Well, i’m not the one to get punished.’

Tane smirked and looked in front.

A middle aged man was looking at the pile of documents.

“Adjutant Dosen.”

Tane approached him and bent down.

Middle aged man, Dosen was one of the five aides in rose troop in charge of guiding.



‘He already picked quite a few.’

Tane’s gaze moved next to him.

He saw the other guides from the other squads.

They already numbered more than 10.

“Oh. Tane.”

Dosen smiled brightly and greeted him with his chin.

Tane fell to the side and pointed at Roan.

“There’s also a guy in our squad that knows the zone of Ale well.”

“Really?”

Dosen moved his sight and looked at Roan.

“It’s the first time seeing him. Is he a newcomer?”

“Yes. He came yesterday.”

“He’s a really hot guy.”

Dosen smirked and looked at Roan up and down.

“You know well the zone of Ale?”

“Yes.”

Roan replied without hesitating.

‘Only the amounts of battles in the zone of Ale amount to twenty. Twenty.’

Because of that, the surrounding zone was really clear to his eyes.

Dosen nodded at his reply.

“Then should I ask you a simple question? What’s the specialty product of Ale?”

A not difficult question.

“It’s Barley.”

“Then, the biggest village in the zone of Ale?”

“It’s of course Ale. Continued by Riven village, Moss village, and Ferbus village.”

Answer without stopping.

‘All places where had battles.’

Roan smiled.

Dosen nodded with a surprised expression.

“I didn’t know that you would even know Ferbus village. It seems like you have indeed lived in this zone for quite long. You are just perfect for a guide.”

Roan didn’t really talk about where he came from.

Because that wasn’t the important thing.

‘I find the hiding goblins one step ahead of them.’

He looked at the guides that were next to him.

‘Because of these guys not doing their job properly, many people died.’

Of course, he knew well why they couldn’t discover the goblins.

This was a safe zone with no monsters at all.

So they also thought that there was no way that goblins would appear.

‘This time, I am blocking them.’

Roan bit his lower lip.

“Take this. Don’t lose it.”

Tane gave him one spear.

Roan nodded and gripped strongly.

Grip.

A strong and heavy feeling.

‘Uncomfortable.’

His palms were excessively soft and smooth.

The injuries and hardened skin he got the past 20 years all disappeared.

‘It really is starting again.’

He smiled bitterly.

“Then, I will take my leave.”

Tane saluted at Dosen and moved his step to the drill ground.

Roan took in a deep breath while looking at Tane’s back getting farther away.

“Don’t be too scared.”

A soldier that was looking at him bumped his shoulder.

He seemed to have misunderstood that he was afraid.

“This much is nothing. Last year.....”

He talked about his tales of heroism for quite a while.

‘I also have 20 years worth of tales.’

When he started to talk, the story had no end.

At that time, Dosen put aside the pile of documents.

“I think that this many guides will be enough. Mason. As you have the most experience, lead the other guides.”

At his words, the soldier that was talking without stop smiled brightly and nodded.

“Understood! Just leave it to me!”

An exaggerated answer.

A look that made you not able to trust in him at all.

‘This is why you got ambushed by the goblins.’

Roan frowned.

‘It’s a bit troublesome if the rose squad gets annihilated.’

In his past life, the rose squad got annihilated because of the ambush of the goblins.

Because of that, all of the surviving soldiers along with Roan, got separated and got enrolled in other squads.

‘Even if you pile your efforts, it gets taken by other guys.’

The stones that came rolling aren’t as appreciated as the fixed ones.

And originally, the soldiers that were in this squad already ignored him.

And taking the efforts of another was also a frequent thing.

Because of that even after he had caught a lot of monsters, he got reprimanded for moving alone.

‘I can’t live like this in this life.’

Grip.

He put strength in his hand.

“Well! We are also moving to the drill ground.”

Mason’s loud voice.

He moved one step ahead of them and started walking.

Roan followed his back and took in deep breaths.

‘This is the start.’

The moment his life starts again.

His heart beat faster.

Blow.

The wind that was blowing carried the smell of the battlefield.

# Chapter 3 : First Battle (1)

---

In the wide drill grounds.

The lined up soldiers in an organized way.

In the middle of them, he saw the 13th division where Tane and Pierce were.

‘This nervousness.....’

Even if it was a simple monster subjugation, before any battle, nervousness roamed.

Roan liked this nervousness.

‘This makes you feel alive.’

However, there was an existence that broke this nervousness.

“So last year, when I was in Loren’s province.....”

Mason, that talked about his tales without stop.

Although Roan put a face that he didn’t want to keep listening to him, it was useless.

“That time, I evaded the spear the orc threw at me.....”

Then a group appeared on the platform of the drill grounds.



“.....I... will..... Ahem.”

Mason’s mouth closed.

‘I think that I would be able to live now.’

A smile appeared in Roan’s face.

The ones that climbed on top of the knee high platform was the commander of the rose troops, Gale and his adjutants.

Dosen was also there.

Sit.

Quietly and instantly sitting.

Gale stood on top of the platform and looked at the soldiers that were lined up.

“Our rose troop will leave this Ellin’s fortress, and pass through Ale village to reach Pedian’s plain.”

“Yes!”

A loud replying noise.

A smile appeared in Gale’s mouth.

‘If it’s this much, we can be called the best of the 7th corps.’

He was quite proud of the soldiers of rose troop that had went through a lot of things with him in the past 5 years.

It was just like a parent looking at his child.

“Everybody, don’t die.”

Words that seemed to be casually thrown.

With that, the commander’s speech ended.

‘Right. Squad commander Gale was the kind of person that appreciated his soldiers.’

He threw himself when the goblins attacked them to at least try to save one more person.

Later, when the rescuing soldiers arrived, the corpse that had suffered the most mincing in his body was Gale’s.

‘That kind of commander needs to live long.’

Roan’s eyes shined sharply.

Stomp. Stomp. Stomp.

Gale and his aides started to move towards the field.

Roan and the other guides followed Mason and stood in the front.

Stomp. Stomp. Stomp.

The steps of the army marching could be heard noisily.

“Where did I leave it back then? Right. In that battle, I.....”

He started again.

Mason talked without resting having forgotten the role of guide.

‘Why is it me?’

There were many other guides.

But why did it have to be him?

As he turned his head, he realized the reason.

The other guides were walking far away from him.

‘He was a famous bastard.’

They knew the incredible talking ability Mason had.

Only that the newcomer Roan didn’t know of it, and fell in their trap.

Roan, that couldn’t hold it anymore opened his mouth cautiously.

“Don’t we have to check the surroundings in case monsters appear?”

“After that, I grabbed his wrist and then his legs, huh? What? Monster?”

Mason, that was even spitting while talking, put on an absurd face.

He patted Roan's back and shook his head.

“Look. Newcomer. There's no need to worry this much. This zone is the safest one. It's a place where no monsters appear.”

“But.....”

“Ha. You are much more of a coward than how you look.”

Mason shook his head while clicking his tongue.

Eyes as if he was looking down on him.

However, Roan preferred those eyes.

Because in that moment, he stopped moving his mouth.

At that time, they saw the peak of the mountain that was in front of them.

‘Rose gorge. No, Ale gorge.’

A small gorge you had to pass through if you wanted to reach Ale village.

The original name was Ale gorge, but after the rose squad got annihilated, it started to be called as rose gorge with that kind of meaning.

‘The day that they change the name won't come.’

Roan gripped his spear strongly while gulping dry saliva.

Step. Step. Step.

The guides feet were near the gorge.

‘Now’s the time.’

Roan called out to Mason.

“Sir Mason.”

“Huh?”

“The form of this gorge doesn’t seem normal. Shouldn’t we investigate beforehand?”

“Gorge? Investigate?”

Mason frowned and looked at Ale’s gorge.

And then he shook his head and clicked his tongue.

“You are really a coward. This is a safe zone. There are no things such as monsters.”

“But isn’t there a maybe?”

“No, there’s absolutely not. This is one of the safest places in Rinse kingdom.”

Mason was confident.

He thought that there would be no one that knew the region of Ale better than him, as much as his confidence.

‘I am a native here.’

He turned his head and looked back at the other guides.

“Hey. This newcomer here says that we need to investigate the gorge. What do you think?”

Most of the faces of the guides became distorted.

“What? Investigate? What dog shit are you talking about?”

“You really are a beginner. Beginner.”

“If you don’t know a thing, just stay still.”

Pouring criticism.

However, Roan’s face didn’t change in the slightest and had a serious face.

“However, all of our troop has to pass through that narrow gorge. If there are monsters hiding, we will get a huge blow.”

“Ha, really!”

In the end, Mason shouted.

He pointed at Roan’s face with his index finger to the point he almost poked him.

“Don’t say useless things. There’s no way that will happen.”

However, Roan wasn't the type to back down right now.  
Because he knew really well what was going to happen .

“They also say that you have to hit a stone bridge and then cross it. If maybe, there are monsters waiting for us .....

“Stop.”

Mason raised his hand and stopped him.  
His face was bright red.

Gulp.

Roan gulped down dry saliva.

The reason Roan could talk back like this was because he didn't directly belong to him.

Actions he could never do to Tane or Pete.

Mason glared at him as if he wanted to devour him, and in the end said with an annoyed voice.

“If you want to investigate that much, go alone.”

“Can I?”

It was a grave offense to leave his rank.

Mason nodded.

“Go. I don’t think that there won’t be anything bad by doing something in vain.”

Words as if he was mocking him.

However, Roan’s face became brighter.

“Then, I will be going.”

After he nodded, he started to move.

Running.

Legs that couldn’t be seen.

Roan left the ranks and ran through the gorge’s peak. Gale that was leading the front squad, noticed him.

“Who’s the soldier that left the ranks and is running to the gorge?”

Dosen looked and then, frowned.

“It seems like a soldier in charge of guiding. I will go and check.”

“Mmm.”

Gale nodded with a disturbed expression.

Because of an unauthorized solitary action, he could make the entire squad fall in danger.



Dosen looked at Gale and grabbed the reins.

Rattle. Rattle.

The steps of the horse became faster.

“Mason!”

Dosen found Mason.

Mason, that was looking at Roan running to the gorge, bent his head.

“Yes. Aide Dosen.”

“What’s that bastard? Why did he leave the ranks as he pleased?”

Firing words.

Mason put a bitter smile and scratched the back of his head.

“I wonder, that guy said that there could be monsters hiding in ambush in that gorge, so he said that he needed to investigate.”

“In the gorge? That bastard, doesn’t he know that it’s a safe zone?”

“He knows. But even so, he says that maybe.....”

Mason shook his head.

Dosen was following with his sight the back of Roen that couldn’t even be seen while frowning.

“Damn. Anyways, he was spotted by commander Gale. Maybe later you and that guy will have problems.”

“Ah! I find it unfair! That guy kept insisting stubbornly.....”

“Shut up. You are the responsible one. You have to get punished because you couldn’t properly control your guys.”

After Dosen fired those words, he turned back his head.

Whine.

He heard the burbling of the horse and thought that it was making fun of him.

Mason looked at Dosen’s back that was getting farther away and then frowned.

“Damn. What is this because of a crazy newcomer bastard.”

After he spit, he looked back at the Ale gorge.

“But where did that bastard go to?”

He thought that now, he would have to kick him in the crotch once.

Roan, that didn’t know that Mason was thinking like this, was approaching the entrance.

Shock.

The sharp senses he accumulated in the past 20 years were telling him that it was dangerous.

‘Danger.’

A threatening aura could be felt all around the gorge.

Roan gulped dry saliva and grabbed his spear.

‘The only thing I need right now is acting.’

He didn’t need to get deeper while facing danger.

He needed to return in a moderate amount of time as if he had investigated the gorge and come back startled.

‘If I just say that there are goblins in the gorge, the end.’

A smile appeared in Roan’s face.

He leaned in a big tree trunk.

A sky without clouds.

“Right. The weather was this good.”

He remembered his past memories.

The day when they got attacked by the goblins.

The sky that day was deep blue.

“Just like we have gone in an excursi.....”

He gulped back the words he was mumbling.

Shock.

His back was pulling.

The hair in his skin raised, and dried sweat flowed through his back.

‘There’s something.’

Inside the forest that didn’t have anything until now.

However, he felt a frightening presence.

The noise he heard at that time.

Chwee.

Roan’s face froze in an instant.

‘Goblin!’

It was certainly the cry of a goblin.

Chwee.

The noise came closer.

## Chapter 4 : First Battle (2)

---

Gulp.

His adam's apple shakes roughly.

‘Two? No. Three.’

Roan lowered his posture while still leaning on the tree.

Blow.

The leaves are blown by the wind.

Chwee. Chwee.

They cries of the goblins get nearer.

Stealthily.

Roan slowly took out his short sword.

An old and sharpless short sword.

However, it was enough to complete his role.

Chwee.

A sound heard nearby.

‘Now!’

Roan quickly turned his body.

And then, he saw the goblin right in front of his eyes.

Chwee!

The guy fell in a state of confusion when he saw Roan appearing suddenly.

Roan didn't let go of the opportunity and quickly stabbed the goblin.

Stab.

The short sword got stabbed in the guy's chest.

Chwee.

And the goblin that dropped down after.

Chwee! Chwee!

The goblins that were behind got angered at the death of their companion.

Those guys rushed on to him.

Pull.

Roan pulled the short sword that was in the chest of the goblin and threw it.

Thump.

The running goblins couldn't dodge it and rolled in the floor.

An ideal opportunity.

Roan quickly rushed on to them and stabbed them with his spear.

The spear stabbed the head of the goblins in succession.

Chwee.

He disposed three goblins in an instant.

But even so, his face wasn't good.

'It's a disaster.'

His palm of the hand hurt.

Just because he moved his spear twice, the skin seemed to peel off.

On top of that, it didn't even have strength behind it.



‘I really became a complete novice.’

Roan smiled bitterly and picked up the items of the goblins.

“I’m sorry but I will have to take your necks.”

His hand that moved at the same time.

Slice.

The head of the goblins rolled in the floor.

Roan tied the dirty and rough hairs of the goblin and grabbed it.

Drip. Drip.

Green blood flowed from the sliced part.

And then, the leaves of the mountain shook fiercely.

‘Mmm!’

The wind was was still the same.

‘It’s them!’

If it wasn't for the wind, then only one option remained.  
The other goblins were coming down to look for their comrades.  
Roan quickly ran towards the exit of the gorge.

Chwee! Chwee!

Angry noises from the goblins could be heard behind.  
However it was impossible for them to chase him.  
He had already come out the gorge and entered the plains.  
He could see the rose troop far away.  
Roan shook the thing in his hand.

“It's the goblins! Goblins are waiting in ambush!”

He shouted loudly but no one heard him.  
He was still too far away.

\*\*\*\*\*

Mason, that was waiting for Roan to come, frowned when he looked at Roan coming out of the gorge.

“Why is that bastard like that?”

It seemed like he was yelling something, but he couldn't hear him.

“And what is that thing he is holding?”

A thing that seemed to be like water melon.

“He seemed to have picked a fruit in the woods.”

Another guide that was next to him said with an impudent voice.

Mason looked at him as if it was stupid.

However, as Roan got closer, Mason’s face froze.

Because his yells were heard more clearly.

“It’s the goblins! Goblin!”

Only then he realized that it wasn’t a watermelon he was holding, but the head of a goblin.

Mason looked at the other guides with dumbfounded faces.

‘It’s really a goblin?’

Especially, Mason was several times more surprised than the others.

‘For a monster to appear in the zone of Ale! It had never happened until now!’

He shook his head like that while opening his eyes abruptly.

This wasn't the time to be like this.

He ran to the squad following from behind..

“Go, goblins!”

Shouting with all of his strength.

At that time, Gale that was cautious of Dosen yelled while he lit up with joy.

“What?! Is that true!”

“It is! Look over there!”

Mason pointed at the gorge with his finger.

Everyone's sights moved.

Roan, that was running with his hair fluttering.

And a faint voice.

“It's a goblin. Goblins are waiting in ambush.”

Gale's eyes became sharp.

“The thing in his hands is the head of the goblin.”

His right hand extended to the skies.

“Squad hold. Battle formation.”

At that moment, all of the adjutant yelled with all their strength.

“Squad hold! Everybody battle formations!”

“Battle formations!”

The aides yelled and they each went to their respective squads. Gale still looked at the gorge calmly in the middle of this noise.

“Dosen.”

“Yes!”

Dosen that was nearby approached him.

Gale pointed at Roan.

“Bring that soldier. I need to hear the story.”

“Yes!”

After Dosen replied like that, he made eye signs to Mason.

“Yes! I will bring him!”

Mason replied nervously and moved his feet.

‘Damn. Am I the only one that’s going to get punished?’

His face showed a hint of nervousness.

He made fun of the guy that said he was going to investigate.

He was absolutely confident that there weren’t going to be any monsters

‘A goblin!’

But the guy he had made fun of appeared with the head of a goblin.

Mason bit the lower parts of his lip.

‘I need to coax him well so he doesn’t say unnecessary stuff.’

His feet that was running towards Roan became faster.

\*\*\*\*\*

‘Pant. Pant. Pant.’

Roan felt like dying.

He ran with all his strength because he feared that the rose troop would enter the gorge, so his chest felt like exploding.

He wanted to rest a little after informing that the goblins were waiting in ambush, but he didn’t have the leisure to do so.

“Commander Gale is looking for you.”

Mason grabbed Roan’s wrist.

In the end, Roan couldn’t even take a breath properly and got dragged towards Gale.

At that time, Mason whispered in a low voice.

“Forget everything I said to you back them. Understand? Actually, I also thought that there was a high chance for an ambush. So I got responsible for it and sent you to the gorge. Huh? Right?”

Roan didn’t even have the strength to talk back.

Mason got anxious as he saw that Roan wasn’t showing any reactions.

“Are you listening to me? Huh? Answer me.”

“Whew. Understood.”

Roan let out a deep breath and nodded.

Only then did Mason’s mouth shut.

The two of them moved quickly and soon reached in front of Gale.

“Oh! Come here!”

Dosen exaggerated without any need to.

Roan slightly ignored him and bent towards Gale.

“What was in the gorge?”

Abruptly taking out the main subject.

“It’s an army of goblins.”

“The numbers?”

“There were at least a thousand in the side of the mountain I searched. And normally, thinking that when you ambush, you will have another squad in the other side of the mountain. So thinking about it, it would be more than 2000.”

“Mmm.”

Dosen frowned.

The number of soldiers the rose troop had was 800 in total. It wasn’t even the half of the goblin’s army.

“Are you certain?”

“I am.”

Roan replied unhindered.

Because he had already experienced it in his past life, there wasn’t even a tiny bit of mistake.

“Mmm. What a pain.”



Gale shook his head.

The number was also it, but the location they were hiding was also a problem.

The goblin army had already took over both sides of the mountains. They were in a really vulnerable position to attack when they were below.

Then, Dosen interrupted.

“Wouldn’t it be better to go round the gorge and go directly to Pedian’s plain? We will get 2 days late but we can evade an unnecessary fight.”

Anyways, the objective of the rose troop was reuniting in Pedian’s plain with the other squads and subjugate the monsters together.

There was no need to confront the goblins.

Roan, that was listening still got surprised and yelled.

“You can’t do that!”

He remembered the miserable and cruel past.

## Chapter 5 : First Battle (3)

---

‘Damn.’

Roan did yell feeling in a hurry, but he closed his mouth in this troublesome mood.

Dosen’s face wasn’t good.

‘Because the newcomer soldier opposed to the idea the adjutant gave.’

Maybe, if the adjutant’s temperament was harsh, a fist would have flown already.

However he couldn’t back off like this.

‘If we just leave the goblin army like this, the villages nearby will get massacred.’

In his past life, after the goblins annihilated the rose troop army, they got out of the gorge and attacked and annihilated the villages people.

‘It will not be an easy fight, but we have to destroy the goblin army.’

Roan bit his lower lip.

At that time, Dosen coughed with a displeased face.

“Ahem. What could a newcomer soldier know..... Tch.”

Clicking his tongue.

However Roan wasn't planning on backing off at this point.

He looked fixedly at Gale and slightly bent his head.

“Sir commander. Do you know the similarities of the fight in Kali in May, year 176; Mendorf defense in August in 183, Roman's suppression tactic in October in 185, and the fight in Fiore in March in 191?”

30 years at much, and 10 years not too long ago fights.

Gale frowned.

‘Similarities?’

At that time, Mason laughed awkwardly.

“Hahaha. This, this bastard. What are you talking about? What's the Mendorf defense, and what's the Roman suppression tactic? You picked that up somewhere and are talking nonsense.”

At his words, Dosen added.

“It's also the first time I hear about those fights. Ahem.”

Really unpleasant faces.

He opened his eyes telling him to stop his nonsense.

In the other side, Roan's face was still imposing.

‘It's normal for them to not remember fights that are not related to our kingdom.’

It was also the same for him.

However, as 7 years from now appears an unparalleled genius strategist called Ian Phillips, the study of strategy and tactics boomed.

The generals and soldiers studied in the big and small battles in history, and Roan too concentrated in studying for a while.

And because of that, he could remember all of the battles he had named.

But fortunately, Gale could understand all of the fights Roan said unlike Mason and Dosen.

‘The fight in Kali was a fight between our Rinse kingdom and Estia empire, the defense of Mendorf was the battle between Estia empire and Byron kingdom, the Roman suppression tactic was the fight that happened in Russia that the farmers rebelled, Fiore's fight was the fight between our Rinse kingdom and the monsters.’

Four battles that were different in time, nature and the adversaries.

‘There's a common point between these battles?’

Roan said in a low voice as he saw that Gale wasn't getting it.

“Massacre.”

At that moment, Gale's eyes became big and round.

“Ah!”

A low exclamation.

He nodded as if he was a little excited.

“Right. Massacre. It was massacre.”

The four battles were all different in the adversaries, time, and nature but the winning side had massacred the losers.

“In the battle of Kali, the people from Estia massacred our Kali's castle residents. In the defense of Mendorf the as Byron royalty left the Mendorf castle and fled, the people from Estia massacred the residents of Mendorf's castle residents.”

“Right. In the case of the Roman suppression tactic, the farmer side that revealed all got massacred. And in the fight of Fiore, as our kingdom retreated, the monster army roamed through the zone of Fiore and attacked 7 big and small villages and massacred its residents.”

A conversation that dropped well.

Gale looked at Ale's gorge with a frozen face.

“Then what you are thinking about..... Perhaps?”

Roan slowly nodded.

“Yes. If we leave the goblin army like this, the nearby towns people will get massacred.”

“Mmm.”

Just looking at the four battles he mentioned, the probabilities of it happening was high.

Gale looked at Roan with a surprised expression.

‘It’s also it that he investigated the gorge alone, but even memorized the battles that not even Dosen knew of. A really amazing kid.’

In the other side, Dosen’s face that was looking at the side, was clearly contorted.

‘Damn. For someone like me that ate blades as meals for 10 years to not know of it. What’s the identity of this bastard?’

A soldier that ate 20 years worth of blade meals.

That was Roan.

But of course, there was no way that Dosen would know of that.

Gale wanted to keep testing the newcomer soldier he had in front

of his eyes.

“Then, we move after defeating the goblin army?”

“Yes. Only then will the people around Ale’s zone be safe.”

“But those bastards built a camp in the mountains. We are not in a situation that it’s easy to confront them.”

He talked with the meaning that if there was a method, to spill it fast.

Roan looked at Gale and smiled dimly.

“Do you remember the battle that happened in Pelan mountain in February in year 200?”

The battle in Pelan mountain was the one that happened just the previous year.

Gale obviously nodded, and Mason also did.

However, the only one that read what Roan was thinking of was Gale.

Gale smiled brightly and clapped.

“Ah! Attacking with fire!”

Roan slowly nodded.

“Yes. Attacking with fire.”

The Pelan mountain battle occurred in Pelan's mountain boundaries that was between Rinse kingdom and Byron kingdom.

The Byron empire from back then moved faster than the Rinse kingdom and occupied the higher grounds, but the Rinse kingdom blocked the entrance and put the mountain on fire.

“Right. Back then, the guys from Byron left the burning military camp and fled.”

“Yes. As those guys fled to the road we opened in purpose, they got annihilated after we ambushed them.

At Roan's words, Gale clapped.

Clap. Clap. Clap.

“Good, really good! What's your name?”

“It's Roan.”

“Good. Roan. Your merits today are really big. And your knowledge is also outstanding. I will definitely remember your name.”

“Yes. Thank you.”

Roan bowed.

He didn't ask for a big prize from the start.

Although he discovered the hiding goblins and proposed a good tactic, he was still a newcomer soldier.

‘If I accumulate more merits, my rank will go up and I will be



able to have my own soldiers.'

He wasn't planning on acting hurriedly.

But because of that, he also wasn't willing to relax.

'I will render great merits in this battle.'

He put more strength in the hand gripping the spear.

Although he didn't have the same strength and stamina as before, he still had the 20 years of experience.

He was confident on facing 4 or 5 goblins at the same time with this condition.

Then, he heard Gale's voice.

"Prepare the fire. Make a trap and bait them over there."

"Yes!"

After Dosen replied loudly, he grabbed the reins.

He looked at Mason and Roan and swunged his hand.

"The soldiers that are in charge of guiding also return to your respective squad."

"Yes!"

Mason and Roan that replied at the same time.

Dosen glared at Roan for a moment and turned back.

‘Did I get marked by Dosen?’

A bitter smile appeared on his face.

Originally, he needed to have cold eyes and a crooked attitude to be considered normal.

However, Roan that had the experience of 20 years of eating blades as a meal just saw him as someone cute.

“We will be leaving then.”

Mason bumped Roan and bent down to Gale.

Roan too saluted Gale and went back to the 13th squad.

Along with the sound of steel, a hot excitement could be felt in the places.

‘Is it the first battle?’

A smile appeared in Roan’s mouth.

That was the smile of a man mixed with expectation and excitement.

## Chapter 6 : First Battle (4)

---

Tane frowned.

‘Damn. A battle so suddenly.’

He thought that there wouldn’t be any battles until they reached Pedian’s plains.

Because it was a safe zone with no monsters.

‘It will be a pain to take care of the guys.’

The 13th squad was only composed of newcomers.

It wasn’t only a thing or two that he had to pay attention to.

“Oliver! You take care of the newcomers!”

“Yes!”

Oliver replied in high spirits and lined the newcomers, including Pierce in front of him.

They were in a dumbfounded state because of the sudden battle.

Oliver hit the helmets of the newcomers with his big hands.

Dong! Dong!

“Everybody, get a hold of yourselves! When the battle starts, you only follow my back. Understood?”

“Ye, yes.....”

A strengthless reply.

Oliver frowned and hit Pierce’s chest.

Punch.

“Kugh.”

Pierce tumbled and stepped back.

Punch! Punch!

Oliver yelled after continuing to hit the chests of the other newcomer soldiers.

“Reply properly! This is not training! If you don’t get a hold of yourselves you will instantly die! Understood?”

“Ye, yes!”

Only then came a reply full of strength.

Oliver nodded with a satisfied face.

Then, a soldier that was in the back intruded.

“Hey you, what..... It’s you?”

He wanted to reprimand him, but at that instant he saw the face of the soldier.

It was Roan that was returning after having completed his duty.

“You too, get a hold of yourself!”

“Yes!”

Roan replied with strength and then, shut his mouth.

A face with shining eyes and a strong will.

He was in no way in a state of nervousness or fear.

‘Look at this guy.’

Oliver looked at Roan with a little surprised face.

‘Also at that time when he was packing his things, it smells like he is experienced.’

However, it was impossible.

All of the 5 newcomer soldiers including Roan, were all beginners with no battle experience.

At that time, the sound of the drums was heard.

Boom. Boom. Boom.

At the same time, the cavalry and archers charged towards the gorge of Ale.

Dududududu.

The sound of the earth shaking.

The other troops followed them.

The cavalry moved from the left side of the gorge to the right to cause tremors in the mountain and take the attention of the goblin army.

During that time, the archers prepared to fire.

“Fire!”

At the orders of the aides, the flame arrows covered the sky.

Shoot shoot shoot.

The entrance of the gorge became a sea of fire in an instant/

Burning!

The path of fire devoured the peak of the mountain through the wind.

The only place the fire didn't reach.

The west side that the archers didn't shoot on purpose.

The rest of the squads pierced in there.

“Ro, Roan. Will, will we be fine?”

Pierce called out Roan with a really scared face.

Roan clicked his tongue.

‘For this kind of guy to become the duke of Rinse kingdom.’

This coward became the duke.

It meant that the spear skills of Reil Baker were that outstanding.

‘I also learnt a few tricks.’

Although he wasn’t a formal disciple like Pierce, he too had some things taught.

And with just that, he could climb all the way to the first spear corps from the 7th.

‘Although I was only a squad commander.’

Spearmanhood without the basics was the same as a toothless tiger.

Even if he learnt a really strange spearmanhood, he wouldn’t be able to show even the tenth of it.

“Roan. Are you also scared?”

Pierce looked at Roan that wasn’t saying anything while

blinking.

Roan hit Pierce's chest and smiled.

“There's nothing to worry about. You were always first in the spearmanship tests.”

“Tha, that was only in training.”

Pierce's face became to the point of crying.

Roan shook his head.

‘Your talent is a waste. Bastard. Your talent is a waste.’

Even the instructors had said that his talent for the spear was the best they had saw in years.

However, he was too coward and shy so they didn't know if he was going to be able to use it in real battles.

‘I really admire viscount Reil Baker.’

He brought up this kind of coward all the way to becoming duke.

“Just follow my back.”

Roan hit Pierce's shoulder and glared towards the gorge.

Ale gorge that was covered by flames.



Dudududu.

The ground shook.

Break.

The trees of the gorge shook roughly and the woods fell.

Chwee. Chwee.

The goblins that pour at the same time.

“Kill them!”

“Kill!”

Along with the squad commander's order, the drum rang in the battle field.

Boom. Boom. Boom.

His heart beat and the pressure rose.

Excitement.

At this moment, Roan became the kid he dreamt of becoming great commander.

Then, Tane rose his spear high and yelled.

“Charge!”

“Charge!”

All of the squad members shouted and charged.

Clash! Clash! Clash!

The sound of metal clashing hit his eardrum.

Pierce and the other newcomer warriors followed the back of Oliver and shrank their bodies nervously.

Compared to him, Roan kept maintaining the ranks in the squad and observed the progress of the battle.

“Damn! There are a lot of dirty ones!”

Pete yelled after stabbing the spear into a running goblin and cursed.

Roan shook his head.

‘This isn’t the end of the goblin army.’

His eyes directed to the other side of the gorge.

‘There is also another army hiding. They will come running to help looking at the fire.’

Then, the number of the goblin army will increase.

‘We have to decrease the number of them the most we can.’

Roan gripped his spear and glared at the goblins.

Then, Tane’s voice was heard.

“They are getting through. Newcomers in the back be careful!”

“I will take care of them!”

Oliver replied quickly and cut off the necks of the goblins.

A trustable appearance.

Certainly, the rose troop was an outstanding one.

‘I can’t just let a troop like this one to get annihilated.’

Then, a goblin appeared in front of Roan.

“No, no!”

Oliver noticed it too late and wanted to thrust his spear, but it was too late.

‘Damn! At times like these, the newcomers become stiff!’

Preoccupied eyes.

However, Roan calmly extended his spear and pierced the throat

of the goblin.

Grr.

A falling goblin.

A concise but a cool one.

However, Roan's spear didn't stop there.

Spat.

The spear twisted like a snake and passed through Oliver's hip.

His objective was the goblins that were targeting Oliver's back.

Thrust.

The tip of his spear pierced the chests of the goblins without stop.

"You, you....."

Oliver got surprised at the spear that passed next to him and stammered.

Roan pulled out his spear with a calm face.

"Be careful."

Short words.

At the same time, he passed through Oliver and stood in front of the newcomer soldiers.

Swiiiiish.

The blade of his spear drew a line of light and slashed through the space.

‘Where are you goblins going!’

Roan’s spear danced.

Grr. Grr.

Three goblins consecutively fell.

It was obvious for the newcomer soldiers, but he got caught in the eyes of the other 13 squads too.

‘What is the identity of that guy?’

‘A newcomer doesn’t fear at all?’

The soldiers of the 13 squads looked at Roan and clicked their tongues.

At that time, Tane that was looking at the situation made hand signals to Roan.

“Roan! You come to the front! The newcomers will be taken by Oliver!”

It was a waste to use his skills as a defense for the newcomers.

“Yes!”

“Yes! Understood!”

Roan and Oliver yelled loudly and charged through.

Roan that comes to the front of the 13 squads.

Pierce that was looking at his back, showed a surprised look.

‘Roan. What happened to you?’

The spear skills he remembered from Roan wasn’t that much.

On top of that, he had never acted so bluntly, because he also had a timid side like him.

‘You are like a completely different person.’

In only one day, Roan completely became another person.

Grr.

During that time, Roan’s spear cut off the neck of another goblin.

## Chapter 7 : First Battle (5)

---

There were indeed more goblins than their army.

But because those guys were escaping to the small open road in the west, their line up wasn't that good.

A long shape.

And the rose troop surrounded them in the shape of a horse shoe.

“Die! Die!”

“The front is getting pierced! Support them from the left and right!”

“The injured ones to the back! The injured ones to the back!”

The goblin army were also in a state of disarray, but the voices that were heard nonstop took out your attention.

“Uhhhhh.”

“I, I don't want to die.”

Half of the newcomers of each squad were trembling while spacing out.

Among them, the only normal one was Roan.

Thrust!

Roan thrust the tip of his spear in the head of a goblin.

Meanwhile, the other goblins were also charging at him.

“Hmph!”

Roan snorted and hit the chin of the goblin with the end part of his spear.

Crush.

Chwee.

At the same time, he pulled out the spear that was inserted in the head and swung it in an arc, and the goblins that had fallen back had their necks cut off.

A natural action, just as flowing water.

‘Look at this guy.’

Tane that was facing the goblins next to him, discovered him and shined his eyes.

He was amazed by Roan’s spearmanship.

However, Roan felt like dying.

‘Damn. I feel like dying because the palms of my hands hurt.’

His palms were really limp.

And because of that, he couldn’t even grip and swing as he pleased.

Originally, the beauty in spearmanship was in being able to



attack and defend at the same time without stopping.

However, right now, the flow was stopping now and then.

‘After the battle ends, I will have to focus on training my spear skills.’

He had thought that in his past life, he had quite excellent spearmanship, but even so, being commander in the first squad of spearmen was the best he could achieve.

If he wanted to aim for something higher, he needed better spear skills.

‘To do that, I have to reach the level I had in my previous life the fastest possible.’

Spearmanship he had refined for 20 years in real battles.

All of those things were already in his head, anyways.

‘And then go to the territory of Potter. If I go there.....’

He was planning to go the Potter territory after this subjugation of monsters ended.

‘There’s future in that place.’

A smile appeared in Roan’s face.

Even then, his spear moved without stopping.

Slice.

The heads of the goblins fall consecutively.

The situation became more favorable to the rose squad little by little.

But then, a dust cloud appeared in the other side of the gorge.

‘They are coming!’

Roan’s shape became sharp.

The goblins that were hiding at the other side of the gorge were coming.

Now the aspect of the battle will completely change.

“Cavalry! Cavalry! To the south! To the south!”

“Archers! Load!”

The orders of the commanders became desperate.

The horse shoe line up crumbled suddenly.

“Spearmen hold your positions! Kill the bastards coming down from the mountains!”

“Yes!”

An answer filled with determination.

Although the number of the goblins coming down were many, it wasn't to the point they couldn't handle it.

They were in a state where they were largely spread.

“Newcomers! Get a hold of yourselves! Now, we don't have the leisure to take care of you!”

Oliver's yell.

Behind him, a newcomer soldier that was slightly thrusting his spear was trembling.

They were also feeling it.

That the strong line was having it more difficult.

At that time, Roan came in the eyes of Pierce.

The appearance of swinging his spear with soft movements and slashing down the goblins.

Each time, the goblins fell in the ground with their throats having been cut off.

‘Roan.’

A guy that was no different to him until a day ago.

That guy was making great contributions as if he had become a ghost of war.

‘Me too..... Will I be able to do it?’

Compliments he heard in the training camps until his ears hurt.

<Your talent for the spear is the best.>

And actually, he never failed in placing first in the spear tests.

However, if they are placed in front of a monster, your body will get stiff.

‘I’m, i’m a coward.’

Pierce’s face became teary.

Then, a goblin charged to him after having pierced the line up.

“Damn!”

Oliver extended his spear late, but it didn’t reach.

The goblin that reached Pierce in an instant.

Chwee!

The guy rushed on to him and made some noise.

But that was all.

Thrust.

The tip of a spear was thrusting the neck of the goblin.

“Huh? Uh.....”

The owner of the spear was an half absent minded Pierce.

As his life got threatened, he instinctively thrust his spear.

The speed of the spear was so fast that the goblin charging died without even knowing that he had been thrust by it.

Oliver that was looking at him yelled while smiling brightly.

“You do well! Just keep it up!”

“Yes? Yes.....”

Of course, replying in a bewildered state.

‘Do, do I need to do it?’

The feeling when he thrust the neck of the goblin still remained in the palm of his hand.

It wasn’t hard.

His heart beat faster and his pressure rose.

‘I, I also have to do it!’

The teary face slowly returned to normal.

Pierce charged through and supported the weakened lines.

At the same time, he slashed his spear to the goblin that was

charging in to him.

Slash.

The head of the goblin fell to the ground.

‘Pierce bastard. Finally getting a hold of yourself.’

Roan, that was facing the goblins in the front of the 13th corps smirked and shook his head.

Right now, he was a newcomer soldier that no one recognized him, but he was the guy that was picked with the best talent in all of history of Rinse kingdom.

‘I can’t be losing to you.’

Pierce was an 18 year old newbie.

He too was an 18 year old newbie in the eyes of the others, but he had the experience of the past 20 years and was a 38 year old skilled spear man.

Roan’s spear drew a line of light and danced.

‘But is that bastard still far away?’

As he slashed his spear non stop, his eyes were still directed at the mountains.

There was a guy he was waiting.

‘He was certainly the same size as me.’

The guy in his memories.

He was the leader of the goblin army and was as tall as himself.

Originally, goblins didn’t surpass the chest height of humans.

‘He used dual blades.’

The guy held swords in both of his hands and roamed the battlefield ruthlessly.

The number of soldiers of the rose troop that fell by his hands would be several tens.

Slash.

At Roan’s spear, two goblins lost their heads and fell.

“Good! Keep going like this!”

“We take care of it the fastest and go to the west!”

“Kill!”

The soldiers that rode the momentum shouted.

At that time, the guy appeared in the east road of the mountain.

‘He came!’

The leader of the goblin army Roan was waiting for.

It wasn't that a commander had appeared.

Chweeee!

It made a rough and angered cry.

At that moment, the goblins that were being pushed back charged in more furiously.

Just like their hero had finally arrived.

“Wha, what's that?!”

“Is that a goblin too?”

“Isn't that an orc? Orc?”

The soldiers of the rose troop that discovered the leader of the goblins got perplexed.

Roan bit his lower lip.

‘It would be better if he was an orc. His skills are a level higher than that of the orcs.’

He wasn't the leader in vain.

However, the army of the rose troop that had no way to know this each lifted their weapons and charged in.

Slash.



The neck that fell with that horrible noise wasn't that of the goblin leader, but of the rose troop soldiers.

“Huh?”

“Huuh?”

At that moment, he remembered the perplexed faces of the soldiers.

‘Right. It’s not easy for normal soldiers to confront it!’

Roan bit his lower lip and kicked the floor.

His body moved towards the goblin leader.

“Hey! Where are you going!”

Tane’s voice rang behind him.

‘I’m going to get his head!’

Words he couldn’t say.

Roan’s spear shone with the sunlight.

## Chapter 8 : First Battle (6)

---

While Roan was stabbing the charging goblins, the goblin leader cut off the necks of various spearmen and swordsmen.

Chweeeee!

A cry that even stole the vigor of the battle.

And then, the soldiers that were charging without thinking of anything started to fall back.

The goblin leader filled up with vigor when he saw them.

Chwee!

A cry that implied that humans weren't even a match.

The guys dual blades cuts off the air.

“Ugh!”

The narrow eyed soldier closed his eyes when he looked at the blades coming to him.

The moment he experienced death.

But then, a clashing sound was heard near his ear.

Clash!

And the voice that rang at the same time.

“Fall to the back!”

The narrow eyed soldier slowly opened his eyes and looked in front of him.

The owner of the voice was a spearman with a childish face.

It was Roan.

“Hooo.”

The soldier fell back as if he was running because he was relieved that he had survived.

After a space was created between Roan to swing his spear, he put a somewhat fishy smile.

“It’s been a while. It’s been 20 years.”

Chwee.

The goblin leader contorted his face and cried out.

‘Right. There’s no way for you to remember me.’

Roan smirked and charged.

The tips of his spear was looking to pierce the chest of that bastard.

Chwee!

A cry as if it was making fun of him.

It swung its dual blades lightly and fended off the spear.

Clash!

‘Kugh. His strength is certainly good.’

Roan clenched his teeth because of the strength that was transmitted through his hands.

If it was prolonged, a not favorable fight.

‘With my current state, I can only exchange a few blows.’

But even so, the reason he charged in so confidently.

‘I will show you one deadly attack.’

The many spear skills in his memories.

However, he couldn’t use them all.

The strongest spear skill he could use right now.

‘The three stances Pierce taught me.’

Pierce’s spearmanship originated after he got taught by Reil

Baker, and devised for the battles they confronted together.

Because they confronted normal soldiers, it was still powerful even if it didn't use mana.

‘I have only one chance. More than that is hard for me.’

Thinking about the state of his palms, the strength of his grip and his physical strength, he could only execute this stance once.

‘I have to look for the perfect opportunity.’

Roan's spear shook and sliced off the air.

Chwee!

The goblin leader showed an annoyed expression at the spear that brandished him without stop.

It raised his dual blades so high to try to cut off the spear.

The body that was exposed in an instant.

‘Now!’

Roan gripped harder and forcefully pulled back his spear.

Rip.

The pain of his palms tearing.

However, Roan's movements didn't falter.

Spat!

The spear that was pulled back to his waist, stabbed onto the body of the goblin leader.

Chwee!

It got momentarily perplexed, but he snorted and quickly struck down with his blades.

Swing.

Right before the two swords met the spear.

Thong!

The stiff spear bent like a snake.

At the same moment, the spear rose to the skies.

Spat!

The spear passed by the two swords and rushed into the neck of the goblin.

Chwee?

The goblin leader opened his eyes roundly at the spear that was bending in an impossible angle.

Stab!

Roan's tip of the spear pierced through the neck of the goblin.

Grr.

Growling sounds and the falling goblin leader.

Roan pulled the spear in his throat and frowned.

“Kugh.”

A painful sound was heard.

He looked down at his palms.

A mess.

His skin was peeled off and blood flowed.

His limp palms couldn't stand the fierce and strong spear skills of Pierce.

‘It's really a mess.’

Of course, in his past life, he couldn't execute it more than 5 times consecutively.

No, even doing it 5 times made his entire body hurt.

It was a skill that was hard for your body, but it was that much effective.

“Whew.”

Roan looked at the goblin leader that was collapsed in the floor and smiled.

Not a bad harvest for the first battle.

Looking at the big hole in his throat, he admired Pierce's talent more.

‘For a stance that was created in the middle of resting to be this much.’

It was at that moment when he was admiring the difference in abilities.

The stance he barely executed after having his palms ripped, Pierce executed it without even shedding a drop of sweat.

‘In this life I will certainly close that gap.’

Roan determined once again and after cutting off the neck of the goblin leader, he extended it up to the skies.

“Spearman Roan from the 13th squad! I cut off the neck of the



goblin leader!”

A loud voice.

Even if he didn’t do that, the soldiers that were looking at their fight raised their weapons and yelled.

“Waaaaaaaaa!”

“Roan!Roan!Roan!Roan!”

The atmosphere of the battlefield changed in an instant.

The goblins that lost their leader, didn’t know what to do.

The morale was so low it reached ground, and they just looked to run away.

In the other hand, the morale of the soldiers of rose troop was as high as the sky.

Slice! Chop!

Chwee! Grr!

At the attacks of the rose troop, the goblins fell without resisting.

After Roan tied the head of the goblin leader in his waist, he returned to the 13th squad.

“You bastard! How can you run away as you please!”

Tane yelled as if he was waiting for it.

However, there was a faint smile in his face.

And that was because he had witnessed the scene of Roan piercing the neck of the goblin leader.

Roan bent down.

“Looking at my allies falling down, I just charged in on my own. I’m sorry.”

Tane wanted to say one more thing, but shook his head in the end.

“Be more careful next time.”

“Yes.”

Roan bent his head and fell to the back.

The battle was already ending.

The goblins couldn’t even charge to where the 13th squad were.

Roan took out some bandages while looking at the battle.

“Want me to help you?”

A newcomer soldier just like him, that had white skin and big eyes asked with a preoccupied face.

Roan lent him the bandages as if he came just in time.

“Thanks.”

“Why, with this much.”

The white skinned and big eyed soldier embraced the spear with his armpit and bandaged him.

He bandaged him so meticulously Roan thought that he would be able to hold the spear immediately.

‘He is quite familiar.....’

He was familiar.

A feeling he was forgetting of something important.

Roan tried to remember who was the man that was in front of him.

However, the newcomer soldiers that survived in his past life were only him and Pierce.

Because of that, he couldn’t remember the other newcomers.

‘But why is he so familiar?’

Roan that fell in his thoughts.

Then, the bandaging ended.

At that moment, his big fingers were caught in his eyes.

“Ah!”

Roan let out a low exclamation.

“Huh? What happened? Is the bandage somewhat

discomfortable?”

Asking because he was surprised.

‘He’s identical.’

Roan’s eyes shook.

The silhouette of a person passed by dimly through his eyes.

‘This guy was the oppa of that person.’

The face of a girl that filled his entire head.

Roan shook his head and just put on an awkward face.

He smiled brightly and lent out his hand.

“It’s nothing. Thank you. Glenn.”

The white skinned and big eyed soldier was called Glenn.

He remembered.

Who this guy was, and who his sister was.

## Chapter 9 : First Battle (7)

---

The only person Roan loved in his life.

She was Glenn's younger sister, Selin.

‘She came to find his corpse when he died by the hands of the goblins.’

A 17 years old girl.

The death of her one year older brother was a hard to endure one.

‘I was just consoling her because her crying appearance seemed to pitiable.’

They casually started to love each other.

‘Did we meet for 10 years?’

In his late twenties, he was planning to even marry her.

‘But in the end, we separated.’

The reason was Roan.

‘I couldn't leave the battlefield.’

Late twenties was a climax age.

He was still too young to give up on his dream to become a great general.

On top of that, Pierce that got named as new general from a troop asked him to go and battle with him.

He thought that it would be the last chance.

‘Even at her words to not leave, that if I left it would be the end, I still left.’

It took exactly 3 years before he returned.

And when he returned, she was already a woman of another man.

‘Since then, I lived like a crazy bastard.’

He battled like a crazy person.

And because of that, the normal soldier that couldn’t be seen for 13 years, became squad commander in just 2 years.

But of course, that was the most he could achieve.

‘She longed for her death brother all her life.’

What a relief.

Glenn didn’t die.

She wouldn’t be sad anymore.

‘But if it turns out like this, would I be able to meet her.....?’

Somehow, a bitter flavor roamed in his mouth.

He thought that he had forgotten it all, but now that he had remembered it, it wasn't easy for him to push away those thoughts.

‘Perhaps, it is better this way.’

Even if they met and loved each other again, he would only leave her alone again.

Because in this life, he would dream bigger than his past life.

“It seems like the battle ended.”

Glenn's voice rang.

Roan pushed away those thoughts and looked at the battlefield.

There were still some goblins running away, but the battle had certainly ended.

“Squad line up! Squad line up!”

The adjutants yell with all of their strength.

The battle in the east ended, but the west still remained.

The goblins that come pouring from the other side of the mountain.

‘Well, now that their leader died, that side will also crumble.’

The rose troop was going to win without any difficulties.

After a while, the battle ended with the overwhelming victory of the rose troop just like Roan had predicted it.

The time of retrieving the corpses and healing the wounded.

“The newcomers this time are amazing!”

“Yeah! You were called Roan and Pierce? You killed it out there.”

The 13th squad was filled with an uproar.

Roan’s and Pierce’s outstanding merits were followed up with lines of compliments.

It was rough, but Pete, that evaluated skillful people highly hit Roan’s back.

Hit!

“You bastard! I completely saw you in a new light! Hahaha!”

“Kugh.”

Roan frowned and bent his back.

“Ahem. Did I hit you hard?”

Pete laughed awkwardly and scratched his cheek.

Roan raised his hand as if it was okay and nodded.



Then, Tane approached him.

“The skill you used to slay the leader of the goblins. Did you also learn that at the training camp?”

It was a skill he had never seen until now.

At Tane’s question, obviously the 13th squad and the 12th and 14th squad that were next to them raised their ears.

Roan slowly shook his head.

“No. Because of a certain coincidence, I got to learn it from a retired soldier.”

“Retired soldier? For the spearmanship of a retired soldier to be that much. And they said that the world was wide and there were as powerful people as sand grains.”

Tane just looked at him fixedly.

“Anyways, you rendered big merits in this battle and saved the lives of many people, so I will let it pass this time but.....”

“Let it pass my ass.”

A cold voice intruded in.

Tane and Roan turned their head and looked at the owner of that voice.

“Adjutant Dosen.”

Tane bent his head.

Dosen said with a cold expression.

“Roan.”

“Yes.”

“Leaving your ranks in the middle of a battle is grave offense.”

A cold voice.

Actually, he was already in a bad mood because of what happened before the battle.

‘A newcomer dares to ignore the words of an adjutant?’

Because of Roan, only he became a stupid person for Gale.

“Even if you had the permission of Mason, leaving your ranks while marching is also a grave offense.”

“I’m sorry.”

Roan bent his head.

He knew the reason why Dosen was acting like this.

‘His pride must have gotten hurt.’

At times like this, it was better to stay low.

If he corrected what happened, only the adversary would feel worse.

Dosen continued speaking.

“Gale squad commander let it pass, but it’s something that I, that organize and command the soldiers can’t forgive.”

The soldiers of the 13th troop that were looking at the situation showed a nervous face.

“If it was like usual, you would have to get whipped 50 times, but taking into account that you discovered the goblins hiding in the gorge and as you have slain the enemy leader, I will deduct your salary for 5 months and add an extra month of training.”

“Yes. I will follow your orders.”

Roan bent down.

Dosen glared at him for a moment, and then rode his horse and returned to his original place.

Pete looked at Dosen getting farther and asked.

“What kind of accident did you make in the front for you to get punished instead of receiving a reward after having slain the enemy leader?”

Roan just smiled bitterly instead of replying back.

Tane looked at his expression and intruded to the conversation.

“Didn’t you hear adjutant Dosen’s words? He left the ranks in his own twice.”

At those words, Pete shook his head as if he didn’t understand.

“No, but even so, I don’t think that it’s enough of a reas..... Now that I look at it, were you also the one that discovered the hiding goblins?”

“Yes.”

Roan slowly nodded.

The soldiers of the 13th squad put again a surprised expression.

“You are really a thing. A thing.”

“Yeah. If it wasn’t for him, we would all have gotten annihilated.”

“He’s a benefactor in our lives!”

A noisy atmosphere.

The soldiers of the 13th squad tried to purposely raise up the mood for Roan, that got punished.

However, Roan didn’t care much about that.

‘I won’t be using money much, anyways.’

Actually, it wouldn’t be a thing to get big money if he decided to. He remembered all of the big things that would happen for 20

years from now on.

And there were cases they discovered mana runes, mineral mines, ore mines, and lost treasures.

‘If I need them later, I have to make one stop before anyone else and make it mine.’

There was no need to gain money immediately.

The punishment to get an extra month of training was something Roan wanted to request for.

‘Stamina, muscles, skin of the palms of my hands and movements. All of these are a mess.’

Just like the words, the level of a newbie.

He needed training.

However, the individual training time was really scarce in group movements.

And in that situation, Dosen thankfully commanded him to get extra training.

‘He gave me time to train my body, so this isn’t a punishment, but a prize.’

A smile appeared in Roan’s face.

Then, the voices of the adjutants were heard again.

“Squad line up! Squad line up!”

The soldiers that were resting all over the place, started to stand up and lined up.

Roan too, wanted to line up in the back side of the 13th squad, but a familiar voice rang from behind him.

“Roan. You have to go and take your role.”

The owner of the voice was Mason.

Roan didn't move in his own accord and looked at Tane.

“Go.”

Tane swiftly shook his hand.

Roan nodded, and then moved his steps.

As he stood in the front, he saw the adjutants such as Gale and Dosen.

‘Cold.’

Dosen's eyes were still cold.

As the soldiers that were in charge of guiding gathered together, the rose troop started to march again.

Step. Step. Step.

Sound of footsteps that shake the earth.

Roan, Mason and the other guides, got in the Ale gorge first.

The gorge that was originally filled with forests, was now a barren hill.

‘This place was filled with corpses before.’

A miserable scene.

However, it was different in this life.

‘I have just made my first step.’

Roan bit his lower lip.

‘What comes next is more important.’

The moments of choice will keep coming.

And each time, he would need to pick the best and different option.

But the fortunate thing was that his first option wasn’t bad at all.

Behind Roan was following the rose troop that originally should have been annihilated.

# Chapter 10 : Traviias Spear (1)

---

The rose troop reached Ale village without any trouble.

They camped near the entrance of the village and put on a barrack.

And Roan, once again took the attention of the people.

“Wow. Look at his hands.”

“It seems like they only teach you how to set a barrack in the training camp.”

“Ey. That’s not it. Look at the other newcomers. It’s only that guy who is skilled.”

The soldiers of the 13th squad talked among themselves while looking at Roan that was the only skilled one among the newcomers.

“You have to pull more this way.”

Roan helped Pierce and Glenn and taught them how to put on a barrack.

“Thanks.”

The two of them laughed embarrassedly and scratched their heads.

Roan didn’t say anything and just focused on setting the barrack.



Bang.

With the last hammering, the huge barrack got completed.

“Roan! You are the best, the best!”

“A really special one entered.”

“Did you see the expressions of the other squads? They were really envious. Kukuku.”

The soldiers got in the barracks with their luggage and raised their thumbs.

Roan just bent his head without saying anything and grabbed his spear.

“What are you going to do?”

Tane approached him and frowned.

“I’m going to do the extra training.”

“Ah.....”

He nodded along with a low exclamation.

It was a punishment given by the meticulous Dosen, so he could be watching him from somewhere.

If he skipped for even a day, he would be given an impetuous order.

Tane looked at the spear and shook his head.

“Your palm is a mess, will you be fine?”

“I’m fine. It’s because Glenn’s bandaging is excellent.”

Roan raised both of his hands and smiled.

“Even so, focus on training your strength rather than your spear skills, being aware of adjutant Dosen.”

“Yes. Understood.”

“And give me your luggage.”

“Thank you.”

Roan bent.

Tane hit Roan’s shoulder like that and entered the barrack.

‘Should I run for now?’

Roan stretched softly and started to run while holding his spear.

Clank. Clank.

The armor makes steel noises.

The armor that only covered him the important parts was so low and weared that many parts were oxidized and even had small holes.

Roan, that was running the outer parts, saw Dosen.

‘It seems like I really got marked properly.’

Dosen approached him while riding his horse.

“You aren’t just planning on running like that?”

“After running a few more laps I will train my spear skills and do strength exercises.”

Roan replied while running.

Dosen nodded and pulled the reins.

Wheee.

The horse slowly stops.

“Trains like that for two hours everyday.”

“Yes. Understood.”

Roan yelled to Dosen’s back that was getting further.

“Whew!”

He ran out of breath because he was talking while running.

‘My stamina is really a mess.’

To run out of breath after running this much.

Ruan clenched his teeth.

‘At least, there won’t be any trouble until Pedian’s plain.’

Thinking about his memories, he couldn’t think of anything in particular after the rose troop got annihilated in Ale gorge.

Then, this was the right time to raise his strength and stamina.

Clank. Clank.

Roan’s feet got faster.

\*\*\*\*\*

The rose troop rested in Ale village for a day and started to march towards Pedian’s plain.

Roan didn’t miss the extra training even while marching.

And not only that, he even participated in the group trainings.

“You will fall like that.”

So much that Pete had to persuade him.

However Roan, pushed himself to the limits.

He knew how much strength and stamina he could raise with the

20 years of experience.

‘If I get to that point in an even shorter time, I can look for a higher position.’

The 20 years from now on will change.

Among that was strength training, stamina training, agility training, and skills training.

‘The training from 20 years from now on is much more effective than in this time.’

Roan evaded Dosen’s eyes and trained his strength and stamina with the methods from 20 years from now on.

And because of that, in these short 15 days, his arms and legs became a little harder than before.

But just because of that, there was no one in the 13th squad that recognized the change.

No, there was only one person that noticed this small change.

“Roan. I think that your body got better.”

The person that was blinking with an honest expression was Pierce.

Roan slowly looked at Pierce’s face and said inwardly.

‘His sight is really excellent.’

One of the many abilities Pierce had.

He had a good sight. No, precisely speaking, he had a good ability to see things.

And because of that, even if they were in the same situation, place and saw the same people, the information he could obtain was much bigger.

The ability to see things others can't.

That was one of the driving force for his ghost like spear skills.

‘Is there one day until we reach Pedian’s plain?’

Today was also the last day he could train to his heart’s content.

Roan reported to Dosen and got out of the camp.

Because Dosen prohibited him from training inside the camp.

If he followed the rumours, it seems like he had heard it from Gale.

And because of that, he could only do the extra training outside of the camp and the first days, Dosen came out to check on him.

However, as he saw that Roan didn’t show even a trace of disobeying, he left him alone.

Roan came outside of the camp and straightened his back.

“Whew.”

Maybe it was because it was the entrance of Pedian’s plain, but there was a wide plain in front of his eyes.

‘First, running.’

If he didn’t want to get injured, it was important to heat your body.

Roan started to run towards the plain.

The weeds that were as long as his waist, were moved by the winds coming from the west.

The sound of the plants rubbing his skin tickled his ear.

Roan was enjoying the strange feeling and ran to a place farther than he had thought.

“Did I run too much?”

The entrance of the camp was too far and was seen really small.

He changed directions and started to run towards the rose squad camp.

The weeds shake because of the wind.

Movements and sound that’s no different as before.

However, Roan frowned.

‘Something’s weird.’

His eyes became sharper.

The movements of the weeds that are in his left are rough.

Roan gripped his spear.

‘There’s something!’

He glared at the weed that was shaking roughly.

Stab.

Then, the the weed separated to the left and to the right.

Roan stopped the spear he was going to stab by instinct and frowned.

Because the thing that appeared out of the weeds was out of his expectations.

‘Why are these guys here.....?’



# Chapter 11 : Traviias Spear (2)

---

“Hyung!”

“Oppa!”

Sniffing voices.

Kids that were around 10 years old.

5 little kids were grabbing Roan’s leg and cried.

“Save our mom.”

“Boohooo.”

Sad cries cover the sound of the wind.

Roan patted the heads of the children awkwardly.

“What happened?”

At the considerate voice, at least the biggest girl looked at Roan.

“Some bad guys came to our village. They, they took away mom and dad. Boohoo.”

The girl couldn’t hold it anymore and started to cry.

Roan patted her head and frowned.

‘Bad guys?’

He searched in his memories.

But there was no particular case.

‘Originally, the rose troop gets annihilated and doesn’t pass through here.’

It meant that it was completely unrelated to him.

Roan looked at the crying girl and asked gently.

“What’s your name?”

“Sob. Sob. Lia.”

“It’s a nice name. Lia. Lia, are you the oldest here?”

Lia wiped off her tears with both of her hands and nodded.

Roan pointed towards the rose troop camp that was far away.

“If you go there, there will be a lot of tough uncles. Will you go there and tell them what happened in your village?”

“Then, those uncles will save our mom and dad?”

From deep within her eyes could be seen a light of hope.

Roan couldn’t ignore that hope.

“Well. Of course.”

Only then did the crying children stop crying.

Roan started to walk towards the camp in the front, while guiding the children.

“Roan!”

Before he could get in the camp, a scary yell was heard.

It was Dosen.

‘This bastard dares to come after idling there?’

He was outside because he was thinking that perhaps...

He was planning on punishing him if he was idling without him knowing.

However, he couldn't discover Roan nearby at all.

‘Right. You got well caught.’

Deserters have the punishment of having to live hiding for life.

He thought that he wouldn't be so stupid as to fulfil that punishment, and that he would be hiding somewhere.

What kind of punishment should he give, it was at that moment when he was thinking that when he saw Roan coming into the camp.

“Just where have you bee..... Huh?”

He was about to yell at him when he saw the children lined up behind him.

Dosen frowned and looked at Roan.

“What are those kids?”

“It’s.....”

Roan explained everything that happened in a calm way.

Dosen’s face contorted.

“Someone attacked the village and took away their parents?”

“Yes. That’s right.”

Roan nodded with his face having darkened.

‘He wouldn’t be making up an excuse, right?’

It was Dosen that didn’t feel good towards him.

If he resorted to violence in vain, only the children would be at a loss.

Dosen that was thinking for a while, hit Roan’s shoulder.

“Good. Take the kids and go to commander Gale.”

“Yes?”

Roan asked with a surprised expression.

Dosen's eyes twitched.

"It means that innocent villagers are in danger. So we have to rescue them."

"Ri, right."

Roan laughed awkwardly and nodded.

Dosen said as if he was just spilling it.

"You thought that I was going to resort to violence?"

Roan didn't talk back.

Dosen looked at the children that were about to cry at any moment and continued saying.

"It's true that I don't like you. But i'm also a soldier of Rinse kingdom. And it's my duty to protect the people of the kingdom."

Roan just nodded instead of replying.

Dosen smiled at the kids once and went towards the camp.

"Kids. Let's go."

Roan took Lia and the other children and followed his back.

When they got in the camp, commander Gale approached them with a well disposed smile.

“Oh dear. These little kids are having it really hard.”

He sat Lia and the children and patted their heads.

They being seated just like chicks was really cute.

Gale ordered the soldiers to bring hot milk and bread.

“Eat slowly.”

A gentle voice.

The kids were looking at their surroundings, and then grabbed the bread.

Munch.

The children that eat a big bite as if they were really hungry.

Gale just looked at them.

Lia, that finished her bread, drank some milk and looked at Gale.

“Is uncle the leader here?”

“Right. Uncle is the leader.”

Gale nodded along a bright laugh.

Lia returned the cup and asked with a begging expression.

Then, are you going to save mom and dad?”

“Yes. Of course.”

Gale nodded and carefully continued to say.

“However, you have to tell me what happened in the village. Can you tell me?”

At his words, Lia nodded.

“We were playing hide and seek in the woods when about 20 dangerous and big uncles appeared. And suddenly.....”

Tears appear in her big eyes.

Gale wiped off her tears with a handkerchief and carefully asked.

“Did those uncles kill the townspeople?”

Lia nodded.

“The chief, uncle James and uncle Michael all died.”

Thick tears drop.

‘These small things went through such a thing.’

Gale thought that in regret but still asked a question.

“Then what happened?”

“The big uncles tied the people with a rope and took them. And we were still hidden in the bushes when that happened.”

Gale nodded with an admirable expression.

“You did well. Really well. Uncle will ask you two more things. First, what’s the village Lia lived in?”

“Hotton village.”

“Hotton village.....”

Gale frowned.

‘It’s not familiar.’

A village he had never heard of.

Then, that meant that it was a really small village.

“Then, the last question. Where did the bad uncles go with the villages people?”

Lia thought for a while and answered with a confident voice.

“To the east, they went to the east Trum village. They certainly went that way.”

“Mmm.”



Also an unfamiliar place.

It had a high possibility that it was as small as Hotton village.

‘Then, even Trum village may be in danger.’

Gale frowned and stood up.

“What do you think?”

Dosen, that was listening next to them, replied in a voice so low as to the children couldn’t hear it.

“Aren’t they thieves or slave merchants?”

“There is a high possibility.”

Gale nodded and grabbed Dosen’s shoulder.

“Adjutant Dosen.”

“Yes.”

“I will leave this to you. First, find some soldiers that know about Hotton village and Trum village, and take 5 cavalry men and chase them.

“Yes. Understood.”

Dosen slightly bent his head.

At that time, Roan that was observing the situation, slightly raised his right hand.

“Commander Gale.”

Gale looked at him as if what happened.

And Dosen was the same.

Roan looked at the two of them and continued to say.

“I know about Trum village.”

At that moment, Gale and Dosen put on surprised expressions.

“You know about Trum village?”

Roan slowly nodded.

‘Trum village. I can’t not know about it.’

A bitter smile appeared on his face.

‘Because there’s the travias spear.’

The travias spear that was going to be discovered in 17 years from now on.

‘Even if that wasn’t the case, I was planning to go there after the subjugation of the monsters ended and i’m heading to the Potter

region.'

However, he was unfamiliar about Hotton village.

On top of that, there was no case he remembered aside from the travias's spear one.

Then, he heard Gale's voice.

"Good. Then Roan, you will take the role of guide."

A situation that every minute was precious.

It was much faster to take Roan rather than asking all of the soldiers.

Dosen approached Roan and grabbed his shoulders.

"Do you know how to ride a horse?"

"Yes. I know."

"Good."

Dosen nodded with a surprised expression.

There weren't many normal soldiers that knew how to ride a horse.

However Roan, that dreamt of becoming a great commander, slowly learnt cavalry.

'I also rode the horse for 10 years.'

He couldn't say that he rode it outstandingly, but he was on a

level he didn't fall back.

“Then, we will be going.”

Dosen bent towards Gale got out of the camp.

Roan quickly followed his back.

‘It's something that I haven't experienced in my past life.’

Chills ran down his spine.

A completely different feeling compared to when he confronted the goblins in Ale gorge.

On top of that, the opponents weren't monsters, but humans.

Roan gritted his teeth and gripped his spear.

‘Let's hope that this choice is followed by good results.’

## Chapter 12 : Traviias Spear (3)

---

Clop clop.

The noisy clopping sounds.

Dosen, that got the permission of Gale, took 5 squads of cavalrymen from the first to the fifth squad.

These soldiers heard the story of the kids, and gave up on their resting time.

When they first heard that a novice newcomer from the spearmen squad took the role of guide, they got preoccupied.

‘Will he be able to ride a horse properly?’

However, it was in vain.

‘Is he really an 18 year old newcomer soldier?’

The gazes of the soldiers fell in the back of Roan that was in front of them.

‘It’s a lie, right? It seems like he rides the horse better than us?’

‘What kind of spearman rides the horse better than those from the cavalry?’

The soldiers from the cavalry truly admired him.

They stucked their chests closer to the horse and kicked the

horse.

Dudududu.

A noise that shakes the earth and a rough recoil.

A hundred cavalrymen ride across the plain.

Roan guessed where the Hotton village should be, based on the Trum village he knew.

‘She said that Trum village was in the east of Hotton village.’

If Ria’s words were true, then there was only one place where Hotton village could be located.

A humble zone located near the entrance of Pedian’s plain.

‘There’s nothing more important than water.’

Roan bit his lower lip and kicked the horse.

The west wind that blew freshly made him feel like it was rubbing his back.

‘Our destination isn’t Hotton village, but the middle point of Hotton village and Trum village.’

If it was according to Gale’s, Dosen’s and his guesses, then the guys that attacked Hotton village would be going to Trum village.

‘If my memories don’t fail me, there should be a thick forest in the west of trum village.

Roan’s eyes shone and asked for light.

‘To rescue the villages people safely.....’

He bit his lower lips and pulled the reins.

The head of the horse turns to the east.

Dosen, and the cavalrymen that were following behind him, also pull the reins.

And there was no one that put on weird faces.

‘It seems like in front of here, are those bastards.’

They trusted Roan.

No, they could only do so.

Because they didn’t even know to what kind of place they were going to.

The chase continued for a long while.

After they passed the bushes that were as tall as their waist, some small hills and a small and big forest appeared.

The cavalrymen ran through the thick forest roughly.

Then, Roan that was charging in fiercely, pulled the reins and lessened the speed.

“Adjutant Dosen.”

He, who completely stopped, turned back to look at Dosen.

“What happened?”

Dosen approached him while still being on top of the horse.

Roan pointed to a hill that was outside of the forest.

“It seems like we have caught the tail of those guys.”

“Mmm.”

A low exclamation flows.

“We finally caught them.”

The place Roan pointed to.

There were the bastards they wanted to see that much.

Dosen made hand signs to the soldiers that were behind him, and dismounted the horse.

They tied the horses in the trees behind them and hid on some big bushes.

“There are about 50.”



At Dosen's words, the first commander Karon frowned.

"There are about 100 caught people. It seems like they are slave merchants."

The 2nd squad commander Pierson, clenched his fists.

"And it doesn't seem like the only attacked village was Hotton village."

At his words, everyone nodded.

Dosen's face became dark.

"If we just attack them like this, the villages people will be in danger."

There was also some probability that those guys would run leaving the villages people behind. But there also were opposite cases.

Where they threaten the lives of the villages people and they can't do a thing.

"Is there a method to rescue the villages people safely?"

Dosen asked while looking at everyone else.

However, among the hundred plus soldiers, no one named a clear plan.

In that while, the slave merchants disappeared to the other side of the hill.

“Adjutant Dosen.”

Then, Roan carefully raised his hand.

‘It’s you again?’

Dosen looked at Roan.

Every time they got pushed in a difficult situation, this guy came up.

In the investigation of Ale gorge, the battle against the goblin army. And this time too.

‘The results were good.’

Now that the situation turned out like this, he could expect something.

“Yeah. It seems like you have a good method?”

“I don’t know if it’s good, but I do have something.”

“Speak.”

Dosen was prepared to listen.

And all the other cavalrymen also listened attentively.

Roan took in some breath and continued to say with a calm voice.

“There’s a huge forest in the west of Trum village. It’s a forest with a lot of trees. We reach there before them and ambush them.”

“Ambush?”

Dosen frowned and asked back.

Roan nodded.

“Yes. We hide in the forest and when the slave merchants appear, we make a surprise attack and cut in the middle of the villages people and them.”

It was a good strategy.

If it turned out that way, they could save the lives of the villages people and also kill the slave merchants.

However, there was a big problem.

“It’s a good strategy. However, will we be able to reach the forest before them?”

There was only one road.

To overtake them was impossible.

At Dosen’s words, every cavalrymen looked at Roan.

Roan drew in the floor with a branch.

“Look well.”

First, he drew two circles.

“The left circle is Hotton village, and the right one is Trum village. Our position is here, and those bastards position is here.”

Roan made two points between the two circles.

The slave merchants were certainly nearer to Trum village.

“If you look at it this way, it certainly seems like they can reach Trum village in an instant. But actually, they can’t.”

Roan drew a horizontal line between Hotton village and Trum village.

“It’s the Abyl stream. Although it is humble, it’s quite wide and deep, so it’s impossible to cross it.”

The made a point in the lower side of the horizontal line.

“There’s a bridge in here. They will cross this bridge and go to Trum village. It’s a road that is quite long.

Karon frowned.

“That’s the only road that leads to Trum village?”

At his words, Roan smiled and nodded.

“Most only know about that road.”

At that moment, Dosen's eyes shine.

“What you are saying right now, sounds like you know of another road.”

Roan looked at Dosen's eyes and replied.

“Yes. I know of another road. And a much faster one at that.”

At that moment, everyone's faces brighten.

“Good! Then it won't be a problem to overtake those bastards!”

“We will be able to ambush them.”

The cavalry men clench their fists and like it.

‘What's the identity of this guy?’

Dosen got surprised once again.

This region was one that he, and even commander Gale was unfamiliar with.

But for an 18 year old newcomer soldier that just finished his

training to know of a shortcut.

‘As far as I know, this guy isn’t even from this region.....’

The more he knew about him, the more surprises he got.

‘I will have to properly talk with him.’

A feeling he was hiding something from him.

He was really curious, but right now, he didn’t have the leisure to ask him that.

‘First, let’s save the villages people.’

They had to take care of the slave merchants first.

The thing with Roan came after that.

“Fine. Take lead.”

Dosen stood up and grabbed the reins.

“Yes. Understood.”

Roan replied and at the same time, all of the cavalrymen got on the horse.

Clop. Clop.

The horses weren't heading to the east, but to the north.  
As soon as they got out of the forest, a big hill appeared.

Dudududu.

Roan hit the horse and ran towards the hill.

The opposite direction to where the slave merchants were heading to.

‘There’s a shortcut here.’

Dosen and the cavalrymen stick their chests closer to the horse.  
The hundred soldiers run while cutting through the air.  
After they ran for a while, the scenery changed.  
The hill disappeared, and a fresh course of a river appeared.

Whine.

Roan pulled the reins and got in front of the flowing water.

“It’s the Abyl stream.”

Dosen that approached him said.

“I would believe it if it was a river.”

He looked at his surroundings and said.

“Where’s the shortcut?”

Roan pointed towards the Abyl stream with a calm face.

He said something they didn’t want to hear, nor want to believe.

“We will cross this Abyl stream.”



# Chapter 13 : Traviias Spear (4)

---

“Are you kidding right now?”

Dosen got angry.

He remembered quite well Roan’s words.

<It’s Abyl’s stream. Although it is a stream, it is quite wide and deep, so it is impossible.>

He had certainly said that it was impossible.

But now he was saying that they should cross it.

“You know that we don’t have time to be joking, right?”

Even at this moment, the slave merchants were approaching Trum village.

“Of course.”

Roan got off the horse at the same time he replied.

Dosen looked directly at Roan’s eyes.

“Then are you really saying that we are going to cross this stream?”

“Yes.”

At that moment, Dosen's and the cavalrymen's faces contorted.

Although it was calm, this stream seemed to be certainly deep and wide.

If they didn't have a floating bridge, then it was impossible.

‘Only now does he make trouble.’

Dosen gritted his teeth.

‘If we chase them now, won't we be able to catch them?’

His head spun.

At that time, Roan grabbed the reins and moved his step.

Splash.

He moved around the riverbank and stopped in one place.

Dosen looked at that and frowned.

“What are you doing right now?”

Roan replied with a calm and imposing voice.

“We are going to cross this bridge.”

“Bridge? Where's that bridge?”

Dosen frowned.

Roan moved towards the stream.

Splash.

The water filled up to his waist in an instant.

“5 years ago, a bridge used to be here, in the place i’m standing right now.”

Dosen’s face turned red.

“Are you telling me that we should cross a bridge that disappeared?”

Roan shook his head.

“The bridge is still here.”

A confident voice and an imposing face.

Dosen frowned.

“What does that mean?”

Roan smiled faintly and replied.

“The bridge is still here. Only that the water in this stream rose.”

“Ah.....”

At that moment, a low exclamation flowed from the mouths of Dosen and the cavalrymen.

Roan continued speaking.

“This bridge is under the water. But fortunately, it’s still fine. If you walk correctly, you will be able to cross this stream.”

He pointed at the calmly flowing Abyl stream.

Dosen and the cavalrymen looked at Roan with a surprised expression.

‘How does he know about this?’

‘Is it a place he had visited before?’

‘Even if that is the case, is it possible to know of a bridge that’s under water?’

Many questions popped.

Roan shrugged his shoulders and urged.

“Are you going to keep standing there?”

“Ah!”

Only then did Dosen and the cavalrymen get ahold of themselves and dismounted the horse.

They grabbed the reins and stood in front of the riverbank.

“The bridge is really slippery because it’s deep under water. And there may even be some broken parts. You have to tap it with the tip of your spear and cross it slowly.”

Roan moved the spear in his right hand.

Everyone gulped dry saliva and nodded.

“Then, I will take the lead.”

Roan took in deep breaths and moved his steps.

Ziip.

The slippery rock bridge is felt under his feet.

He tapped the bridge in front of him with the tip of the spear and slowly moved his feet.

And the water soon reached his waist.

‘It’s fine. That time, it even reached to my chest.’

Roan took in a deep breath.

‘There’s no need to be nervous. You already crossed it once.’

17 years from now on, Roan crosses this place with a person he thought to be a friend.

‘Son of a bitch.’

That bastard he thought as a friend.

Now that he thought of his face, he started to curse him.

‘The guy that snatched the travias spear from me.’

Roan had made many wrong choices in his past life, but the worst of them was entrusting the spear to the person he thought as friend.

‘That bastard took this to the Byron kingdom and received a title of count.’

That guy roamed the battlefield with the spear and got a nickname called spear ghost.

‘Even so, he didn’t become a match to Pierce, that was called as spear god.’

Thinking about it like this, he once again felt Pierce’s might.

Splash.

The water that reached his chest made his thoughts go away.

‘Let’s focus on crossing this stream.’

Roan got a hold of himself and moved step by step.

Splash. Splash.

The west wind that blows freshly raises little waves.

Roan and the hundred cavalrymen crossed the Abyl stream with a face full of nervousness.

If someone that didn’t know about this saw it, they would think that Abyl stream was really shallow.

‘The moment I reach ground it ends.’

The people that were crossing the stream felt that they were on top of the death rope.

The suffocating time flowed slowly.

Step.

Roan was the first to reach the riverbank.

Drain.

His body was really wet.

Pheew.

The war horse shakes his head and body.

The water drops that splashes.

“Kugh.”

Roan turned his head and shakes his hand.

Meanwhile, Dosen and the cavalrymen slowly reached the riverbank.

They were as wet as him.

They wanted to clean the water in the clothe, no, in the armor and the weapon but they didn't have the leisure to do so.

Dosen quickly got on the horse and grabbed the reins.

“Let's see the scenery next time.”

“Yes.”

Roan replied shortly and after he got on the horse, he started to ride in the front.

Dudududu.

A sound that shakes the earth.



The cavalrymen grabbed the reins and bit their lower lips.

‘It’s done now.’

‘We caught up with those bastards.’

They stucked their chests to the horse and kicked it.

Dudududu.

The hundred soldiers ride towards Trum village.

\*\*\*\*\*

“Wow, the trees are really dense.”

“Yeah. Not even sunlight passes through.”

Joey and Luce moved in the narrow forest road and checked their surroundings.

It was so quiet that it was even gloomy.

They grabbed the reins and looked back.

The fifty plus allies follow them with their horses.

Joy’s and Luce’s sights are directed beyond their allies.

“Hehehe.”

A laugh comes on itself.

The people that were tied just like tied fish.

The rope that was tightly tying the wrists and the waists followed up the other person.

And like that, the people that were tied walked with their heads low.

Even at first glance, the number surpassed the 100's.

“We should have to come to this region in advance.”

“Yeah. There's no security nor hunters. Kukuku.”

Joey and Luce looked at each other and laughed.

They were the heads of the slave merchants that operated in the western parts of mountain zones.

“It was a pain to confront hunters in the western parts of the mountains.”

Joey smacked his lips and shook his head.

The temperament of the hunters in mountain regions was really fierce and their skills were really good, so it wasn't easy to confront them.

Because of that, every time they hunted people, they got out with a loss.

In the end, Joey and Luce left the mountain regions and went to the plains that were in the middle-north of the kingdom.

“If we get this much every time, we will become rich in no time.”

“Kukuku. Let's buy a residence in the capital.”

They talked like that and kept guiding the horses.

Clap. Clap.

Clopping sounds break the silence of the forest.

Next to the narrow forest road, the woods opened.

The woods shake with the wind.

Pheew.

One of the horses of a slave merchant shakes its head and makes rough movements.

“Why are the horses like this so suddenly?”

“Yeah.”

Joey and Luce pass through the woods and pat the head of the horses.

Then, a bush that wasn't shaking with the wind shakes roughly.

Paat!

Inside the bush, a long spear stretches.

Stretch!

“Kugh!”

“Ugh!”

Many slave merchants that were riding the horses got pierced in the sides and fell.

Whine!

The horses that got scared raised the front legs and cried roughly.

“Wha, what is it!”

“What’s happening!”

Joey and Luce looked back and yelled.

Shang!

The remaining slave merchants took out their swords from their waists.

A group appeared from the bushes as if they were waiting for it.

They got in and took place between the slave merchants and the tied people.

“Who, who…….”

The people that were tied asked with a small voice.

The one that was in the front of these people smiled brightly and replied.

“We are the rose troop that belongs to the 7th corps of the Rinse kingdom. We came to rescue.”

The owner of that voice filled with strength was Dosen.

“Ah!”

“We, we are alive!”

The tied people smiled brightly and yelled.

In the other hand, Joy’s and Luce’s faces contorted.

‘Dam! People from the kingdom!’

‘Where the hell did they come from?’

Joy frowned and moved one hand stealthily.

He feels the bow that was in the saddle with the tip of his fingers.

‘I fire an arrow and escape.’

The 50 subordinates would buy time for him.

Grip.

Grip.

Joey grabbed an arrow and quickly tensed the bow.

At that time, a crushing sound that was heard near his ears.

Splutter!

A horrible sound.

The spear that came flowing by cutting the ear pierced Joey's head.

“Huk!”

Luce that was next to him, looked at Joey's crushed head.

Split.

At the same time, another group appeared after splitting the bush.

“Whew. Fortunately, it hit.”

A teen that laughs after letting a short sigh.

He looked at the dumbfounded Luce and pulled out the spear in Joey's head.

Crush.

Joey's head that had half of it's shape, got completely crushed.

“Resist or surrender?”

A voice as if he was secretly asking.

‘The decision will be taken by adjutant Dosen anyways.’

The teen that smashed Joey's head.

It was Roan.

## Chapter 14 : Traviias Spear (5)

---

The situation changed.

The tied people were freed and the slave merchants replaced them instead.

They looked at the many cavalrymen that appeared and lost all of their fighting spirit.

More than anything else, looking at Joey's head getting smashed had the biggest effect.

“We have to take this guys to Bason village.”

Dosen looked at the slave merchants and frowned.

Bason village was the only one that had the right facilities to keep these guys around this zone.

Perhaps there would be more, but that was all the information he had.

“Squads from the 1st to the 4th come with me to take these bastards to Bason village.”

“Yes!”

The squad commanders replied in one voice.

Dosen looked at the commander of the 5th squad, Ched.

“Ched. You take the villages people and go to Trum village.”



An exhausted face could be seen from the villagers.

They needed a break first.

Ched put on a troubled face.

“I don’t know the exact position for Trum village.”

“You can ask that to the vill.....”

Dosen talked up to there and closed his mouth.

The villages people couldn’t take the role of guiding.

‘I can’t do anything about it.’

Dosen’s eyes look at Roan.

“Roan”

“Yes.”

Roan, that was taking care of the condition of the villagers, replied and approached him.

“You move together with the 5th squad.”

“Yes. Understood.”

At Dosen’s words, Roan bent.

A smile appeared in his mouth.

‘I will be able to go and find the travias spear.’

If he was to go to Bason village together with Dosen, he would have to leave the spear for after that.

‘Well, it wouldn’t matter anyways.’

The travias spear would only be found after 17 years, anyways.

And of course, the one that had found it back then was himself.

Soon, Dosen and the cavalrymen under him took the merchant slaves and went to the north.

When they couldn’t be seen anymore because of the dense forest, Ched called Roan.

“Roan. You take the front.”

“Yes.”

Roan replied shortly and moved his steps.

It was obvious for him, but the other cavalrymen also didn’t ride their horses.

They had given it to the village people whose condition was bad.

Clop. Clop.

The sound of the horse steps was heard nicely.

They got out of the dense forest, and after they walked out for a bit more, they saw a little village in the borders of a hill.

“It’s Trum village.”

Roan said after turning back to look at Ched.

“It’s a smaller village than what I have thought.”

Ched seemed to be surprised at the village he saw.

‘And because of that, no one could think that the travias spear would be in a place like this.’

Roan smiled bitterly and moved his feet.

As they approached the village, some guys with big bodies appeared.

“Who are you?”

They seemed to be surprised at the soldiers that were armored and with weapons that appeared at the village.

“Hello. I’m the commander of the 7th squad of rose troop that belongs to the Rinse kingdom.”

He shook his hands and explained everything.

“Ah! For that to.....”

The guys got surprised and put on a regrettable face.

They guided them inside the village along a bright smile.

“We will prepare you something to eat.”

With the order of the head of the village, some women prepared food and drinks.

They knew that if it wasn't for the rose troop, they would also have been taken by the slave merchants.

“We are really thankful. Really thankful.”

The people that sought safety after they got in the village sent thanking messages to the soldiers of the rose troop.

“No, no. We only did the obvious thing.”

Ched shook his hands and smiled brightly.

In that time, Roan met Lia's parents and told them the things Lia had done.

“You say that the reason we were able to get free was because of Lia?”

“Yes. Lia asked our commander to save the villages people. She is a really intelligent and brave kid.”

At Roan's words, Lia's parents put on an expression that seemed to have all of the happiness in the world.

Tears gathered in their eyes.

Then, Ched's voice was heard.

"After one hour of break, return to the squad."

At his words, Roan stood up.

He approached Ched and whispered in a low voice.

"I have come to Trum village in a really long while. Can I go to sightsee the village for some time?"

"Really?"

Ched nodded.

'He should have been bright around this zone because he had already come here.'

And there also were the merits Roan had accomplished, so he pleasantly permitted him.

"Come after you slowly look at it."

"Thank you."

Roan bent his head and moved his feet towards the inner side of the village.

‘Small villages like this one won’t change much even after a long while.’

He had visited Trum village after 17 years.

But the Trum village from back then wasn’t that much different to the Trum village he was seeing right now.

He pretended to be looking at the place, and moved towards the north.

‘It’s really amazing.’

Roan said after looking at a huge tree that was outside of the fences in the north.

The tree was so thick that three men had to surround it by holding hands, and it was twice as tall compared to the other trees.

On top of all, every time the wind blew and made the branches and the leaves collide, it tickled his ear.

Feeling strange.

Roan placed his hand on the strong and huge tree that was in front of him.

A rugged feeling.

Roan moved around it while still having his hand on it.

Touch.

In the tips of his fingers, he felt a fine bump.

‘It’s here.’

Roan’s eyes shone.

He touched the bum with the tip of his fingers and stuck close to the tree.

He scratched the tree with his fingers.

At that moment, a piece of wood falls in his palm.

A piece of wood that was as long as an adult arm.

In the exterior, it seemed to be an ordinary piece of wood, but actually it was a really hard piece of stone.

Roan put his hand on the place the piece of wood fell.

A secret place inside that huge tree.

What came inside of that was a strange shaped oxidized stick.

‘I found it.’

Roan put that stick in his waist and put back the fallen piece of wood in the tree.

Along with the grounding noise of the stone, the tree trunk recovered its original shape.

Roan evaded the eyes of the other people and sat down the tree.

A stick that was smaller than an adult’s arm.

It was as thick as a wrist, and although it was originally black in colour, now that it was oxidized, it was seen as a bright red.

‘The travias spear that was said to be made with a dragon’s magic metallic scale, dionium.’

Roan grabbed the end of the stick and squeezed it as if he was squeezing the laundry.

“Ugh.”

His face turned red and veins pops in his wrists.

After he put in all of his strength for a long while, a strange sound was heard.

Creek.

The sound of the oxidized parts breaking.

The tip of the spears separates in half and turns.

Clink.

Along with the sound of saw tooth running, the tip of the spear separated.

Cheeng.



At the same time, the sound of metal was heard and the blade of a sword raised.

Excluding a handful of length, sharp blades raised all around the stick.

Just like you are looking at a blade without defensive systems.

However you saw it, you didn't see it as a spear.

‘It's useless if you don't know how to use mana for this guy.’

Only by inserting mana does this guy show it's original appearance.

Roan smiled bitterly and twisted the tip of the spear in the opposite side.

Cheeng.

Along with the sound of metal, it became to be a stick that was covered in bright rust.

Roan stood up from the place with a satisfied expression.

‘Wait for a moment. When I learn how to use mana, I will use you without spare.’

He put the travias spear in his waist and smiled.

Roan's sights are directed to the south.

‘Potter region. If I go there, my life will change.’

However, now wasn't it.

If he went now, it would be meaningless.

‘Let's wait until summer.’

Until then, he bulks up his body while subjecting the monsters in Pedian's plain.

It was better to keep accumulating merits and have a stable position.

‘I still remember the subjugations of the monsters in Pedian's plain freshly.’

A battle that was really good to accumulate merits.

At least, he would be able to get promoted to squad commander or sub squad commander.

‘Good. Step by step, let's walk it diligently!’

Now, he won't make stupid choices.

In his past life, those stupid choices accumulated and he lived a mess of a life.

At that time, one thought passed through his head.

“Ah! Now that I see, that guy was also there!”

# Chapter 15 : The Ghost Of The Battlefield (1)

---

While you live life, there are a lot of choices you regret of.  
And Roan had a lot of those choices.

‘That guy was the same as me.’

A quite handsome face with blond and brown hair.  
The guy with slim and quick body.

‘Harrison.’

The spearman from the 7th troop of the thorn army was really close with Roan.

That guy also entered at the age of 18 like Roan and battled until he was 33.

‘He died by an arrow in the battle of Dems.’

Harrison, that died exactly 5 years before Roan.

And there was something he regretted even before he died.

<I had to become an archer instead of a spearmen>

That guy entered as spearman and battled as a spearman for 10 years.

He didn’t have outstanding skills, but even so, it wasn’t lacking.

However, the arrow he fired by coincidence completely changed

his life.

‘I didn’t know that his archery skills would be that good.’

Nobody knew.

And even Harrison himself didn’t know.

He became a squad commander after having grabbed the bow for only one month.

And after one year passed, he became an adjutant in the 7th corps of the black squad.

After 2 years passed, he became the best archer in the 7th corps.

People raised their thumbs after they saw the ability he had on firing arrows.

And at the same time, they said some lamenting words.

<If he had grabbed the bow in a younger age, he would have become the best archer in the continent.>

And that also remained as a regret for Harrison.

‘I will make him to be the best archer in the continent.’

Roan remembered the face of his old friend and bit his lower lip.

He also wanted to give him a new life.

‘If it’s him, he will become a good ally.’

To become a monarch, no, if he wanted to become a great

general, he needed to have good allies and subordinates.

Roan could vaguely know who would become good allies to a point.

‘For now, is it Pierce and Harrison?’

Pierce with the best talent for the spear, and Harrison with the best talent for the bow.

Just thinking about it, it was a good combination.

‘But even so, it would be difficult if my abilities fall back.’

Roan started to walk towards Ched and the cavalrymen and clenched his two fists.

He couldn’t also live this life with that much of an ability for a spearman.

‘If I can, I should become the strongest and best person. For spearmanship, archery, swordsmanship..... And if the strategies and tactics are perfect, all the more better.’

Many memories filled his head that enabled him to do all of those things.

He only needed to work hard.

An intense effort and without stop.

“We are moving!”

Ched yelled after he got up the horse.

Roan followed his back and gritted his teeth.

‘The monster subjugation in Pedian’s plain is a really intense battle.’

Surprise attacks, night raids, ambushes and fire attacks mess all of the battlefield.

‘I render great merits and retire for a while.’

If he wanted to go to the region of Potter, it was an unavoidable choice.

However, he couldn’t just retire as he pleased.

He had to render merits that would catch the eyes of a squad commander or the generals.

‘Let’s think about that when we return back.’

The fortunate thing was that he had left quite a good impression on squad captain Gale.

Thinking about many things, he reached the camp of the rose troop.

Dosen and the other squads still didn’t come back.

“You have done well.”

Gale, that received the report, ordered a new order along a satisfied expression.

To take the children safely to their parents.

“Oppa. Are mom and dad really safe?”

“Of course. They are resting in Trum village right now.”

Roan calmed down the children and got out of the camp.

When they reached Trum village again, the sun was almost setting.

“Lia!”

“Mom!”

A little girl that runs to her mother’s embrace.

Many reunions between the parents and their children happen all around.

Ched hit Roan’s shoulder while looking at that.

“We are fighting with our lives on the line to protect that. Right?”

Roan nodded silently instead of replying.

“I’m really thankful. Thank you.”

“Oppa! Thank you!”

The villages people and the children ran to them and bent their heads.

A happy and proud smile appears in the faces of Roan, Ched and the soldiers of the 5th squad.

When they started to give them food to express their gratitude, they quickly rode their horses.

“Eat it with the children.”

Ched left some cool words and kicked the horse.

Roan and the 5th squad followed his back and waved their hands towards the children.

‘Let’s not forget this feeling. The reason i’m trying to become a great commander and a monarch is not solely for me to eat and live well. It’s for everyone to live happily.’

His objective becomes a little hard.

Now he wasn’t only planning on becoming a monarch, but a good one.

It would be hard, but not impossible.

‘I will be able to do it if I work hard as hell.’

Determined light shines in his eyes.

That was confidence and conviction that he could do it.



\*\*\*\*\*

Dosen and the other squads returned only after a day had passed.

Gale had already organized everything before they came and at the same time, mobilized the army.

But of course, he didn't forget to compliment Dosen and the squads.

“Roan.”

While they were moving, Pierce approached him.

“Huh?”

“I'm curious about something.”

Roan looked at Pierce's big eyes and nodded.

Pierce continued talking with a bright face.

“Pedian's place is an important place even for our kingdom, so how could monsters frequent there?”

Pierce's words were true.

More than half of the crops harvested in Rinse kingdom came from Pedian's plain.

So it was difficult to believe that there would be monsters frequenting that important place.

“Those things gather in Pedian’s plain to look for things to eat.”

The monsters that suffered hunger in winter in the boundaries of the kingdom, comes to the Pedian’s plain in spring to look for food.

A real pain in the ass for the Rinse kingdom.

Only by subjugating the monsters would they not miss the season for the crops.

And because of that when it becomes spring, every year there would be a large scale monster subjugation in Pedian’s plain.

At that time, Pete that was one step in front of them, butted in.

“You know really well.”

Roan simply smiled.

Pete continued to say with a more serious face.

“This year’s subjugation will specially be much harder. Do you know why?”

At his words, Pierce shook his head.

‘For a guy that doesn’t even know why monster appear in Pedian’s plain, that’s a much more difficult question.’

Roan put on a bitter smile.

He looked at Pete’s eyes and replied.

“It’s because two months ago, the Byron kingdom succeeded in subjugating the monsters.”

“Oho.”

Pete exclaimed with a surprised expression.

Then, Pierce butted in.

“And why? What does the subjugation of the Byron kingdom have something to do?”

The reply came from Pete’s mouth instead of Roan’s.

“The guys of the Byron kingdom pushed the monsters to the south. To the side of our kingdom.”

Roan continued saying.

“The monsters that were pressed back came to our Rinse kingdom. And because of that, the number of the monsters that would gather in Pedian’s plain will be much more.”

“Ah.....”

Pierce frowned and let out a low exclamation.

“The guys from the Byron kingdom are bad guys.”

Roan didn't refute him and just shrugged his shoulders.

In the place of Byron kingdom, pushing the monsters away instead of annihilating them was much easier to do so, and they suffered less casualties.

However, Roan didn't say such words.

'Even so, it is true that we are at a loss because of them.'

At that time, the sound of a drum was heard from far away.

Boom!Boom!Boom!Boom!

The rose troop had finally reached Pedian's plain.

Big and small camps were extended without end in the plain.

"Wow."

"It's amazing."

Pierce, Glenn and the other newcomer soldiers exclaimed.

In the other side, Roan's eyes was still calm.

'First, it is important to know on what zone the rose troop is going to be stationed.'

Only then will he be able to guess the things that would happen from now on.

Roan's sight fell to the west of the plain.

‘It would be better if it was the west.....’

He was familiar with that place.

He clearly remembered where the nest and the camp of the monsters were, when would those things move to where.

‘Because in my past life, I fought there.’

At that time, the rose troop changed directions.

‘As expected.....’

Roan looked the place to where they were going and bit his lower lip.

# Chapter 16 : The Ghost Of The Battlefield (2)

---

‘It’s not the best, but it should be the second best.’

The place the rose troop was heading to was a little to the southwest to the front lines.

Although it was unfortunate that he couldn’t know the battles against the monsters to the best, but even so, this place was much better compared to the east.

‘On top of that, this place seems to be safe, but actually it’s the same as the frontlines.’

The rose troop thinking that this place was separated to the frontlines would change in 4 days.

No one knew right now, but the monsters were charging to Pedian’s plain with the shape of a horse shoe.

‘The attack will start in the north.’

And quite a lot of numbers on top of that.

So because of that, the commanders of the corps move their squads to the north.

And thanks to that, the middle becomes weak.

The monsters charge to the center from the east and the west as if they were waiting for it.

‘From that moment, this place will also become the front line.’

Roan gripped his spear with strength.

‘First, it’s important to know if the monster subjugation tactics happen as my memories.’

It would be difficult if he came all the way here, and things happened differently to his memories.

His eyes calmly close.

\*\*\*\*\*

Could he call it fortune?

The monster subjugation this time was exactly the same as his past life.

‘It has been 4 days since the main forces went to the north.’

If his memories didn’t fail him, tonight, the monsters would appear in the plain’s from the west and the east.

‘If I just leave it like this, the squad that’s the farthest to the east will get annihilated.’

It was important to accumulate merits, but it was also important to not let people die.

‘I have to announce the appearance of the monsters.’

The method was simple.

He just had to make a simple act.

Roan gripped his spear and went out of his camp.

“Extra training?”

The voice of squad commander Tane.

Roan slightly nodded.

“Yes.”

“Are you also planning to run in the west of the plains?”

“I’m thinking to.”

At Roan’s reply, Tane nodded and shook his hand.

“I will be going then.”

After a short salute, he got out of the camp.

Whoosh.

The smell of the battlefield tickles his nose.

Roan saluted the squad members with his eyes and got out of the camp.



He saw the plains in front of him.

‘It will also be the last I see this scene.’

Now, hell will unleash in this place.

Roan took in a deep breath and started to run lightly.

He passed the camps of many squads and went to the south of the plains.

Swhooosh.

The trees and weeds that get shaken because of the west wind.

A refreshing aura is unleashed by the forest.

‘Those guys were hidden beyond this forest.’

Clever monsters.

Roan spent some time around here and returned to the camp of the rose troop.

His face was filled with anxiousness and urgency.

“Commander Gale!”

He didn’t even seek for the squad commanders, but he directly sought the troop commander.

After that last slave merchant case, Gale was putting on more attention to Roan.

It wasn't enough with directly calling him to speak, but even visited his squad.

<Because of you, only we have it difficult.>

Pete scolded him a little, but in Roan's position, Gale's interest was thankful.

“What happened?”

The soldiers that were guarding Gale's tent, frowned.

“It's an important thing.”

Roan still had an urgent face.

The guards also knew about the things Roan did until now, so they couldn't just ignore him.

“Wait for a moment.”

One of the guards entered the tent and came back.

“Go in.”

“Thank you.”

Roan bent his head and got in the tent.

“Oh! Roan. There’s an important thing?”

Gale, that was working in his table, asked while smiling brightly.  
In the other side, Roan still put on the urgent face act.

“It’s the monsters. There are monsters in the west side of the plains.”

Gale immediately stood up.

Bang.

The wooden chair falls and rolls.  
Gale looked at Roan while frowning.

“Monsters? There really are monsters in the west?”

Roan bit his lower lip and nodded.

“Yes. And it seems to be a large scale one.”

“Ma, maybe…….”

Gale’s face was still frowning.  
Roan nodded and continued saying.

“They are probably planning to do a surprise attack, aiming the weak middle.”

“They sure will.”

Gale nodded and grabbed Roan’s shoulders.

“You have brought me a really important information. If we were careless, he would have taken a blow.

He believed in Roan.

Because the past few days, he had held conversations with him and got to know how much of an outstanding soldier was he.

And because of that, he couldn’t just ignore him.

“First, I will have to send the scout team and grasp their exact location. Can you go with them?”

“Of course.”

Roan nodded.

Gale smiled brightly and tapped his shoulders.

“Good. Then, make you in charge of the scout team.”

He called the adjutants and made them gather the scouts.

‘This guy again?’

‘Is his skill good or his luck is good?’

‘How can he discover monsters everywhere he goes?’

The adjutants stared at Roan with surprise and jealousy.

‘My face will get pierced.’

Roan smiled bitterly and hanged down his head.

“We have finished gathering the scout team.”

The rescuing voice.

Roan bent towards Gale and the adjutants and went out of the tent.

‘Is a lucky guy. A lucky guy.’

Gale looked at Roan’s back and showed a gratified smile.

“Then, I will have to go to the commander of the corps.”

“Are you already going to make the report? Why don’t you wait until the scout team returns?”

The detaining of the adjutants.

Gale shook his head.

“It’s’ a simple report. I just have to tell them that I sent a scout

team because there was suspicious movement.”

Victory and defeat of a battle could also be determined with these small reports.

Gale got out of his camp leaving behind his adjutants.

The adjutants that were in the camp let out a sigh and shook their heads.

“Isn’t he trusting the words of only one soldier?”

“On top of that, he’s a newcomer.”

“He was just lucky.”

Pouring complaints and discontent voices.

In the middle of that, Dosen was just there with his mouth shut.

‘That he was lucky? I wonder. I don’t think that’s the case.’

A faint smile appears in his mouth.

\*\*\*\*\*

“Sh.”

Roan hid in the weeds and put his finger on his lips.

The scout soldiers that were following him also lower their bodies.

As they passed through the forest, they saw the plains that was below the hill.

Swhooosh.

The weeds that were as tall as their waists get shaken because of the west wind.

At first glance, a peaceful scenery.

However, Roan saw the monsters while hiding his body in the weeds.

“An amazing number.”

The oldest one among the scout soldiers, Benson, approached. He had also discovered the monsters while hiding in the weeds.

“They will probably also be hiding until the end of the plains.”

Roan pointed to where the hill was elevated.

Benson nodded and vaguely finished counting.

“At least, there would be 5 thousand.”

Roan nodded instead of replying.

‘It’s true that there were only 5 thousand at the first night raid. But after that, the number increased.’

The monsters that were surrounding Pedian's plain in the shape of a horse foot.

As time passes, the numbers of them skyrocket.

'It's because of those bastards from the Byron kingdom.'

Benson's voice was heard.

"When will they attack?"

"It's going to be tonight without a doubt."

Roan said with a voice that was full of certainty.

Benson frowned.

"How so?"

"They are hiding their bodies in the weeds without even having prepared a camp. It's because there's no much time left until the attack."

"Then, they can attack immediately?"

Benson put on a preoccupied face.

Roan shook his head.

"They are too exhausted to do that."

"They are too exhausted?"



“Yes. They should have ran here without stop to make a surprise attack to the weakened center.”

It was the truth.

Just like the monsters that were making an uproar in the north, these monsters were also located in the north even a few days ago.

“Originally, they should have taken place in the north of the plain in this shape.

He brought both of his fingers to face each other and made a horizontal shape.

Continued by that, taking the point where each of the fingers touch, he bends his fingers to make a shape of a horse shoe.

“However, right now, it’s in this shape. The place where my fingers touch is the north that’s facing the main forces of our army, and the rest had surrounded us from west to east in the shape of a horse shoe.

Benson let out a low admiring exclamation.

“Ah! The guys that were in the north rushed to the east and the west.”

“Yes. Taking into account the time, they should have charged here without even having been able to sleep.”

At Roan’s words, Benson’s voice gets lower.

“Good. Then, it’s certain that they will attack tonight. We have to report this to the squad and prepare for the surprise attack.”

At his words, Roan didn’t say anything.

‘No, that’s not a good method.’

His eyes chase the monsters hiding in the weeds.

A chilly light can be seen in his eyes.

‘What we need right now is not defense, but attack.’

## Chapter 17 : The Ghost Of The Battlefield (3)

---

“So you are saying that there are at least 5 thousand, right?”

Gale, that returned after the brief report, frowned at the story of the scout team.

“Yes. They will probably make a night raid tonight.”

Benson told the story just like he had heard from Roan.

And he even made the horse shoe with his fingers.

Roan looked at that and smiled bitterly.

‘There are bastards that try to take away your merits wherever you go.’

In his past life, he had always suffered from those guys.

But now, it was different.

‘I am taking my own merits.’

Meanwhile, Benson had finished talking and had bent his head.

“That’s why we have to prepare for the night raid.”

“Mmm.”

Gale frowned and fell in his thoughts.

Then, Roan stood in the front.

“Commander.”

“Hmm?”

“Rather than preparing for the night raid, it’s going to be better to attack immediately.”

“Immediately?”

As Gale asked back, Roan continued speaking without even a trace of hesitation.

“They are in a really exhausted state. There’s no need to wait for them to recover some stamina. On top of that, if more time passes, the number of the monsters will increase. Because they will also be charging here from the north without stop. On top of all.....”

He glanced at Benson once and made the horse shoe shape with his fingers.

“We have a camp in this Pedian plain right now. And because of that, the rear part, that is the south is open.”

The horseshoe slowly closes.

“If we just let the monsters like this.....”

The palms of his hands meet each other.

The horseshoe shape now became a round one.

Roan showed his hands to Gale and continued speaking.

“We will end up getting surrounded.”

“Mmm.”

A thinking sound comes from Gale’s mouth.

‘It’s not only now, but he also saw the things that will happen from now on.’

He nodded and stood up from his place.

“Roan.”

“Yes.”

“The words that you said until now, will you be able to say it in front of the commander of the army corps?”

An opportunity.

Roan forcefully gulped down the laughter that was trying to come out.

“Of course.”

“Good. Then let’s go to the corps commander.”

As Gale walked one step ahead of him, Roan followed his back.

The face of Benson he had glanced at, was so contorted it seemed like he had chewed shit.

‘That’s why if you are trying to steal the merits of the others, you have to steal it perfectly.’

As Gale and Roan got out of the tent, the adjutants let out a sigh.

“For a newcomer soldier to already meet the corps commander.”

“Yeah. I still haven’t seen him until now.”

“Isn’t that bastard going to be promoted in a fast speed if he keeps it like this?”

They didn’t feel good.

Then, they saw Benson that was standing without knowing what to do.

“Benson. Are you getting similar to that bastard called Roan?”

“What bullshit did you say about the monsters attacking us in a horseshoe shape but just having to prepare for their attack?”

“Why is the military discipline like this nowadays?”

Benson bent his head at the annoyance and reprimanding of the adjutants.

‘Damn. I should have just kept my mouth shut.’

Even if he regretted it, a useless thing.

The result of a choice was the responsibility of one own.

The choice of Benson trying to steal the merits of another ended in a huge failure.

\*\*\*\*\*

“It’s reasonable.”

Aaron Tate, that was from the aristocracy and at the same time the commander of the 7th army corps, rubbed his chin and nodded.

‘It’s amazing for a novice.’

When Gale first brought the newcomer soldier, he was quite disinterested.

But the moment he heard the story of that guy, he couldn’t hide the amazement.

A novice newcomer soldier was reading the flow of the battle and the war.

But just because of that, he couldn’t show his emotions for being from the aristocracy.

He continued speaking still with a disinterested face.

“It will certainly be better to sweep them up this time.”

Aaron gathered the squad commanders.

“Monsters appeared in the west of the plain.”

He transmitted to them the story he heard from Roan and revealed the attack tactics.

“Send this notice to the other corps and prepare for battle the fastest possible.”

“Yes! Understood!”

The squad squad commanders reply in one voice.

Aaron’s sight is directed to Roan.

“And you.”

“Yes!”

Roan replied while showing his good military discipline.

Aaron nodded with a satisfied expression.

“When this battle ends I will give you a reward according to your merits.”

“Yes! Understood!”

It was just as he wanted.



Roan followed Gale and got out of the tent.

“You also hurry and prepare for battle.”

“Yes. Understood.”

Roan replied and went to his camp along with him.

“Why did you get so late today?”

As soon as he got in the camp, Tane approached.

Roan put on a bitter smile and replied.

“You should all prepare for battle.”

“Prepare for battle?”

Tane frowned and asked back.

All of the soldiers that were having their relaxing time looked at Roan.

Then, a loud voice outside of their camp was heard.

“Squad commanders gather! Squad commanders gather!”

At that voice, Tane frowned.

“Did you discover something again?”

Roan laughed awkwardly and replied shortly.

“Monsters.”

\*\*\*\*\*

Hoo. Hoo.

Hot steam shakes the weeds.

Thousands of soldiers move slowly with their bodies lowered.

Swoosh.

Shaking weeds.

Adjutant Jack, that was leading the spearmen, raised his right fist.

At that moment, the spearmen that were advancing while holding their breaths stop their steps.

Swoooo.

The west wind blows.

The plain that extends below the hill.

Between the moving weeds, they could see the monsters that were deeply asleep.

Gulp.

Everybody gulped dry saliva.

A nervous moment.

A heavy silence presses their shoulders.

Adjutant Jones, that was leading the archers, raised his right hand.

Tense.

The sound of the wood twisting and the body of the bow that bends.

Jones looked at the adjutants of the other squads.

Then, the hand that falls looking at the front.

Spat.

Jones's hand also cuts the air.

Shoot shoot shoot shoot!

20 troops, arrows that are fired from 100 squads at the same time.

Two thousand or more arrows cover the sky.

Sweeeee!

A sharp cry that hits your ear.

The arrow rain drenches the ground.

Hit hit hit hit!

“Kugh!”

“Kohong!”

“Grr!”

The monsters that were sleeping without knowing anything let out cries.

Sweeee!

A rain shower falls again.

Dududududu.

At the same time, a sound shaking the grounds was heard.

Roan looked at his back while lying on the ground.

The cavalrymen that are charging while cutting through the wind.

Behind them, a white dust cloud surges.

Puuuuuuuu!

The sound horn trumpet informs the start of the battle.

Dududududu!

The cavalrymen passed the infantry and charged through.

The muscled body of the cavalrymen cuts through the wind.

Booom!

A charge as if they were planning to destroy everything that was in their way.

The cavalrymen charge through the ground where arrow rain fell.

Booom!

“Kuhong!”

“Keee!”

The monsters that get bounced off every direction along with a cry.

“Attack!”

Jack, that was glaring at the front, stood up and yelled.

“Attack!”

“Attack!”

The spearmen that were holding their breaths all stood up and yelled a warcry.

And Roan was also among them.

“Attack!”

He yelled with all of his strength and charged through the front.

Among the dust cloud that was raised by the cavalrymen, they could see the resisting monsters.

Grip.

He puts strength in his hand.

The spearmen, with Roan included, charge through the dust cloud.

# Chapter 18 : The Ghost Of The Battlefield (4)

---

‘The weather is fucking good.’

A 35 year old veterans soldier Tarem looked at the blue sky while lying on the ground.

‘Damn. To suffer a complete victory from some humans.’

He touched his hard chin and frowned.

A long and terrible blade scar below his chin.

‘If the scar was at least 1cm deeper, I would have died.’

Grind.

He grinds his teeth.

‘Bastards from the Byron kingdom.....’

His four canine teeth shine acutely.

‘I will certainly take revenge with putting my honor of being an orc warrior in the line.’

The orc warrior Tarem, that came from Crack village located at the south of Byron kingdom forced an absolute defeat in the fight

against the Byron kingdom last winter.

And because of that, he and his tribesmen could only flee to the south.

When he thought that it was all the end, he met that guy.

‘Supreme commander of the orc alliances in the north of Rinse kingdom, Rak.’

Rak gathered the monsters and the orcs that were spread in the northern parts of the Rinse kingdom and was preparing to attack Pedian’s plain.

The truth of the monsters and the orcs attacking Pedian’s plain that was in the northern parts of Rinse kingdom was something even Tarem knew about.

Rak lent a hand to the excellent warrior Tarem.

<If you attack Pedian’s plain together with me, I will help you get revenge to those bastards from Byron kingdom.>

A tempting proposal.

Tarem grabbed Rak’s hand without any hesitation.

And he went to the southern parts of Pedian plain with the warriors he was leading and some warriors Rak lent him.

‘We raid the human villages in Pedian’s plain and secure food and weapons.’

When they secured a plentiful amount, they will return to their



hometown and get revenge to the guys of Byron kingdom.

This was Tarem's plan.

When his revenge towards the guys of Byron kingdom was burning.

‘Huh?’

He heard a strange sound.

Sweeee.

The sound of something sharp cutting through the air.

Tarem just raised his head while still lying on the ground.

“Ugh!”

At that moment, his eyes widen as as if it rips.

The black arrows that cover the blue sky.

“Damn!”

Tarem grabbed his shield and shrank his body.

“It's the enemy! The enemy!”

A loud voice.

Sounds of getting up was heard everywhere.

However, the actions of these guys that just got up from their dreams was sloppy.

Shoot shoot shoot shoot!

The arrow rain drenches the ground.

“Kugh!”

“Grr.”

Dying sounds roll the ground.

And the arrow rain continued once more.

And after that, a sound shaking the ground.

Dudududu.

As he extended his head beyond the shield he saw the charging cavalrymen between the dust cloud.

“Prepare for battle! Prepare for battle!”

He yelled with all of his strength, but the orcs and the monsters couldn't think straight.

‘Damn! For us to be the ones suffering a surprise attack instead!’

Tarem grinded his teeth and took out his well polished chinese war sword.

“Bring it! You humans! I will show you the strength of an orc warrior!”

A strong yell shakes the battlefield.

Hit hit hit hit!

The cavalrymen charge through while bouncing off the monsters.

“Ugh!”

Tarem swung his war sword towards a cavalryman that was passing next to him.

Swish.

His blade cuts through the body and passes through.

Heeng!

The cavalryman that was charging through really well fell to the

ground.

Tarem scattered the white dust and charged through the cavalrymen that was on the ground.

“Die!”

The tip of his war sword cuts through the air.

“Kugh.”

The cavalryman couldn't even evade it and just closed his eyes firmly.

Then, a spear appeared passing through the dust.

Kang!

A clear sound of metal.

The war sword bounces off after being deflected by the spear.

“Kugh.”

Tarem grinded his teeth and turned his head to look at the owner of that spear.

A childish face and a short physique.

At least, for Tarem, he seemed to be a novice.

“A fucking novice dares to!”

Tarem spun his war sword and slashed it down fiercely.

At that moment, the spear that was standing firmly bends like a stream of water and moves crossway.

“Hup!”

Tarem gulped some air at the unexpected movements and raised his shield.

Tang!

The spear collides with the shield and a heavy noise is heard.

The spear that bounced off the shield spins and flies directed to Tarem’s back.

“Damn.”

Tarem bent down and evaded the spear.

However, the movements of the spear still continued like a stream of water.

‘His face is that of a new novice but his skills are that of a veteran soldier!’

Tarem took some air and charged through.

‘I just have to get inside his range.’

The spear was long.

And because of that, it was effective in a long range, but it was difficult to use it in close range.

Spat!

The spear passes through after slicing the wrist.

‘Kugh.’

He felt a sharp pain, but he grinded his teeth and endured it.

‘I just have to close the distance!’

A bold charge.

Because of that, he could close the distance to that he wanted.

No, it was even closer to what he wanted.

And that was because the novice was charging through along with him.

“Huh?”

The guy that suddenly appeared in front of him.

Tarem got perplexed at the distance that was even hard to swing his war sword.

At that time, a sharp feeling was felt in his chest.

He slightly looked down to look at his left chest.

And there was a short sword the size of a palm stabbed there.

“Fu, fuck. Impossible.”

Curses flow out.

Tarem raised his head and looked at the eyes of that novice spearman fixedly.

That novice soldier smiled brightly and turns his short sword angularly.

Kugugu.

The sound of his bones grinding and his flesh tearing.

“Kuaaaaaa!”

A yell flows out from Tarem’s mouth.

Hit.

The novice spearman hits Tarem’s abdomen with his right leg.

And the short sword that was stabbed in his chest gets pulled out and blood flows.

Fall.

Tarem that fell to the ground.

Light disappears from his eyes and the blue sky becomes darker.

‘Am I going to die?’

Then, a sharp spear flies through his eyes.

‘Fuck.’

The curse he couldn’t spit rolls in his mouth.

Stab.

The spear pierced Tarem’s face accurately.

The owner of that spear, the novice spearman mumbled with casually.

“To call me a fucking novice. To a person that roamed the battlefield for 20 years.”

Novice spearman.

That was no other than Roan.



‘We are winning one sidedly.’

The flow of the battlefield flowed to the side of the subjugation team.

The army of the 5 thousand monsters that was composed by orcs and goblins still couldn’t get ahold of themselves and couldn’t properly resist.

‘I can’t fall back here.’

Just because it was a one sided flow, it didn’t mean that he couldn’t accumulate merits.

He also had to show something that would stand above the others.

‘On top of that, this isn’t all of their army.’

Grip.

Roan gripped his spear and charged through.

Tat!

He charged through the messy battlefield.

Spat!

The spear pierces through the air and dances.

The spear stabs or hits the monsters without stop.

Attack and defense.

The beauty of spearmanship that lets you do both of those things at the same time.

Roan was moving without stop for his spear to not move unnaturally.

Slash! Stab! Spat!

“Kugh!”

“Kgh!”

“Kek!”

The blade of the spear slices and the tip of the spear pierces.

For those guys that were closing in, he hit them and kicked them and after he made some distance, he pierced their necks with his spear.

“Wow. Look at that guy.”

“Isn’t he the newcomer from the 13th squad?”

“What spearmanship is like that for a newcomer bastard?”

The soldiers that slashed down the orcs and were taking some breaths looked at Roan and mumbled.

Spearmanship that’s concise and flows without stop.

It was hard to think that it was spearmanship from a newcomer

soldier that has just finished his training.

“Isn’t he better than our squad commander?”

“Last time, I saw the skills of the commander of the 5th squad, and I think that it resembles just like his.”

“Wow! Did you see? He hit the chin of a monster that was charging in with the end of his spear and after he spins, he smashes its head!”

“I saw. I saw. Those skills aren’t something that a mere newcomer should be able to do.”

The soldiers say.

And that was the same for the soldiers of the 13th squad.

A proud expression appears in their faces.

‘A lucky bastard entered our 13th squad.’

‘Kukuku. Look at how dumbfounded the guys from the other squad are.’

‘The guy that shows himself the most in this battlefield is Roan.’

But of course, there was also Pierce that was confronting the orcs with quite good skills, but that guy gave the feeling of rather than doing battle, he was training.

An excessively clean feeling.

‘If you don’t kill them like Roan, it means that you don’t have that much of a motivation.’

Squad commander Tane smacked his lips as if it was regretful.

But actually, that was because the kinds of orcs were a really easy opponent for him, but there was no one that knew this truth.

No, there was just one person that knew it. Roan.

‘He seems to have come to an excursion.’

Roan looked at Pierce that was massacring the orcs in a relaxed way and mumbled.

‘The kinds of orcs should be really easy opponents for you.’

He took in a breath after disposing of two goblins that were charging at him easily.

‘But where is Glenn?’

Roan frowned.

Because he couldn’t see Glenn among the 13th squad members.

Roan, that was searching for Glenn in that battlefield, frowned.

That guy seemed to have swept away to the front lines when the cavalrymen and the infantry charged through.

‘Damn! Not there!’

Roan bit his lower lips and kicked the ground.

Tane, that looked at Roan leaving the ranks, shouted to him.

“Roan! Where are you going!”

Roan replied without even looking back.

“I’m going to rescue Glenn!”

# Chapter 19 : The Ghost Of The Battlefield (5)

---

The reason why Roan was roaming in the center and in the rear facing the goblins and the orcs.

Even while he had the clear objective of having to accumulate merits, the reason he didn't go to the front lines.

‘It's because there are those bastards.’

An existence triple the size of a human that has the strength to smash a rock with a punch.

‘Ogre.’

Roan's face froze stiff.

Although he didn't remember the exact numbers, there certainly were ogres in the army that attacked from the east and the west.

The guys that slowly appeared in the rear while the orcs and the goblins were facing the humans in the front lines.

The ogres splattered the soldiers with an overwhelming strength.

‘Will I be able to face them?’

Roan shook his head.

With his current skills, facing an ogre alone was impossible.

And because of that, he was planning to leave them to soldiers of

the 7th special squads that were in the forefront.

‘But why are you there?’

Roan’s eyes chased Glenn that was still getting wiped to the forefront.

‘If that guy dies, Celine will get sad.’

He didn’t want to see her sad.

Roan’s feet became faster.

“Glenn!”

He yelled while charging through the front.

Only then did Glenn, that was looking at the front with an absent minded expression turn to look back.

“Roan!”

That guy smiled brightly because of the relief he got when he saw someone he knew.

Roan smirked at that stupid and honest appearance and laughed.

‘Do you know the situation we currently are?’

When he was criticizing something that wasn't a critic inwardly.  
The cry he didn't want to ever hear hits his ear.

“Kuooooooooong!”

The feeling of his flesh getting torn.  
It was the ogres.

‘Damn.’

Roan bit his lower lips.  
He could see.

The huge green thing that surged upside of the warriors that  
were sweeping the frontline.

‘At least, they should be at least 50.’

Then, an ogre pierced through the special squad and charged  
forward.

A situation where Glenn was in front of them.

“Glenn!”

Roan shouted and flung his body.

“Kuooooooooong!”



A club cuts through the wind along with a cry.

“Ughhh.”

Glenn froze while still holding his spear with his two big arms.

‘Kugh!’

Roan’s arm barely grabs Glenn’s waist.

Boom.

The both of them rolled in the floor.

Bang.

At that moment, the huge club smashes the place where Glenn was just now.

Splash.

Rock scraps bounce off.

“Uuuuuuu.”

Glenn had a scared white face.

Roan hit his cheek with a lot of strength.

Slap!

A light sound.

“Glenn. Get ahold of yourself! We are going to die like this!”

Juuuk.

Then, the ogre that hit the empty space raised his club.

Roan grabbed his collar and forcefully lifted him up.

“Run like you are going to die and only looked in front!”

An action like he was throwing him.

Glenn fell back staggeringly and looked at Roan.

Roan yelled with all of his strength.

“Run!”

At that sound, Glenn nodded and ran towards the rear.

Then, a heavy noise rang in his ear.

Fuuuush.

‘Kugh!’

Roan instinctively threw himself.

Boom!

The club smashes the place he was just now.

‘I also have to es.....’

Roan that was about to run towards the rear flinched and gritted his teeth.

Because the orcs and the goblins were blocking his path.

‘Damn.’

Strength is applied in his hand by its own.

The orc that appeared out of nowhere and had his four canine teeth springing out said with a rough voice.

“Human. Your neck..... Grr.”

Stab.

The spear pierces through the neck of the orc.

He didn't have the leisure to listen at the words of the orc.

Roan forced his path in between the orcs and the goblins.

'If I do this, that ogre won't be able to attack me as it wishes.'

But unfortunately, that guess was wrong.

Fling!

The ogre smashed down his club without caring at all that there were orcs and goblins.

"Damn!"

Roan hit the goblins with the end of his spear and twisted his body.

Boom!

The club smashes five goblins to the ground and makes them become a pulp.

'Crazy bastard.'

Roan gritted his teeth and flung his spear.

Spat!

The spear slices the wrist of the ogre.

“Kuooooong!”

That guy grabs his wrist along with a cry.

Roan quickly climbed over the club and he ostracized the orcs and the goblins.

Then, a shadow appears over his head.

As he turned to look, a huge fist approached him while cutting through the air.

“Kugh.”

Roan gritted his teeth and flung his body to the right.

Boom!

The fist smashes the place he was before.

“Kuooooooooong!”

The ogre cried as if it became enraged for having hit the empty ground and glared at Roan.

“Block them!”

“Kill!”

Then, the special squad approached him while holding their weapons.

However, just because of that he couldn't get relieved.

‘Annoying things.’

Roan looked at the orcs and goblin that already followed his back and bit his lower lip.

Spat!

The spear shakes and the tip of it draws a flower in the air.

Stab. Slice. Stab.

At the blade and the tip of the spear, the orcs and the goblins become a cold corpse and fall to the ground.

‘Kugh.’

As he forcefully made those spear skills continuously, his palm hurt.

However, he couldn't stop the movements.

Roan turned his body and cut the wrist of the ogre deeply.

Slice.

“Kuooooooooong!”

It let out a cry that was filled with pain.

Raise.

The ogre was trying to smash Roan with his huge foot.

Then, the special squad approached him and cut off its skin with blades and spears.

“Kuooooooooong!”

It stepped down along with a cry and made struggling movements.

The ogre couldn't think straight at the attacks of the courageous soldiers.

‘Now.’

Roan gritted his teeth and after he evaded the ogre's foot, he went below its crotch.

He could see the big and precious thing of the ogre between the loose piece of leather.

‘Die.’

Stab.

Roan’s spear pierces the important part.

“Kuaaaaaaaaaa!”

A different cry until now.

The ogre grabbed his crotch with both of his hands and kneeled down.

Boom.

A heavy noise was heard and a dust cloud raises.

Roan quickly got out of its crotch and after he stabs its side, he raises it pointing the sky.

Puck.

The spear gets stabbed in the nape of the ogre’s neck.

“Kuooooooooong!”

The ogre let out a cry and flung its fist.



‘Kugh!’

Roan fell back while dropping the spear but attacked it again.

In the middle of that, the other soldiers shot arrows without stop.

Shoot shoot shoot shoot!

Arrows that get stuck in it’s hard skin.

“Kuong!”

The strength of the cry becomes weaker.

Roan gripped his spear with strength and placed the end of the spear in his chest.

At the same time, he forced the spear in with all of his strength.

Kugugugu.

The spear that was stuck in its nape carved in between the hard flesh and skin.

“Kuog.”

The ogre didn’t even have the strength to fling his fist and was getting slower.

Stab.

In the end, Roan's spear perfectly pierces through the neck of the ogre.

"Grr."

A dying sound.

The huge body of the ogre falls.

Boom.

Dust cloud raises along with a heavy sound.

Roan gripped the spear slippery blood of the ogre drenches his hands.

Suug.

As he plucked out the spear, the body of the ogre flinches.

As he looked at the battlefield, the remaining ogres were already being dealt with.

'I was lucky.'

Roan looked at the ogre that was fallen below his feet and took in a deep breath.

If the special squad hadn't come charging through, his life could have been in danger.

Then, a glad to hear voice was heard.

“Roan!”

“We have come!”

The soldiers of the 13th squad including squad commander Tane and vice squad commander Lander.

They came charging through the goblins and the orcs with a fierce vigor.

“Kuegh!”

“Kugh!”

The bastards that fall without having the chance to resist.

“Roan. Are you okay?”

Pete hit his shoulders and asked.

Roan caught his breath and nodded.

Tane that came a bit late smirked and hit his chest.

“You were the one that was going to die while saving Glenn.”

Roan smiled bitterly and asked.

“What happened with Glenn?”

At his words, Tane pointed to the back side of the squad with his chin.

‘Ah.....’

Glenn was there.

And Oliver was defending the zone so as no one fell behind again.

“By the way.....”

Tane spoke after looking at the fallen ogre.

“Did you also kill an ogre?”

Roan smiled bitterly and shook his head.

“No. I have just finished it when it was already done.”

At his words, Pete slapped his back.

Puk!

“I saw everything while coming here! You piercing the ogre’s

crotch and stabbing your spear in its nape! You were the one to catch this!”

Then, behind them, an unfamiliar voice was heard.

“He’s right. It is right that this ogre was killed by that soldier.”

The owner of the voice was from Richard, the one leading the special 7th squad. He looked at Roan’s eyes fixedly.

“What’s your name?”

“It’s Roan.”

Richard nodded and asked with a voice full of strength.

“Roan. Don’t you want to move over to our special 7th squad?”

## Chapter 20 : The Ghost Of The Battlefield (6)

---

It was too much for Roan.

“Squad commander Richard. Even though you are from the special squad, isn’t this too much?”

The person that elevated his voice was Gale.

“Squad commander Gale. Are you getting angry at me?”

A low voice but with strength.

Gale coughed and smacked his lips.

“Ahem. Anyways, we can’t give you Roan.”

At those words, Richard shook his head as if it was stifling him.

“It seems like you don’t know how outstanding Roan’s spearmanship is. Roan’s skills isn’t one to be at a normal squad as a low ranked spearman.”

Expectation fills his eyes.

‘It’s really amazing for it to be skills from an 18 year old novice. If he’s polished well, he may become a powerful person such as Rale Baker.’

If you were a commander that lead a troop, it was human nature to want to have a weapon.

Then, Gale that was hesitating, abruptly yelled.

“Who, who’s a low ranked spearman?”

Richard frowned.

“I’m talking about Roan. I know that he’s a normal spearman with no assigned positions.”

At his words, Gale grinned and shook his head.

“When is that story of? There are the merits Roan accumulated, and because he had also rendered great amount of help, I was planning to give him the position of squad commander.”

In that instant, it was obvious for Richard, but Roan and the rose troop army that were also listening put on a surprised expression.

‘Squad commander? Already?’

Roan felt his heart beating.

It was true that he had accumulated quite a few merits with the goblin army, slave merchants and also in this surprise attack, but even so he was still an 18 year old novice spearman that has just finished his training.

“Tro, troop commander!”

The urgent voices of the adjutants.

Gale looked at them as if ordering them to shut up.

“Are you out of your mind?”

Richard asked back with a composed voice.

Even if he had his merits and his skills were excellent, it was still excessive to appoint an 18 year old novice as a squad commander.

‘Because leading your underlings isn’t only done with skills.’

The squad commanders lead 20 plus soldiers.

Because of that, one needed the leadership to be able to lead the squad members in the battle field with experience.

So it was difficult to expect that from Roan that had just experienced the battlefield two or three times.

But of course, this was Richard’s thought.

Actually, Roan was an experienced soldier that had roamed the battlefield for 20 years.

‘Even if I do say it, no one will believe me. Anyways.....’

Roan put on a bitter smile and started to remember.



‘The first time I became squad commander.....Was it 15 years from now on?’

Quite a late promotion.

His friends at that time were already at least adjutants or troop commanders.

Or they had retired soon and returned to their hometown to farm.

Roan was the only one that roamed the battlefield as a normal soldier.

‘But to become a squad commander so soon.....’

A bewildering yet overflowing with joy feeling.

Then, Gale’s voice was heard.

“I am out of my mind. I’m planning to add one more squad with this opportunity.”

“And how are you going to fill the squad members?”

“There are squads that suffered in a big way in this battle.”

At Gale’s reply, Richard frowned.

“Are you saying that you are going to gather squad members from other squads as one?”

“Yes. You can see that the 42nd squad is a union squad.”

An unobstructed reply.

Richard looked at Gale's eyes fixedly.

'It seems like you don't want him to get taken.'

In the end, he let out a sigh and shook his head.

"If you are willing to go up to that point I will fall back."

Richard looked at Roan.

"If you need some help, come and look for me anytime."

Roan bent his head instead of replying.

Richard moved his feet and when he looked at the dispirited adjutants, he shook his head.

"You too will have it real hard."

Incomprehensible words.

But the adjutants slightly bend their heads as if they had understood enough.

As Richard walked out, Kenny, that had the fiercest temperament stood out to try to hold back Gale.

"Sir commander. I think that the seat of squad commander for an 18 year old novice is too excessive."

The other adjutants also stand up.

“That’s right. Why don’t you give him the seat of vice squad commander of the 13th squad?”

“Or raising his salary should also be good.”

However Gale wasn’t planning on stepping back.

‘I will certainly keep the words I said.’

He looked at the adjutants with fierce eyes.

“I have no plans on changing my word. Kenny, Jack and Dosen, go to the other squads and bring in some squad members. The squad commander for the 42nd squad shall be Roan.”

Gale’s sight is directed to Roan.

“Roan. You can do it well right?”

At those words, Roan slightly bent his head.

“I can do it well.”

He didn’t say that he would try his best, or will work hard.

Will do it well.

This situation needed those words right now, and he was also confident.

Gale nodded with a satisfied expression.

Then, Roan raised his head and after glancing at the cold adjutants, he spoke with a low voice.

“Um but.....”

As his words became cloudy, Gale made signs with his eyes as if it was okay.

Roan laughed awkwardly and continued speaking.

“I have some soldiers that I want to bring to my squad.”

\*\*\*\*\*

Austin was a 28 year old hot blooded youth that has been roaming the battlefield for 8 years.

Although his spearmanship was shapeless, he had really good strength so he rendered small merits many times.

‘Good. If I keep this, in one more year I will get promoted to squad commander.’

When he was in his break day dreaming.

“Austin. It’s a transference order.”

The transference order fell in the rose troop abruptly.

‘Maybe! Already getting the promotion for squad commander?’

If it wasn’t for that, there was no reason for him to transfer squads.

Expectation made his chest heave up and down.

But the reality that fell was a drainwater.

‘To serve this novice as my squad commander?’

His face kept contorting.

And this wasn’t only Austin’s thoughts.

‘Damn. I stepped on shit.’

‘To serve a novice that just finished his training as a squad commander.’

‘Aren’t we only going to die because of this novice squad commander?’

In the face of the soldiers, anger, annonyment, rage and disappointment could be seen.

‘Yea. I understand you.’

Roan looked at the faces of the soldiers and put on a smile.

Because he would also get annoyed if he was told to serve an 18 year old novice as a squad commander.

He took in a deep breath and looked at the eyes of the soldiers fixedly.

“You all should have complaints. And you may not be able to understand.”

A childish voice.

The faces of the soldiers contort even more.

Roan didn't get disturbed and kept talking.

“I won't talk for long.”

He raised his ten fingers.

“Just ten days. Just believe in me for 10 days and follow me. If perhaps, you still don't like me after 10 days, I will make you return to your original squads.”

Only then did the faces of the soldiers loosen up.

‘10 days.....’

‘So I only have to endure it for 10 days, right?’

They would have to sloppily act until then.

Then, behind the dispirited soldiers a loud reply could be heard.

“Understood!”

The owners of those voices were no other than Pierce and Glenn.

They were the soldiers Roan wanted to take in.

Roan turned back and let out a laughter.

‘Rest well tonight. Because you won’t be able to think straight starting from tomorrow.’

His corner of the mouth raises with an ill nature.

\*\*\*\*\*

A group of people enters the camp.

A worn out armor with blood stains.

“Huk. Huk.”

Chests that shake roughly.

However their eyes were fierce and their steps imposing.

The soldiers that were having their break near them started to whisper.

“It’s the ghost squad.”

“They say that they also did it this time?”

“That squad commander over there is the ghost of the battlefield. Ghost of the battlefield.”

“He’s really amazing. Amazing.”

“They say that they annihilated three monster dens in just ten days.”

The soldiers of that group received the gazes of the other soldiers and went towards a deep part of the camp.

Then, a magnanimous voice was heard.

“Oho! Ghost of the battlefield!”

The man that approaches while shaking his hand was Pete.

The man that was walking in front of the group smiled brightly and bent down.

“Mister Pete.”

A kind salute.

At that instant, Pete shakes his body and his hands with big motions.

“Aigoo. Squad commander Roan, please talk to me relaxedly.”

A humorous voice.

Roan smirked and shook his head.



“Stop making fun of me.”

“Ahem. It’s because it’s funny.”

Pete laughed brightly and scratched his chin.

He looked at the men behind Roan and said in amazement.

“Squad commander Roan. You also did one today?”

At those words, Roan looks back.

Fierce eyes and imposing attitudes.

They were the soldiers that just 10 days ago had faces full of annoyance and rage.

The newly established 42nd squad.

Now, the 42nd squad was being called as the ghost squad.

“Yes. We encountered some goblins.”

“You encountered them? You didn’t go to find them?”

Roan just smiled brightly instead of replying.

Pete put on a humorous expression.

“Squad commander Roan, your nickname is ghost of the battlefield, ghost.”

He hit Roan’s shoulder and continued speaking.

“Because you guess where the monsters are and where the den of the monsters is. That’s why you are a ghost.”

At his words, Roan put on a bitter smile.

‘It’s fortunate that i’m not the divine teller of the battlefield.’

# Chapter 21 : Unexpected Battle (1)

---

Just because Roan returned to the past, doesn't mean that he remembers all of the locations of the monsters.

‘But I do remember all the fierce ones.’

Aside of those, it was all blurry. So in one word, he was battling while combining all of those blurry memories.

And of course, even with just that, the accuracy was so high that he even got the title of ghost of the battlefield.

But most of all, there was another big gain.

“Squad commander. We finished our training.”

The owner of the valiant voice was Austin.

‘Their attitudes changed.’

The biggest gain.

That was the change of the attitude of the soldiers that belong to the 42nd squad that was filled with rage, annoyance, and discomfort.

The members of the squad all recognized Roan's skills in just 10 days.

‘But of course, not all of them are like that.’

A bitter smile appeared in his face.

Austin looked at that Roan and took in a deep breath.

‘His spearmanship is like this, but his reading skills of the battlefield and commanding his soldiers are also outstanding. He just seems like a soldier that roamed the battlefield for 10 years.’

Because of that, he felt stuffed.

‘I do want to return to my original squad.....’

If he returned to his original squad and accumulated a bit more merits, he would be able to climb to the squad commander seat.

‘But I want to be next to him more than that.’

Roan was only 18.

He was really young.

That meant that he had a lot more potential and could grow more than now.

‘Perhaps he could become a commander whose name is known throughout the kingdom, no, the continent.’

A great commander ruling the heaven and earth.

‘An ally that rules the earth along with the great commander. It’s not a bad future.’

Austin puts a smile.

Then, he heard Roan’s voice.

“Today is the tenth day. How many members want to return to their own squads?”

“It’s four.”

“There aren’t as many as I thought. What is vice squad commander Austin planning to do?”

A question thrown casually.

Austin looked at Roan’s eyes fixedly.

“I want to serve next to you.”

A bright smile appears in Roan’s face.

“Then, I will be in your care.”

“Me too, I will be in your care.”

Austin bends his head.

On this day, the four people that still thought of Roan as a greenhorn all returned to their respective squads.

“They are all crazy.”

“They are planning to keep being below that greenhorn?”

“Don’t regret it later.”

“This is why you have to choose people well.”

Mockery and ridicule.

But they couldn’t know.

That the people that will regret this decision for all of their lives would be them.

“Now! Let’s do our squad training.”

Roan started to train with the remaining squad members.

The training they haven’t even missed once for 10 days since he became squad commander.

At first, the squad members including Austin all let out discomfort voices, but now they rather expected the time to train.

‘The training methods of 20 years from now on.’

Roan trained the 42nd squad with the training method that was fixed with trials and errors for 20 years.

‘For now, charging through with a square shape method is all.’

A really simple shape.

However, the aspect of battle changes from now on.

Various formations, tactics and strategies become important.

Even in a squad composed of twenty people they needed strategy, tactics and good movement.

‘If it’s the training methods of 20 years from now on, I can make a powerful squad.’

Roan bit his lower lip and looked back.

The 16 squad members run the plains and expand from right to left.

“Bear in mind! Simply holding your spear and charging to the front isn’t battling! We need to move taking into account the current position of our squad, and go to the objective!”

Roan’s voice flows through the wind.

“We have to know in what situation our allies are so we can grasp on what situation they are and give them help.”

A voice with strength.

“You have to be able to decide yourselves on what action is the most appropriate one taking these informations into account.”

Then, he extended his thumb and index finger and shook his hand.

One of the many signs he taught in this 10 days.

The members that were in the right flinched and moved to the left.

It was a rather quick movement, but Roan couldn't get satisfied.

“In training, we don't only train our physiques. We also have to study signs, movements, formations and tactics even at ordinary times. We have to get accustomed to the point our bodies move by itself and not thinking with our heads.”

“Yes! Understood!”

A strong reply.

Roan slowly nods.

It has only been 10 days.

‘It's impossible to master everything in just 10 days.’

That's why they needed repeated training and study.

Then, Roan hit his right shoulder with his left hand and then clenched it to a fist.

Swish.

The squad members that were running fast lowered their speed, and completely stopped.

A plain appeared in front of their eyes.

Roan took in a deep breath and looked at his squad members.

A smile that appears in his mouth.



“Now that we started it, let’s really become a ghost squad.”

That was a declaration of its kind.

The squad members gulp dry saliva and nod.

The bright sun sets through the plain.

\*\*\*\*\*

The 7th troop acquire successive victories.

And even in the middle of that, the rose troops squad activity is to the point it shines.

“That’s because of the ghost of the battlefield.”

“They say he finds monster dens really easily.”

“It’s not only that. Nowadays, the skills of the squad of that ghost became good to the point it can clearly be seen with your eyes.”

“They say that they even train separately at break times.”

“Well, they are a newly formed squad so they would need to train to coordinate themselves.”

“It’s not to that point. Listening to the stories of people, they seem to be doing training they have seen for the first time in their lives.”

The newly formed 42nd squad, the squad that was called as ghost squad was also quite famous among the soldiers of the 7th troop.

It meant that they were getting that much attention.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

In the middle of the formation of the rose troop, a heavy drum noise is heard.

“We are going to battle! In the west side of Pedian’s plain, goblins have appeared!”

In an instant, soldiers get out of their tents.

And in the middle of them, Roan and his 42nd squad was also among them.

Gale and the adjutants appeared while riding horses.

“The ramsey squad, ultimate squad and the greyum squad are battling with a goblin army!”

A loud voice.

“The numbers of the goblins are vaguely 2thousand!”

A number that’s not much but not a lot.

“From now on, we are going to rescue the three squads!”

Gale sheats out his blade and points to the west.

“Rose troop charge!”

Continued by that, the yells of the adjutants and squad members rings the earth.

“Charge!”

Dudududu.

A noise that shakes the earth.

The special squad and the cavalry take the front and the rose troop get out of the camp and charge to the west side of the plain.

‘Was there a battle like this?’

Roan frowned at the sudden battle.

He didn’t remember anything recent.

‘Well, I do not remember all of the battles that happened.’

Even so, he couldn’t erase the bad feeling.

Then, metal clashing and yells was heard at a long distance.

“Die!”

“This bastards! We will utterly kill you!”

The situation was such that they didn't need the extra help.

The ramsey squad, absolute squad and the grayum squad had already pushed the goblins to a side and almost achieved victory.

“Chwee!”

“Chwee!”

The goblins throw their weapons and flee.

“Chase them!”

“Don't lose them!”

“Chase!”

The three squads chase the escaping goblins.

“We are also speeding up!”

Gale hit the horse.

“Waaaaaaa!”

The soldiers of the rose troop yell and speed up.

The infantry squished all of their strength just to catch up with the cavalrymen getting farther away.

A forest located at the end of the plain.

The branches shake because of the west wind.

The rose troop charged to the deepest part of the forest in an instant.

They get covered by shadows because of the dense forest.

A chill runs down his spine.

‘Here is.....?’

Roan frowned.

And that was because he didn’t have good memories regarding this forest.

Then, a yell was heard from the front that was chasing the goblins.

“Uaaaaaagh!”

“It, it’s an ambush!”

“It’s a trap!”

At that moment, Roan’s eyes widen roundly.

‘Ma, maybe?!’

The bad memory related to this forest.

That digs up in his mind.

‘But that battle is supposed to happen in a year?’

Roan’s sight follows the dense forest.

## Chapter 22 : Unexpected Battle (2)

---

The battle of int forest.

This battle was one that the four troops that belonged to the 7th corps chased the monsters and fell in an ambush and got a huge defeat.

‘The battle we were about to get annihilated without being able to do a thing.’

The ambush tactic of the monsters was that perfect.

However, Pierce was in one of the four troops.

‘He pierced a hole with outstanding spearmanship.’

Because of that, they could avoid everything but annihilation.

‘Now too, the four troops that belongs to the 7th corps that chased the monsters got ambushed. On top of that.....’

Roan’s eyes looked at the entire forest.

‘In the front and rear there are goblins and orcs, and in the sides ogres appear.’

And then, a familiar cry is heard just like it was waiting for it.

“Kuooooooooo!”

Just like Roan’s expectation, orcs and goblin appear in the front and rear, and in the sides, ogres appear.

‘I’m certain. This is int’s forest battle. Something that should be happening next year is happening now.’

His face freezes.

‘Did the future change?’

Roan’s gaze gets stuck to the orcs, goblins and the ogres that come charging.

And then, his eyes shake.

‘That guy?’

The orc that runs in the front.

A big build with hard arm muscles.

His chest that was covered by a worn out armor had a deep blade scar.

‘That orc is certainly the one that came charging first in the last int’s forest battle. He came charging really excited.....’

His gaze subsides calmly.



‘He falls because of a tree root.’

The orc that was charging in, lost balance and fell.

He got caught by the tree root.

‘It’s the same.’

Just that the time was different, but aside of that everything was the same.

‘But is that a fortunate thing?’

A bitter smile appears in Roan’s mouth.

Meanwhile, the orcs yelled.

“Kill them!”

“Kill!”

They yelled with all their strength and swung their blades.

‘It’s not the time to be thinking of other things.’

Roan bit his lower lip and gripped his spear with strength.

Spat!

The spear cuts through the air and pierces the head of an ork.  
Then, the sound of the horn trumpets was heard at the sides.

Puuuuuu!

“We are charging through!”

“We charge through the orcs and get out of the forest!”

The three troops had chosen to charge through.  
Their objective was the army of the orcs that were at the sides.  
Even so, the orcs seemed easier than the ogres.

Clang! Claclang! Clang!

Along with metal clashing, the three troops collide with the orcs.  
And the rose troop that were a bit farther than them were in a situation where they had to make a decision.

“Damn!”

Gale gritted his teeth and looked at the battlefield.

‘Ogres at the sides. And orcs at the front and the rear. On top of that, the number of the orcs is a lot higher.’

On top of that, the three troops already chose to charge through.

‘We are also going to the front.’

A quick decision.

Gale raised his blade and yelled.

“To the front! We are charging through the front!”

Roan’s face, that was facing orcs that were charging to him at that moment froze.

‘Ah! No!’

He remembered the truth he had forgotten momentarily at the unexpected battle.

‘We can’t go to the front or rear.’

In his past life, he analyzed the ambush tactic of the monsters after the battle ended.

‘And the result of that was that the front and rear were sorrow.’

They chose the orcs evading the ogres.

However, behind the orcs, there was a huge number of monsters waiting for them.

An ambush tactic behind an ambush tactic.

‘The way to escape is rather the ogres.’

They were certainly an existence that were fiercer and scarier than the orcs, but behind them, it was certainly empty.

‘I have to prevent us from going to the front!’

Roan cut off the neck of an orc and charged to the front line.

Fortunately, the front was momentarily frozen because of the charging orcs.

“Troop commander!”

Roan called Gale with all of his strength.

“Huh?”

Gale that was preparing to charge to the front with the cavalrymen turned his head at the familiar voice.

‘Roan?’

He discovered Roan that was running hurriedly and pulled the reins.

“What happened?”

Asking with a strict expression.

Roan pointed to the front.

“We can’t go to the front. It’s better to pass through the ogres. That’s the way to escape.”

At the urgent words, Gale frowned.

“Are you saying that we should face the ogres right now?”

“Yes. That’s right.”

Roan replied without hesitating.

Gale got perplexed.

‘The number of the ogres were lower than the orcs, but even so there were more than 200.’

It was impossible to just face them with 800 soldiers.

Then, Kennis raged at him with an indignant face.

“You bastard, it seems like you can’t see properly because of the merits you have accumulated! A greenhorn like you plans to oppose the orders of a troop commander!”

All the other adjutants nodded with displeased expressions.

“On top of that, you are telling us to face the ogres instead of the orcs? You think that it makes sense?”

“You are telling us to die!”

“Look there. The ramsey troop already pierced through the orcs. The path to escape is open!”

The adjutants pointed to the orc army in the front and rebuked him.

‘That’s all a trap.’

Roan looked at Gale’s eyes fixedly.

“After you pass int forest, a hill appears over there. And that’s the most adequate place to do an ambush.”

Gale’s face that freezes.

“Are you saying that the orcs are falling back by lying and luring the three troops?”

“That’s right.”

Roan nodded with a solid expression.

Gale’s sight is directed to the front.

The orcs that were being pushed back were getting scattered.

“Charge through!”

“Charge!”

“We are getting out of the forest!”

The three troops pierced through the hole they created and ran out of the forest.

“Troop commander! We have to catch to them! If we hesitate for even a moment, we will get caught in the forest!”

Keniss yelled with an urgent expression.

Gale turned to look back at Roan again.

An expression that was filled with certain.

‘Because of Roan, I have accumulated a lot of merits until now.’

He found the moving path of the monsters or the dens of them.

And didn’t he get the nickname of the ghost of the battlefield?

‘Should I also believe in Roan’s words this time?’

Then, Dosen that was facing the orcs in the rear came running with his horse.

“Troop commander! Something’s weird!”

He stopped in front of Gale and pointed to the ogres and orcs in the rear.

“Look at those guys. Even when they had succeeded on the ambush they aren’t charging in aggressively. This is just.....”

Roan continued the sentence.

“They want us to go to the front.”

Dosen nods with a serious expression.

Gale glared at the sides and the rear and frowned.

‘Dosen’s words are right.’

The chance of victory has already gone to the monsters.

But even so, they repeated pretending to attack and falling back.

It was a certain thing that they were plotting something.

“Troop commander! We don’t have time!”

“Decide quickly!”

Roan’s and the adjutants voices sound.

Gale took a breath and made a decision.

“To the sides! We are charging through the ogres that are at the sides!”



At that moment, Keniss's face get contorted.

“Troop commander! There is already a path to escape at the front! So why do we have to face the ogr.....”

“Stop!”

Gale shook his hand and stopped him.

“If we get any more late, all of the troop will get in danger! The ones in the front, turn the heads of the horses. It's to the sides! Pierce the sides!”

“Kugh.”

Keniss couldn't talk back anymore and shut his mouth.

A reddened face and a cold sight.

He bit his lower lip and glared at Roan.

‘Whew. I got properly marked.’

Roan evaded Keniss's sight and after bending towards Gale he returned to the 42nd squad.

Puuuuuuuuuu!

The noise of the horn trumpet that means charge hits their ears.

“Pierce through the ogres that are at the sides!”

“We are charging through the sides!”

“Run to the west and east!”

The adjutants transmitted Gale’s order to the soldiers.

“Damn! To face the ogres!”

“Why are we leaving the orcs and go to face the ogres?”

The soldiers let out discomfited noises with a contorted face, but they just moved according to the orders.

Roan made a request to the members of the 42nd squad that were in the front.

“Bear in mind. Our objective isn’t killing the ogres.”

Sharp eyes and an expression filled with resolution.

“Our objective is charging through. We just have to pierce the ogres and get out of the forest.”

At his words, all the members of the 42nd squad nod.

“Then, let’s see each other after we survive.”

“Yes!”

A loud reply.

Puuuuuuuu!

Just in time, the horn trumpet sounds.

“Charge!”

Roan points his spear to the front and charges through.  
Behind him, the 42nd squad follows.

“Waaaaaa!”

“Pierce!”

“Ogre bastards! Die!”

Along with a yell, the charge of the rose troop started.  
The objective was the ogres.

“Kuooooong!”

The ogres let out cries towards the charging rose troop. The unexpected battle, no, the battle that was expectable started like that.

# Chapter 23 : Unexpected Battle (3)

---

The battle was fierce.

The ogre army that were at the sides and the orc army that were at the front and the rear repeated pretending to fight and retreat and as the rose troop started to charge to the sides, they started a fierce counterattack.

<The place you have to go isn't here, but the front and rear!>

A shape that seems to be telling them that.

“Don't face them directly!”

“Pierce through them!”

“Gather up!”

The thing the rose troop wanted was to pierce through the ogre army and get out of Int's forest.

The cavalry try charging with great speed.

Dududududu.

Several muscled horses clash with the ogres.

Kukung. Kung.

Then, the ogres shake and fall on their butts.

The infantry raise their respective weapons and stab or slash while advancing.

And among them, the 42nd squad was also there.

“Whistle!”

Roan spun his thumb in a round way along with a whistle and pointed the front and rear.

‘Make a circuit along the objective and charge out the fastest possible.’

Austin and the squad members analyzed the sign and move quickly.

Consistent movements.

Because of that, they could pass through 5 ogres instantly.

If they kept this, the 42nd squad would be able to get out of Int’s forest alive.

Then, Roan’s face became contorted.

‘It’s blocked.’

The squad that were at the front got their feet tied and couldn’t move, and the escape route got blocked as well.

“Kill them!”

“Kill!”

In that time, the orcs and goblin army that were at the sides came closer to them.

‘Damn.’

Roan bit his lower lip and made hand signs to his back.

“Pierce! To the front!”

“Yes!”

Pierce, that was looking at the surroundings with a nervous expression, ran to him with a loud reply.

‘Originally, you should be able to handle three or four ogres by yourself.’

But of course, he was talking about what was supposed to happen next year.

‘Even if it happened earlier, you shouldn’t have any problems handling with one or two of them. On top of that, if it isn’t killing them.....’

If it was only cutting the leg muscles of the ogres, he wouldn’t have any problem against five of them.

If it was Pierce, he had to at least be able to do that much.

Roan wanted to believe that.

“Pierce. You are going to stand at the front with me. We are charging through while slashing the legs of the ogre.”

“Me, me? No, I?”

Pierce talked impolitely and clenched his fist. (Don't know how to tl this)

Roan gripped his spear and nodded.

“Yeah. If it's you, you can do it.”

Flames appear in his eyes.

He looked at Pierce's eyes fixedly.

“I believe in you.”

At that moment, Pierce felt his heart shaking greatly.

‘He believes in me?’

There wasn't even a trace of hesitation in Roan's eyes.

Eyes that didn't doubt him in the slightest.

‘He believes that I will certainly be able to do it.’

He puts strength in his shoulders.

Roan, that was his training companion and now was his superior.

That Roan was believing in him wholly.

A feeling that one corner of his heart was getting proud.

‘I have to act according to his expectations.’

He puts strength in his grip.

Pierce shut his mouth and nodded.

At that moment, a faint smile appears in Roan’s mouth.

‘Right. You just have to fix that soft heart of yours.’

He took in a deep breath, and after he opened his left hand he tilted it towards the rear and front.

The sign of charging.

Spat!

Roan runs at the front.

Pierce followed him with a face that was a bit strange in colour, and the remaining 42nd squad members also followed his back.

Spat! Puck!

Roan’s and Pierce’s spear slash through the air.



The sharp point and blade of the spear slash through the ogre's leg.

The skills of the two people was clearly seen by the eyes.

Pierce had a splendid spearmanship polished with outstanding talent and senses.

Compared to him, Roan's spearmanship didn't have unnecessary movements and had a fierce vigor.

Spat!

The spear of the both of them slash through the legs of an ogre.

“Kuooooooooong!”

Boom.

The ogre that kneels down along with a cry.

The cavalrymen throw ropes to its neck as if they were waiting for it.

Tighten.

As the muscled horses pull the ropes, the big body of the ogre falls to the ground.

Swiiiiiiish!

Pubobobok!

Continued by that, the arrows of the archers get stuck in its body.

It was quite an excellent combination, but Roan was already looking what was going to happen next.

“Pierce! Move to the left! Ghost squad! To the center!”

The order he yells with all of his strength.

Pierce and the squad members move as if they were one body.

Spat!

The spear slashes through the air once again.

“Wow. The guys of the 42nd squad are amazing!”

“If they keep it, they will really become a ghost squad!”

At the actions of the 42nd squad, the members of other squad also say in amazement.

And among the squad, they were looking at Roan and Pierce that were facing at the ogres in the front.

“Don’t you think that squad commander Roan’s skill is becoming better by the day?”

“And what about the skills of that greenhorn spearman?”

“They say that those two are acquaintances from the training camp.”

Voices of amazement.

Then, Roan that was facing the ogres and checking the battlefield yells with all of his strength.

“Ghost squad! To the back! Scatter!”

His left hand that shakes urgently.

Austin and the 42nd squad members quickly fall back and break the formation.

Boom!

At that moment, two huge clubs get stuck to the ground.

The ogres that were at the sides were aiming for the 42nd squad and swirled their clubs.

‘Was he facing the ogres and checking the situation at our side!’

Austin put a surprised expression and looks at Roan.

“Kuoooooong!”

Then, the ogre’s cry hit their ears.

Fiung.

A sharp and heavy noise that tears the air.

A huge club cuts the air and smash the soldiers.

Puuk!

“Grr!”

“Kukh!”

Many soldiers get bounced off after they get hit by the club.

Unfortunately, they didn't have a squad commander like Roan.

“Don't get scared and pierce through!”

“Cavalrymen! Take the attention of the ogres!”

Gale and the adjutants stand at the forefront and encourage the soldiers.

In this situation, it clearly showed that the rose troop was certainly a good one.

Even the adjutants that blamed Roan for getting trapped, when the battle started they started to fight alone to at least save one more soldier.

“Get out of their range of attacks!”

“The ones at the front! Don't stop as you wish! The soldiers at the back will get in danger!”

“Charge! Charge!”

Orders and repeating the orders, the yells get mixed.

“Kuooooooooong!”

The cry of the ogres shake the battlefield.

The battle became fierce like that.

\*\*\*\*\*

“Huu. Huu. Huu.”

“Huk. Huk. Huk.”

Rough breaths could be heard.

The soldiers of the rose troop sit astride on the hill and let out rough breaths.

A situation where saying even one word was difficult.

Even so, faint delight could be seen in the faces of the soldiers.

‘We survived!’

‘We survived!’

They shook off the orcs and the goblins after piercing through the ogres.

While they did that, 200 soldiers died, but even more survived.

The surprising thing was that no one died from the 42nd squad.

‘Whew.’

Roan sat on the dirt ground and looked at the squad members that were resting.

They were all drenched in sweat and had many injuries.

And among them, Pierce’s appearance was really bad.

“Pierce.”

“Yes.”

Pierce, that was catching some breath, stood from the place.

Roan smiled dimly and grabbed both of his shoulders.

“You did well. Because of you, the squad members could all survive.”

“Squad commander has also had it hard.’

Pierce smiled faintly and lowered his head.

The eyes of the squad members that were looking at the both of them were filled with amazement and adoration.

‘Amazing.’

‘I can’t believe that they are only 18.’

‘These two people will certainly become commanders whose names will get spread on the continent.’

Roan, that didn't know that the squad members were thinking of this, hit Pierce's shoulders and turned his head.

The place his eyes were directed to was the place where Gale and the adjutants were resting.

‘There's still something left to do.’

In the first place, the reason why he proposed charging through the left and not the front and rear was because there was the road to escape but also because of one more reason.

‘We have to save the three squads that chose to charge through the front.’

The three squad that get out of Int forest meet with a monster army at a hill.

‘And the number of them are roughly 5 thousand.’

The total soldiers of the ramsey troop, absolute troop, and grayum troop were barely 2 thousand.

If he left them like this, they would all get annihilated.

‘Originally, Pierce showed extraordinary skills and made a path to escape.....’

But now, Pierce was next to him, and not there.

‘The current number of soldiers of rose troop right now are 600.’

Even if they went to rescue, they wouldn’t be able to do much.

‘But if it’s that method.....’

Roan’s eyes shine.

5 years from now on, a student of Tron academy that was located in the capital of Miller presents one report to the headquarters of the kingdom.

<Report of Int forest battle.>

In the report, the analysis of the ambush tactic of the monsters, and the incompetent countermeasure of the troops of the 7th corps was written.

At the contents of the report, it was obvious for the commander of the 7th corps and the generals all got displeased and opposed to it fiercely.

<Will a greenhorn that goes to an academy know what war is?>

<Our side had only 3 thousand while they had 5 thousand. What does he imply we should have done in that situation?>

The student that got those reactions because of the report he made, only named one strategy.

The commander and the generals that saw that strategy all shut their mouths.



<This guy is a genius.>

The evaluation of the commanders that analyzed the strategy.

The king that got to know of this late diffused the report made by the academy student to the armies and the corps that were at the front lines.

And Roan too, could read that report.

‘If it’s the strategy that was written in the reports, we may be able to save the three troops.’

A smile that appears in his face.

He doesn’t worry if the strategy in the report will fail or not.

‘Because this strategy is the first piece of art of that person.’

The academy student that made the <Report of Int forest>.

He was Ian Phillips, that was called as an extraordinary genius strategist.

## Chapter 24 : Unexpected Battle (4)

---

‘This bastard again?’

‘What now?’

The adjutants that were seated roundly turn to look at one place.

“I’m sorry to interrupt you while you are resting.”

Roan bent his head and approached them.

Gale, that was quenching his thirst, smiled faintly and nodded.

“Right. What happened?”

“I have something to tell you.”

At those words, Gale put down his water sac and sat properly.

The adjutants also started to gather.

‘Right. Let’s listen what he has to say now.’

A fierce vigor appears in the eyes of the adjutants.

Roan stood firmly and looked at Gale’s eyes fixedly.

It was stately but not conceited.

“We have to go to rescue the three troops that chose to charge.”

“Mmm.”

‘It seems like he’s certain that the three troops are in danger.’

He slowly turned to look at Roan’s eyes.

Eyes that weren’t shaking at the least.

‘In the first place, he opposed to charging through saying that there would be more monsters over there.’

If that was true, the three troops that chose to charge through were like a rabbit in a tigers cave.

Then, Kennis’s voice was heard.

“Saying that we have to rescue the three troops means that they are in danger, right?”

“That’s right.”

A reply without hesitation.

“How can you be so sure?”

It was a question pressing for an answer, but he wasn’t talking as if he was ignoring him as before.

‘Because there’s something he showed us, I can’t just ignore him.’

When he first said that they had to pierce through the ogre army, he thought that it was a crazy thing.

‘But just like he said, there were no monsters behind them.’

Although they lost 200 and more soldiers, but many more survived.

Not a bad result taking into account that they fell in an almost perfect ambush.

It meant that Roan’s decision wasn’t a bluff at all.

‘Being conceited is one thing, and skills is another thing.’

He didn’t like that a greenhorn ignored orders and ranks and acted by his own.

But his those actions weren’t bluffs but real skills, he couldn’t just ignore him.

He recognized what he had to.

Kennis, that roamed the battlefield for many years as an adjutant of rose troop, was that kind of soldier.

Roan took in a deep breath.

“We shook off the ogres, orcs and goblins that were chasing us. Then, where would those guys go?”

His finger points to the north.

“They are going to catch the three troops. Because that’s the main force.”

“Mmm.”

Kennis and the other adjutants sigh in amazement.

‘It’s true that they didn’t look like chasing us that fiercely.’

‘At one moment, they had fallen back.’

‘It seemed like they were returning to Int forest.’

Then, Gale’s voice was heard.

“Fine. Let’s take into that all you said is true. Even so, our force is only 600. What will these many soldiers do? I think that it would be better to return quickly to our camp and request for help.”

At those words, many adjutants nod.

Roan shook his head with a frozen expression.

“Meanwhile, the three troops will be annihilated.”

“Mmm.”

Gale shuts his mouth.

Then, one of the adjutants that was at the back said sullen words.

“Even so, we can’t die along them.”

Rescuing the three troops in this situation was the same as suicide.

Roan smiled faintly and shook his head.

“I have a method.”

And Ian’s strategy that later on would be called as a genius strategist.

He looked at Gale and asked carefully.

“May I look at the military map.”

“Military map?”

Gale wondered for a moment and made eye signs to Dosen.

Dosen nodded slightly and took out a large paper roll from his chest.

Swuush.

The rolled piece of paper got unfold and the map showed itself.

‘I did expect it, but it’s more of a mess than what I thought.’

Roan let out a small sigh.

It was embarrassing to call map to the thing in front of him.

‘I have to wait 10 more years for the detailed map of the kingdom to come out.’

And of course, that was also one of Ian Philip’s piece of work.

Roan held back his regret and pointed to one side of the map with the tip of his finger.

“This is our current location. And.....”

The finger gets a bit higher.

The three troops that chose to charge will be around here. They would probably be receiving the attacks of the monsters.”

His finger gets down again.

“And this river is Prely river. It’s wide but a shallow river.”

Gale and the adjutants that were listening to the explanation all nodded.

Because they also knew well about Prely river.

‘And especially now that it’s spring, it’s so shallow that it only reaches to the thigh of a grown man.’

Roan looked at Gale and the adjutants and continued saying.

“We have to do an inundation tactic.”

At that moment, everyone frowns.

“Inundation?”

At the words that were asking back, there were many doubts.

‘He wants to use an inundation tactic in Prely river right now?’

‘It seems like he isn’t in his right mind.’

Distrusting faces.

But Roan’s face was still confident.

His finger points Prely river and follows to the right.

Point.

The tip of his finger stops.

“This place has the answer.”

\*\*\*\*\*

Dududududu.



Horse steps that shake the earth.

Roan hit the horse and took in a deep breath.

‘The reason Ian Phillips is amazing isn’t only because he makes wondrous tactics.’

There were many reasons as to why Ian was called as the outstanding genius strategist, but the biggest reason was on the point that he knew the importance of information better than anyone else.

He ran an information organization in Rinse kingdom for the first time.

‘Before that, you gave money to an information guild or thieves guild. That was all.’

Ian took and analyzed even the little bit of informations other wouldn’t hold any regard.

Because of that, he could gather a massive amount of information better than anyone else and with this information, he made the most effective and efficient strategies.

‘It’s also the same for Int’s forest battle.’

Ian focused on the information that nobody that analyzed Int forest’s battle knew, or even if they knew they didn’t hold it in any regard.

‘Temporary reservoir.’

The farmers in Pedian’s plain made a temporary reservoir in Prely’s river for when winter ended.

They were gathering water in case they lacked water at spring, when it started they yearly farming.

Because of that every spring, Prely river was really shallow compared to it’s width.

‘We are exploding that reservoir.’

That was what Ian thought and the tactic Roan was going to do.

Roan hit the horse and looks to the west.

The place where the temporary reservoir was located.

‘By now, the squad members may also have reached.’

The rose troop were currently divided in two.

The squad Gale lead went to the temporary reservoir to explode the bank.

And the squad Kennis and Roan were leading were running towards the three troops.

‘It would be bad if our allies also get swept on the inundation tactic.’

Roan calmly gripped the reins.

“Adjutant Kennis.”

“Huh?”

Kennis, that was running at the front, looks back.

Roan points to the earth with his finger.

“We will have to leave some archers here.”

At those words, Kennis nods and does a hand sign.

One of the soldiers left the ranks and protected the place.

Roan left archers at moments while running to the west.

When they were running without stop and were about to pass a hill.

Cheng! Checheng! Cheng!

Metal clashing could be heard.

“Kill!”

“Don’t get pushed back!”

“If you do, we die!”

Continued by the yells.

At that moment, Roan’s face contorts.

‘How so?’

A face he couldn’t believe it.

Roan quickly hit the horse’s stomach and lowered his posture.

The horse runs like a feather and stand at the peak.

He saw the battlefield with his eyes.

“How are the three troops here?”

An unexpected situation.

Then, Kennis approached him and asked.

“According to your guess, shouldn’t our allies be at the other side of the river? But.....”

The three troops had already passed the river and were pressed to the south.

Roan bit his lower lip.

‘It’s different.’

Originally, the three allied troops should be fighting the monsters at the northern part of the river.

An unexpected battle again.

‘It’s certainly different. But.....’

Roan glared at the battlefield with sharp eyes.

His head spins so fast noises could be heard.

## Chapter 25 : Unexpected battle (5)

---

The place Roan's sight was directed to was across Prel's river.

It fell on the monster army that caught the rear of the three troops.

'It's the goblin and orc army that were at the rear of Int's forest.'

On top of that, the ones that chased the rose troop should have regrouped.

His two eyes become thin as thread.

'That flag is.....'

A flag mixed with red and blue.

It was a familiar flag.

'The flag of Sedek's troop, a part of the orcs alliance northern parts of Rinse.'

It wasn't that Roan remembered all the flags of the troops.

However, even if he wanted to forget that flag, he couldn't.

His hand goes to his left side.

The feeling a scar that doesn't even exist now hurts.

'We clashed against Sedek's troop in the region of Krel.'

And then, a young orc warrior swung his blade and sliced his side.

It wasn't so deep as to danger his life, but even so, it was quite a big injury.

Because of that, he had to leave the battlefield for a while and focus on healing.

‘Meanwhile, my comrades all kept accumulating merits.’

Perhaps, his life could have started to become a mess since then.

‘So how would I be able to forget that damnable troop flag.’

But of course, he couldn't know if Sedek's troop participated on Int's forest battle in his past life.

‘It's quite similar to my past life, but some little parts are different.’

The reason why he couldn't be careless even when he knew the future.

Roan checked the battlefield once again with calm eyes.

Then, he frowned and looked at Kennis.

“Adjutant Keniss.”

“Yeah.”

Kennis, that was also checking on the battlefield, nodded.

Roan pointed at Sedek's troop, that was at their rear.

“Aren't they a bit weird?”

“Weird?”

Kennis tilted his head and turned to look to the rear.

After he stared for a long while, he put a surprised expression.

“What are they doing right now? Are they joking?”

A voice that was filled with displeasure.

Roan smiled faintly and nodded.

“They are only pretending to attack our troops.”

He couldn't know the exact reason.

However, the certain thing was that Sedek's army that was at their rear, were only pretending to attack while maintaining a distance.

Roan organized his thoughts for a moment and looked back at Kennis.

“I have thought of something good.”

He whispered towards Kennis for a little while.



Kennis frowned after he heard all the story.

“Won’t it be dangerous?”

Roan replied with a calm voice.

“It is, but to secure a path to escape, we can only lure Sedek’s troop.”

“Mmm.”

Kennis gulped and looked at Roan.

‘I thought that he only knew how to use his head, but it seems like he has some courage and determination.’

The strategy Roan said.

‘While we are luring the rear of Sedek’s army, make the three troops retreat by crossing the river.’

If only they could lure Sedek’s troop, they would be able to open a path for the three troops to retreat.

“And are you confident on being able to do it?”

“Yes. I am.”

Roan nodded without even a trace of hesitation.

Kennis looked at his two eyes and then made hand signs to his back.

Karon, that was in charge of the 1st squad approached.

“Karon.”

“Yes. Tell me.”

At Kennis’s call, Karon bent his head.

Kennis pointed towards Sedek’s troop.

“Get 10 squads and attack Sedek’s troops rear.”

“You want me to attack the rear of the monsters army?”

Karon put a surprised expression and looked at the battlefield.

Even at first glance, their numbers were more than 3 thousand.

To attack them with only 200 soldiers, they had an overwhelming number of monsters.

Kennis nodded slowly and looked at Roan.

“Roan will help you.”

A voice that contains strength.

It was a voice that was filled with trust.

Roan slightly bent towards Kennis.

‘I don’t know if this choice will be a right one or a wrong one.’

An unexpected battle.

This choice was all on Roan.

‘But if I can just succeed, I will accomplish a really big merit.’

Fire appears on his eyes.

\*\*\*\*\*

Sedek got on the war horse and glared at the battlefield.

“Kukuku.”

Laughter kept coming out from between his cuspids.

‘Was he called Pelt?’

The thing Sedek was looking at was at the monster army that were doing a fierce battle that was happening across the river.

And between them, it was an orc warrior swinging his halberd.

‘Hmph. I can’t let a bastard from the Byron kingdom to get all the merits.’

His eyes became sharp.

The orc warrior that was swinging the halberd was a friend of Tarem, that was from the same Byron kingdom, and proposed to make this ambush tactic for revenge.

‘That stupid bastard Tarem said that he was going to make a night raid and after he took some warriors from the orcs alliance of our Rinse kingdom, they were the ones that rather suffered a surprise attack and got annihilated.’

Even so, the supreme commander of the orcs alliance Rak, kept more trust on the orcs from Byron kingdom.

‘Damn. I don’t know why he keeps covering for the defeated bastards.’

His face contorted.

Sedek, that was from Rinse kingdom and even got attention on the northern Rinse orcs alliance, didn’t really like supreme commander Rak’s decision.

‘Even so, I can’t oppose him..... I can only hope for that Pelt bastard to die on this battle. Kukuku.’

He called his adjutants with some hand sign.

“Keep in mind. We are only pretending to attack. We will wait until Pelt’s troop crumbles.”

“Yes. Understood.”

The adjutants nodded and scattered to the sides.

They acted as if they were attacking just like Sedek's order, and didn't move first.

'Kukuku. Even if he survives, if his losses are great you won't be able to say that it's an outstanding merit.'

Laughter keeps coming out.

Then, a yell was heard flowing through the west wind.

"Sedek!"

A loud yell

‘Who dares to call my name?’

Sedek frowned and turned to look at the place where his name was called.

Dudududu.

He saw soldiers charging to them while climbing the hill.

“Ambush?!”

Sedek got surprised but in the end, burst out of laughter.

“What is it? That’s all? Kukuku.”

The soldiers charging towards him were barely 200.

His numbers were more than 3 thousand.

“Sedek!”

A loud yell was heard once again.

The owner of the voice was a youth with a childish face that was at the front of the soldiers.

It was Roan.

‘Certainly, his body is really impressive.’

Roan looked at Sedek that was looking at him being on top of the war horse and gasped in amazement.

His body that was covered with strong muscles was as thick as a tree.

‘Even so.....’

The corner of his mouth rises slightly.

He knew his fatal weakness.

“Sedek! You stupid orc!”

Roan’s voice cuts through the battlefield.

Some orcs got agitated and breathed hard.

“Who dares to our troop commander!”

“Your heads should really be screwed!”

However, Sedek himself was calm.

“Kukuku. Is he provoking me? Leave him. There’s no need to pay them any mind. Just fire some arrows.”

And then, Roan yelled loudly once more.

“Sedek! You looking at the battlefield while seating on the horse is really manly!”

A sudden praise.

Sedek frowned and glared at Roan.

‘What is he planning?’

He started to get uneasy.

A faint smile appears on Roan’s face.

“The squad members below Sedek should be really happy! To have that cool and dignified man as your troop commander!”

A continued compliment.

“What is it?”

“Is that human crazy?”

Even the orcs get perplexed.

And it was also the same for Karon and the squad members.

“Squad commander Roan. What are you doing right now?”



As Karon asked, Roan replied with a nervous expression.

“Now, that bastard will charge towards us as crazy. And then, we will have to cross Prely river and flee.”

“He’s going to come to us after you compliment him like this?”

Roan nodded and looked at Sedek.

He yelled with all the strength he had.

“But do you know that? That your troop commander doesn’t have a dick!”

In an instant, the orcs all look towards Sedek.

‘Troop commander Sedek, that’s a warrior among warriors, is an eunuch?’

‘No, no. It’s not to the point of being an eunuch, but he directly doesn’t have one?’

Sights filled with doubts.

Sedek’s face becomes nicely contorted.

Roan kept yelling.

“That bastard was having fun with some bitches and in the end, it got cut by his wife! His crotch is really clean!”

Roan’s words were all true.

These were all things that got revealed when Sedek's troop got defeated in Huil's battle, and they got interrogated.

'That bastard Sedek kept this truth really well hidden. Because it's the most disgraceful thing for an orc warrior.'

Mumbles of the orcs become harsher.

"If you can't believe me, send one adjutant and make them put his hand on his crotch! It will slip away! Hahaha!"

Roan drenches his throat and laughs hysterically.

Karon, that was well aware of his surroundings, laughs together and makes some handsigns.

And then, all of the squad members burst out of laughter.

"HAHAHAHA! They say that orcs are prestigious warrior, but the one that his lower parts is lose to be the leader!"

"It would be nice to ride the horse! HAHAHAHA!"

"It will be good, because it's fresh on summer! HAHAHAHA!"

Laughter shakes the battlefield.

"This.....This.....This....."

Sedek's body trembled and ground his teeth.

Rage surged up.

“This son of a bitches.....”

In the end, he couldn't hold it and hit his war horse.

Hiiiing!

The war horse crise and charges through.

Dudududu.

Sedek left back the orcs and ran towards Roan.

“Huh?! Tro, troop commander!”

“Chase the troop commander!”

“Follow his back!”

The orc adjutants get surprised and hurriedly kicked their horses.

At the sudden order, the orcs got started to follow him ack.

“They are really charging like crazy.”

Karon looked at Sedek while panicking and pulled the reins.

The head of the horse turns south east.

“We are running to the south east and cross Prely’s river! Run with all your strength!”

Karon kicked his horse and lowered the posture.

The war horse let a long cry and started to charge while cutting through the air.

Roan and the squad members followed his back.

‘They are following really well.’

Roan glanced back and put a faint smile.

At least half of the 3 thousand orcs were chasing them.

Dududududu.

They could see Prely’s river.

Karon made hand signs to his back and then one soldier grabbed his bow.

Tense.

As he left go of the tensed bowstring, one arrow flies to the skies.

Piiiiiiiik!

A sharp sound hits their ears.

Signal.

That was the signal to explode the reserve, and also the sign of the battle starting.

# Chapter 26 : Unexpected Battle (6)

---

Dudududu.

Horse footsteps that shake the earth.

Every Time the horse ran, the rough recoil moved his body.

‘Mmm.’

Kennis kicked the horse and looked at the end of the east.

He felt a rough and disturbing movement across Prely river.

‘It seems like Roan succeeded in luring Sedek.’

Then, the signal should rise to the skies soon.

‘I have to hurry.’

He sticks his chest to the horse.

Dudududu.

The noise of the horse footsteps was heard more clearly.

Kennis and the 100 soldiers went around Pelt’s troop and ran towards the west.

After running around the battlefield for a while, they changed

directions towards the three troops.

‘I have to charge in on a whim.’

He saw the orcs and goblins that belonged to Pelt’s troop in front of him.

Fortunately, they seemed like they were really hectic confronting the three troops.

“Charge!”

At Kennis’s order, the soldiers all hit their horses and lowered the posture.

Dudududu.

The war horses clash against the orcs and goblins with a frightening speed.

Pubububuk!

“Kugh!”

“Chwee!”

The bastards got bounced off to the sides along a cry.

“Don’t stop!”

Kennis's yell.

At the same time, the spear of the soldiers dance while cutting through the air.

Slash.

The heads of the orcs and goblins fall to the ground.

Making a turnaround on purpose and attacking their side on the west was really effective.

Kennis and the 100 soldiers charged through more easily than they had thought.

“Troop commander Ramsey!”

Kennis yelled towards the middle aged man that was swinging his long spear at the front.

“Huh?”

The middle aged man stabbed down the head of an orc and looked at Kennis.

“Rose troop?”

Quite a surprised expression.

Kennis stuck next to him and said with a hurried expression.



“We have to retreat to beyond Prely’s river.”

“What are you saying after appearing so suddenly? Don’t you know when you see the situation? Sedek’s troop is blocking us on the rear.”

An expression mixed with annoyance.

Kennis shook his head and pointed to the rear.

Ramsey that looked at the rear without thinking much, widened his eyes.

“Wha, what is this? What happened?”

The line set up by Sedek got loose.

Kennis gripped the reins with strength.

“Soon, a big amount of water will pour.”

The calm voice passes through the noise of the battlefield and gets stuck on Ramsey’s ear.

The longer the story became, the more surprised Ramsey’s face became.

“Retreat! We are crossing Prely’s river!”

And then, Ramsey’s voice rings throughout the battlefield.

At the same time, the three troops turn away.

They didn't keep pointing the spear to the west, but to the south.  
A path to escape appeared there.

\*\*\*\*\*

‘It seems like adjutant Kennis also did well.’

A smile appears on Roan's face.

Because he felt how the shape of the battlefield was breaking.

‘Anyways, he's really charging like crazy.’

His sight goes to his back.

He saw Sedek charging towards him like crazy with a contorted face.

‘If you come to me without thinking much, then thanks.’

He stuck his chest to the horse and looked to the front.

The archers that were stationed at places before coming to the battlefield start to fire their signal arrows.

‘By now, the news should also have been sent to troop commander Gale.’

This meant that they would soon explode the reserve.

Roan yelled towards Karon that was running in front of him.

“Sir adjutant Karon!”

Even if he didn't do that, Karon that was in his moment of envy, nodded slightly and pulled the reins.

Hiiiiiiing.

The head of the horse turns to southeast.

Karon and the soldiers start to charge towards Prely river again.

‘We have to cross before the water comes.’

Roan bit his lower lip and kicked the horse.

Splash. Splash.

Karon and the soldiers at the front jumped into the river.

Pabababat.

Along the rough movements of the war horse, water splashes to the sides.

“Stop there!”

Behind them, Sedek's shout was heard.  
He had already lost his reasoning by now.

“Squad commander! Squad commander Sedek!”  
“Don't go too in front!”

The orc adjutants and warriors that were following behind him, sweat of anxiety and follow his back.

Dudududu.

And then, the calm river started to tremble.

‘It's coming!’

Roan's expression freezes.

Karon and the other soldiers also seemed to have felt the tremor and yelled with a hurried expression.

“Damn! Hurry!”

“Hurry and cross the river!”

The speed of kicking the horse gets faster.

Hihihing!

The war horse cries longly and rises its four legs highly.

Splash. Splash.

Karon, that was at the front, and the soldiers reached the other side of the river.

When Roan was the last that remained on the water.

Boooooom!

A great amount of water came across the hill with a loud noise.

“Kugh!”

Roan grabbed the reins and kicked the horse.

Hihihing!

The warhorse lets a cry and jumps out of the water.

Pat!

Water drops splash along the body.

A dramatic and elegant look.

Step.

The soldiers and Roan, as the last, all crossed Prely's river.

“Huk. Huk.”

Roan breathed roughly and looked back.

“Uaaaaa! It, it's water!”

“Run! Run!”

“Cross the river!”

“Go back! Return!”

The orcs and the goblins looked at the water body that was going to clash against them roughly and got perplexed.

They, that were at the middle of the river, didn't know if they had to return or cross the river, and they repeated stumbling onto each other.

Even in the middle of that, there was one bastard that was crossing the river with a fierce energy.

‘Sedek.’

Because he ran alone at the front leaving the orcs and goblins, he was almost out of the water.

“You son of a bitch! Receive my blade!”

An evil cry.

Sedek got out of the water along with his horse.

Spat!

The guys blade cuts the air.

“Hmph!”

Roan pulled the reins and fell back.

And at the same time, he twisted the wrist he was grabbing the spear.

Spat!

The spear spun roundly and the blade of it danced.

Cheng!

Metal clashing was heard and sparks appear

“Dam! The orcs are coming up!”

“Block them so they can’t do it!”

Karon raised his spear highly as he saw the orcs running after

Sedek like crazy and shouted.

“Block!”

“Kill!”

At the same time, the soldiers attacked the orcs.

“Where are you going! Push them back!”

“We have to get out of the water!”

The orcs were also desperate.

That was because the water was near them.

Cheng! Checheng! Cheng!

Metal clashing continued fiercely.

And then, the water came up.

Booboobooboom!

“Uaaak!”

“Kuugh!”

“Kgh!”

The noises the orcs and goblins make.



The huge amount of water swept the bastards like an angered wave.

Psssss.

The water splashed and the cold wind passed through their skin. They felt the chill with all their body.

‘If, if we were even a little bit late it was going to be dangerous.’  
‘It’s an impressive power.’

Karon and the soldiers gulped dry saliva.

The orcs and goblins that were filling Prely river got wiped off cleanly.

If they were even a little bit late, they would also have ended up that way.

“Thi, this son of a bitches!”

“Nasty humans!”

The remaining minority of the orcs and goblins let out cries and charge fiercely.

However, the one that charged in more fiercely than anyone was Sedek.

“Human! I will cut off your neck and chew you off!”

A ferocious spirit.

The fierce threat is reflected on his eyes.

However Roan's face was still relaxed.

‘He's really messed up.’

It was really important to not lose your cool on the battlefield.

‘One of the things I learnt during the past 20 years.’

A faint smile appears on his mouth.

Spat.

Sedek's blade passed right in front of his nose.

‘It's big.’

It was a certainly powerful attack, but his movements were overly big.

Even now, as one attack missed his shoulder and sides showed.

Paat!

His spear cuts through the air and stabs his waist.

An attack that was like a flash.

“Bastard!”

Sedek cried out and twisted his body.

Spat!

The blade of the spear cuts his side thinly and passes through.

Normally, a situation that would make you shake.

However, Sedek that had already lost his reasoning didn't care more about water and fire.

He lifted up his blade over his head while not even caring about his injury.

Swuung.

The blade that cuts through the air with a roaring sound.

Sedek swung down his blade with all of his strength as if he wanted to crush Roan.

‘I can't block it.’

To block it, the strength under the blade was really strong.

Roan pressed the shoulder of the horse with his thigh and moved to the right.

At the same time he twisted his body and let the blade pass through.

“Kugh.”

At that moment, Sedek stumbled to the front.

Roan didn't miss that chance.

Spat! Pabababat!

The spear cuts through the air and dances.

Cheng! Checheng! Cheng!

Sedek ground his teeth late and swung his blade.

However it was impossible to block all of the attacks while he had lost balance.

Spat! Pabat!

Some parts of the body start to get covered by wounds.

‘He is amazing.’

Roan gasped of amazement at Sedek that attacked and defended even while he had lost balance.

‘Let's see if you can also block this one.’

He put strength on his hand that was gripping the spear.

‘Fifth stance of Pierce’s spearmanship.’

He had almost never missed individual training after he came back to the past.

And because of that, he could raise his skills to where he could execute the fifth stance, when before he could only do the third.

‘I will cut his neck instantly.’

The best skill he could execute without any mana.

The muscles of his both arms get swelled up.

Spat!

The spear cuts the wind.

The body of the spear shakes and twists greatly.

Tuung!

The spear hit the space along a heavy sound.

“Where are you!”

Sedek pulled his blade and blocked the spear

Cheng!

The sound of metal clashing hit their ears.

“Kugh.”

Sedek ground his teeth.

The feeling that all of his palm was getting numb.

‘How is he this stron.....’

The moment he was admiring him.

The spear that was blocked by the blade surged above his head.

“Huh?”

Really strange movements.

Sedek just blinked at the unexpected spear movements.

Spat!

And then, the spear that was above his head fell down with a sharp noise.

“Huh? Huh!”

Sedek pulled his blade with a surprised expression, but it was already late.

The sharp spear stamps his head.

Stamp.

Sedek's head got separated to the sides along a horrible noise.

The eyes that were separated at both sides had a trace of disbelief.

Roan then twisted his wrist and cut off the head.

Drop.

The atrocious head rolls down the floor.

Stab.

Roan stabbed down Sedek's head.

The spear that surges high to the sky.

At the same time, Roan's voice rang on the battlefield.

“Squad commander roan from the 42nd squad part of rose troop has slain the enemy Sedek!”

That was a kind of ending.

And it was also a declaration of the battle ending.



# Chapter 27 : Merits Awards (1)

---

Roan raised his spear highly and looked at the battlefield.

“Tro, troop commander!”

“Troop commander Sedek!”

The orcs and goblins that were facing Karon and the soldiers were half astounded at the death of Sedek.

“Now! Attack! Kill!”

Karon didn't miss the opportunity.

The 200 soldiers pushed the orcs and goblins to one side fiercely.

Cheng! Checheng! Cheng! Slash. Stab.

Metal clashing and explosive sounds hit the ears.

Roan looked at the downstream of Prely river.

‘It seems like the three troops crossed the river safely.’

The three troops had already crossed through it without being late.

They didn't follow Sedek's back and were pushing back the goblins and orcs that were protecting the place.

Fluuush.

The rough stream of the water was heard.

‘Even so, quite many survived.’

Even after having been swept by the rough water, there was a number of monsters that wasn’t that small lining up on a battle formation.

“Damn! Despicable humans!”

“Chwee! Chwee!”

“Kuooong!”

They couldn’t even cross the river because of the rough stream and just let out cries.

Meanwhile, the three troops took care of the remaining monsters.

“Squad commander Roan. It’s a huge victory. A huge one.”

Karon approached and laughed hysterically.

Roan tied Sedek’s head on the saddle and nodded.

“It’s great that it turned out as it was planned.”

A not excessive humility.

Karon grabbed Roan's shoulders.

“Squad commander Roan. If it wasn't for you, the three troops were going to be annihilated. This merit is so big that it can't even be compared to the slave merchants.”

The voice gets bigger slowly.

Roan smiled instead of replying and looked at the three troops that were approaching.

‘I do know that it is a big merit. That's why i'm happy but worried at the same time.’

The words he gulps down inwardly.

It was certain that he was going to climb to the highest seat on the merits awards.

And it was obvious that jealousy and envy was going to follow back on that process.

‘If it's something like that, I have gone through that plenty of times for the past 20 years.’

Because of the stupid choices he made on the past life, even after having rendered some merits there were many cases where he got punished.

‘This time, it won't turn out that way.’

Roan gripped the spear and shut his mouth tightly.

A firm determination shone on his eyes.

\*\*\*\*\*

“Huh? It’s the ghost of the battlefield.”

“This time, he was truly excellent.”

“Because of the ghost of the battlefield the three troops could avoid annihilation.”

“It’s not only that. He crushed the monster army that amounted to ten thousand with the inundation tactic.”

“And recently, the activity of the ghost squad is no joke.”

“They really fight like some ghost.”

Voices filled with dread and admiration.

The soldiers of the rose troop applauded towards Roan and the 42nd squad that passed in front of them.

Clap! Clap! Clap!

“Because of you, we could save our lives!”

“One friend that’s on the ramsey troop told me to send you his gratitude!”

“Squad commander Roan! Thank you!”

Roan slightly bent and didn’t show that big of a reaction.

But rather, the shoulders of Austin and the other members of the

42nd squad rose.

‘Kugh! I certainly did well on staying on the 42nd squad.’

‘Those guys that returned back then should be regretting it, right?’

‘Hua. It really feels good!’

A smile kept coming out.

Actually, he was betraying his emotions, but one corner of the heart of Roan felt proud.

‘This life is quite fine.’

He was a little bit perplexed when the battle didn’t happen as what he remembered.

But the decision he made with his 20 years of experience was followed with good results.

‘Even if a future different to my memories happen, there’s no need to be scared. Because even if that happens, my memories don’t.’

A faint smile appears on his mouth.

And then, a familiar voice was heard.

“Oh! Roan!”

The person that was extending both of his arms and smiling brightly was Gale.

Roan moved slowly and made a salute.

“I came through your calling.”

Behind him, the members of the 42nd squad lined up firmly.

Gale walked towards him and grabbed Roan’s shoulders.

“Roan. You rendered a really big merit. And because of you, it’s obvious for us, but the other three troops could also escape annihilation.”

“I just did what I had to.”

“Hahahaha! You are even humble!”

Gale laughed hysterically and looked towards Kennis.

“Kennis. Report the big merits Roan has rendered.”

“Yes. Understood.”

Kennis, that was one of the adjutants lined up next to Gale, made one step to the front and unrolled a big piece of paper.

And he slowly started to read down the things he did like investigating Ale gorge, capturing the slave merchants, and the things that happened on Pedian’s plain.

“Lastly, he has slain the neck of Sedek in the inundation tactic.

That's all."

"Oho. Now that you group it all, it really is amazing."

Gale gasped of amazement.

He returned to his original place and looked at Roan with a gratified expression.

"Now that the merits are this outstanding, I will have to give you a reward according to it. But before that....."

Eyes filled with curiosity.

"They say that the tactic you used to lure Sedek was astonishing.....Roan, how did you know that truth?"

Roan slowly lifted his head and looked at Gale's two eyes.

'The question I expected.'

He couldn't actually say that it was something that was discovered a few years later on the process of inquiring Sedek.

Roan already had an answer he had thought of.

"I'm from a little town on Grain's mountain range. Because of that, I could hear the rumours about the monster commanders without stop."

"Aha!"

Gale hit his knees after letting out a low sigh of amazement.

“So you also heard that Sedek doesn’t have a dick at your hometown?”

“Yes. That’s right.”

Roan smiled brightly and nodded.

Gale nodded as if the question he had had been answered and clapped.

Clap.

“Good. Then, should we genuinely start the conference?”

He made eye signs to Kennis.

Kennis slightly nodded and ordered some soldiers to bring small leather bags.

“First, I will be giving rewards to the members of the 42nd squad that rendered a distinguished merit.”

At those words, Austin and the others glanced at each other with surprised expressions.

‘We? It’s us?’



Expressions as if they are asking themselves that.

Kennis coughed as no one moved even after he had finished speaking.

“Ahem. Vice squad commander Austin, come and get your reward first.”

“Ah?! Yes.”

Only then did Austin take back that absent minded face and move his step to stand in front of gale.

“You have done well.”

Gale lent one bag and hit his shoulder.

“Thank you.”

Austin bent down and received the pocket with his two hands.

‘For not only the squad commander, but for also us to receive prizes.’

A really unexpected award.

‘This is all because of squad commander Roan.’

Thankfulness and admiration rushed down their hearts.

After that, the soldiers including Pierce and Glenn all received their own rewards.

Thankfulness and admiration also show on their faces.

“Now! Is it now the turn of Roan?”

At those words, the faces of some adjutants stiffen.

Keniss looked at them and laughed bitterly.

It's because he knew the reason they were putting that face.

“Roan. First, I will also give you a reward.”

“Thank you.”

Roan received the bag and bent down.

It was a little bigger than the ones the squad members received.

However, the rewards didn't end with that.

“And I will rearrange the 42nd squad to the 12th one and appoint Roan as a class 5 adjutant.”

At that instant, it was obvious for the 42nd squad, but even Roan put on a surprised expression.

‘Class 5 adjutant?’

Roan turned to look at Gale and Kennis as if he wondered if he had heard wrong.

Kennis smiled gratified and slightly nodded.

‘I’m an adjutant?’

He was only an 18 year old greenhorn spearman.

He did render some great merits, but he hadn’t thought that he would be able to climb to the seat of adjutant this quickly.

Taking into account that Kennis was a grade 2 adjutant, it was a really outstanding promotion.

“Roan’s rank will be a class 5 adjutant, and will work below adjutant Jack that leads the current spearmen squad.”

Kennis’s voice was kind.

Gale looked at Roan’s absent minded expression and asked as if he was whispering.

“How is it? Do you think that this much will be enough to what you have done until now?”

Only then did Roan take a hold of himself and nodded.

“It’s a prize more than I deserve.”

At those words, Gale shook his head.

“There are still some points lacking for me.”

That was the truth.

Roan was about to reply something but he ended up lowering his head.

Because the sights of the adjutants next to Gale was really fierce.

‘The reason why the expressions of the adjutants isn’t good is because of that.’

Especially Jack’s face, that had to split the spearmen with him, was a mess.

Then, Gale’s voice was heard again.

“How is it that you aren’t saying anything? I’m not saying this for being pretentious.”

Roan raised his head and looked at Gale.

“If you have something to ask me, tell me. Because if it’s something beyond my reach, I will grant it to you.”

An unexpected opportunity.

‘If it was before, I would have just say no and fell back.’

But now, he wasn’t like that.

And after looking at Jack’s sharp eyes, he became more that way.

Roan slightly bent down and replied.

“Then, give me one duel right.”

“Ah! A duel right!”

Gale smiled brightly and hit his knees.

This dueling right was a piece of paper that could challenge someone without caring about ranks.

But the limits were also clear.

You could only use the duel right given by troop commander Gale inside the rose troop.

And of course, excluding Gale.

“Hahaha! Are you planning to battle with Kennis?”

You wouldn't get a promotion or some rewards if you won the battle.

Only, the victor will get the recognition of the squad members and at the same time, a rather big reputation.

Roan saved his words.

Gale nodded with a really funny expression and shook his hands.

Then, one soldier brought a yellow and stiff piece of paper, the size of a palm.

Write.

Below the short phrase, a signature is written.

“Here, it’s the duel right. Use it wisely.”

“Thank you.”

Roan received the duel right and after putting it in his chest, he bent down again.

Gale clapped his hands with a proud expression.

Clap.

“With this, the prizes I will give will come to an end. But.....”

He paused for a moment and continued to say.

“It seems like the commander of the 7th corps Aaron Tate will also be doing a merits award.”

At those words, Roan looked at Gale’s two eyes fixedly.

A little surprised expression.

Gale smiled and nodded.

“Right. It seems like the commander will directly bestow you the rewards.”

Again, an unexpected thing.

Kennis continued to say.

“The merits reward by the commander will be done after you go back to your respective head quarters, so keep it in mind.”

“Yes. Understood.”

Roan replied with the calmest expression possible.

However, he was so happy inwardly he wanted to jump.

‘If it’s the headquarters of the 7th corps, it will be Ipen castle. on that place.....’

His eyes shine with a colour.

He thinks up of the shape of the castle in his memories.

The military city Ipen located at the eastern parts of Rinse kingdom.

‘There’s Brant’s library on Ipen’s castle.’

Roan unconsciously rolled his fingers.

One memory roams in his head.

The case that will make the eastern parts of Rinse kingdom noisy.

‘I have to get in there. But the problem is that only nobles can get inside.’

But it didn’t mean that he didn’t have any methods.

He still had the merits awards of the commander.

‘I have to get a permission to get inside Brant library at the merits award.’

A faint smile appears on Roan’s mouth.

His fingers become itchy.



## Chapter 28 : Merits Awards (2)

---

Roan moved his feet with a perplexed expression.

“Congratulations!”

“Squad commander Roan, no, sir adjutant. Real congratulations!”

Congratulations pour out at the sides.

“Adjutant Roan. Congratulations.”

“Real congratulations.”

A familiar voice.

As he turned back to look, he saw the 13th squad commander Tane and vice squad commander Lander.

“Squad commander. Why are you acting like that?”

Roan laughed awkwardly and shook his hands, but Tane shook his head.

“When you were a squad commander, I tried to pass the matter because you were younger, but you are now an adjutant. Even if you are younger, a rank is a rank. You have to grab the central focus so we can show our military discipline.”

Lander added.

“Of course. We aren’t a goblin army, so we can’t be comfortable with each other. If you don’t act properly, the guys of the other troops will look down on you.”

“Mmm.”

At those words, Roan got silent.

Actually, those weren’t wrong words.

On top of that.

‘He was the same as being 38 years old.’

There was no need to be caught in the bridle of age.

Roan nodded and looked at the two of them.

“I look forward to work with you. Squad commander Tane. Vice squad commander Lander.”

“It’s us who should be looking forward to it.”

Tane and Lander slightly bent their heads.

Austin, that was looking at the side, nodded with a satisfied expression.

“Now it seems like it is spinning properly.”

Roan opened his eyes roundly as if implying what did that mean.

At those words, Austin said in a low voice as if he was whispering.

“Actually, I didn’t quite like that the guys in the 13th squad talked to you without any formalities.”

“Me too.”

“Me too. Me too.”

Pierce and Glenn butted in.

Roan smirked and nodded.

“From now on, I will take that into account more.

And then, a cold voice was heard as if it was breaking the warm atmosphere.

“The bitches really like gossiping all day.”

As he turned to look away, Jack and three other young adjutants were glancing at them.

‘Is it starting?’

Roan smiled bitterly.

Actually, Roan’s promotion speed was abnormal.

He became squad commander after only one week of having gotten out of the training camp, and again, not even after one

month he became an adjutant.

‘In my last life, squad commander was the end.’

But of course, he had many opportunities to climb to become an adjutant of the 7th corps.

However, Roan opted to move to the 6th corps, the 5th corps, and the 4th.

Because the closer he was to the 1st corps, the more chances he would get caught in the eyes of a noble or a commander.

‘But in the end, that became a bad choice.’

Because of that, he couldn’t even become an adjutant, and kept roaming the battlefield as a squad commander of a spearmen squad and lost his life.

‘That me climbed to become an adjutant in only two months.’

A promotion speed that was so fast that even the envy of Jack and the adjutants wasn’t enough.

“Why are you glaring like that?”

Jack twitched his brows and approached.

A feeling that he would grab his neck at any moment.

“Roan.”

Jack, that stopped right in front of his nose, said as if he was growling.

“Tell me yourself. For a greenhorn that just got out of the training camp to become an adjutant. Do you think that makes sense?”

“I wonder.”

Roan shrugged his shoulders.

Quite a relaxed expression and attitude.

Fire appears in Jack's eyes.

“What is that attitude? Did you forget that even if we are same adjutants, i'm on a higher rank?”

He was a class 4 adjutant.

However, Roan didn't say anything.

Jack continued saying.

“Listen clearly. This year becomes the 10th one I have roamed the battlefield. I walked a horrible hell road that a greenhorn like you that has only been in the battlefield for two months can't even imagine.”

Roan smiled bitterly.

‘Look. I walked that road for 20 years. And in the end, even my stomach got pierced.’

He forced to gulp down the words that climbed up to his throat.  
Jack pressed Roan’s forehead with the tip of his finger.

“You have a need to show some respect to me.”

Roan looked at Jack’s eyes fixedly.

‘What is it, this bastard. Those eyes.....’

Jack’s eyes contorts.

He sensed pity in Roan’s eyes.

That was just like he was looking at a child doing something childish.

“Thi, this bastard!”

In the end, Jack couldn’t hold it anymore and swung his fist.

The fist that comes at a close distance.

However, Roan’s expression was still calm.

‘I expected this much.’

No, even if he didn't expect it, Jack wasn't his opponent.

Puk.

Roan blocked Jack's punch with his left arm.

"This bastard."

Jack pulled out his arm that got stuck in Roan's elbow and tried to punch him again.

And then, a shout was heard at his back.

"What are you doing right now!"

The owner of the voice was Keniss.

He approached him and separated Roan and Jack.

'Spoiled bastards.'

The cold sight looks at Jack and the adjutants behind him.

"Hmph."

Jack coughed and fell back.

"You are doing really well for someone who has to trust your

backs to your allies.”

“I’m sorry.”

Roan bent down first.

Keniss looked at Jack.

“.....I’m sorry.”

He couldn’t help it.

Keniss clicked his tongue.

‘Tchtchtch. Jack. it’s too early for you to succeed.’

He wanted to say one more thing, but he sighed in the end and shook his head.

“Whew. Everyone, return to your tents.”

At those words, Jack and the adjutants moved first.

Even while doing that, they didn’t forget to glance at Roan.

“Roan.”

Keniss called at Roan that was starting to move and stopped him.

“Yes.”



Roan replied and came closer.

Keniss let out a sigh and grabbed Roan's shoulders.

“The young adjutants will pick a fight with you for quite a while. But you be the one to endure it.”

“Yes. Understood.”

A short reply.

Keniss smiled satisfactorily and nodded.

“If you can't hold it anymore, use your dueling right.”

At those words, Roan just smiled.

“Anyways, just endure it. I will find some solution.”

“Yes. Understood.”

The conversation ended with that.

Roan looked at Keniss getting farther and took in a deep breath.

‘I can take this much of a fight as much as they want.’

For him, that had the 20 years of experience, this much was at the level of children's playing.

However, Jack's expression and attitude was a bit weird.

It didn't seem like he would back down that easily.

‘In my past life, I was only suffering.....’

He didn't also want to be like that in this life.

And then, the voices of the squad members was heard.

“Sir adjutant. Don't worry. If adjutant Jack or the others come to bother you, we will block them.”

“We will protect adjutant Roan.”

“Just believe in our 42nd, no, 12th squad.”

Reliable voices.

Roan smiled brightly and nodded.

“Fine. Instead, I will protect you.”

This was the truth.

‘If I become a monarch, you will become generals.’

Roan's and the squad members eyes burned.

\*\*\*\*\*

“That's not it. This way, you have to do it this way.”

A voice that felt really stifled.

The person that was swinging his spear as if he couldn't understand it at all was Pierce.

He followed Roan's orders and was teaching spearmanship to the 12th squad.

However, the process wasn't quite good.

"So, what's different from what you are doing to what I am?"

"It's the same poking."

The voices that were also stifled.

The members of the 12th squad complained towards Pierce.

They couldn't understand the difference between his spearmanship to them at all.

"This is the same? This?"

Pierce swung his spear again as if he was feeling stuffed.

"Look well. I twist my wrist here like this and shake the spear up and down. But the beat you twist your wrists here is half time slow and you can't even shake the spear proper....."

Pierce, that was explaining things earnestly, shut his mouth.

Because the expressions of the members of the 12th squad were that of confused faces.

“Whew. You don’t understand at all, right?”

At those words, everyone nodded.

Pierce let out a sigh as if he couldn’t do it anymore.

“Sir adjutant Roan. I’m surrendering. I can’t teach them anymore.”

Roan, that was maintaining his spear at the opposite side of the squad members, smiled bitterly.

‘Is it really impossible?’

Roan put into effect the individual training along the squad training.

And in this process, he wanted to get help from Pierce.

However the result was a great failure.

‘Well, even in my past life, the ones that could follow Pierce’s instructions amounted to ten.’

And unfortunately, even he couldn’t get in that number.

Roan’s talent was one problem, but Pierce was also the other factor.

‘He isn’t useful at all when it comes to teaching.’

And the problem is that he is a genius among geniuses.

he couldn't understand why others couldn't do the things he could.

‘It's that guy that made the Pierce spearmanship while being seated in an instant.’

Pierce spearmanship, that was picked as the best one among normal soldiers.

And Pierce was embarrassed of that spearmanship.

<Spearmanship that seems like child play.>

To make him teach something normal was the same as something tough.

‘On top of that, the more he aged, the more peculiar his character became.’

The young Pierce was shy and timid.

However, as he roamed the battlefield, that character changed mysteriously.

‘A thoroughly calculative character.’

He didn't give and didn't receive.

He returned what he received.

‘Because of that, when he became a duke, I couldn’t receive that much help.’

And of course, there was a time that he felt disappointed.

But he felt more thankful when he treated him as a friend from the same training camp and a fellow soldier rather than boasting about his rank of duke.

‘Bastard. Would he have cried when I died?’

He got curious.

“Pierce. If perhaps I died, would you.....”

The moment he was going to throw the question, he saw Glenn returning.

“Huh?”

His brows twitched.

Glenn was really beat up.

Roan put down the spear and moved towards him.

“Glenn. What happened?”

“Si, sir.”

The voice that was as down as his looks.

Holding his cheek and grabbing his jaw with both of his hands.

Roan extended his hands and took off Glenn's hands.

In that instant, he saw the eyes and cheeks that became blue.

On top of that, his lips got split up and red blood flowed out.

“Who is it?”

Roan's voice lowers.

Glenn hesitated and couldn't reply properly

“Who is it? WHO made you like this?”

As he asked again, Glenn lowered his head completely.

“Adjutant Jack said that I kept wandering in front of him.....”

The end of his sentence subsides.

Roan stroke Glenn's head.

“Don't lower your head. You did nothing wrong.”

His face freezes coldly.

Roan moved his feet and moved towards Jack's tent.

“Where is he going?”

“Is he perhaps going to adjutant Jack?”

“Isn’t it going to become a huge trouble?”

The squad members say extravagantly with a surprised expression.

“Let’s follow.”

“We have to stop him.”

In the end, they followed Roan.

Meanwhile, Roan crossed rose troop’s camp and arrived in front of the 11th squad, where Jack was.

“Huh? That’s Roan over there.”

Jack discovered Roan first and made invidious remarks.

‘It should be because of that guy Glenn, or however he was called, right? Even so, what will he be able to do?’

He sat on a wooden chair on purpose and acted as if he was relaxed.

“Ohh! Adjutant Roan. What are you doing he.....”



The words were until there.

Roan, that approached right in front of him, kicked Jack's face.

Kick!

A heavy sound.

Jack rolled on the floor with the chair.

“Kgh. Thi, this crazy bastard, did he go insan.....”

Curses came out by its own.

But even so, he couldn't spit them out clearly.

Because Roan was continuing to punch him.

Pubuk! Puk!

Jack's face became a face along a thick sound.

Pak!

The punch lashes through the nose.

“Kugh.”

Jack grabs his nose with his two hands and pants.

And then, Roan took out a yellow paper from his chest.

Duel right.

He crumpled the dueling right inside Jack's mouth.

“Uuugh! Ugh!”

Jack tried to spit out the piece of paper but he couldn't do so.

It was because Roan's left hand was impeding him from doing so.

A cold and chilly voice was heard.

“Son of a bitch. Who told you to touch my guys?”

## Chapter 29 : Merits Awards (3)

---

On the faces of the members of the 12th squad, their expressions showed right on their faces.

Perplex, worry, rage, etc.

But most of all, the thing that heated their chest the most was loyalty and comradeship.

‘To get that angry because of a squad member getting beaten up.’

‘It’s a first seeing someone getting that angry.’

‘Because of us, it’s because of us.’

A feeling that they may burst out of tears any time.

And then, the squad members of the 11th squad that were looking at the situation, moved.

“Fuck! Separate them!”

“To resort to violence against someone from a higher rank!”

“His discipline is a mess!”

They seemed to want to hold down Roan immediately.

Then, Austin bit his lower lip and blocked them.

“Fall back!”

Continued by Austin, the remaining squad members aligned at the sides.

“What are you? You aren’t getting away?”

Vice squad commander Walker, of the 11th squad growled.  
Austin didn’t get pushed back and talked back.

“You fall back!”

Curses came out.

“This fucking!”

“Fuck, what!”

Austin didn’t lose.

The 11th squad and the 12th glared at each other.

A bloody confrontation.

And meanwhile, Roan’s punches continued.

Puk! Pubuk! Puk!

‘If I want to dispirit him, I have to do it certainly.’

One of the things he learnt the past 20 years.

‘If I step on him sloppily, he will climb up again.’

Before, he was weak in heart, so he always left things half done.

‘Because of that, it wasn’t only once or twice that I got backstabbed.’

He didn’t want to repeat those mistakes again.

Puk! Pubuk!

The punches get stuck in Jack’s face continuously.

“Uuuuuuu.”

It has been long since he already gave up on resisting.

He trembled while surrounding his face with his two arms.

“Fo, fo, forgive me. Fo, forgivemeee.”

It couldn’t be heard clearly because of the dueling right, but he was certainly begging.

Only then did Roan stop hitting him.

“You shouldn’t apologize to me, but to Glenn.”

A cold voice.

Jack stood up slowly with a bloody face.

“Kugh. Kugh.”

It was uncomfortable to breathe because of the completely broken nose.

He took out the dueling right that was stuck on his mouth and stood in front of Glenn.

“I, i’m sorry. I was, was wrong.”

Glenn just nodded slowly at Jack’s miserable face.

An adjutant lowered his head to a normal soldier.

The 11th squad that was looking the situation bit their lower lips.

“Kugh! Sir adjutant Jack!”

“Sir adjutant!”

At the same time, Jack fell as if he collapsed.

The 11th squad members hurried and supported Jack with their arms.

And then, a rigorous yell was heard.

“What noise is this!”

“What’s happening!”

The owner of the voices were Gale and Keniss.

They walked stomping and frowned after looking at Jack that became a bloody mess.

“Just what.....”

They couldn't finish the sentence.

Keniss ordered normal soldiers to move Jack to a tent.

“What happened?”

Meanwhile, Gale asked Roan.

“I will tell you the truth as it is.”

Roan said the truth without even a trace of lie.

“Mmm.”

Kenniss and Gale thought.

‘So Jack was the first to lay a hand.’

‘I thought that he was only a naive one.’

The sight of the two people lay on Roan.

“Whew.”

A deep sigh flowed from Gale’s mouth.

‘He did use a dueling right, but Roan’s action were too severe.’

Jack’s face became crushed completely.

Roan read Gale’s thoughts and lowered his head.

“Troop commander. Although I used a dueling right because of my squad members, I know that my actions were too excessive. I will take responsibility and leave the seat of adjutant.”

At those words, the 12th squad shouted with a surprised expression.

“Si, sir adjutant!”

“Sir adjutant Roan!”

And they kneeled down towards Gale and Keniss and bent down.

“Just take away our reward.”

“Sir adjutant Roan did that simply because of us.”

“We don’t need no reward. Instead, keep the rank of sir adjutant Roan.”

A begging voice and attitude.



From the eyes of Gale and Keniss, that were looking at them, shone amazement.

‘It’s only been one month, but he made the guys from other squads to become one.’

‘To get the trust of the squad members in this short time.’

They got amazed at Roan’s leading abilities.

Gale and Keniss looked at each other.

‘In the end, the fault is Jack’s.’

‘On top of that, Roan used the dueling right.’

Although he exceeded on his actions, it wasn’t that big of a fault to pass a military law.

The two looked at each other and slightly nodded.

“Uhm. Everyone get up.”

Gale made the members of the 12th squad, that were kneeling, stand up.

They shook off the dust in their clothes and smiled.

“Because the meaning of the squad members is really admirable, I won’t pursue this subject anymore.”

“Ah.....”

Austin and the other members sigh out of relief.

They ran towards Roan and yelled.

“Sir adjutant! How good!”

“It turned out really well!”

“What a relief!”

Really happy voices.

They were happier than when they received the merits awards.

Roan smiled gratified and hugged them all.

“It’s because of you.”

At those words, Glenn lowered his head.

“Be, because of me, you were about to receive a big punishment.  
I’m sorry.”

Roan smiled brightly and grabbed Glenn’s shoulders.

“There’s nothing to feel sorry about.”

He looked at the squad members surrounding him and said.

“I told you that I will protect you.”

At those words, Austin broadened his chest as if he couldn't lose.

“Instead we told you that we will protect you.”

“Right. We did say that!”

“Right. We said that we would protect sir adjutant.”

The squad members said and felt happy.

Roan smiled faintly and hugged them once more.

Gale and Kennis looked at them satisfiedly.

“Roan. He will become a good commander.”

Gale's words.

Keniss nodded.

“Yes. If he learns well and grows like this, he will become a general.”

At those words, Gale continued saying.

“Right. Perhaps, a great commander that commands the world.”

They felt those things drawing on their eyes.

\*\*\*\*\*

After the scandal of Jack's face having become a mess, Roan's status became firm.

Especially, looking at Jack that finished his treatment trembling whenever he saw Roan, the young adjutants couldn't think about picking a fight against him.

There were some times the 11th squad picked a fight with the 12th, but after they suffered defeat against Pierce, the situation became one that the 11th squad had to be aware of them.

For many reasons, the topology of Roan and the 12th squad kept rising inside rose troop.

“Starting from now, start organizing your stuff.”

“Yes! Understood!”

Roan replied loudly and got out of the tent.

The smell that was mixed with pieces of metal, blood, horse, and sweat tickled his nose.

Breathe.

Roan took in a deep breath and looked up the sky.

‘After 10 days, is it farewell with Pedian's plain?’

The tedious monster subjugation tactic finally ended.

After the inundation tactic in Prely river, the 7th corps and Rinse kingsmen kept getting successive victories.

The monsters, that were suffering defeat, started to flee towards the boundaries and Grain's mountain range.

The people from Rinse kingdom chose not to chase them.

Because having defended Pedian's plain had achieved their objective.

‘Now, there's something I have to do before I leave.’

The thing he was postponing because he was hectic.

Roan slowly moved and crossed rose troop's camp.

The steps continued outside of it.

Step. Step.

Roan, that walked for a long while taking in some air, walked towards the troops camp that was located on the border of a hill.

“Stop!”

The soldiers that were guarding the entrance blocked Roan.

‘What is this? This greenhorn.’

Expressions looking down on him.

“This is thorn troop's camp. Reveal your name and rank.”

At the words of the big soldier, Roan pointed to his left side of the armor.

There were 5 diagonal sticks stuck on it.

“I’m adjutant Roan and I belong to rose troop of the 7th corps.”

Then, the soldiers that were dispersed, took on firm postures.  
Looks of taking in military discipline.

“Sir!”

‘For this greenhorn to be a class 5 adjutant.’

‘If I slipped I would have made a big mistake.’

Just like they haven’t expected it, the perplexment was also that big.

Roan smiled faintly and looked at the soldiers.

“I’m looking for Harrison.....”

Even before he finished his sentence, the big soldier replied.

“If you go inside the camp, there will be the 15th squad. He will probably be there.”

“Thank you.”

Roan nodded and moved.

As he got further away, the nervous soldiers let out a sigh.

“Whew. What a surprise. I have never thought that that greenhorn was an adjutant.”

And then, the soldier that was behind him clapped.

Clap!

“Ah! It seems like he is that person!”

“Who?”

The soldiers tilted their heads.

At those reactions, the soldier that said those things smiled and replied shortly.

“Ghost of the battlefield.”

At that moment, the soldiers let out exclamations.

“Ah! Ghost of the battlefield!”

And then, they turned their heads away and followed Roan’s back.

“I did hear that the ghost of the battlefield was a greenhorn that just finished his training camp.....”

“I thought that he would be well build with big muscles.”

“He’s really a kid.”

Voices filled with surprise.

Although they were from another troop, the ghost of the battlefield Roan was also a famous existence for them.

Especially after the inundation tactic in Prely river, he became all the more amazing.

“I should have shook his hands at least.”

One soldier smacked his lips as if it was regrettable.

At those words, the big builded soldier shook his head.

“Tch tch tch.”

Clicking the tongue.

The soldier that smacked his lips wanted to say something because of the embarrassment, but the big builded soldier hit his shoulder.

“You can do it when he comes out.”

“Ah.....”



Exclamations came out from the mouths of the soldiers.  
Their sight turns to inside the camp again.

\*\*\*\*\*

It wasn't finding the camp for the 15th squad.  
Because it was marked outside of it.  
Roan carefully got on the camp.

“Who..... Huk! Sir!”

One soldier that was doing individual maintenance looked at  
Roan's rank and saluted.

‘The military discipline in thorn troop is really good.’

Rose troop was also an excellent troop, but it wasn't as hard as  
this.

Roan lightly nodded and looked inside the camp.

“Ah.....”

A low exclamation.

There was a familiar face in the corner of the camp.

‘Harrison.’

The fellow soldier and friend that died 5 years before Roan.  
The guy that died with a big regret, just like himself.

<I had to become an archer instead of a spearman.>

The words he mumbled everyday rang in his ears.  
Roan moved slowly and stood in front of Harrison.

“Harrison.”

A low calling voice.

“Do, do you know me?”

Harrison asked back with a surprised expression.  
Roan smiled brightly and nodded.

“I heard the rumors.”

“Rumors?”

Harrison had a confused face.  
Roan extended his hand.

“Shall we shake hands?”

“Yes? Yes.”

Harrison hurriedly grabbed his hand.

Roan smiled brightly and nodded.

“It’s a really good hand.”

“Yes?”

Harrison had an expression he couldn’t understand at all.

Roan said in a voice so low it seemed he was whispering.

“It’s a really good hand to shoot an arrow.”

## Chapter 30 : Merits Awards (4)

---

“Yes?”

Harrison asked back again.

He could only do so.

‘What is he saying so suddenly? No, before that, who are you?’

The one in front of him was of a similar age with him, no matter how he saw him.

If it wasn’t because of the badge of rank that was stuck to the armor, he would have thought that he was a soldier in training.

‘He should be confused.’

Roan had already guessed how Harrison felt.

He lightly shook the hand he was grabbing.

“I’m a 5 class adjutant from rose troop.”

“Sir. I’m spearman Harrison from the 15th squad of thorn troop. But.....”

Harrison blurred the last part of the sentence and cautiously looked at Roan.

“You heard rumours about me.....?”

Roan nodded.

“Right. They say that there is a really light and clear-eyed soldier among the spearmen of thorn troop.”

“Do, do you mean that’s me?”

Harrison asked back as if he couldn’t believe it at all.

Because even he hadn’t heard those rumours.

Roan took a step back instead of replying and nodded.

“If it’s fine with you, should we go outside?”

“Yes. Yes, i’m fine.”

Harrison followed Roan’s back with a half-absent-minded face.

And then, one rumour passed by his head.

‘It’s Roan of Rose troop, he’s that ghost of the battlefield!’

A feeling that he got startled awake.

‘They said that it was a spearman that just finished his training. The rumours were true.’

His sight fell on Roan’s back, that was walking in front.

‘Then that means that he’s the same age as me..... But to already be an adjutant.’

He felt Roan, that was in front of his eyes, to be incredible.

Roan, that didn’t even know Harrison was thinking like that, crossed the camp and stopped in front of the tent of one squad.

‘Here is?’

Harrison, that was following him, frowned.

‘This is the archers tent.’

He remembered the words he told him.

<Those are really good hands to fire an arrow.>

‘Maybe? Was he telling the truth?’

When he thought up to there, Roan brought a bow and some arrows.

Harrison hurriedly shook his hands.

“Um, um sir adjutant Roan. I have never fired an arrow until now.”

Urgent voice and expression.

Roan just looked at Harrison acting like this.

‘He was also like this back then.’

Harrison was the same in his past life.

At the order of an adjutant telling him to fire an arrow, he got surprised and shook his hands.

‘But everything changed the moment he grabbed the bow.’

Roan smiled brightly and after hitting Harrison’s shoulder, he moved his feet.

“Ah, it’s, it’s true. I have never fired an arrow.....”

Harrison frowned and followed his back.

They walked out of the camp stood in front of a fence.

‘There’s a tree at a suitable place.’

Roan smiled at the tree that was at the other part of the fence.

Give.

The arrows and bow given by Roan.

Harrison laughed awkwardly and shook his head once more.

“Sir adjutant Roan. It seems like there’s something wrong you know about me, but i’m a spearman. A spearman. I have never fired an arrow.”

“I know.”

Roan stubbornly lent him the bow and arrows.

And grabbed Harrison’s hands once more time.

“My eyesight is good. In my eyes, you have more talent in archery rather than spearmanship.”

“Ey. Even if it’s good, how can you at the first time.....”

Harrison couldn’t believe it.

Roan smiled and shrugged his shoulder.

“Harrison. Looking that your eyes are sharp, your chin is small and your neck is long, you are from Owell region, right?”

“How did you.....?”

Harrison grabbed his chin and neck and put a surprised expression.

Roan continued saying.

“Looking at your hardened skin on your palm and the muscles of your arms, you originally trained with the blade. And it’s only been 5 months since you became a spearman.”



“Ho!”

Harrison opened his eyes roundly and gulped down some air. However, he shook his head and twisted his nose.

‘It seems like he saw my records.’

If that wasn’t the case, he couldn’t guess where he was from and what he trained in with just the sight.

And of course, Roan was reading Harrison’s thoughts.

“And.....”

The sharp sight is directed to Harrison’s left hand.

“You have injured your left hand badly. Your pinky doesn’t bend well, right?”

“Huk!”

Harrison got surprised in a big way.

“Tha, how did you know that.....?!”

He hurt his left hand immediately after he entered the training camp.

He received a blade swung by a comrade while training, and the bone in his hand broke.

However he hid it thoroughly from his comrades, squad commander and adjutants, for fear of getting dismissed. And because of that, this truth wasn't put in any records.

‘It, it’s true. The eyesight of this person is the real thing.’

There was no one that noticed that he had a problem in his left hand.

But Roan noticed it the first time he saw it.

“Because of that, it’s difficult to use the spear, right?”

“Yes? Yes.”

Harrison slowly nodded.

‘This person is a real ghost. A ghost.’

A really admiring expression.

Roan looked at Harrison and put a bitter smile.

‘Actually, you were the one that taught me all of this.’

It was obvious about his background, but also the injury he was hiding.

All of these things were directly told by Harrison.

Roan smiled brightly and hit Harrison’s shoulder.

“How is it? You will be able to believe me, right?”

“Yes. I can believe that.....”

Harrison looked at the bow and arrows and slurred the end of the sentence.

Roan pointed at a far away tree with a confident expression.

“Just three arrows. If you can’t hit that tree after three arrows, I won’t keep bothering you.”

“Three, three arrows?”

Harrison put a surprised expression and asked back.

“I have really never fired an arrow before.”

An earnest face, as if he was asking to believe him.

Roan nodded.

“I know. Just at first sight, it seems like that. But if it’s your talent, you will be able to hit that tree.”

A voice and expression filled with affirmation.

‘Even in the past life was like that. You hit the tree with the third arrow. And a tree that was even farther than the one here.’

But of course, the time and place was different from then.

However, Roan believed.

‘If it’s that talent that made everyone amazed, you would be able to do it plentifully.’

He looked at Harrison’s eyes fixedly.

Not shaking eyes.

‘Whew. I can’t do anything about it.’

Harrison couldn’t say anything else and grabbed the bow.

‘Was it grabbed like this?’

He imitated how archers grabbed it.

A really awkward shape.

Harrison charged an arrow and looked at Roan.

“I don’t know if you get disappointed.”

Roan just smiled meaningfully instead of replying.

‘Ey. Whatever.’

Harrison pointed the tree and pulled the bowstring.

Kiigiiiikik.

The bow that bend greatly.

“Kugh.”

Harrison gritted his teeth at the bowstring carving at his fingers.

Tung!

One arrow pierces through the air along a heavy sound.

Sueeeeee!

A sharp sound.

Roan and Harrison follow it.

Paat!

The arrow missed with a big difference.

‘Well. Right.’

Even so, Harrison that was expecting something a little bit, smacked his lips and looked at Roan.

“You saw right? I have never fir.....”

“There’s still two arrows left.”

Roan lifted two fingers.

“Whew. Understood.”

Harrison let out a deep sigh and charged an arrow again.

‘Damn. Even if I can’t hit it, I would like it if it passes by close.’

Even if he was an adjutant, he didn’t want to show an embarrassing sight to Roan, that was the same age as him.

A conspicuous colour shines in Harrison’s eyes.

‘How did the arrow fly again.....’

He unconsciously started to change the posture of holding the bow and the posture of pulling the string, little by little.

It wasn’t because someone taught him, but he realized it by himself.

A smile appears on Roan’s face.

‘Right. That’s the real appearance of the genius archer Harrison.’

And then, a noise was heard.

Sueeeeeee!

The second arrow was fired.

Spat!

The arrow scratched the tree and passed by.

“Huh?!”

Harrison looked at Roan with a surprised expression.

Roan smiled brightly and shrugged his shoulders.

“There’s still one arrow left.”

At those words, Harrison nodded slowly and charged the last arrow.

“Whew.”

He took in a breath and pointed the bow towards the tree.

‘The last one got bent down towards the right.’

Tung.

Sueeeeeeee!

A sharp noise.

Gulp.

Harrison gulped dry saliva and followed the back of the arrow.

‘Pl...ease.....’

When the body got twisted on its own.

Puuk!

The arrow got stuck in the body of the tree with a dull sound.

“Nice!”

Harrison unconsciously clenched his fists and yelled.

His chest was beating with strength and his face became bright.

The thrilling shudder flowed on all of his body, which he couldn't feel when he battled as a spearman.

“How is it? You feel good, right?”

Roan smiled brightly and approached him.

Only then did Harrison release his fist slowly and coughed.



“Hm. Hm.”

His bright face turned red.

Roan grabbed Harrison’s shoulders.

“Harrison.”

A low voice but with strength, and the hot and transparent eyes that don’t have any lies.

“Let’s go together with me.”

Kung.

At that moment, Harrison felt a big rock hitting his head and heart.

The breath that gets clogged.

They had certainly met today.

However, the Roan in front of his eyes showed him a new world.

Actually, Harrison was afraid of going to the battlefield as a spearman.

Because of the injury in his hand, his spear skills fell compared to that of his comrades.

A feeling of becoming a weight to his comrades.

Until now, he had endured that oppressive feeling.

But if it is the feeling when he fired an arrow.

‘I think I may be able to enjoy battling.’

Harrison’s hand unconsciously moved to his armor.

His voice came out as if he was vomiting something hot.

“Sir! Understood!”

\*\*\*\*\*

For now, Roan returned alone to rose troop.

‘I wanted to bring him immediately.....’

But he wasn’t in a situation where he could bring him immediately, as they were in different troops.

‘On top of that, this isn’t the correct time.’

Roan looked at the south sky.

‘I have to go to Potter region.’

A scandal that happened in the past 20 years, and one of the best and biggest scandals that could be picked with your fingers.

Roan waited for that huge scandal until now.

‘There’s two months left until the landslide happens.’

Before that, he had to go to Maiel’s mountain that belonged to viscount Potter.

‘First, I will have to request for a vacation when the merits awards end.’

A plan that will last one month, or three months if it takes long.

‘If I finish what I had planned, I will get back to the squad.’

His life will start anew from then.

‘Until then, it’s obvious for Harrison, but I also have to polish the skills of Pierce, Glenn, and the other members of the 12th squad.’

His chest beat.

‘I will make my own squad, my corps with them as the center.’

And as he walks step by step, he will one day surpass being a great general, and become a monarch.

Magnificence and heroic temper fills his heart.

\*\*\*\*\*

The next day, the soldiers that participated in the monster subjugation in Pedian's plain, started to withdraw in order.

The 7th corps were the very last.

After finishing the preparations plentifully for 10 days, the genuine withdrawal started.

‘A lot of things happened in this short time.’

Roan's feelings were new.

It was marvelous having returned to the times when he was an 18 year old greenhorn, but most of all, it was more marvelous having become a 5 class adjutant in only some months.

‘Until now, is it quite a successful life?’

He also gained reliable subordinates.

‘From now on, what kind of things will happen?’

He remembered most of the big scandals, but there was no guarantee that those things will happen exactly as his memory.

‘However, I have the 20 years of experience with me.’

If he got a hold of himself and acted calmly, even if some urgent situation came, he would be able to overcome it.

His chest kept beating fiercely.

‘Has life been so fun like this?’

A smile appears on his face.

The march was certainly exhausted, but his smile became denser.

Everything in the world seemed beautiful.

## Chapter 31 : Merits Awards (5)

---

The 7th corps arrived at Ipen's castle, located at the eastern parts of Rinse kingdom, after 10 days of marching.

The lord of Ipen's castle and the commander of the 7th corps, baron Aaron Tate, started to do a merits award for the troops before they left to their respective headquarters.

The turn of rose troop was quite near the end, so they made camp and rested.

The time where generals and commanders obviously lie down but also normal soldiers rest while completely lying down.

But Roan used that time to train on his spear skills.

'I have to master the things I remember the fastest possible.'

The Pierce spearmanship, which he mastered and learnt for the past 20 years while roaming the battlefield.

And even excluding that, he remembered quite many spear skills, combat skills, etc.

'I have to train and keep training until my body moves on its own.'

Ever since Roan returned to the past, he had pushed himself to the limits.

Because of that, his strength, stamina, movements, and of course, spear skills got so good it became noticeable to the eyes.

‘Pierce’s help was also big.’

Roan threw away his personal time and kept training on Pierce’s spear stances.

‘Because of that he could grind and polish his senses to be more sensitive.’

Although his skills wasn’t as good as before he died, but even so, it was quite close.

‘Even so, it’s still lacking.’

The moment he gets satisfied he would stagnate.

Roan whipped himself in case he got lazy.

He focused on training his spear skills on an empty ground on the corner of the camp as usual.

Blow.

His hair blows because of the west wind.

Pabat!

His spear dances while cutting through the wind.

Spear skills that don’t have any unnecessary movements.

His spear skills that were for practical use slowly started to

become softer.

‘Huh?’

Then, he felt a presence approaching him.

“Whew.”

He breathed out slowly and stopped his spear.

At the same time, a big builded man appeared.

A really familiar face.

It was vice squad commander Austin.

“Sir adjutant Roan.”

Quite excited words.

“What happened?”

As Roan smiled faintly and asked back, Austin raised his thumb.

“Our turn finally came.”

He smiled so brightly to the point his teeth showed and continued saying.



“It’s finally sir adjutant Roan’s turn for the merits awards.”

“Ah....”

Roan let out a low exclamation.

‘Has it been 4 days since we arrived at Ipen’s castle?’

Meanwhile, quite a lot of troops finished their merits awards and returned to their own headquarters.

‘My turn finally came.’

He had already decided on what he wanted.

‘I have to get inside Brent’s library.’

It won’t be hard.

The current Brent’s library was nothing but a name.

Although the nobles were allowed to get in, it had been quite a while that even they hadn’t got in.

‘It’s a situation where they shouldn’t deny my proposal to sightsee the library.’

But of course, this was Roan’s thoughts.

“Sir adjutant Roan.”

Austin asked once more time to the absent minded Roan.

Only then did Roan nod late.

“Right. Should we go?”

Roan slowly moved his feet.

As he crossed the camp and arrived at the troop commander's tent that was in the middle of the camp, Gale was already outside waiting for him.

“Your turn finally came. You waited long, right?”

“That's not true.”

Roan slightly bent down.

Gale took a step and continued saying.

“If it's the commander of the army corps, you will be able to ask him anything. Then, tell him honestly, without being aware of him.”

He kept explaining Roan about Aaron's temperament, and the methods about the merits award while moving towards Ipen's castle.

‘So he likes direct things rather than hitting around the bush.’

Roan put a smile.

These little bits of informations become a great strength later on.

Meanwhile, Gale and Roan passed through the castle's door and arrived at the headquarters of the army corps.

“Sir!”

The soldiers that were guarding the entrance, noticed Gale and saluted.

Gale nodded lightly and moved his feet.

He was really excited about what price would Roan get on the merits awards.

“It's troop commander Gale from rose troops, and class 5 adjutant Roan.”

As soon as they informed to the assembly, the huge door opened.

‘It's big.’

The scale of the assembly was quite big.

The ceiling was high and the space was wide.

Wooden chairs, that had long backrest, were aligned to the sides and on a slightly higher platform on the center, a huge table was placed.

‘Corps commander Aaron Tate.’

Beyond the table, they could see Aaron.

He was in the middle of looking at the many gathered documents.

Gale stood in front of the table and saluted.

“It’s troop commander Gale, from rose troop.”

Roan also bent down, following him.

“It’s class 5 adjutant Roan, from rose troop.”

Only then did Aaron, that was busy with the documents, raise his head.

The 6 middle aged men that were seated next to him put interesting expressions.

‘So that guy is Roan.’

‘He is called the ghost of the battlefield.’

‘The guy with the biggest merits in our 7th corps.’

The middle aged men were staff officers that served Aaron.

Although their ranks was that of staff officer, it could be said that they were one rank higher than Gale.

‘So troop commander Richard of the special troop wants him

huh?’

‘Then it really means that he’s a fine guy.’

‘Should I bring him to our side?’

The eyes of the staff all check of Roan’s body.

And Roan also didn’t not notice their sights and interest.

‘I will do what I have to.’

Right now, he had to get in Brent’s castle, and after that he would get a vacation and go to Potter’s region.

There were no plans at all about moving to another troop or serving another troop commander.

“Mendel. Read the merits report.”

At Aaron’s words, a middle aged man that was next to him and looked modest took out a thick piece of paper and extended it.

“I will start from when he discovered the goblin army waiting in ambush at Ale gorge.”

Mendel started to read the merits Roan achieved minutely from when he returned to the past. Just like the inundation tactic, and what he did on Pedian’s plain.

Just by saying that there were more than ten monster commanders he had slain, everybody sighed in amazement.

On top of that, at the word of having rescued the allied troops that were about to get annihilated, everybody put surprised expressions.

‘Didn’t they say that he had just finished his training?’

‘For an 18 year old guy to render this kind of merits!’

‘He rendered even more merits than what I have heard.’

The staff got astounded and looked at Roan.

On the other hand, Aaron’s expression was still calm.

He opened his eyes sharply and looked at Roan’s body in detail.

‘He wouldn’t be hiding his identity, right?’

Aaron got up and moved next to Roan.

Mendel got surprised for a moment, but he didn’t stop reading the report.

Swish.

Aaron grabbed Roan’s wrist.

‘Huh?’

Roan hurriedly lowered his head and frowned.

‘What is it?’

He couldn’t understand the sudden actions.

And then, a weird feeling entered from the wrist.

Just as if he was tickled with a cold feather.

It was a feeling that Roan also knew about.

‘It’s mana.’

He had also been through this quite a few times because of Pierce, in his past life.

And now, Aaron was pouring his mana inside of Roan.

Actions to check if Roan had mastered some kind of mana or not.

‘Is he dubious about me?’

Roan bit his lower lips.

There was no need to unnecessarily buy suspicion.

He softened his stiff expression and lent him his wrist.

“Whew.”

After a moment, Aaron spat a long breath and returned to his place.

A difficult smile was on his face, which you wouldn’t be able to discover if you didn’t see his mouth in detail.

‘He had never learnt mana. Then.....’

It meant that he had slain the monster commanders with simple spear skills.

‘He slayed an orc troop commander with spear skills that don’t contain mana?’

An honestly difficult merit to believe.

‘Was he lucky? Or were his spear skills that outstanding?’

Whatever side it was, it was clear that it was a big strength.

‘If he was lucky, so be it. If his spear skills are excellent, then there is a need for that.’

Soon, happiness could be seen on Aaron’s face.

“With this, I will finish the report.”

Meanwhile, the report about Roan’s merits had finished.

“Amazing.”



A really amazed voice.

“It’s a really amazing merit.”

“There’s no flaw in it.”

“It’s outstanding.”

Even the staff officers that were listening to it, raised their thumbs.

“I was lucky.”

Roan lowered his head.

A not excessive humility.

He didn’t want to hide the merits.

Aaron stared at Roan’s face as if he was going to pierce it, and then asked bluntly.

“As the merit is this big, the reward must also be big. Is there something you want?”

It came.

Gale slightly bent down and gave him eye signs.

‘If there’s anything you want, say it honestly.’

He remembered the advice Gale told him when they were coming to the headquarters.

Roan slightly bent down and looked at Aaron.

“There is one thing I want.”

“Oh.”

Aaron let out a slight exclamation.

He was thinking maybe, but he hadn't expected that he really had something he wanted.

He continued saying with an interesting expression.

“It's good because your character is fresh. Right, tell me. If it's not excessive, I will listen to you.”

Roan breathed in.

An instinctive choice.

A really short silence made Aaron restless.

Roan smiled faintly and laughed while replying with a low voice but with strength.

“I want to see Brent's library.”

Boom.

At that instant, Aaron's face get clearly contorted.

Not only him, the faces of the staff and even Gale's got nicely contorted.

‘Brent library?’

‘He only wants to see Brent’s library for his reward?’

‘Isn’t he out of his mind?’

They all seemed prostrated.

Aaron got ahold of himself late and forced a laugh.

“Ho! So you want to see Brent’s library? Is that really the only thing you want?”

“Yes. That’s right.”

Roan slightly bent down.

He understood how Gale, the staff and Aaron were thinking.

‘They shouldn’t be able to understand as to why I want to go and see an old library that nobody visits.’

Even Roan, if it wasn’t for that object, he wouldn’t even have looked at it.

And then, a bald man that was seated next to Aaron frowned and said.

“But wanting to see Brent library means.....”

He dimmed the last part and put an expression as if it was hard to believe.

“Do maybe you know how to read?”

At those words, it was obvious for Aaron, but even Gale put a really surprised expression.

‘He knows about letters?’

‘He knows how to read?’

Something they hadn’t thought about.

‘Right. If it’s the guy that developed that appalling strategy and tactic, he may be able to write and read.’

Everybody looked at Roan with expressions saying maybe.

Roan smiled faintly and replied shortly.

“Yes. I’m able to read and write.”

“Oh!”

Aaron let out a loud exclamation.

‘For a guy that was only a normal soldier until just now knows how to read and write, huh.’

Knowing words was an outstanding ability.

Excluding the staff officers of the 7th corps, the troops commanders and some adjutants, nobody knew about words.

There was no one among normal soldiers that knew how to read and write.

And actually, even in Roan's case, he could barely get the chance to learn after his mid thirties.

Because as he became squad commander from the 1st spearmen squad, he became in need to know how to do so.

‘Well, it's also partly because of Pierce.’

To read the letters Pierce sent him at times, he need to learn the words.

‘If I learnt a bit earlier, the path to success should have opened much faster.’

And that was also one of the regrets in his choices.

Anyways, the Roan right now knew how to read and write at the age of 18.

‘The more I know about him, the more I want him.’

‘If I can only bring him below me, I will be able to use him well.’

The eyes of the staff officers start to shine with a conspicuous color.

Rolar felt that he heard noises of his body's worth rising.

Gale bit his lower lip.

‘Whatever I do, I have to hold him to stay with me. I can’t get this competent person to be stolen by another person.’

Regret came flowing late.

‘It shouldn’t have been 5 class, but I should have at least made him class 3 adjutant.’

But it wasn’t late yet.

‘I will have to reward him once again.’

Gale’s eyes shone and emitted light.

Then, Aaron’s voice was heard.

“If you know how to read and write, somewhere like Brent’s library is quite a charming place. Although it is worn out and old, it’s still one of the best libraries in the western parts of Rinse kingdom. But.....”

The last part of his sentence blurs.

A weird expression shows on his face.

“Because Brent library hasn’t been taken care of well, it’s no different to ruins. Rather than sight seeing that worn out library, what about receiving another reward?”

He lightly clapped his hands.

At the back side of the assembly, one soldier appeared with a cool spear and two fist sized leather bags.

“It’s a spear I bought when I went to the capital of Miller. It was made by one of the blacksmith that’s on the top three of Rinse kingdom, by making tests over and over. I will give you this and silver coins. How is it?”

A gently asking voice.

Roan looked at the spear and the two leather bags.

‘It’s certainly a good spear. And there are plenty of silver coins. But.....’

He had the travias spear with him, which he couldn’t use yet, and if he got determined on it, he would be able to earn a much higher amount of money.

There was only one thing he needed the most right now.

It was permission to get in Brent library.

‘It’s taking a risk.’

Roan lowered his head.

“There’s nothing I desire aside of seeing Brent library.”

A polite yet firm way of talking.

At that moment, Mendel frowned.

“How conceited. You dare to our corps commander.....”

“It’s fine.”

Aaron shook his hand and smiled faintly.

‘How funny. Does it mean that a good spear and two bags of silver is lacking?’

He interlocked his fingers and rested his chin on it.

“Fine. Then I will raise your rank to class 3 adjutant. And if you want, I will also give you a small house near rose troop’s headquarters.”

Exceptional manners and conditions.

‘Even so, will you still keep insisting that you want to see Brent library?’

An expression as if he was dying to know what kind of answer he will give.

Aaron’s corner of eyes and mouth busily raise up and down.

‘Is he testing me?’



Roan slightly turned up his head and looked at Aaron's two eyes. He remembered the words Gale had said.

‘The corps commander doesn't like dressing things up, and likes direct things.’

Then, the direct action was the best.

Roan lowered his head again and replied.

“I have already received many rewards at the merits awards. I received a prize and I also became an adjutant. The spear and prize you have told me about, give that to the ordinary soldiers that risked their lives at the front. It's because of them that the battle at Ale gorge, inundation tactic at Prelly river, and the subjugation of Pedian's plain turned out to be a victory.”

“Oh.”

Aaron, the staff and Gale all let out exclamations.

‘Good.’

‘He has the qualities of a good commander.’

‘Excellent.’

A satisfied expression.

Roan looked at Aaron's face for a moment and bent his head.

“There’s nothing aside seeing Brent library that I desire.”

“Mmm.”

A low exclamation flowed from Aaron’s mouth.

“So you say that you will deny the promotion, house, the spear bought from the kingdom and the silver coin bags, right?”

“Yes.”

Roan was still with his head lowered.

Aaron just looked at him and shook his head.

“Brent library is a place that is only possible to enter by nobles.....”

He dimmed the last part of the sentence and clapped his hands.

Clap!

A light sound.

“Fine. If that’s your wish, I can only listen to it.”

At that instant a bright smile appeared from Roan, that was bending his head.

‘It’s done.’

He hid his expression and replied with a voice filled with strength.

“Thank you.”

He got the thing he wanted.

At least until now, everything was happening as he wanted.

## Chapter 32 : Merits Awards (6)

---

Aaron took a big piece of paper and stamped it.

“It’s the symbol of our family. If you show this, you will be able to get in Brent library.”

“Thank you.”

Roan bent down deeply and saluted.

“And also take the spear and the reward.”

“Yes?”

At Aaron’s words, Roan put a surprised expression.

“I can’t end the merits award with just letting you see Brent’s library. Even so, I was planning to give this to you, so take it.”

A fresh decision.

Roan didn’t decline and humbly received the spear and the bag of silver.

‘I received more than I thought.’

And the merits awards ended like that.

Roan saluted towards Aaron and the staff commanders and got out of the assembly.

Gale said that he still had things remaining to do, and he remained next to Aaron.

‘Should I go immediately?’

I still had a lot of time before night.

‘Let’s go right now.’

He wanted to find that object even an hour earlier.

Roan got out of the troop’s headquarters and went towards Brent’s library located at the middle of Ipen’s castle.

A familiar distance.

As he walked down the well built road, he saw an antique building far away.

The building the magician Louis Brent, that was around this region, built before dying.

‘The place where Brent’s ring is sleeping.’

Roan’s eyes twisted softly.

\*\*\*\*\*

Louis Brent.

A magician that was from the eastern parts of Rinse kingdom, of Ipen’s castle.

He became a magician for the royal family of Rinse kingdom after he became a 6 circle master at the age of 57. And after working for 10 years for the royal family, he returned to Ipen's castle and died after living for 5 more years.

Before dying, he built Brent's library with the permission of Rinse kingdom and left behind his books. After Louis died, many magicians, scholars and nobles found the library to read and study the books he left, but as more time passed, the people going there became scarce.

<There's not even a grain.>

<There are only simple books you can find anywhere.>

The evaluation of the ones that visited Brent library.

As a huge amount of visitors came here, even the rule that only nobles were allowed of entrance appeared.

Because of that, this place became a ghost library that no one looked at anymore.

'To have built it this well, but to not be able to utilize it properly.'

Roan looked at the entrance of the antique building while standing outside of it.

'Ian Phillips used the library and academy positively.'

Ian, that was an unparalleled strategist, showed his extraordinary skills even with regards to politics and the government.

The product of his skills that made the roads maintained and the

academy revitalized.

‘For a competent man, it was important to recruit, but even more so to raise.’

Ian believed like that.

He thought that just with recruiting, it will end up hitting a dead end.

‘As the academy got revitalized, many extraordinary commanders, warriors and scholars appeared.’

However, that couldn’t end up with a good result.

Because a problem that even Ian hadn’t predicted happened.

‘If that guy just hadn’t made that revolt.....’

The guy called as the mad monarch.

With the appearance of that guy, Ian’s military enhancing books all became foam and disappeared.

‘Now that I think about it, he would only be 10 years old now.’

He felt bitter.

‘I will have to meet him before he turns crazy.’

For the peace of Rinse kingdom, no, for the precious lives of the civilians.

“Whew. But let’s first do what’s in front of me.”

Roan covered the stuffy thoughts and moved his feet.

He opened the door of the library that was shut tight and as he got in, a bad smell pinched the tip of his nose.

‘The smell of mold.’

The maintenance was more of a mess than what he had thought.

On the walls and ceilings that had pretty patterns engraved could be seen it covered with spider webs and black dust.

“Who is it?”

A young man that was guarding the entrance stood up.

Roan opened the paper he received from Aaron.

“I want to get in.”

“Ah..... It’s the symbol of Sir Baron Tate.”

“The young man smiled faintly and pointed towards the library.”

“You can go in towards there.”



“Thank you.”

Roan saluted promptly and opened the door of the library.

Kigigi

Wood twisting sounded displeasingly.

Boom.

As he closed the door and got in, he saw twenty bookshelves turned over.

A bigger scale than what he had in mind.

‘Where was Louis Brent’s biography?’

Roan checked the books on the bookshelves meticulously.

As he passed the 6th bookshelf, and was on the 7th one.

The corner of his mouth rose slightly.

‘It’s here.’

The seventh bookshelf.

And at the lowest place where he had to kneel down.

There was the biography of Louis Brent.

In Louis Brent’s biography, that was comprised of 20 books, were recorded the things from when he was born until he died.

‘Books filled with a lot of useless things.’

The evaluation of the world.

Because of that, there were almost no people that read all the biography from start to end.

‘I have to take out the books starting from the 1st one to the 20th one in order.’

Roan took out the first book and went towards a table located on a corner.

A table of which the upper layer was thicker than the others.

Roan placed the book on the upper right part of the table and grabbed it again and went towards the bookshelf.

‘I have to repeat this until the 20th one.’

A really troublesome process.

‘It’s because of this that no one discovered the hidden ring in the table.’

A bitter smile appeared on his face.

The reason Brent’s ring got discovered was simply by luck.

After 6 years from now on, Brent’s library that was being maintained because of the mess, a fire produced.

‘Then, all the books that were exposed got lost and even half of the tables got burnt.’

And they discovered the ring in the upper layer in the process of organizing the half-burnt tables.

‘The ring was taken by Baron Aaron Tate.’

According to what was told to the world, Brent’s ring was quite an excellent artifact.

It was known that according to the amount of mana you had, you would be able to use the sealed magic and properties it had.

And of course, these truths were all revealed by the owner of the ring, Aaron Tate.

‘There’s no way he revealed everything.’

But just with the revealed truth, it was certain that it was an extraordinary artifact.

‘It was really fortunate that they discovered Brent’s ring along with Louis’s letter.’

In the letter, the method explaining how to open the upper layer was recorded.

And Aaron revealed all of the contents.

‘Because there was no way to take off the ring before the owner died.’

Because of that, even a normal person like Roan could know where Brent's ring was hidden, and remembered how to find it.

He smiled faintly and went towards the table while holding the last 20th book.

“Whew.”

A nervous face.

Roan let out a short sigh and placed the book on the top right part of the table.

Pat.

At that moment, a faint light started to glow following the corner of the table.

‘Damn.’

At the unexpected situation, he hurriedly turned to look at the entrance.

The door was fortunately closed.

Anxiousness appeared on Roan's face.

‘Disappear quickly. Quickly.’

The light seemed to realize how Roan was feeling, and it soon disappeared.

Open

At the same time, a space appeared in the middle of the table and it started to open to the sides.

Tung

From the opened space, a square box popped out.

A box the size of a book.

Roan carefully opened the box.

As soon as he opened the lid, he saw a letter the size of a palm.

<My name is Louis Brent. I will leave a small gift to the one that read all of my biography to the end.>

The contents of the letter, that started just like he remembered, was the same. It was written that you had to place the books from the 1st one to the 20th one in order, in the table Louis appreciated, to be able to receive the small gift.

< I hope you use it well. >

A brusque finish.

Roan folded the finely and put it on his chest.

“So this is Brent’s ring.”

A worn out ring inside the box.

It was a coarse ring that didn’t have any patterns, just as if was made roughly with a piece of steel.

Roan carefully grabbed the ring.

“Whew.”

A short breath.

He put the ring on the index finger of his left hand.



Jiiing

At that moment, the ring shrank along a short vibration and transformed to be just the right size of the finger.

Shine

The coarse ring that didn't have any patterns shone brightly and returned to its original shape.

An unfailing and cheap ring on the exterior.

'I'm rather glad.'

There was nothing good in attracting attention.

'There are a lot of people among nobles that were attached to jewels.

And then, a fresh feeling spread from the ring as the center.

'Ah. So this is the temperature regulation.'

The actual Roan didn't know how to handle mana.

But even so, he could still use some basic functions it had.

And one of those was temperature regulation.

'Now, I will be able to keep a suitable temperature on spring, summer, autumn, and winter.'

It meant that from now on, he wouldn't die from the heat or cold.

On top of that, you could even control your body heat.

Because of that, he wouldn't sweat from the upcoming training or battles, even if he moved his body.

However, there was another feature that Roan really liked.

‘This much is amazing, but to also have the feature to hide your presence.’

A function to hide your presence.

It didn't perfectly hide your presence as outstanding assassins or murderers, but even so, it had an effect of hiding your presence to a certain point.

This was a more useful function than what you thought.

‘It makes my actions difficult to predict.’

People gave off a sign before doing an action.

And on the battlefield, that point was mostly associated with intent, and indications of the body.

There was no bigger advantage than this on the battlefield.

‘On top of that, when I get to learn how to use mana I will be able to use the hidden abilities and also improve functions such as this one.’

The abilities Aaron showed on the past life.

‘Fireball, magic arrow, blink, shield, healing, etc.’

Because of that, he who was a lord of a military castle, got promoted to commander of the eastern parts of Rinse kingdom after he got a hand on Brent’s ring.

‘I rather feel sorry for Sir Baron Aaron Tate.’

Because he took the chance for him to become a commander.’

‘Anyways, I need to learn mana to be able to use all of the functions this ring has.’

His two eyes lit up with fire in them.

‘I will go to Potter region.’

At that place, there was an opportunity, no, a future.

Roan organized his thoughts and grabbed the empty box.

‘First, let’s return to our troop’s camp.’

He got what he wanted.

He didn’t have any need to keep roaming in Brent’s library anymore.

He put the box back on the table.

Place. Sushh.

The table returned to its original shape after a light sound.

Roan moved his feet towards the entrance with a relieved expression.

‘Ah!’

Then, he saw the 20th book of Louis Brent’s biography placed on the table.

‘Even so, he has given me a big gift.....’

Roan returned and after he grabbed the book he walked towards the bookshelf.

“I will use it well.”

A short greeting.

It was when he was planning to go back after he carefully put the book back.

Tuk!

The book, that was put back firmly, got bounced off.

“Why did this get ou.....”

Roan grabbed the book and after looking at the bookshelf without thinking of anything, he froze still.

“What’s this?”

The place that certainly had to be empty.

‘Box?’

There was a box he hadn’t seen there.

‘Will there maybe be another treasure?’

His chest beat.

He brought up the memories inside his head.

But however he thought, it was something he didn’t remember.

Roan carefully grabbed the box.

Click.

After opening the hand sized box, he saw a strange object inside of it.

‘This is just like.....’

# Chapter 33 : Relations (1)

---

‘Drops of water?’

Inside the small box, there were 2 objects the shape of waterdrops.

Waterdrops the size of nails.

Roan didn’t touch it and meticulously checked the inside of the box.

‘Mm.”

Then he saw a note stuck on the inner part of the lid.

< I’m leaving the real treasure to the one that treated my biography carefully even after having gotten the treasure.>

A smile appears on Roan’s mouth.

‘He’s thoughtful.’

He hadn’t even guessed that he would make this kind of arrangement.

And on the note, it was also written what the two objects were.

“Huk!”

Roan, that was reading down the note without thinking of anything, gulped down air.

His eyes that tremble.

‘Thi, this is Kalian’s tears?’

Kalian’s tear.

It was an object that Roan had only heard of in rumours.

‘For Louis Brent to be in possession of Kalian’s tears.’

One of the treasures the dragon Kalian left to the humans before it hid itself 200 years ago.

It was called as Kalian’s tears because it had the shape of water drops and it was known that there were only 10 pairs of it and that it had really strong functions.

<If you put Kalian’s tears on each of your eyes, your eyesight will magnify greatly and develop a technique that involves eyesight.>

On the note Louis left, there was also the instructions written in it.

The only regretful thing was that it wasn’t written as to how Louis obtained Kalian’s tears and how he preserved it.

Roan looked at Kalian’s tears and breathed in.

‘Did Baron Aaron Tate have gotten it?’



After 6 years, a fire starts and he coincidentally got ahold of Brent's ring.

This was everything that was told to the world.

Roan's eyes sharpened.

‘He probably did.’

He wasn't certain, but there was a high possibility.

‘Certainly, after the fire, baron Aaron Tate's swordsmanship increased by leaps.’

It was clear that Brent's ring was an outstanding artifact, but it was impossible that his swordsmanship improved with just that.

‘With Kalian's tear his eyesight developed explosively.’

Just with the known effects, you could see things far away as if it was right in front of your eyes, and you could figure out a lot more information in that short time.

‘Not only that, but although there was a limit to the times and time, they also said that there was a function of being able to see the movements of things more slowly.’

An outstanding ability, just like it says.

‘If it’s Kalian’s tears, i’m not even jealous of Pierce’s eyesight.’

His heart beat roughly.

If it was Kalian’s tear, he would be able to freely use spear skills on a much higher level than before.

Swish

Roan grabbed one Kalian's tear really carefully and put it on his right eye.

‘Mmm.’

In that instant, a cold and hot feeling swept through his eyes alternately.

Roan didn't get perplexed and continued putting on the remaining Kalian's tear on his left eye.

He felt the cold and hot feeling again.

Blink. Blink.

Roan carefully blinked and slowly looked at his surroundings.

‘There's nothing different.’

The scene in front of him didn't have anything different.

Only, his eyes felt softer and more comfortable.

‘The functions shouldn't have disappeared, right?’

Roan looked at the far away table with a slightly nervous feeling.

His sight got fixed on the side of a thin book that was on the

table.

At that instant.

Swoooooosh

The scene before his eyes got bigger as if it was being sucked, and the small and thin book that was far away now looked big.

‘Hup!’

Roan put a surprised face at the unexpected situation.

<Analysis of Pushkin’s lake fishes.>

He could see the really small title of the book clearly.

‘So this is one of the functions Kalian’s tear has.’

As he blinked again, the scene returned to the original form.

‘Amazing. It is indeed amazing, but.....’

It was certainly an overwhelming ability, but it was a situation he just couldn’t take casually.

‘I have to be able to use the abilities and functions skillfully.’

Right now, everything was unfamiliar.

The moment he amplifies his sight when he is fighting against

enemies, his life would get in danger instead.

‘In the end, it’s training again.’

They say that you have to thread the pearls for it to become a treasure.

Roan was thinking of doing some training to use Kalian’s tear to its true worth.

‘In my past life, I have lived solely through effort without even having these sorts of things.’

The situation had certainly become better.

Based on his efforts, he may really be able to become a monarch.

Click

Roan only took out the note out of the box and put it back on the bookshelf.

And after he placed back the 20th book of Brent's biography, it returned to its original shape.

“Whew.”

He obtained something he had expected, and something he hadn't.

Roan stood in front of the entrance and organized his clothes.

There was only one thing that had changed since when he entered.

It was the ring he put on his left thumb.

However, there was no need to check cautiously, because it looked like a worn out and old metal ring.

‘Let's go.’

Roan carefully opened the door and got out.

And then, he heard a childish voice.

“Are you Roan?”

An unfamiliar voice.

Roan frowned and looked at the place the voice was heard at.

A kid that seemed to be on his early 10s.

The kid that had white skin, well trimmed brown hair, and clean and high classed clothes, seemed clearly like a noble even at first glance.

‘The librarian is also really nervous.’

The young man that was guarding the entrance also had a really nervous expression.

Roan checked on the kid attentively and moved his feet.

‘Why is he so familiar?’

He didn’t know where, but he gave a familiar feeling.

Roan stood in front of the kid and slightly bent his head.

“Yes. I’m Roan.”

He couldn’t reply casually just because he was a kid.

Roan was still a commoner, and only a class 5 adjutant of the 7th corps at that.

If the kid was a noble, and a son of a prestigious noble family, he had to be careful on even mixing words with him.

The kid smiled brightly and extended his hand.

“Nice to meet you. My name is Ian. I’m the eldest son of count Philips.”



Boom.

At that moment, Roan received a shock similar as getting hit in the back of his head.

‘Ian Philips? He is that outstanding genius strategist Ian Philips?’

He looked at Ian’s face with an absent minded expression.

Ian smiled brightly and tilted his head.

“Is there something on my face?”

A childish voice that shows its childishness.

Only then did Roan get a hold of himself and grab Ian’s hands.

“Ah, that’s not it. If it’s count Philips, he’s from a quite prestigious noble family.....”

“Well, everything is just an empty name.”

Ian lightly retorted and shook his hand.

The hand of Roan, that became rougher because of the battles through the months, felt strongly different compared to Ian’s soft hands.

“You are more different to what I have thought. I thought that you would look more intelligent.”

Ian smiled brightly and kept staring at Roan's face.

"I really wanted to meet you."

At the continued words, Roan's head became stuffed.

'He wanted to meet me?'

Even on his past life, they hadn't met alone even once.

Roan didn't reply hurriedly and just kept looking at Ian's face.

Ian pointed the entrance of the library with his finger.

"Shall we talk outside?"

"Yes. Understood."

Roan slightly bent his head.

Even so as he was a commoner and Ian a noble, and the eldest son of count Philips on top of that, he couldn't decline.

But before that, there was a huge curiosity.

'Just why did he want to meet me?'

Somehow, his heart throbbed.

Ian got out of the library along with Roan, and went to a nearby small tea house.

‘So these guys are count Philip’s knights.’

Roan made some distance with Ian and got astounded when he looked at the guys following them from behind.

The flashy armor, the huge blade, and the intent coming out from their bodies was really overwhelming.

‘I have been conceited until now.’

It was obvious for the 7th corps, but the other corps that participated in the monster subjugation also thought that he had some skills.

Realistically speaking, there was no one that could follow Roan according to the merits.

‘If I just kept it this way, I thought that I would obviously be able to become a great general, and perhaps also a monarch.’

Even when he was at Brent’s library just now, he thought of that.

However, now that he saw the count’s knights, he got to realize just how much of a frog inside a well he was.

‘I was at a level where I could boast among normal soldiers.’

Even so, he didn’t get depressed or frustrated.

‘Wait a little. Just a little.’

He was confident on being able to become stronger than count Philip’s knights.

If he progressed withon his plans steadily and without slacking on putting in effort, he would be able to pass them aton a quite early time.

‘But of course, everything must happen as I have planned.’

It won’t be easy.

Even Ian appearing before him was something he hadn’t planned.

“Do you want to drink something?”

“Water is enough for me.”

“Really? Then, I will ask you for a glass of water and a wet tea.”

Ian skillfully made the order and looked at Roan as if it was interesting.

“I don’t like hitting around the bush. The reason I came looking for you is because of the inundation tactic at Prely river.”

A smile appears on his mouth.

“They say that it was you that came up with it?”

It was a question Roan hadn't expected, but he didn't get perplexed and slightly nodded.

"Yes. It was me."

Of course, precisely speaking, it would have been the kid Ian in front of him reporting it 5 years from now on.

Ian clapped.

Clap!

"It was a really outstanding tactic."

He stuck out his face in front of the table.

"I also thought that it would have been good to make an inundation tactic when I looked at the map. However, I judged that there wasn't the necessary amount of water. Just how did you know that there was a reservoir there?"

Words spat out quickly without even breathing once.

Roan put on a bitter smile.

'It's also something I got to know after I read your report 5 years from now on.'

But of course, he couldn't say that.

Roan replied with a calm expression.

“I think that the tactics and strategies are as important as strong weapons and number of soldiers on war and battles. If you have a good strategy, you will be able to defeat thousands, and tens of thousands of enemies with just a few hundreds. So then, how will we be able to make a good strategy?”

It wasn't a question expecting for an answer.

Ian looked at Roan with shining eyes and waited for the next words.

“I think that a massive amount of information and systematically organized one can make for a good root for strategies.”

“Ah!”

At Roan's words, Ian let out a low exclamation.

“That means that to make a good strategy and tactic, you had already grasped the information in the surroundings of Prely river, right?”

Words hitting dead center.

Roan slowly nodded.

“That's right. If you collect and analyze even small information that other people don't even look at, it will become a great help

one day.”

“Mmm.”

Ian fell in his thoughts.

Roan just sat there and didn't dare to say anything.

‘It seems like he realized something.’

He realized that Ian was deep in his thoughts organizing things.

Meanwhile the water and wet tea came, but no one touched it.

After a while, Ian clapped his hands and smiled brightly.

Clap!

“Good. It became a really good study.”

He, who finished his studies, looked at Roan and raised his thumb.

“Thanks to you, I became able to draw a picture I like a lot.”

“A picture?”

“Yes. I have a habit of drawing the things I want to do or my dreams inside of my head. And every time, various pictures come out. A cool picture, a roughly drawn picture, a messy picture. And among that, I pick only the cool pictures and draw it myself.”

“Ah.....”

Roan let out a low exclamation.

Ian smiled brightly and took in a deep breath.

“The importance of information..... A really cool picture has formed. And now, I have to draw it myself.”

He emptied the cup of tea in an instant.

“Kuha. Sorry. I want to immediately draw the picture, and I can’t hold it in.”

Ian stood up and extended his hand.

Roan lightly grabbed his hand and nodded.

“It’s fine. Instead, show me that cool picture to me.”

“Of course. Half of this picture was drawn by you.”

Ian lent out a small handkerchief from his chest.

“It’s a handkerchief with symbols of our family. If you come to our place later on, show that. Then, they will treat you as a precious guest.”

“Thank you.”

Roan carefully received the handkerchief and put it on his chest.

“Then, come visit me.”



Ian shook his hand and hurriedly moved his feet.

The knights that were enjoying their teas at nearby tables, hurriedly stood up from their seats.

And then, he heard the excited voice of Ian.

“It’s an information organization. First, I will make an information organization inside my territory.”

“An information organization? If it’s information you want, you can buy it at guilds or thieves guilds.”

The knights that were following behind him tilted their heads and said.

The last voice of Ian was heard before he got out of the tea house.

“That’s not the picture Roan and I have pictured.”

That was the end.

Ian left a bustling atmosphere and left the tea house.

Roan got astounded.

‘So this is how the genius looked ion his childhood.’

It was hectic but somewhat pleasant.

‘By the way, i’m curious as to how the picture he drew with me will look.’

Roan placed his hand on his left chest.

And there was the handkerchief with count Philip's symbol.

‘Did a relation that didn't exist on my past life happen?’

A kind of reliable feeling.

‘If I can just do it I will take Ian Philips to my side.’

If it's a friend good, and if it's an ally all the better.

Even until now, it was something he hadn't expected at all.

Just how much of an influence did today's meeting give to Ian.

## Chapter 34 : Relations (2)

---

As soon as the merits awards ended, Roan immediately prepared for the withdrawal of the troop.

He would be returning in several days.

There was excitement on the faces of the troop members.

But of course, even between them, Roan didn't slack on his training.

And especially including the basic squad training and spear training, he also started another training to make better use of Kalian's tear.

Pat!

Roan quickly ran past a bulky rocky zone.

Even though there were big and small rocks, Roan's feet didn't have any trace of hesitation on stepping over them.

As smooth as flowing water.

However Roan, that was running over the rocks, felt stifled.

'It's slow. Slow.'

Because of Kalian's tear, his sight-related abilities improved explosively.

Even if he saw the same scene, he could grasp a lot more information than before.

While he was running over the rocks without stopping, he could clearly see the angle of how the rock was tilted, and how big it was.

Tadat!

Roan chose a point to land his feet with the sight information as the background and then flew his body.

And a small problem appeared right here.

He had already finished grasping the information for the other point, but his body still hadn't reached the first point.

In simple words, his body couldn't follow his sight at all.

'In this situation, what's the meaning of knowing where the spear will come from and where the arrow will fly from?'

Because he couldn't dodge it.

'In the end it's training, training, and more training.'

He had to build more strength and stamina than he had now, move a bit faster, and make his body lighter.

And it was the same for his spear skills and combat abilities.

'So what if I can see the weak points of my enemy? I have to be able to stab my spear into that point.'

He needed a lot more effort than before.

Tat!

Roan once again ran around the rocky zone.

Then, a familiar face appeared above one rock.

“Sir adjutant! Sir adjutant Roan!”

A white and soft look.

It was Glenn.

Roan stopped running and looked at Glenn.

At that instant, he saw the face of him that was far away as if it was right in front of his face.

“It’s the withdrawal. The withdrawal has started!”

An excited voice.

The withdrawal for rose troop had finally started.

‘Is it finally withdrawing.’

Until Beno castle, where the troop headquarters was located, was 2 days of distance.

After two days, the monster subjugation tactic in Pedian’s plain will truly end.

‘The end of war is always a happy thing.’

A faint smile appears on his face.

However, his smile turned to a bitter one.

‘No, it’s not the end of war, but is it resting?’

After one more year, the subjugation of Pedian’s plain will start again.

Not only that, but more monsters will appear.

On top of that, they were in a situation that the other kingdoms and empires could attack anytime.

War could never end.

‘How long will this break last?’

He didn’t expect in a big way.

Because the first time he grabbed the spear, he decided to live on the battlefield and die there.

“Even so, I want to live a long life in this life.”

At least, he wanted to get over 38.

Roan smiled faintly and shook his hand towards Glenn.

“I will go quickly!”

“Yes! Understood!”

Glenn yelled back and disappeared below the rock.

‘Does he like it that much.....’

Roan slowly moved his feet and burst out in laughter.

It was because of Glenn’s face, was delighted like a child.

Then a memory he had forgotten, no, a memory he tried to forget passed through his head.

‘Ah! His hometown was near Beno castle.’

Glenn’s hometown was Dio village, which was near Beno castle.

Be was born and raised there.

‘Meaning that.....’

She, from his memories, also grew up in that place.

A faint light shines on his face.

He felt a chill, but it wasn’t a displeasing feeling.

Only that he felt so nervous he couldn’t hide it.

\*\*\*\*\*

At the entrance of the opened Beno castle’s door.

The moment Roan got inside the castle, he opened his two eyes roundly and got surprised.

“Waaaaaa! Hurray rose troop!”

“Congratulations on returning safely!”

“Rose! Rose!”

Yells that hit the ears.

The people flocked over and an overwhelming crowd was lined up on the streets.

‘This much cheering.....’

He had roamed the battlefield for 20 years.

And during that time, he gained a lot of experiences in returning to a village or a castle, where there was the headquarters.

But the cheering he got at those times weren’t comparable to this.

‘When we won the war against Byron kingdom and returned victorious?’

Back then, they also received an amazing cheering.

However, that was when the fate of the country was on the line, and they returned victorious from the battle.

It wasn’t like returning from a monster subjugation.

When Roan looked at the people with a bewildered expression.

Among the crowd, cute girls appeared holding one blossom of rose each.



Gale and the adjutants got down from the horses as if they were waiting for it and slightly bent down.

The girls put the roses on the oxidized armours with shy expressions.

“Thank you.”

“Thanks.”

Gentle greetings.

“We are happy because you returned safely.”

The replies of the girls were also pretty and cute.

Then, a really small girl walked towards Roan.

She had come running after seeing his rank badge.

“I’m happy because you returned safely.”

The shy voice of the girl.

Roan hesitated for a moment and slightly bent down.

The girl moved her little hands and put the rose on one side of the armour.

“Thank you.”

Roan smiled faintly and stroke her head.

“Hee.”

The girl smiled brightly and then disappeared between the crowd.

Even during that, the troop members busily moved their feet.

“Waaa!”

“Rose! Rose!”

The cheers of the people continued.

Roan slightly turned his head and looked at the troop members.

Everyone were happily shaking their hands with an accustomed attitude.

‘It seems like they aren’t surprised of this cheer.’

It meant that the relationship between the troop and the commoners was good.

‘He’s a better commander than what I have thought.’

He had also felt that Gale was a good commander on his past life.

The look of him staying at Ale gorge at the ambush of the goblins to save even one more person.

‘He should have taken good care of the commoners as his troop members.’

So that would be the reason they received this kind of cheering.

He saw the headquarters far away.

Roan smiled faintly and placed his hand on his left chest.

His heart that was excited because of the cheers of the people, got even more excited.

Inside his chest there was the small piece of paper Gale had given him before arriving at Beno castle.

‘The squad members would like it.’

The corner of his mouth kept rising.

I want to quickly go back to the headquarters and show them the piece of paper.

‘They will make a fuss.’

He was certain of it.

Because there was no object like this yellow piece of paper that made him feel more flustered for the past 20 years.

Before he knew of it, the entrance of the headquarters was right in front of his eyes.

Now, it was the turn for the festival.

\*\*\*\*\*

“Is, is it true?!”

“Really! Is it really a vacation?”

“And it’s not 2 nights and 3 days, nor 3 nights and 4 days, but 4 nights and 5 days?!”

Expected reactions.

No, fiercer reactions than what he had expected.

Roan smirked and shook the piece of paper.

The piece of paper he had on his chest.

The piece of paper Gale gave to Roan before reaching Beno castle was a vacation permit.

And it wasn’t a normal one either.

‘To give the entire squad a vacation.’

It was a vacation permit not only for him, but for the entire squad.

“So pack your things already.”

After he finished saying those things, the squad members scarily packed their things.

Scenes of forcefully putting the things they grabbed into the bag.

And among them, there was also Austin that used to show a dignified and orderly attitude.

‘In the face of vacations, their dignity doesn’t have any use.’

Roan smiled faintly and just looked at the squad members.

It was Roan that lived like an ordinary spearman for more than 10 years on his past life.

He knew really well how big of a gift and happiness this vacations were for the normal soldiers.

The members of the 12th squad packed their things in an instant.

“It seems to be faster than when you prepare for battle?”

Roan put on an ill natured expression.

“Ahem.”

The squad members laughed awkwardly and coughed.

And then Austin, that was nearby him, asked carefully.

“Sir adjutant. You aren’t going to pack your things?”

Roan nodded with a calm expression.

“My hometown is in the mountainsides of Grain, so a vacation of 4 nights and 5 days is meaningless. I’m just planning on resting on the headquarters.”

“Ah.....”

Austin and the other squad members let out a low exclamation.

“Then, I will return earlier.”

Austin’s words.

Continued by the words of each and everyone of the squad.

“I will also return earlier.”

“Me too.”

“I will also come.”

When Roan was about to shake his hands while smiling brightly.  
Austin clapped.

Clap.

“Then, how about dining together during this opportunity? Let’s drink some beer before we return back to the troop.”

As soon as he ended speaking, the squad members cheered.

“Oh! That’s good!”

“Good!”

The cheering sounds filled the room.

Austin shrugged his shoulders and looked at Roan.

An expression asking ‘What are you going to do if everyone wants it this much?’

Roan smirked and nodded.

“Even so, I was planning on drinking together with the squad members. If everyone is fine with it, let’s gather the day before we return to the troop and drink.”

“Yes! Understood!”

Everyone replied loudly.

‘They are having so much fun.’

Looking at how they are liking it this much, he felt gratified.

Clap.

Roan clapped and pushed the backs of the squad members.

“Well! Now return back to your hometowns! Go and rest well!”

The squad members got pushed as if they were being chased out of the room.

Then they saluted while holding their bags.

“Then, we will be going.”

Excited voices.

Roan laughed faintly and shook his hand.

“Go.”

A short greeting.

Austin and the squad members moved their feet towards the entrance of the HQ.

Roan just stood still for a long while and just looked at their backs.

‘They are good guys.’

Guys he wanted to be with until the end.

A smile appears on Roan’s mouth.

And then, a familiar voice was heard.

“Sir adjutant Roan.”

“Huh?”

Roan turned his head and looked at the owner of the voice.

“Pierce. Why didn’t you leave?”

The owner of the voice was Pierce.

He laughed awkwardly and shook his head.



“My hometown is also far. I am just planning on resting at HQ.”

“Ah. You said that your hometown was in the middle regions, right?”

“Yes. I’m from Blei village from the Billington region.”

“It’s far.”

“Yes. It is.”

Roan and Pierce looked at each other and smiled bitterly.

Even after receiving vacations, they didn’t have anywhere to go.

Then, Pierce carefully asked after hesitating for a bit.

“Should we have some drinks?”

\*\*\*\*\*

It was a strange feeling.

Roan took one gulp on the warm beer.

‘Have I drank with Pierce before.....’

He searched his memories.

‘Ah! It was only once.’

After Pierce became a duke.

The day before he left to the feudal estate, he returned to the squad's headquarters and looked for him.

‘He brought a really expensive wine.’

On that day, Pierce just shared the bottle of wine without saying anything and left.

Roan also didn't say a word and just emptied the wine.

‘Was that our last encounter....’

But of course, they saw each other from far away.

However, the difference between the places they were standing was as big as the distance there was between them.

Pierce was on a high platform, and Roan was on the lowest place.

‘It must have been a sort of consideration.’

He purposefully distanced himself.

And he hadn't even said that he was a duke, a supreme commander or a noble with his own mouth.

Perhaps that could have been some sort of consideration from Pierce.

When he was immersed on the old memories.

“Sir adjutant Roan?”

Pierce's voice was heard.

“What are you thinking that much?”

“Ah, nothing. Only that the past months feel like it passed by as if they were crazy days.”

“It passed by without even knowing what happened and how.”

Pierce smiled faintly and lifted the cup of beer.

Gulp. Gulp.

He emptied the cup in an instant and looked at Roan fixedly.

“Sir adjutant.”

Roan just looked at his eyes instead of replying.

Pierce's words continued.

“You know my character really well, right? That I'm shy and timid and don't even have boldness. I don't like standing in front of others and I'm sloppy regarding human relationships.”

Roan was about to unconsciously nod but stopped.

Pierce scratched the table with his finger.

Scratch. Scratch.

The scratching of the wood was heard.

“I have regretted a lot during the training times. Should I just return to my hometown and live off farming? I thought that a lot.”

Tak.

His finger stopped.

Pierce looked at Roan's eyes fixedly.

A hot eyesight.

“But now, looking at sir adjutant, I felt a lot of things.”

Roan waited for the next words.

“Amazing tactics, outstanding strategies, amazing spear skills..... Of course I felt all of these things to be amazing, but there is another thing in which I felt even more amazed.”

He puts strength on his voice.

“Effort.”

Pierce took in a deep breath.

“Sir adjutant didn’t even miss one day of squad training, troop training, and individual training. And that’s not all.”

Fire appears on his eyes.

“You put effort on trying to understand the squad members and to comprehend them. You nursed Land all night because he hurt his shoulder, and you searched for a stomach ache medicine all around the troop because of Keep. And.....”

Pierce started to talk about the things Roan did for the soldiers of the 12th squad without anyone noticing.

Roan smiled faintly.

“I just did the things an adjutant has to do.”

At those words Pierce shook his head.

“No. There’s only you that goes to this lengths.”

A firm and determined voice and expression.

“Sir adjutant. You will really become an excellent commander. You will become a great general who will shake Rinse kingdom, no, the whole continent.”

Roan smiled brightly and nodded.

“If I become a great general, you will become the greatest spearman on the continent.”

“Me?”

“Right. If it’s your talent, you can do it plentifully.”

Roan looked at Pierce’s eyes fixedly.

Eyes without even a trace of hesitation.

‘These eyes……?’

Pierce felt that his heart beat roughly.

‘It’s the sight he gave me at Int’s forest battle.’

Back then Pierce was really afraid while facing the ogres.

And Roan just threw a short sentence for that Pierce.

<I believe in you.>

‘It’s the same eyes.’

Eyes that didn’t doubt that he would really be able to become the best spearman on the continent.

Pierce bit his lower lip.

He looked at Roan’s eyes fixedly.

“If.....”

His voice trembles.

“If I get to become the best spearman on the continent, then use me as your adjutant.”

At those words Roan smirked and shook his head.

“I can’t do that?”

“Yes? You, you can’t?”

Pierce asked back with a perplexed expression.

Roan slowly nodded.

“Of course. I can’t use the best spearman on the continent as only an adjutant. At least, you will have to become a general.”

“Ah.....”

Pierce let out a sigh of relief.

And then, looked at Roan’s eyes fixedly.

“Don’t forget that promise.”

“Of course.”

Roan smirked and nodded.

And then, he thought of one thing.

‘If Pierce.....’

The corner of his mouth slightly rises.

“Pierce.”

“Yes?”

Pierce put down the cup he was holding.

Roan asked with a voice so low as if he was whispering.

“Should I teach you a spear skill?”

“A spear skill?”

“Yes. There’s one that really fits you.”

Pierce smiled brightly and nodded.

“Teach me!”

And then, asked with a careful voice.

“But what’s the name of it?”



At those words, Roan laughed a bit awkwardly and replied.

“Roan’s spearmanship.”

Roan’s spearmanship.

Actually, there was no way that existed.

‘Even so, I can’t say that it’s called Pierce’s spearmanship.’

Roan was planning on teaching Pierce Pierce’s spearmanship.

Originally, a spearmanship Pierce would make himself 8 years from now on.

‘If Pierce gets it 8 years earlier, what kind of monster like thing will be born.....’

It can become approach a perfected spearmanship.

‘If I get to raise a force.....’

The new Pierce’s spearmanship, no, Roan’s spearmanship will be of great help.

Then, Pierce’s ill-tempered voice was heard.

“Yes? That’s a name that doesn’t make me want to learn it that much.”

## Chapter 35 : Relations (3)

---

“Right. Then let’s leave it at that.”

Roan raised his cup of beer with a calm expression.

“Ah, no I just.....”

Pierce stammered with a perplexed expression.

“I know that you were joking.”

Roan smirked and shook his hands.

Only then did Pierce let out a sigh of relief.

“Whew. I got surprised.”

“I was also joking. I will teach you, so don’t worry.”

As soon as he finished those words, Pierce got up of his seat.

“Let’s go out.”

“Huh? To where?”

“You said that you were going to teach me. Roan’s spearmanship.”

At those words, Roan put on an absent-minded expression.

“You want me to teach you now? We are in the middle of drinking.”

And as soon as he said that, Pierce grabbed his cup of beer.

Gulp. Gulp.

His adam’s apple shook up and down.

“Burp. We can go now, right?”

Pierce burped and put down the cup of beer.

Roan looked at the emptied cup and smacked his lips.

“Sir adjutant Roan.”

Pierce urged with an earnest expression.

Roan took in a deep breath and stood up.

“Okay. Let’s go. Go.”

However, his eyes kept looking at the cup of beer.

‘It was beer I drank in a long while.....’

A feeling of only having wetted his lips.

Even so, as he saw the heated up Pierce, he felt a gratified expression.

‘Then. Shall I teach Pierce’s spearmanship to the genius spearman Pierce, no, Roan’s spearmanship?’

A smile appeared on his face.

Roan hit Pierce’s shoulder and left the bar one step ahead of him.

Pierce hurriedly chased his back.

The two people went outside Beno castle.

They had consumed alcohol so the soft spring wind made their tongues feel sweet.

As they got out of the northern gate and walked for a bit, they saw a wide plain.

‘This much will be good.’

A place better than anywhere to train on the spear.

Roan lightly warmed up and looked at the western sky.

He saw the bright sunset above the mountains.

‘Beautiful.’

Could leisure have appeared in his heart?

It was the first time he thought that the sunset was beautiful since he was born.

Then, Pierce's voice was heard.

“Sir adjutant Roan. Let's start immediately.”

An urging sound.

Roan smirked and nodded.

“Okay. Shall we.....”

The moment he was about to take off his sight from the sunset.

He saw an object running hurriedly on the western plains.

‘What is it?’

Roan concentrated his sight towards the really small and faint object that was far away.

At that instant, the scene got sucked in along his sight.

The object which he couldn't see because it was faint now seemed so clear like it was right in front of him.

“Huh?”

Roan frowned.

He hurriedly raised his spear and yelled towards Pierce.

“Pierce. It seems like we will have to run.”

“Yes? What are you saying so suddenly?”

Pierce asked back with a dumbfounded expression.

Roan charged to the front instead of replying.

Tat!

“Someone is being chased.”

An urgent voice was heard from the place he left.

Pierce chased after Roan a bit late.

“Who are you talking about?”

At the question being asked in a loud voice, a reply came soon.

“A young man.”

\*\*\*\*\*

“Pant. Pant. Pant.”

His breath rose to his chin.

However, he couldn't stop his feet.

‘Kugh. Damn. Because I did something I usually didn't, it seems like I will die alone.’

Chris gritted his teeth.

His right arm hurt.

‘Fortunately, it doesn’t seem deep.....’

Between the sloppily torn clothes, the wound could be seen.

Although it wasn’t that deep of an injury, blood still flowed out.

‘Why did I have to sneeze there, damn it.’

Chris looked at the black book he was holding with his left arm.

It was the size of a palm and had a thickness of two fingers.

<Account book.>

‘Crazy bastards. To even make an account book while selling people.’

Chris slightly glanced back.

Dudududu

Two people who looked dangerous were riding their horses like crazy.

‘Damn. It seems like I’ll get caught.’

Even if he was fast, he couldn’t be as fast as horses.

Chris first chose to run towards the woods in the northeast.

It was a decision to lower the speed of the horses by even a little.

‘I should just have earned money in Miller.’

Regret came late.

It was a problem of having stepped out because a daughter of a countryside couple had gotten kidnapped.

‘Although it would be meaningless to regret it now.’

The choice was made by him anyways.

It was the right thing to do to blame it on him on whatever results happened.

It was the right thing to do, he would be blamed for whatever happened as a result.

‘Good! It’s the woods now!’



It was when he was about to get in.

A heavy sound was heard.

Papapapapang

Chris didn't look back.

He thought that he could guess the identity of the object.

‘Bola!’

A throwing weapon that was a rope with two weights at the end.

Rather than damaging the opponent, it was a weapon used to catch the body or the legs and make them unable to move.

Chris gritted his teeth and moved to his right.

Tung!

The Bola fell right next to him.

‘Good! I dodg.....!’

When he was busy celebrating....

Papapapapang

The Bola certainly had fallen to the ground but he could still hear a noise.

‘Damn. There’s one more!’

He tried to dodge it, but he was too late and he felt a heavy shock below his knees.

The Bola circled the leg and wrapped it.

Boom!

Chris fell to the ground and rolled.

“Ughh.”

It was a pain similar to his bones breaking.

But even so Chris quickly raised his body.

‘I have to untie this.’

The Bola that tied his legs tightly.

His hands urgently tried to untie the rope.

And then a black shadow covered him.

“We finally caught you.”

A cold voice.

Chris gulped dry saliva and raised his head.

At that moment he saw a huge foot.

Pagak!

“Kugh.”

Chris rolled quite a few times with only one kick.

‘Damn. My handsome face will get messed up.’

A useless thought.

Then a vicious conversation was heard.

“And the account book?”

A question asked by a man with a pointy chin and thin eyes.

The man with a twisted nose pointed at Chris.

“Fortunately that bastard has it.”

“Really? Then take it away from him and kill him quickly.”

“Okay.”

The man with the twisted nose grabbed Chris’s shoulders with a casual expression.

‘I can’t die like this.’

Chris bit his lower lip and threw away the account book he had in his hand with all of his strength.

The account book showed the white pages and disappeared in the grass.

“This crazy bastard!”

The man with the twisted nose cursed and hurriedly ran towards the account book.

Then, Chris stood up from the place abruptly.

His legs, which were previously tied with the Bola, were cleanly untied.

‘I thought that I was going to die for untying it without them noticing.’

Then, he quickly flung his body to a side.

However, he couldn’t make more than three steps.

Pagak!

The hard and sharp tip of the foot hit his side.

“Kugh!”

He felt the wind get knocked out of his lungs.

Chris grabbed his side and fell.

“Son of a bitch. You throw it without even knowing how much it’s worth. Twet!”

The thin eyed man spat and got annoyed.

Meanwhile, the man with the twisted nose hurriedly ran and grabbed the account book that was on the ground.

“Steve! The account book is fine!”

A loud yell.

“Then come quickly and cut off the neck of this bastard.”

The man with thin eyes, Steve, talked back annoyedly and got on his horse.

Srung

The man with the twisted nose approached slowly and unsheathed his sword.

“You dare to put your hands on an object of our JoyLuce. First I will cut off that bad-mannered hand of yours.”

Even Chris realized that the situation had turned out to be quite difficult.

‘Damn. I couldn’t even fulfill my dream of running a travel agency and will die like this.’

He felt that it was kind of unfair.

He was only a teen that was on his 22nd year.

It was too early for him to die like this.

The man with the twisted nose raised his right hand into the air.

The sharp blade of the sword shone brightly.

‘If I knew this was going to happen I would have eaten a lot of meat last night.....’

When he was thinking about that.

Sweeeee!

A sharp noise hit their ears.

Everybody's sight moved to the place the noise was heard.

A sharp object came flying over while cutting through the air.

That was certainly a spear.

The spear precisely separated Chris and Steve.

Puk!

A heavy noise.

The spear that got stuck deep in the earth trembled.

“Huk! Wha, what is it!”

The man with the twisted nose was surprised and looked towards the direction the spear came flying from.



Pshhh

Then, the grass started to move roughly and was separated by the sides.

“Stop right there. Nobody move.”

A childish voice but with strength.

The person that came out of the grass was Roan.

Following him, Pierce appeared.

He was looking a bit nervous.

Contrary to him, Roan had a really calm expression and moved to pull out the spear stuck in the ground.

The tip of the spear was pointed at Steve.

“I’m adjutant Roan of Rrose troop from the 7th corps. Reveal your identities.”

At that moment, Steve’s hand was frozen stiff.

‘Damn. To meet people from the kingdom here.’

His eyes rolled to the sides quickly.

Then, Chris’s voice was heard.

“Those bastards are slave merchants!”

Right after he finished saying that.

“Fuck! Norman! Run!”

Steve yelled and grabbed the reins.

Hihihing!

The horse cried loudly and raised its front legs.

‘Die!’

Steve was planning to stamp down Roan.

However, Roan had already read Steve’s intentions.

Roan twisted his body and took three steps to the right.

He saw the rough movements of the horse slowly and clearly.

‘He’s full of weak points.’

There were tens of places where he could stab the spear.

‘But my movements don’t follow me.’

He tasted bitterness in his mouth.

However Pierce, that couldn't know of this at all, judged that Roan was in an urgent situation.

He quickly stabbed out the spear.

Stab

The spear pierced the body of the horse deeply.

Hihihihing!

The horse moved its body here and there with rough movements.

“Huh?!”

“Uhhhhhhh.”

It was obvious for Steve, but even Pierce couldn't move properly because he was perplexed.

However Roan could see all of these things slowly and clearly.

Spat!

Roan's spear slashed through the air.

Paat!

The spear passed next to Steve's neck.

‘It missed!’

Steve was happy and once again tried to pull the reins.

And then, the spear that was behind him was pulled and hit the back of his head.

“Ugh!”

Amazing strength.

His chest got stuck to the horse.

“Hmph.”

Roan snorted and after twisting his wrist, he pulled the spear.

Pat!

At that moment Steve, that was balancing sloppily, fell down from the horse.

“Kugh.”

A heavy shock felt coursed through his back and waist.

Steve frowned and twisted his body.

Roan quickly raised his spear upside down and smashed it into the stomach of the man.

Puk!

“Kugh!”

A pain that cuts his breath.

Steve lost consciousness and fell to the ground.

Dudududu

Then, he heard noisy horse steps.

It was Norman.

He quickly got out of the forest while Steve was making that fuss.

Although Roan tried to chase him, there was a big difference between their speeds.

The horse Steve was riding couldn't move anymore because of Pierce's attack.

Meanwhile, Norman disappeared far away.

'Can't do anything.'

He decided to be satisfied on having saved the life of this person.

"Are you okay?"

At Roan's question, Chris nodded.

"Yes. I'm fine. Thank you for having saved me."

It seemed unshapely, but he was gentle and respectful.

Roan looked at Chris's face.

'I think I have seen him somewhere.....'

He was about to remember but couldn't.

Then, Chris touched his face and tilted his head.

“Is there something on my face?”

Roan laughed awkwardly and said.

“No. You just seem familiar. Did we meet somewhere else before?”

At those words, Chris shook his head.

“No. Not in my memories. I'm not from over here but from the capital of Miller. I ran errands over there.”

“Ah.....”

At that moment, a low exclamation flowed out from Roan's mouth.

Errand runner Chris, from the capital of Miller.

There was only one person in his past life that had this characteristics.

‘Chris. Chris Drain!’

He startled awake.

Roan looked at Chris with composed eyes.



‘To meet Chris here.....’

Chris.

As it was before he got a title of nobility, he still didn’t have the last name of Drain.

‘The one in charge of Ian Philip’s information agency.’

The man that would grasp every piece of information regarding Rinse kingdom 10 years from now on and of course on the continent was standing in front of him.

‘It wasn’t enough with meeting Ian Phillips, but I even met Chris.’

These were all things that didn’t happen in his past life.

‘On top of that, Chris said that he hadn’t left the capital of Miller until he met Ian Phillips.’

That Chris was at the eastern part of the kingdom, and on top of that appeared near the border.

Roan asked with a careful voice.

“What are you doing all the way here when you are from Miller?”

At those words Chris bit his lower lip.

“This is all because of the slave merchants. There is this group called JoyLuce.”

“JoyLuce group?”

Roan was surprised once more.

‘If it’s the JoyLuce group.....’

A really familiar name.

‘The slave merchants we captured while we were moving to Pedian’s plain were certainly called JoyLuce.’

‘Did the future change because I captured the guys of JoyLuce?’

## Chapter 36 : Relations (4)

---

He didn't get badly surprised.

'Even at Int's forest battle and Prely river's inundation tactic, the future changed to what I knew.'

But even so, there was a clear difference now.

'It's an opportunity to know how much the future I knew has changed.'

How would the chasing of JoyLuce's group have affected Chris's life?

He had a strong curiosity.

Then, Chris's voice was heard.

"According to the information I gathered, JoyLuce's group got caught by the kingdoms men."

Roan slowly nodded.

It was himself who had caught them.

Chris continued talking.

"But there were guys that were acting separately. Because of that, they could be safe. However they couldn't stay at Rinse kingdom anymore because they were wanted by the kingdom."

“Ah....”

Roan and Pierce let out low exclamations.

This was the first time they got to know that JoyLuce’s group had gotten a bounty.

“In the end, they planned to secretly cross the borders and go to Istel kingdom. But as the main group got caught, they lost a lot of money. And to gain money to escape.....”

“They would have started to capture slaves again.”

At Roan’s words, Chris nodded.

“Yes. That’s right. They kidnapped young women or children from countryside villages and sold them at a reasonable price.”

“Trash like bastards.”

Pierce mumbled in a low voice.

Roan also nodded while keeping his mouth shut.

There was displeasement and rage in his eyes.

However, the sins of those guys wasn’t only that.

“That’s not all. They killed people that disturbed them in their work or mutilated their legs and arms and kept them in barns. There were also cases where there were a lot of crazy perverted bastards and personally raped young girls and also made families kill each other.”

“Mmm.”

Roan and Pierce got a loss for words.

The sins of those guys were beyond their imaginations.

Chris let out a sigh.

“Hearing that the daughter of a countryside old couple got kidnapped, I started to chase them.”

The reason why Chris, who originally had to be at Hiller kingdom running errands until he met Ian, appeared on the borders of Rinse kingdom.

That was to find the daughter of the old couple.

Chris's expression became dark.

“The results of my investigation state that the daughter was sold somewhere. The moment I was about to give up I found out that they had a sales record.”

“So the thing that crooked nose grabbed and escaped with was the account book.”

As Roan spoke, Chris nodded.

“Yes. That's right.”

Roan took in a deep breath.

‘As I caught the main group of JoyLuce, the other slave

merchants that were separated started to kidnap young girls and kids to get money to escape. In that process, Chris started to look for a daughter of an old couple that got kidnapped in Miller kingdom. When he coincidentally heard of the situation, he started to chase the slave merchants until the kingdom's boundaries.'

The future he knew clearly changed.

'Amazing.'

With only a little case, it was followed by completely different results.

'Even so, it isn't that the experience, intelligence and information I gathered for 20 years will disappear. Most of all.....'

A chill appears on his eyes.

Roan looked at Chris.

"How many are they?"

"Twelve."

Chris raised two fingers.

Roan asked in a careful voice.

"Are you able to move?"

Chris touched his chin and sides and nodded.

“Yes, there’s no problem on moving.”

At those words, Roan looked to where Norman fled.

“Then, let’s chase them.”

At that moment, his eyes became round wide.

Unexpected words.

“Are, are you helping me?”

Surprise could be felt in his words.

Roan nodded.

“I can’t just let those trash like bastards cross the boundary. Let’s catch them and take the account book.”

“Wouldn’t it be better to let this be known to the headquarters and ask for help?”

Chris asked with a worried expression.

Even excluding Steve, they were 11.

And compared to them, they were only 3.

“If we go there, we will be late.”

Roan shook his head.

One guy had fled.

If this news became known, the slave merchants would try to cross the boundary.

‘If they cross the boundary, there’s nothing I can do.’

He had to chase them right now.

Chris still had an uneasy expression.

“Won’t it be dangerous?”

At those words, Roan smiled faintly and shook his head.

“It’s not important if it’s dangerous or not.”

A calm voice but with strength.

“The important thing is to catch them to search for the sold villagers.”

“Ah.....”

Chris lets a low exclamation.

‘He wasn’t going for the reward?’



Actually, he thought that Roan was trying to do the impossible because of the reward.

But Roan didn't think about money, but about the villagers.

“Let's return the kidnapped villagers to their homes.”

He thought that it was something a kingdom's man had to do.

Chris received a big shock.

‘Was there a kingdom's man like this?’

Was there someone that wasn't a normal soldier and was above the rank of adjutant that thought like this?

There wasn't.

At least, he had never seen one like that.

‘They are all selfish bastards that worry about filling their bellies.’

The old country couple that complained to look for her daughter.

The reason why they left their hometown and came all the way to Miller capital was because the kingdom's men of the region all acted as if it wasn't their business.

‘But Miller kingdom was also the same.’

In the end he, who was only an errand runner, chased after the slave merchants.

The kingdom's men were that kind of existence.

They didn't show that big of an interest towards normal villagers.

At least, the ones he had met until now were like that.

However, Roan that was in front of his eyes, was different.

'It's somewhat weird.'

A feeling of his heart getting numb.

Not a bad feeling.

Then, Roan's voice was heard.

"But for that....."

Roan looked at Chris's eyes fixedly.

"I need your help. Will you able to chase after them?"

As soon as he finished his sentence, Chris smiled brightly and replied.

"Of course. I'm confident on being able to chase them. It's already been 15 days that I've been on their tails."

He spoke with a confident voice and expression.

‘I want to help. I want to help as much as I can.’

He liked Roan.

Roan gripped his spear and looked at Pierce.

“Pierce. There are 11 slave merchants. You are confident, right?”

At those words, Pierce smiled faintly and asked back.

“Do you mean with my eyes closed?”

He bragged regardless like usual.

That meant that he was that confident.

Roan and Pierce tied down Steve on a tree for now.

He had completely lost consciousness and wouldn’t get up for a while.

“Then, shall we go?”

At Roan’s words, Chris nodded and started to run at the front.

His chin and sides hurt, but it was endurable.

Pababababt.

The three people that left the forest started to run on the plains

while cutting through the air.

Above them, the bright sunset shone on them.

A bright scene and the sweet spring wind.

A beautiful scenery could be seen.

Roan, Pierce and Chris drew a long line on that scenery and ran without stopping.

Their relationship started like this.

\*\*\*\*\*

“Sir commander, we have arrived.”

Mendel lent a long cylinder.

Aaron put aside the documents he was reviewing without ahold of himself and received the cylinder.

Click.

As he twisted the cylinder, the top part of it separated along with a noise.

Aaron put his index finger on the cylinder and took out the rolled piece of paper.

As he spread the rolled paper, he saw the words written on it.

Aaron kept checking the piece of paper that only had three paragraphs.

“Mmm.”

A satisfied expression.

He returned the paper back to Mendel.

This time, Mendel was the one to read the contents of the paper.

“It wasn’t a lie.”

Mendel smacked his lips and put back the piece of paper.

At those words, Aaron nodded.

“It’s true that he’s from Grain’s mountainside, and it’s also true that he comes from Peton’s training camp. And the relationship he has with his family is all true. It’s been revealed that everything he has told us is true.”

The corner of his mouth kept rising up and down.

It meant that he felt happy.

Mendel asked with a dissatisfaction face.

“Even so, he’s only a rank 5 adjutant. I think that there’s no need to ask a request to the information guild.”

“I wonder. He’s only a class 5 adjutant now.....”

Aaron paused for a moment and touched his lips with his fingers.

A weird light shone on his eyes.

“That guy’s talent won’t end there.”

He looked at Mende’s two eyes fixedly.

“Roan certainly has talent to become someone big.”

At those words, Mendel shook his head.

“Just because he has talent doesn’t mean that he will succeed. Don’t you also know that well?”

“True. You also need many things aside of talent.”

Aaron slowly nodded.

His corner of the mouth rose up.

A strange smile.

“That’s why i’m going to fill everything excluding talent.”

Quite an exceptional declaration.

Mendel frowned, having forgotten that Aaron was a commander of an army corps and a noble.

“Just what is the reason you are doing that?”

It was quite a provocative way of speaking, but Aaron didn’t show particular reactions.

He leaned back on the chair and replied shortly.

“I don’t want to end my life with only being a commander of the 7th corps and a baron.”

An extravagant reply.

But Mendel didn’t ask anymore.

It was because laughter disappeared from Aaron’s face.

He covered his face with his two hands.

‘Anyways, there won’t be a problem unless he is a spy.’

Countless plans appeared and crumbled in his head repeatedly.

‘What I need for now.....’

The tip of Aaron’s finger trembled.

One of the countless plans was resting on the tip of his finger.

\*\*\*\*\*

‘He is a genius in a completely different meaning.’

Roan looked at Chris moving ahead of him and was astounded.

He knew that 10 years from now on, Chris would get ahold of all the information on the continent as the person responsible for the

agency.

But that was 10 years from now on.

Most of all, he learned to genuinely gather information after having met Ian.

‘Now, it would be before even having learnt pursuing skills.....’

Right now, Chris was no different to an errand runner of Miller kingdom.

“It’s this way.”

But regardless of that, he knew how to instinctively hunt.

No, he was learning bit by bit.

Faint footsteps, the places where the grass was stepped on, the direction the branch got twisted, and a sense you couldn’t even express with words.

Chris chased the slave merchants with much information and used his senses as his guide..

Thanks to that, they could catch up to them even before the sun completely set.

“Fuck. To meet the kingdom’s men in a place like this.”

“So Steve got caught by them?”

“Yeah. I was watching until he got hit by the spear and lost consciousness.”



A really dispirited voice.

It was Norman.

“Damn. He acted intelligent all alone.”

“Stupid bastard. I knew it since he always acted great.”

The guys surrounding Norman made cynical remarks.

They didn't think that Roan, Pierce and Chris would chase them.

No, they thought that even if they wanted to, they wouldn't be able to.

They moved that fast and tried to leave the least amount of traces.

“Even so, we got the account book back. After the sun sets and it gets dark we will cross the boundary.”

“Okay.”

“Finally, our life of escaping is coming to an end!”

A bit excited voices.

“Whew. Even so, now that we have some leisure, I'm yearning for some alcohol.”

“Alcohol? Kukuku. Women for me.”

“Women? Women are good. Now that I see it, the girl in that country side village really killed it.”

“Is it only one or two, the villages we have swept? Kukuku.”

“I still remember that 10 year old kid. Kugh!”

Evil deeds come flowing out of their mouths.

‘Trash like bastards.’

Roan, Pierce and Chris looked at the slave merchants and bit their lips.

“Mister Chris, you should wait over here.”

“I, I can also help.”

At Roan’s words, Chris replied back with a low voice but with strength.

Roan smiled faintly and shook his head.

“If your role was up to here, from now on we will have to take care of it. Give an opportunity to us too.”

“Leave it to us.”

Pierce stood in front.

The blade of the spear, that was pointing at the ground, shone.

In the end, Chris slowly nodded and fell back.

Roan smiled faintly and made a signal towards Pierce.

The signals they had repeated without stop and had memorized.

Tat!

Roan and Pierce lowered their posture and flung their bodies towards the grass.

Quick movements like a flying tiger.

Worry appeared on the face of Chris, that was checking on them.

‘Will they really be able to face 11 people? They seem really young even at first glance.’

However you thought of it, 2 vs 11 was a really disadvantageous fight.

On top of that, Roan and Pierce looked younger than him.

However it didn't take long until Chris's worries disappeared.

\*\*\*\*\*

‘What is it?’

‘What is this greenhorn?’

The slave merchants that were waiting for the sun to set glared at Roan and Pierce, who that appeared suddenly from the grass, and frowned.

“Uoh? Huh?”

Only Norman's face, that remembered Roan's and Pierce's face, turned pale and stammered.

The slave merchants were looking at that Norman in a weird way.

“Trash like bastards.”

Roan’s voice, that was cold and low, rang with strength.  
At that moment, the faces of the slave merchants contorted.

“Is this bastard crazy!”

“Just from where did this crazy bastard appear from?”

Then, the light of the sunset shined on Roan’s and Pierce’s armor.

Only then could their armor, troop badge and rank be seen clearly.

“Huh?!”

“What!”

“Wha, the kingdom’s men?”

Only then did the slave merchants flinch and fall back.  
Roan pointed at them with the point of his spear.

“I’m class 5 adjutant Roan of rose troop from the 7th corps.”

He looked at the eyes of the slave merchants fixedly.

A cold light.

Continued by that, the even colder west wind blew.

“If you don’t want to die, simply surrender.”

A chilly smile appears on his face.

“But personally.....”

His spear did the talking.

“I would like it if you opposed us fiercely.”

## Chapter 37 : Relations (5)

---

The slave merchants started to fall back.

However, because of the huge rocks that were behind them, they didn't have anywhere else to move.

‘Damn. As he picked a place that was good to hide ourselves.....’

They fell in their own trap.

They bit their lower lips and exchanged glances.

‘If we can't escape, then we can only fight.’

‘They are 2, and we are 11.’

‘On top of that, they are real greenhorns!’

The class 5 adjutant badge bothered them, but objectively thinking, it wasn't a situation where they should be afraid.

They brought their hands to their waists as if they had all agreed to it beforehand.

Srung.

A well polished blade appeared along the noise of unsheathing.

The slave merchants started to walk towards Roan and Pierce.

But only one, Norman, was still standing on his place not knowing what to do.

‘Tha.... that guy isn’t simply a greenhorn soldier.’

He brought up the memories of Steve getting done by helplessly.

‘His spear skills aren’t normal.’

His eyes trembled.

Looking at that Norman, the slave merchants clicked their tongues.

“That dumbass. He’s such a scaredy cat.”

“For that bastard to be working as a slave merchant. Tch tch tch.”

They looked at Roan and Pierce and cursed him.

“Look greenhorn. What? You said that we were pieces of trash?”

“It seems that you are out of your minds. You are two and we are eleven.”

Bloodthirst could be sensed on their voices.

Roan smiled faintly and grabbed his spear.

“How fortunate.”

At those words, the slave merchants frowned.

“What? What is fortunate?”

Roan just charged to the front instead of replying.

Pat!

A sharp sound.

The spear separated the wind.

“Hup!”

The slave merchants gulped in some air at the sudden attack.  
They tried to quickly dodge it, but the spear was much faster.

Stab.

The spear stabbed the neck just like that.  
A fast attack without even a hint of hesitation.

“For opposing me roughly just like I wanted.”

Bang.



The slave merchant that had his neck pierced fell down.

“Thi, this damned!”

“This son of a bitch!”

The other slave merchants charged in late while cursing.

The sharp blades came in by the sides.

Roan twisted his arms so it got crossed, and after grabbing his spear he turned his body.

Pruuuuu!

As he twisted his crossed wrists, the spear started to spin quickly.

Roan lowered his head at the incoming blades and spinned the spear to the back side of his head.

Cheng! Checheng! Cheng!

The blade of the slave merchants got hit by the spear and bounced back.

“Kugh!”

“Damn.”

Curses spewing out instinctively.

But even so, they weren't on a situation where they could curse freely.

Pat!

It was because Pierce stabbed his spear to the sides of the bastards.

Stab.

“Kugh!”

Another one fell nully.

“Son of bitches!”

The other slave merchants swung their blades while gritting their teeth.

‘I have to get closer. If I do, I will have a chance.’

The spear was a long distance weapon.

If they got really close to them, they wouldn’t be able to do much.

“Uaaaaaaa!”

“Die!”

The bastards yelled and jumped in closer to Roan and Pierce.

“Hmph!”

At that sight, Roan and Pierce snorted and pulled their spears.

Spat!

The spear slipped smoothly while running through the palm.

Roan and Pierce gripped the spear shortly and rose it close to their chests.

At the same time, they put the spear on their armpits.

Thanks to that, the end part of the spear that should keep shaking because of the weight balance, received a lot of strength.

Cheng! Checheng!

Roan and Pierce swung the spear on their armpits and the blades of the slave merchants off got bounced off.

“Im, impossible!”

“Damn it!”

Expressions they couldn’t believe and perplexed voices.

In the first place, they weren’t even opponents for Roan and Pierce.

Then, Roan and Pierce exchanged glances and slightly nodded.

At the same time the spun their body to opposite sides.

Spat!

The long spear that was at the back part cut through the air and hit the sides of the slave merchants.

Puk!

“Kugh!”

“Kugh!”

They got done by helplessly at the sudden attacks.

At the pain they felt of cutting their breathing, they held their sides.

Roan and Pierce didn't miss this opportunity.

The sharp spear cut through the space and danced.

Stab.

The spear pierced through the necks of the merchants.

In an instant, 8 died and only 2 remained.

Even counting Norman that was far away, they were only 3.

Pierce's spear drew an arc and moved softly.

Then, the two slave merchants threw their blades away and kneeled down.

“Uhhhhh. We, we surrender! Surrender!”

“We will give ourselves!”

Their shoulders that trembled pitifully while even lowering their heads.

Tuk.

Pierce changed the trajectory of the spear and put it up behind him.

A soft and perfect finishing touch.

“Trash like bastards. You will pay for your sins.”

A cold voice.

“Yes. Yes. We will receive whatever punishment.”

“We are indeed trash. We are trash.”

The slave merchants lowered their heads.

A pitiful look whoever saw it.

But on the lowered heads, there was a chilly and nasty smile.

‘Son of a bitch. I can’t end it like this.’

His hand that was gripping the earth, slowly moved towards his

talon.

He grabbed the blade with the tip of his fingers.

Pierce smiled towards Roan brightly even without knowing of this situation.

“Sir adjutant Roan. I’m finishe.....”

When he talked up to that point.

“Die!”

The guys that were on the ground grabbed their blades and stood up.

Even if it was Pierce, that had outstanding talent, it was a difficult situation.

Then, a sharp noise hit their ears.

Sweeee!

Puk!

The thing that cut the air and smashed the head of them was Roan’s spear.

“Hup.”

Pierce gulped in some air.

The blade of the bastards were already touching his side.

If it wasn't for Roan, it would have gotten sliced off.

'It was dangerous.'

Roan took in a deep breath.

Thanks to Kalian's tear, he could see the movements of the slave merchants slowly and clearly.

He had thrown his spear even before the blade got unsheathed.

'If it wasn't for Kalian's tear, i would have lost Pierce.'

Roan let out a sigh of relief and moved and grabbed his spear.

As he put strength on his wrist, the spear that had pierced the heads got pulled out.

"Pierce."

"Yes? Yes. Sir adjutant."

Pierce lowered his head with a half absent minded expression.

Roan hit his shoulder and smiled faintly.

"You can't show your back thoughtlessly on a battlefield. And can't even trust your enemies easily. Understood?"

"Yes, yes. I understand."

Pierce got ahold of himself late and nodded.

He was the best spearman in history but right now he was no different to a greenhorn soldier.

He still lacked real experience.

‘If he keeps roaming the battlefield, it will be something he solves by his own.’

There was no way to feel that bothered by it.

Roan swung his spear and turned his head.

Now, only Roan remained.

“Huh?”

The eyes of Roan and Pierce got big.

It’s because an unexpected scene had occurred.

“I, I really surrender. In the first place, I was planning to give myself in.”

Norman pleaded while being on the floor.

The surprising thing was his look.

The weird thing right now was that he wasn’t putting on any clothes.

“I don’t have any blades or weapons on me. Look.”

Norman raised his two hands.



The reason why he suddenly undressed.

It was because he was scared if they would get suspicious for nothing because of the action of the others.

Roan smiled bitterly and shook his head.

‘Even so, I was planning on letting one live.’

There may be other slave merchants.

‘If I inquiry this one and the guy we tied and left on the forest, it will be enough.’

Especially on Norman’s case, they felt that he will be really useful as he was a scaredy cat.

Then, they saw Chris that was hiding on the grass.

“Ah.....”

He looked at the corpses of the slave merchants and let out a low exclamation.

‘They really got rid of 11 people just by themselves?’

He viewed Roan and Pierce as amazing.

‘Well, he would have climbed to be an adjutant at this young age because he has the skills.’

Chris sight remained on Roan.

‘A right nature and outstanding skills. He will certainly become someone big.’

Then, Roan’s voice was heard.

“Shall we look for the account book for now?”

“Ah, yes.”

Chris got a hold of himself late and moved his feet.

Then, Norman that was kneeling down while being undressed, looked on his clothes and took out a black account book.

“It, it’s here.”

He lent it down with his two hands while not being able to raise his head.

Chris received the account book and checked the contents of it thoroughly.

A surprised look could be seen on Roan’s face.

“Do you know how to read?”

At those words, Chris laughed awkwardly and shook his head.

“A little bit. There are more words I don’t know about.”

Roan still had a surprised expression.

‘A normal person at this age knows how to read?’

It wasn’t an easy thing.

And because of that, Aaron and the staff of the 7th corps got surprised big way.

Roan asked carefully.

“If it doesn’t bother you, may I ask you how you learned to read?”

At those words, Chris replied as if it didn’t bother him.

“I bought books while I made money and read it. At first, I didn’t know anything but as I kept on reading, I could see some letters. Well, I also asked to people I had some relation and learned that way.”

“Incredible. The cost of the books wouldn’t have been low.”

“Yes. Because of that, my dream of running a travel agency is getting pushed back.”

Chris let out a low sigh and shook his head.

Then, his finger that was checking on the contents of the books, stopped.

“I found it.”

A smile appeared on his face.

He had discovered the name of the daughter of the countryside couple on the corner of the book.

“She got sold to a millionaire on the region.”

Roan checked on the contents and nodded.

“It’s the region of Dellon.”

At that instant, Chris put a surprised expression.

“Huh? Sir adjutant also knows how to read?”

“Yes. I also learnt by asking people I had some relation with.”

“Ah.....”

Chris let out a low exclamation again.

‘He looks even younger than me, but he also knows how to read.’

Then, Roan smiled faintly and pointed at the account book.

“May I take this account book with me?”

“Yes? Why this.....”

“It’s because of the people that got caught and sold off by the slave merchants. I have to return them to their homes, to where they originally were.”

“Ah.....”

Chris shook his head and gave him the account book.

Anyways, he couldn’t rescue everyone by himself.

‘I can’t trust on the kingdoms men but I can trust this person.’

Chris looked at Roan with eyes filled trust.

Roan looked at the contents of the book for a moment and shrugged his shoulder.

“Then, shall we return to our headquarters?”

Soon, the sunset had disappeared and darkness fell on the plains.

However even on that darkness Roan’s Pierce’s and Chris’s eyes shone brightly.

\*\*\*\*\*

First, Roan put Norman and Steve on the prison of the headquarters and went with Gale.

Gale listened to the story about JoyLuce’s group and went to the corps headquarters with the account book.

And of course, he didn't forget to congratulate Pierce and Chris before that.

Roan and Pierce brought Chris to the infirmary and after healing his injuries they slept for a night.

As the day brightened, the three people ate a simple breakfast and went towards the entrance of Beno castle.

“Yesterday, and today I received a really big help. I will never forget this grace and remember it.”

Chris bent his head towards Roan and Pierce.

“Then, I will be going.”

A farewell.

Then, Roan took out a pouch that seemed rather heavy from his chest.

“Take it.”

“What's this?”

Chris didn't receive it and asked carefully.

Roan smiled faintly and replied.

“It's the reward.”

“Ah.....”

There was a not low wanted reward on JoyLuce's slave merchants.

Chris shook his head.

"It was you who caught them."

"If it wasn't for you, it would have been impossible."

Roan forcefully gave him the pocket.

"Thanks to you we were able to save the innocent people. It's true that it was thanks to you."

"Ah....."

Chris hesitated for a moment and lowered his head.

"It wasn't enough with having saved my life, but you also give me the reward. I'm really thankful."

A trembling voice.

He truly felt thankful towards Roan and Pierce.

'Later on, if there's something I can help with, I will do it.'

If he received some grace, he would certainly pay it back.

That was Chris's temperament.

“Then, where are you going now?”

As Roan asked, Chris replied while smiling brightly.

“First, I’m planning on looking for the countryside couple.”

It was decided the daughter of the old couple was going to be rescued by rose troop.

Because of that, Chris could lift a weight from his heart.

“And I will have to return to Miller kingdom.”

He looked at the reward pocket.

‘The reward was 200 pres.’

The salary of a normal person for a year was about exactly 200 pres.

It was more amazing than you could think.

‘If it’s this.....’

It was enough to run a small travelling agency.

“With that much, you will be able to run a small travelling agency.”



At Roan's words, Chris smiled shyly and nodded.  
Roan and Chris had conversed plentifully last night.

‘He did say that his dream was to run a travel agency. But.....’

He bit his lower lip.

Roan knew what talent Chris had and on what field.  
If it came to this I want to awaken his talent early.

‘And if I can work with him, all the way better.’

He looked at Chris's eyes fixedly.

“Mister Chris. Can I give you a proposal?”

“Of course. If it's a proposal of sir adjutant Roan, it's always welcomed.”

At those words, Roan said in a voice so low it seemed that he was whispering.

“I realized an important truth while working as an adjutant for the kingdom.”

A moment's silence.

Chris also gulped dry saliva unconsciously.

Roan smiled brightly and continued saying.

“And that’s the strength information has.”

# Chapter 38 : Relations (6)

---

“In.....Information?”

Chris had a perplexed expression.

‘Why information so suddenly?’

It was something he hadn’t expected at all.

Roan didn’t mind and continued saying.

“The strength information has is amazing.”

He explained in detail just what role information took in in Int’s forest battle, and Prely’s inundation tactic.

“Ah.....”

Chris let out a low exclamation and nodded.

‘If he didn’t know that there was a reservoir the army would have been annihilated.’

Certainly, the strength information had was amazing.

But just what was it related to him?

Chris looked at Roan with perplexed eyes,.

“I know fully well as to how amazing information can be. But the reason you are telling this to me.....?”

Roan smiled faintly and pointed to Chris.

“I would like it if mister Chris ran an information agency.”

“Yes?!”

Boom.

Chris felt that he had taken a blow from behind.

“In, information agency?”

Really unexpected words.

“If it’s handling information you already have the information guild or thieves guilds.”

At those words, Roan shook his head.

“I’m not talking about those small scale ones.”

The information guild and thieves guild only gathered information that could make money.

And as they only gathered those types of information, it was really limited.

On top of that, as they handled things per requests, things were really passive.

Chris laughed awkwardly and shook his head.

“I have never worked with information and haven’t even thought of it.”

On the other side Roan had a confident expression.

“Yesterday and today looking at mister Chris, I thought that you had great talent in acquiring information. If my guess is right, you will really be able to run an excellent information agency.”

“No, I.....”

Chris couldn’t talk easily.

He still felt dumbfounded.

“Just because it is an information agency, there’s nothing special about it. You said you will open a travel agency, right? It rather turned out well. If it’s an agency you will of course be able to travel around our Rinse kingdom, and also to kingdoms from other continents. It’s the best job for gathering information.”

“You are telling me to gather information while I run the travel agency?”

“Yes. A plain one at the eyes of others.”

Roan's words continued.

“You analyze and organize the gathered information and sell it to the ones that need it. If it's really important information, you cost of it will also be enormous.”

“Mmm.”

Chris fell in his thoughts for a moment.

But after a while, he smiled awkwardly and shook his head.

“I think that it will be impossible to decide on it immediately. Because it's a field I have never thought until now.”

Roan slowly nodded.

“Think plentifully and decide then.”

A calm expression.

But inwardly he felt full of regret.

‘Is it still not the time.’

If it turned out well, he wanted to appoint Chris as the responsible for his information.

The effectivity of Chris and his information agency was that excellent.

‘10 years from now on. If it’s early in 5 years. In that time the information era will start.’

An era where kingdoms of all continents are swept by calls.

An era where small and big kingdoms got scrambled and swept up.

‘Most of all, a lot of people will die.’

Rivers will be created with blood and corpses will create mountains.

‘If Chris bloomed his skills a bit earlier and ran an information agency it would be of great help.’

Roan bit his lower lip.

‘I will stop the battles I can, and save the ones I can.’

Even if he couldn’t stop the era itself, he wanted to save the most lives he could.

‘Actually it will be good to become that kind of monarch.’

A monarch that doesn’t eat and live well by his own, but one that makes everyone live and eat well.

The monarch Roan was dreaming of was that kind of monarch.

‘Then, I can’t fall back like this.’

You couldn’t know how relationships would turn out.

He didn’t want to give up here.

“Whatever choice you make, I respect your thoughts.”

“Thank you.”

Chris smiled faintly and nodded.

Then, Roan took out a rather heavy pouch from his chest.

“Take it.”

“What is this?”

Chris tilted his head.

“It’s investments.”

Investments?”

“Yes. I want to invest on you mister Chris.”

“Hup.”

Chris gulped in air.

An unexpected thing again.

Roan’s words continued.



“It’s a simple investment that has nothing to do with you running the information agency or not. I have eyes that can see through people. You will certainly succeed in a big way.”

“Ah, no anyways.....”

Chris was still in a perplexed state.

Roan didn’t mind and brought his hand to his chest again.

“And.....”

The thing that came out was Ian’s handkerchief.

He smiled faintly and lent him the handkerchief.

“It’s a handkerchief with count Ian Philip’s symbol. If in case you get interested on the information agency, take that handkerchief and go look for him. You can go and look for him. He will be of great help.”

An existence that made you greedy.

It wasn’t an easy decision to send that existence away to another person.

‘However, I can’t ruin Chris’s future because of my greed. Perhaps because of my greed, the information era will become more cruel.’

He was planning to give him choices.

Himself and Ian.

He decided to not mind whether he chose him or Ian.

‘Even so, I can’t do nothing about the bitterness.’

Roan smiled bitterly, and Chris also felt a headache.

‘Information agency? Investments? Count Philips? Ian Phillips?’

The went through many things in a short while.

A feeling that his thoughts were getting tied up.

But even in the middle of that, there was one certain thing.

‘Sir adjutant Roan’s feelings are the real deal.’

He could clearly feel his will and consideration to help him. Chris took in a deep breath and raised the pocket.

“I will use well the investment. I will certainly succeed in a big way and return it back.”

“Then you can just buy me a meal.”

Roan smiled brightly and shook his hand.

Chris’s words continued.

“And the handkerchief for count Philips.”

He returned it back to Roan.

“It’s something useless for me.”

Chris looked at Roan’s two eyes fixedly.

“If in case I get interested on the information agency, I won’t go to look for count Philips but to you. Because it’s also been you that taught me about the talent for information I had.”

Burning eyes.

Roan took in a long breath.

‘Did it turn out well?’

Chris didn’t choose Ian, but him.

He was so happy he wanted to jump, but he didn’t show it.

Anyways, Chris didn’t find any big meaning in information.

‘From now on, it will be the important thing.’

He had only took a step forward.

Roan put back the handkerchief and nodded.

“I understand mister Chris’s meaning really well. I will be

cheering for you from far away.”

At those words Chris smiled faintly and lowered his head.

“I will also be cheering.”

Now, they really had to separate.

He took back some steps and bent his head.

“If perhaps you visit Miller, come to Lisa street.”

“Okay. I will certainly go.”

Roan smiled brightly and slightly bent his head.

Chris fell back and moved his feet.

Because his feet were really quick, soon he couldn't see his back anymore.

“Is his talent really that outstanding?”

Pierce, that was standing next to him, asked carefully.

Roan slowly nodded instead of replying.

‘He’s one of the young existences that lead Rinse kingdom and also Ian Phillip’s right hand.’

Ian chose Chris as the best from even among his men.

The talents even an outstanding genius strategist acknowledged.  
That was right Chris.

‘Even so, as I talk about young existences.....’

There were some people he remembered.

‘Rinse kingdom’s four gods.’

The four young existences that lead Rinse kingdom from his past life to prosperity.

Spear god Pierce, that was called to have the best spear skills and talents from all of history.

The outstanding genius strategist Ian.

The mad monarch that was perfect in every aspect but one.

Goldmaster Sale, that controlled 70% of Rinse kingdom’s commerce rights.

‘They are guys that will appear 5 years from now on if it’s short, and if it’s long in 10 years.’

Fortunately, he knew about them really well.

Excluding one.

‘Goldmaster Sale was the only person that didn’t have his past revealed.’

Not only that, but he was a person he didn't know about his precise age, hometown and of course face.

‘One day I will meet him. No, perhaps would I already have met him?’

He decided not to think about it for long.

Anyways, it wasn't something to be solved just because he thought of it.

Roan concentrated on the thing he had to do right now.

“Pierce.”

“Yes.”

“Let's go.”

Pierce tilted his head at the ambiguous words.

“Where.....?”

At those words Roan shook his spear.

“You have to learn Roan's spearmanship.”

“Ah!”

Pierce let out a low exclamation.

And then, he smiled brightly and nodded.

“Yes! Teach me please!”

A loud reply.

Just in time, the west wind blowed.

\*\*\*\*\*

‘I did know that he was a genius.....’

Roan looked at Pierce while looking at Pierce.

He ran without stop and swung his spear.

Pierce took only 4 days on mastering Roan’s spearmanship.

Although the place he stepped on was a bit messed up, looking at it overall he got quite familiar to it.

‘It’s certainly an outstanding spearmanship, but it’s too difficult for normal spearmen to master.’

The Pierce of that moment when he had made it, was already high on mana handling.

Most of all, he couldn’t comprehend properly about normal people’s talents.

‘But if it’s now.....’

The pierce from now didn’t master mana and lacked battle

experience.

He was certainly closer to a normal person to when he made it on his past life.

‘He will be able to develop Roan’s spearmanship to an easier and stronger one.’

The reason why Roan taught Pierce.

‘Because this time he won’t just make it in an instant while being seated, but he will really ponder and investigate to make it.’

And he was planning on helping him so he could do so.

‘If it turns out as planned.....’

A smile appeared on his face.

‘I will be able to make the strongest spearmen squad on the continent.’

Roan’s spearmanship that will be born anew.

That would certainly become one of the basics for Roan’s strong military force.

Then, Pierce put back his spear and approached him with a refreshed expression.



“Roan’s spearmanship is really amazing. For a spearmanship to be this strong even without mana.”

“From now on, train and keep training. Then you will be able to see a new path.”

“Yes. I will bear it in mind.”

The two person looked at each other and laughed, and then moved their feet.

Because the promised time for the 12th squad members to gather had come.

As they got in to Karon’s bar, that was the appointed place, they heard a loud voice.

“Sir adjutant! Here! It’s over here!”

“It’s over here!”

The guys that yell while shaking their arms.

They were Austin and the 12th squad.

“Did we get a bit late?”

At Roan’s words, Austin shook his head.

“No. We also got just now.”

“On top of that, there’s someone that’s not even here.”

Lander said.

Roan looked at the squad members and nodded.

“Glenn’s missing?”

“Yes. He’s about to arrive.”

Austin laughed awkwardly and replied.

Then, Lander shook his hands and butted in.

“Well, he will come soon. First, I will order some food and alcohol.”

“Right. Do so.”

Roan sat on one corner and nodded.

Lander ordered various things.

‘I will also have to take about the vacations today.’

Roan took in a deep breath.

Shortly one month, and if it’s long three months.

In that while he had to leave rose troop.

He wanted to let this be known to the 12th squad members first.

‘I will have to say it when it’s about to end.’

He didn’t want to break the atmosphere for nothing at the start.

Then, big cups of beer filled the table.

“It’s our first squad meeting, so why don’t you say some words sir adjutant?”

Austin skillfully set up the atmosphere.

Roan didn’t decline and stood up.

“You have done well until now. I ask you to keep doing well.”

There was no need to saw some embarrassing things.

Roan raised his cup.

“For the 12th squad!”

“Hurray!”

The thick wooden cups clashed.

“Kuh.”

A feeling of his insides getting opened.

At that sight, Austin and the other squad members also emptied their cups. After the cup of beer got filled a few more times, the ordered food came out.

Really various foods.

“Eat this. It’s good food in the neighbourhoo.....”

Austin that was recommending food to Roan looked at the entrance and shook his hand.

“Glenn! Over here!”

Glenn had arrived.

Roan smiled faintly and turned his head towards the entrance.

At that instant, every movement turned slow.

Just like the world itself had stopped.

But this wasn't because of Kalian's tear.

‘Ah.....’

Roan's sight went past Glenn and directed to the girl that was behind him.

Her hair was crisp, but it reached below her shoulders. Thick eyebrows, big and clear eyes, a pointy nose and red lips.

White skin unlike a commoner, and slightly bent head as if she was embarrassed.

The girl gave out a childish feelign and at the same time a mature feeling coming from a lady.

‘Seline.’

The girl he wanted to forget but couldn't, and couldn't forget but he had to.

That girl was right in front of him.

## Chapter 39 : Relations (7)

---

“Sir adjutant Roan. I’m sorry for being late.”

Glenn laughed awkwardly and scratched his head.

Roan just nodded instead of replying.

Glenn pointed towards Seline that was still standing at the entrance.

“She’s my sister Seline. We went to our relative’s house because we had something to do, but the door was locked as if they were outside, so I brought her here. I’m sorry.”

Glenn apologized.

Roan looked at Seline as if he was barely listening.

‘Right, she was still a kid at this time.’

He was one year older than her.

She was still a 17 year old girl.

Because of that, there was a big difference from Seline from his memories.

‘We separated on our late twenties.’

She was certainly different than then.

But the feeling she gave was the same.

‘How crazy. For my heart to pound while looking at a little girl.’

He tried to ignore her, but his heart pounded by it’s own.

Then, Glenn’s voice was heard.

“Sir adjutant Roan.”

A really rigid look.

“Ah.”

Only then did Roan get a hold of himself.

“You can’t do anything if the house is locked. Come along and eat something.”

“Thank you.”

Glenn lowered his head.

Seline, that was near the entrance, smiled shyly and also lowered her head.

“Thank you.”

A soft and nice to hear voice.

Glenn and Seline sat at the end of the table.

The atmosphere of the meeting changed in an instant.

The squad members that were on their early twenties showed great interest towards Seline, that was of the opposite sex.

“How old are you?”

“Your name is Seline?”

“Do you have a boyfriend?”

Pouring questions.

Roan smiled bitterly and raised his cup of beer.

‘If I decided to forget her, it is right to do so.’

He tried not to look towards Seline.

However he couldn't do nothing about the conversations he heard.

“She doesn't have something like a boyfriend. As you see she's this ugly.....”

Glenn's words.

“Oppa.”

Seline called Glenn with a low voice, as if she was rebuking him.

However Glenn smiled faintly and shrugged his shoulders.



“What? What about it? You also cook terribl.....”

“Oppa.”

Seline called Glenn once more time and frowned.

“Are you getting angry at me?”

“Ah, no. That’s not it.....”

As Glenn teased her, Seline’s face turned pink.

A shy look.

Glenn continued teasing her as if that look of her was cute.

Seline got angry at times and pouted her lip.

A childish and cute look suitable for a 17 year old girl.

Roan sat slantly and listened to the conversation of the brothers.

‘She missed her brother forever.....’

Looking at Glenn teasing her, he thought that it was really fortunate.

‘Right. I would like it if you were less sad in this life.’

Seline’s voice was really sweet and soft.

Then, Austin that was next to him, raised a duck meat dish.

“Eat this.”

It looked like he was giving it to Seline.

Roan, that was drinking beer and not paying any attention, raised another dish of meat.

“Not the duck.”

In that instant, Austin and the other squad members turned to look at Roan.

Only then did Roan realize the situation.

‘Damn.....’

The words came out unconsciously, and his hands moved first.

‘Seline can’t eat duck meat.’

He still remembered her eating habits and other habits.

An awkward silence flowed for a moment.

“Mm. No, it’s because I like duck meat.....”

A poor excuse.

‘Roan. Do you call that an excuse just now?’

When he was rebuking himself.

Glenn smiled faintly and received the dish Roan was holding.

“You don’t have to give us duck meat. She can’t eat duck meat. Unlike how she looks, she also doesn’t eat a lot of things.....”

“Oppa.”

Seline pinched Glenn’s side and rolled her eyes.

Boom.

At that moment, Roan felt a heavy rock sinking in his heart.

‘Whew. Those eyes.....’

Even in his past life, he was weak on her rolling her eyes like that.

A feeling that he wants to pinch her cheek right now.

Roan raised the cup of beer again.

The squad members drank beer for quite a while and talked elatedly.

“Then, what’s miss Seline’s dream? You wouldn’t like to become a soldier like Glenn, right?”

Seline smiled shyly and shook her head.

“Then what do you want to do?”

Lander asked once more.

And Roan also showed interest for this question.

‘Seline’s dream? What was it? I think that she didn’t want to do anything in particular.’

He didn’t remember.

He remembered everything about her, but only that part was white like a sheet of paper.

Roan gulped down the beer and listened attentively.

“I.....”

Seline hesitated for a moment and then continued to say with a bright smile.

“I want to become a baker.”

Boom.

In that moment, Roan felt that someone hit his head really hard.

‘Baker.....’

His face stiffens.

‘To have forgotten it like a stupid.....’

He couldn’t hold it because he felt pitiful.

‘Right. She said she wanted to become a baker.’

When they first met, and when it hasn’t been while since they started dating, Seline still dreamed of becoming a baker.

‘But because of me.....’

Seline gave up on her dream because of Roan.

Fees to buy armour and spears, and also repair fees.

The things they had to offer for a promotion.

Seline pursued money for Roan instead of her dreams.

‘But a bastard like me....’

He thought of it as if it was really obvious.

That if he just became a great general, he would be able to make her live a good life.

The results? The worst of the worst.

‘Whew.’

The sigh surged up until his throat.

He couldn’t keep seated anymore.

Roan emptied the cup of beer in an instant.

“I will get more.”

Austin looked at the emptied cup and stood up.

Roan shook his hand and raised the cup.

“No. Don’t bother and keep drinking.”

A look of smiling brightly.

Austin smacked his lips and nodded.

Roan lent the cup to the owner of the store and leaned on a wall.

“What’s your hobby?”

“The food you like?”

The squad members didn’t have any control as they were pouring questions towards Seline.

Seline smiled shyly every time and she answered to the question quickly.

‘Seline.’

Roan looked at her bright and cheerful face and bit his lower lip.

‘The dream you gave up on your past life. I will help you so you can fulfill it.’

It still wasn’t a feeling like ‘I want to meet her again, or love her again.’

Now he simply wanted to help her on her dreams.

Then, Lander lent a dish.

A really spicy pork dish.

“Eat this too. It’s the most delicious on this store.”

“Yes? Ah.....Yes. Thank you.”

Seline hesitated for a moment and then nodded.

She looked at Lander’s face for a moment and after she smiled faintly she ate a piece of meat.

“How is it?”

Seline laughed awkwardly and nodded.

“It, it’s delicious. Really deli.....”

The last part faltered.

Her face became red.

“Wha, what happened?”

Lander had a really perplexed expression.

Then, Glenn that was conversing with the others, looked at Seline’s face.

“Why are you like that?”

Seline pointed to a red pork meat instead. Glenn frowned.

“You ate this? You can’t eat spicy stuff.”

A rebuking sound.

Then, he lent her a cup of water.

Seline hurriedly emptied the cup of water, but the spiciness still didn’t go away.

“Hoo. Hoo. Hoo.”

She opened her mouth roundly and let out short breaths.

“Wha, what do I do? Do, do you want to drink some beer?”

The perplexed Lander lent out a cup of beer.



“She’s still 17.”

The age you could start drinking was 18.

Glenn took away the cup of beer and filled it with water again.

Then, Roan approached without saying anything and placed down a big wooden cup.

“Hoo. Hoo. Hoo.”

Seline was still breathing out. She looked at the cup and at Roan alternately.

‘What’s this?’

Her big round eyes asked him that.

However Roan returned to his seat without saying anything while drinking beer.

Then she felt a really familiar aroma.

“Huh?”

Seline raised the wooden cup and smelled it.

In that moment, a bright smile bloomed.

‘This is bland tea.’

The tea she liked the most.

It was a tea which sweet flavor was excellent.

She grabbed the wooden cup with both of her hands and drank the tea.

A sweet flavor spreading in her mouth.

The spicy flavor that even made her teary disappeared.

“Whew.”

Seline let out a long breath.

Her bright face also returned to it's original colour.

Only then did Glenn and Lander seem to calm down.

Seline bent her head towards Roan.

“Thank you.”

At those words Roan smiled faintly and nodded instead of replying.

‘She really like bland tea. Every time she drank it she said something.’

A way of expression used only by Seline.

‘Does she not use it yet.....’

He felt regretful for nothing.

Meanwhile, Seline drank one more gulp of the bland tea.

“Haa.”

A brightly smiling face.

It was a face that made everyone who watched her also smile.

Roan unconsciously smiled brightly and shook his head.

‘Every time, after she drank bland tea, she would say dalkang dal.....’

When his thoughts were about there.

Seline covered her cheeks with her two hands and mumbled in a low voice.

“Ah. It’s dalkang dalkang.”

Her way of expressing others couldn’t understand.

Roan’s corner of the mouth raised.

‘It’s been a while.’

A happy yet dearing feeling.

Many scenes popped in his head.

Then, Keep's voice was heard.

He had pushed away Lander and sat next to Seline.

“You said you didn't have any boyfriend right? Then, what's your ideal type?”

“I don't have anything like that.”

Seline shook her head.

But Keep didn't give up.

He pointed towards the others.

“Then who do you like the most among them?”

Seline looked at the squad members without saying anything.

“Sir adjutant Roan that's the similar age as you? Or Pierce?”

At the questions, everyone's sights were directed to Seline.

It seemed like everyone was curious.

Even Roan that was sipping some beer acted uninterested, but he was slightly interested actually.

Seline hesitated for a moment and carefully said.

“I.....”

When she talked up to then, the door of the store opened

abruptly.

Boom!

At the same time, an urgent voice was heard.

“Sir adjutant Roan!”

Roan, that was concentrating on Seline’s reply, turned his head and looked towards the entrance.

“Huh?”

His two eyes that get big.

There was a person he hadn’t expected at all standing in the entrance.

“Sir adjutant Roan. It’s big trouble.”

The man that approaches.

Roan stood up with a surprised expression.

“Mister Chris. Didn’t you leave towards Dellon’s region?”

The owner of the voice.

It was Chris that had left Beno’s castle two days ago.

\*\*\*\*\*

Roan and Chris got out of the store and entered a secluded alley.

“Mister Chris. Didn’t you go to Dellon’s region to look for the old couple?”

“Yes. That’s right. I tried to.”

Chris nodded with a serious expression.

“But while I was travelling to Dellon’s region, I heard a weird story.”

“A story?”

Roan frowned.

“Yes. It’s a story I heard from the merchants that came from the north, but it seems like they saw a weird scene.”

Chris continued saying in a voice as if he was whispering.

“That the grass on the plains that had to be grown up were all stepped on it. Just like hundreds of horses ran over.”

A weird story.

Roan’s face stiffened.

“As it wasn’t barley or wheat, the merchants didn’t report it to the kingdom.”

Chris’s words continued.

“I also thought that it wasn’t important and was about to go to Dellon’s region, but maybe because of my temperament or my uselessly good senses, I wanted to go to check what the problem was on the north. So I went to the place where the merchants saw the weird scene.”

His words became faster.

“But when I was about to cross Kape’s mountain, I discovered a herd moving quickly. Even when they were far away, they moved so fast and roughly that the ground shook. At that moment I got the feeling. That the herd I saw was the one that destroyed the grass.”

“Could you also figure out the identity of the pack?”

Roan asked carefully.

Chris bit his lower lip and nodded.

“The identity of that herd.....”

A voice with a lot of strength.

“They were orcs.”

Roan opened his eyes big.

‘Orcs? An orc troop?’

An expression he couldn’t believe it.

All the orc troops were pushed away from the boundaries after Pedian’s plain monster subjugation.

Because of that, a situation where orcs could move in a troop was impossible.

‘But there’s no way Chris could have seen wrong.’

Roan bit his lower lip.

Chris’s words continued.

“There are at least 2 thousand orcs in the troop. They were all riding Lopuses.”

“Mmm.”

Roan forcefully gulped down the exclamation.

Lopus.

The monster that looked like a monster was smaller than a horse, but it had the characteristic that it was fiercer and attacked you more.



‘Just what kind of crazy orc, right after the subjugation finishes.....’

Roan frowned and looked at Roan.

“Did you see the flag of the troop?”

At those words Chris smiled faintly and nodded.

“Fortunately, I could. The overall of the flag was crimson and was mixed with blue, and in the middle of that a black horizontal line crosses it.”

In that moment, Roan’s face stiffened.

‘If it’s crimson and blue, it’s the dead Sedek’s troop flag.’

A black horizontal line that crosses it.

It was a troop flag Roan knew really well.

‘It’s Violin’s troop.’

He looked at Chris and asked carefully.

“Wasn’t the orc leader leading the troop a female?”

“Huh?! That’s right. It was certainly a female orc warrior.”

Chris put an expression as if how did he know that.

Roan bit his lower lip.

‘Damn. For the wife of Sedek to appear so suddenly.’

# Chapter 40 : Revenge Battle (1)

---

Violin.

She was an outstanding warrior even among the orcs from Rinse kingdom and she was at the same time the dead Sedek's wife.

Her temperament was especially bloody that she cut off his dick after she realized that her husband Sedek had cheated on her.

“They are moving in a really complicated way evading the kingdom's men and their territories, but I think that in the end their objective will be Beno castle.”

“And the reason you think like that?”

“Looking at the latest traces discovered and the place I discovered, I realized that they were moving to the southeast. If they keep charging forward like this.....”

“There will be Beno castle.”

At Roan's words, Chris slowly nodded.

‘He certainly has talent in information.’

Roan was slightly amazed.

He took out quite a precise guess with Chris's information.

‘Even so.....’

A faint shadow appeared on Roan's face.

‘Is it for her husband’s revenge?’

Violin really loved Sedek.

Because of that, she couldn’t forgive the cheating Sedek.

A love closer to insanity.

Her husband that she loved that much died in the hands of a human.

‘Our rose troop, no, precisely speaking I would be her target.’

Seeing that they didn’t raid or attack villages while moving southeast, it was almost certain that they were moving for him.

‘It’s not a situation to be doing a squad dinner.’

Before Violin’s troop arrived, they had to finish preparations.

On top of that, their number was 2 thousand.

Compared to that, rose troop didn’t even have a thousand men.

Roan slightly bent towards Chris.

“Because of you I think that we will be able to prepare for their sudden attack. Thank you.”

Chris smiled faintly and shook both of his hands.

“No. I’m still far away of repaying your grace. But I was thinking.....”

He paused for a moment and asked with a little nervous face.

“May I investigate about the orc troop and their route?”

“Yes?”

Roan asked back with a surprised face.

A really unexpected question.

Chris continued saying.

“Won’t it be of help just by tracking their route?”

“That’s true, but it’s too dangerous.”

Roan stopped him with a serious expression.

However Chris rather smiled faintly and shook his head.

“I think that I will be able to do that much.”

A confident voice and attitude.

On top of that, he also seemed to have some fun.

‘He certainly is talented in this.’

Roan looked at Chris for a moment and then nodded.

“Fine. But instead, don’t approach them to the point it gets dangerous.”

“Understood.”

Chris hit his chest as if implying not to worry.

‘Even so, you want to run a normal travel agency?’

Probably Chris himself wouldn’t be able to hold it because it’s stifling.

“Then, I will be going.”

Chris saluted shortly towards Roan and got out of the alley with fast steps.

‘Should I also go?’

Roan also returned quickly to the store.

“Sir adjutant.”

Austin and the members all stood up.

They also felt that the situation wasn’t ordinary.

Roan smiled bitterly and looked at them.

“I’m sorry but we will have to end this here. Everybody, we are returning to headquarters.”

“Yes! Understood!”

Nobody asked the reason.

They only followed Roan’s orders.

Roan looked at Glenn.

“Glenn. You take your sister. If your familiars still aren’t back, wait and only then return.”

“Yes, yes. Understood.”

Glenn nodded with a confused expression.

Roan glanced at Seline.

It was a short moment, but their eyes met for the first time.

Zap.

At that moment, a corner of his heart felt numb.

‘It’s not the time to be like this.’

Roan forcefully shook his head and moved his feet.

Austin and the 12th squad followed his back.

The noisy table became empty in an instant.

Seline looked towards the entrance.

‘Mmm.’

She didn’t know why it felt regretful.

‘WHy is he so familiar?’

It was the first time she felt like this in her life.

The feeling that she felt something, found it back but lost it again.

Her big eyes gleamed with a weird light.

\*\*\*\*\*

Roan explained the situation to the squad members and went to Gale.

“Troop commander.”

A sudden visit.

Gale, that was enjoying a cup of tea, smiled faintly.

“Roan. What happened now? I’m starting to feel scared whenever you come.”



Words that he spat jokingly.

However, Roan's face was serious.

“That may really be the case.”

“Huh?”

Only then did Gale realize that the situation wasn't normal.

He put down the cup and looked at Roan's eyes fixedly.

“An orc troop is approaching.”

A calm voice.

But the contents were shocking.

“Orc troop?”

Gale frowned.

It was because an orc troop almost didn't move at this time.

Roan moved his feet to the center and pointed a map that was on the table.

“They are moving from the north to the southeast. I guess that their objective is here, at Beno castle.”

“Just why.....”

Gale frowned and shook his head.

Roan told him the story he heard by Chris.

Gale's face stiffened by the time.

“Damn. Is it for revenge for his husband.....”

He let out a sigh and looked at Roan.

“You entrusted that friend with the scouting?”

“Yes. He wanted to do it himself.”

“Is he trustable?”

“Yes. You can trust in him.”

Roan smiled without hesitation.

Gale nodded and grabbed Roan's shoulders.

“We will have to go to the troops HQ for now. I will have to report it to the great commander. You can go together, right?”

“Yes. Understood.”

Roan didn't decline.

Gale soon called Kennis and the adjutants and ordered them to prepare for battle against the orcs.

“Then, shall we go?”

“Yes. I will take the lead.”

Roan got on the horse and grabbed the reins.

There was 2 days of distance between Beno castle and Ipen castle.

If they ran with the horse quickly they would be able to reach within a day.

‘I wanted to take a vacation, but a battle soon occurs.’

Roan smiled bitterly and kicked the horse.

Hiiiing!

The horse let out a long cry and started to run towards the south.

Gale also kicked his horse to not fall behind.

Dudududu.

The horse steps shook the earth.

\*\*\*\*\*

“Hmm. Mmm.”

Humming came out on it’s own.

Aaron felt quite happy nowadays.

The things he had planned were getting solved well and on top of

that he found a guy he really liked.

‘Roan. He’s only 18 now but he will certainly become big.’

His awl in his pocket would show at any moment.

If Roan kept accumulating merits, people that desired him would appear.

‘Before that happens, I have to certainly make him mine.’

Countless plans appeared in his head and crumbled. After the pondering, he chose the first card.

‘Viscount Reil Baker has to show some interest.’

Aaron sent a letter to the prodigy spearman Reil. That he discovered a guy worth seeing over.

‘According to the reports of the adjutants, troop commanders and staff officers, it was standard. But the most amazing point.....’

Was that his skills got noticeably good in just a few months.

‘According to the report, his skills had changed when he first fought in Ale Gorge and in Prelly River. According to Gale’s expression, it was like a newborn became a teenager overnight.’

It was certain that he had an amazing talent in the spear.

‘If he just can learn spearmanship from viscount Reil Baker, becoming the best spearman in the kingdom isn’t impossible.’

But of course he had his own worries.

If Roan wouldn’t be taken by Reil.

But Aaron believed in him.

No, he believed in his usual temperament.

‘Viscount Reil Baker is in a few words, a lone wolf. He doesn’t have interest in power.

‘Even if he did like Roan, he would only take him as a disciple, he wouldn’t take him fully.’

The reason why Aaron could ease himself and send him the letter.

‘If it just turns out as planned, Roan will be in a big debt with me.’

A smile appears on Aaron’s face.

He was planning on leaving Roan near him and raise him to become a general.

‘If Roan grows as my expectations.....’

He won’t just become a corps commander from an outer area, but he will be able to get into the center.

‘But of course, he has to grow according to my expectations.’

For that, he had pulled various cards.

‘If this succeeds, I’m immediately moving to the next one.’

His future plans were drawn in his head.

“Hmm. Mmm.”

Because of that a hum could only come out.

On top of that, there was another good notice.

‘Damn it. Even so, it’s still my birthday.....’

Aaron grabbed a letter that was at a side of the table.

A letter his daughter that was studying in Pavor castle sent.

It was a letter she sent before leaving towards Ipen castle.

‘She would be busy studying but she also insists on doing something for my birthday.’

For him, Mary Tate was a pretty and commendable daughter.

‘I should buy some good meat.’

The smile on his mouth became denser.

Then, the door opened abruptly and Mendel came in.

“Corps commander. Troop commander Gale and adjutant Roan came looking for you.”

An urgent voice and expression.

‘Gale and Roan?’

Aaron tilted his head and shook his hands.

“Tell them to come in.”

Right before he said that, Gale and Roan came in.

“Greetings to corps commander.”

A light salute.

‘What happened.....’

Aaron frowned.

Because Gale's and Roan's expression weren't normal.

“What happened?”

At the short question, Gale gulped down dry saliva and replied.

“An orc troop is charging through.”

Boom.

In that instant Aaron's face stiffened.

“Orc? What are you talking about?”

“That.....”

Gale explained the situation he heard from Roan by now.

At the same time he spread a map of the eastern parts of the kingdom.

“With the information we have now, we grasped that they came from the north and are charging to the southeast. The number is about 2 thousand. They all are riding lopuses and their objective seems to be Beno Castle.”

A heavy silence.



Aaron looked at the map with ferocious eyes.

‘Orcs are charging to the southeast?’

A shock like someone hit his head.

‘It overlaps with the trajectory my daughter makes.’

The tip of his hands shake nervously.

‘It’s been 2 days since Mary departed from Pavor castle. She will soon reach Slan region.’

Mary was moving from Pavor castle to Beno castle with a northwest direction.

On the other hand, the orc troop was moving southeast.

‘There’s a high possibility they will meet at Slan region.’

Aaron took in a deep breath.

‘If she gets caught by the orc bastards.....’

Aaron shook his head.

A situation he didn’t even want to think of.

For Mary’s safety, he had to secure Slan region.

‘However we can’t face the orc troop in an open field.’

Just because of one daughter, he didn’t want to corner his underling soldiers.

His pondering deepened.

‘Is it my daughter, or the soldiers.’

Aaron fell in a deep thought between the roles of father or commander.

However Gale, that wouldn’t know of this, was burning inwardly.

A situation where even a minute was urgent.

“Corps commander?”

He called out to Aaron carefully.

Aaron looked at Mendel’s, Gale’s and Roan’s faces fixedly.

‘I am their commander.’

Soldiers are no different to his children.

‘I’m sorry. Mary.’

While he was finishing his thoughts, he made a decision.

“Their number aren’t that big, and as all of them are riding lopuses, close the castle gates and battle them as a fortress. I will dispatch troops from the corps headquarters.”

He made the order not as a father but as a commander.

‘Mary.....’

His chest boiled.

Then, Mendel opened his mouth with a complex expression.

“Corps commander. If you do that, your daughter.....”

“Stop. Don’t talk anymore.”

Aaron shook his hand.

He tightly bit his lower lip.

“We are sending a messenger towards Mary.”

“But we don’t know if the messenger will even.....”

Bang!

Aaron hit the table.

“Then do you want me to drive my soldiers to a corner just to rescue one daughter of mine!”

A loud yell.

Only then did Mendel shut his mouth and step back.

His face was frozen stiff.

‘Corps commander.....’

Mendel knew how well Aaron loved and appreciated Mary.

‘He always lived with boasting and praising.’

Even this time, he became so happy he was about to jump when Mary said that she would come to take care of his birthday.

‘That corps commander chose his underlings instead of his daughter.’

A cruel decision.

Mendel could feel Aaron’s boiling emotions.

Then, Aaron sent the order with such difficulty it seemed that he was vomiting something hot.

“Send a messenger to Mary.”

Gale and Roan grasped the situation late.

‘His daughter is coming to Ipen’s castle right now!’

They could understand why Aaron was pondering for a long while.

But just because of that, they couldn’t battle in an open field.

‘There’s no reason to face the orcs that are riding lopuses.’

As they grasped their surprise attack, they would close the castle gates and battle like that.

In the current situation, this tactic was the most adequate.

Aaron took in breaths and pointed towards the map.

“I will send you troops from the headquarters, so close the gates and prepa.....”

What he said until there Roan, who was silent until now, let out a short sigh.

He looked at Aaron, Gale and Mendel.

“Roan. Do you have something to say?”

Aaron frowned and asked back.

Roan shook his head with a short sigh.

“We can’t battle that way.”

# Chapter 41 : Revenge Battle (2)

---

“Roan!”

Aaron increased his voice.

His face was bright red.

“If it’s because of my daughter, you can…….”

When he talked up to there.

Roan shook his head.

“It’s not because of that reason.”

A calm voice.

Aaron, Mendel and Gale looked at Roan.

There was a weird look on their faces.

Roan continued saying with a calm expression.

“Violin is hot tempered and violent. For her to charge straight towards Beno castle without plundering and pillaging means that her rage towards rose troop is really that great.”

He didn’t reveal himself to be her target of revenge.

The three others nodded.

Roan continued saying.

“In this kind of situation, when Violin arrives and finds that the gates are closed how will she act?”

The three couldn't answer.

Roan drew a line around Beno castle.

“If it's the hot tempered and violent Violin, she would annihilate every village around Beno castle.”

Boom.

In that instant, the three faces stiffened.

A problem they hadn't thought about.

‘We just thought that we only had to block their surprise attack.’  
We thought that Beno castle shouldn't fall in danger.’

Thoughts that amounted that much.

However Roan was thinking what would happen even after that.

‘Well, there was a similar case in previous battles.’

As the situation was urgent, they had even forgotten that there was a precedent.

Aaron looked at the map with a serious expression.

“Certainly, if it’s the crazy female warrior Violin, there’s a high possibility she will do that.”

He couldn’t make the surroundings of Beno castle a wasteland.  
Aaron looked at Roan.

“Then you think that we have to battle them on an open field?”  
“Yes.”

A short reply but filled with confidence.  
Aaron looked at Roan’s eyes fixedly.

“Then what region would be suitable?”

At those words, Roan replied without hesitation.

“Obviously, Slan region.”

He pointed the northwestern part of Beno castle.

“This region is the starting point in the northwest, and there are villages surrounding it. To stop Violin’s troop he have to take Slen region as the starting point and make a blockade towards the northwest.”

A voice filled with certainness.



The three of them ruminated the words and looked at the map.

Just like Roan's words, there were many villagers living in the northwestern part of Slen region.

'We have to defend Slen region to save the villagers.'

'We have to build lines in the northwestern part of the region.'

They all looked at Roan with surprised looks.

'He's a really amazing guy.'

'Compared to others, he has the ability and insight to look through situations.'

'Until where does his abilities spread to?'

Praises they couldn't say it out loud.

Roan pretended not to notice that and pointed at the map.

"But this region is an open field. It's an advantageous area for the orc troop that are riding lopuses."

"Then what do we do?"

Aaron, Mendel and Gale looked at Roan while having forgotten their rank.

"I will have to go there myself. I want to check the topography of the region as well."

He had experienced many things for the past 20 years and remembered a lot of information and knowledge, but unfortunately he didn't remember much about things related to Slen region.

At those words Aaron nodded.

“Fine. I will go to the corps headquarters and give you the best horse.”

“Now that it turned out like this, I would like to go along with the 12th squad.”

“Do so.”

“Thank you.”

Roan lowered his head.

Aaron, Gale and Mendel looked at him with a fixed gaze.

“In this situation, it's almost impossible to bring troops from another region.”

They needed quite a lot of time to prepare preparations and travel all the way to Slen region.

Aaron continued saying.

“I will dispatch you troops from the headquarters, so drive back Violin.”

“Yes! Understood!”

Gale, Mendel and Roan bent down.

Aaron's eyes calmly sank.

‘If they can only defend Slen region.....’

The safety of the villagers would be acquired, but he could also get Mary's safety.

killing two birds with one stone.

His sight directed to Roan.

‘Roan. I'm begging you.’

Soon, even Aaron was depending on Roan.

Roan was now holding a big importance inside the corps, even without him knowing.

\*\*\*\*\*

“Yes? An open field battle?”

“We are making a line on the northwestern part of Slen region?”

Expected reactions.

Gale smiled bitterly at the fierce reactions of the adjutants.

He explained with a calm voice everything Roan had said.

“Ah.....”

Only then did the adjutants let out a low exclamation and get convinced.

“But even so, to face the orcs that are riding lopuses in an open field.....”

A ridiculous situation.

Gale pointed Roan with a gesture of his chin.

“For now, I will look how Roan checks Slen region.”

At those words, Kennis and the other adjutants all looked towards Roan.

Roan was looking at the map spread on the table.

‘Does he have something thought?’

‘If it’s Roan, he will have a mysterious tactic.’

Kennis and the adjutants gulped dry saliva.

Eyes filled with expectation.

However, Roan couldn’t hide his stuffiness while looking at the map.

‘The map is really a mess.’

Compared to the map 20 years from now on, it was a child’s scribble.

Only the villages, mountains, forests, and rivers were marked.

There were a lot of things that were excluded.

Roan's finger pointed to one side of the map.

A white part that didn't have anything.

‘Slen region.....’

His finger now moved to the northwest.

The region where they would have to fight the orc troop.

‘There's a short gorge, forest, and river.....’

Just looking at the map, it wasn't a topography that would be of any help.

‘Certainly, I will have to go myself.’

Roan turned his head and looked at Gale.

“Troop commander. Me and the 12th squad will depart right now.”

Right before he said that, Gale nodded.

“Right. I already prepared the horses.”

The special 20 war horses Aaron prepared.

Roan saluted shortly towards Gale and the adjutants and went towards the abode of the 12th squad.

“Sir adjutant.”

The 12th squad were already ready for dispatch.

Nervousness could be seen on their faces.

“There’s no need to be nervous. We are just going to check how the territory is.”

A soft voice.

The squad members nodded unconsciously.

“To shorten the time, we will go riding horses. Who hasn’t rode a horse until now?”

At those words Glenn and Pierce raised their hands.

Even so, maybe it was because the other squad members have faced more battles, but they had experience on riding horses.

Roan entrusted them to Austin and Lander, that had the most experience.

‘From now on, to become a general that will lead a troop, they should at least learn cavalry.’

There were many things he had to teach them from now on.

‘But of course, I also have to learn.’

Roan’s eyes shone.

His objective changed from great general to monarch.

Now it was difficult if he simply relied on spearmanship, strategies and tactics.

‘There isn’t a subject called emperor’s studies for nothing.’

Now that he started, he wanted to become a monarch that was like a real monarch.

Roan took in a deep breath.

‘I can do it one by one. But first.....’

The danger in front of his eyes.

He had to concentrate on driving back Violin’s troop.

“Let’s go.”

“Yes! Understood.”

At Roan’s words, the 12th squad replied shortly and saluted.

After a while, several war horses rode down through the entrance of the troop’s headquarters.

Dudududu.

Horse steps that shook the ground.

Roan was in the front of the war horses riding quickly towards the northwest.

‘I need to come up with a good strategy and tactic. What a problem.’

His hands were grabbing the reins and his legs kicked the horse without stop.

But his head was spinning so fast about finding the adequate strategy and tactic from the many ones he knew, that a sound could be heard coming out of his head.

Swiiiiiiish.

The west wind blew scarily.

\*\*\*\*\*

Roan sat on the saddle and frowned.

Slen region was really an empty plain, just like its name.

Wherever they went, a wide and empty plain extended.

‘Even so, the finest place is this one.’



The place they found after checking the region thoroughly.

The short gorge, small forest and the deep river they have already checked on the map was near Midis village.

“The gorge of Plam mountain is too short, and Riten’s forest is also no good.”

Austin approached and let out a sigh.

Roan slowly nodded.

‘It’s difficult to see a big effect even when we ambush them in the gorge or set the forest on fire.’

Most of all, if they charged through the gorge and forest, they would be able to see the empty plain.

‘Even so, because of Slaion river that flows to the north, the size of the plain is narrower than elsewhere.’

Roan looked at the surrounding scenery with calm eyes.

‘Most of all, there’s a high possibility Violin’s troop will pass through this region.’

The shortest distance from the starting point to Beno castle.

‘I have to think of the most adequate tactic for the current situation. Is it certainly ambush? Or attacking with fire? Or if not, an inundation tactic again?’

Many thoughts filled his head.

Then, he heard Lander’s voice.

“Sir adjutant! The youth from that time came again!”

Lander, that was checking on the vicinity topography, appeared with a youth that had a shabby look.

“Ah!”

Roan let out a low exclamation and got off the horse.

“Mister Chris!”

“Sir adjutant.”

The youth had a shabby appearance.

It was Chris that had left to seize information about Violin’s troop and their trajectory.

Roan and Chris held hands.

“You aren’t hurt?”

“I’m fine.”

Chris smiled brightly and hit his chest.

He did seem exhausted, but an expression that seemed somewhat proud.

“Violin’s troop is somewhere located 4 days from here.”

“It’s quite a far distance.”

Roan frowned.

They were moving while riding lopuses.

Lopuses were as fast as horses.

And they were better when it came to instant changes in movements.

Because of that, he expected them to arrive in two days.

Chris smiled brightly and replied.

“First, their trajectory isn’t really effective as they are moving while avoiding the eyes of the region’s troop and residents. To top that off, they are moving in separate squads as they can’t move the 2 thousand together.”

Violin’s objective was making a surprise attack.

Because of that she didn’t want to face troops from another region and fight for nothing.

‘Stupid bastards. A true surprise attack is based on swift movements.’

The longer their trajectory became, they would be able to evade useless fights, but there was a big chance that the most important thing, being the surprise attack, would fail.

Chris's continued saying.

“And because they moved without stop, the lopuses and also the orcs are quite exhausted. They are in the middle of resting after a long while.”

Roan smiled faintly and nodded.

“Because of that, we could earn some time.”

“This is the records of how their troop is composed and their formation.”

Chris lent out a small piece of paper.

Roan carefully received that and asked in a low voice.

“But how did you chase their tails?”

It wouldn't be easy to chase the tails of the orcs that were riding lopuses and gather information.

At those words Chris shook his head.

“I didn't chase their tails. I waited in front.”

“Yes?”

Roan asked back while opening his eyes big.

Chris smiled faintly and continued saying.

“At first, I checked the places they passed by and after that I registered and organized the information. After I did that, I could vaguely see their moving pattern. They were moving towards Benocastle while avoiding places where troops were stationed, places where people from the kingdom appeared, and also places where monster appeared.”

“Ah....”

It meant that he had guessed their trajectory beforehand with the basic information as the background.

‘He’s really a person I want.’

”

“Ah.....”

It meant that he had guessed the trajectory beforehand with the basic information as the background.

‘He’s really an existence I want.’

He gave meaningful results with limited information.

Roan bit his lower lip and looked at Chris.

“Then what’s the expected moving trajectory?”

At those words Chris smiled brightly and pointed below Roan’s feet.

“You chose a really suitable place. They will soon come over here.”

A voice filled with confidence

Roan didn't ask any more.

'If Chris says so, it will be it.'

A perfect trust.

"Then I will have to decorate this place to become a party."

Roan smiled brightly and looked towards the gorge and forest.

At those words Chris put a surprised expression.

'Does he believe my words?'

There wasn't even a question if it was true or he was certain.

'He believes in me, in my abilities.'

A corner of his heart became numb with proudness.

It was a really nice feeling being recognized by someone.

Chris forced himself not to smile and looked at Roan.

"But this isn't that good of a place to make a party."

At those words Roan smirked and shook his head.

“Even so, it’s the best place on our surroundings.”

He was certainly smiling, but his face was somewhat filled with worry.

‘For now I will have to make them confused with an ambush or attacking with flames. The problem.....’

Was when Violin’s troop got out of the forest or gorge and entered the plains.

The area was narrow because of Sleion river, but a plain was still a plain.

It was the best place for lopuses to run on it.

Compared to that, the military power they had was closer to something standard.

‘The composition itself is good, but compared to the orcs our mobility falls behind.’

If in case Violin didn’t choose to battle but to charge through, the empty Beno castle would fall in the hands of the enemies.

‘But although it won’t happen.....’

If he stepped in and revealed his identity, it would end there.

Because Violin’s objective would still be revenge for her husband.



‘Uhm. What method was there to face enemies with great mobility on an open field.....’

The many strategies Ian and the other excellent strategies made appeared in his head.

But there was no specific strategy that appeared.

Then Lander, that was next to him and listening to the conversation, let out a sigh and grumbled.

“Tch. If the orc bastards came a bit later we would be able to make a wooden fortress or an earth one.”

Even if it wasn’t completed it would still be good.

If they raised a long and strong wall on the other side of the river, even the orcs that were riding lopuses wouldn’t be able to act rashly.

“Stupid. How do we make a fortress in 4 days? If we could set up a formation, that would be fortunate on itself.”

Austin clicked his tongue and rebuked.

Lander nodded with a sulky expression.

“It was just my thought. My thought. Ahem.”

He cleared his throat and looked at the clear field.

“Won’t a cool fortress fall on the skies?”

When he was thinking about that.

Roan’s eyes, that was pondering, started to shine.

His sight passed through Lander and looked at the plain.

A peaceful scenery.

‘It’s that.’

A faint smile appeared on Roan’s mouth.

“Lander.”

“Yes?”

Lander felt intimidated for a second.

Roan grabbed his shoulders and nodded.

“It’s a really good thought.”

“Yes? What is?”

Lander asked back with a confused face.

Roan smiled faintly and replied.

“Let’s raise a fortress over here.”

## Chapter 42 : Revenge Battle (3)

---

“This will really be fine, right?”

At Gale’s question, Kennis put on an awkward smile.

“Won’t it be?”

But it was a voice without confidence.

Gale, Kennis and the troop adjutants stood in one place and looked at the soldiers.

“This goes there! That’s over here!”

“Don’t stick them together!”

“It has to look natural!”

The soldiers moved between Midis village and the plains busily.

Gale forced a smile and looked at the youth giving the orders between the soldiers.

“Right. As the strategy was set up by Roan, there won’t be any problems.”

On the armor the soldier with the childish face was wearing, there was a badge symbolizing a class 5 adjutant. It was Roan.

Then, Roan shook off the dirt in his hands and approached.

“It’s time Violin’s troop came.”

At those words, Gale and the other adjutants nodded.

‘We couldn’t even set up a formation properly.’

They couldn’t even set up a common wooden fence.

Because they didn’t have the time to do so.

‘I wondered just what kind of bullshit it was to raise a fortress in this situation.’

Gale smiled bitterly.

‘Even so, we finished the preparations according to Roan’s strategy.’

If Violin’s troop fell on their trap, he could ascertain victory.

But what if the results weren’t good?

‘There’s a high possibility they will attack Beno castle.’

Gale ground his teeth.

‘We will certainly win.’

When he got a new resolution.

“Each troop and squads will have to move to their appointed places.”

Roan’s calm voice.

Gale nodded and looked to his right.

He could see Jefferson leading BlackBird troop that was part of their corps.

“Then, we will be moving.”

He slightly nodded and moved.

Gale and the rose troop had the commanding rights for this battle.

Jefferson could only move according to their strategies and commands.

“We are moving! Everyone to your appointed places!”

At his orders, BlackBird’s adjutants quickly ordered the soldiers.

“We are also moving!”

Continued by that, Gale let out the order.

Soon the cavalry, archers, swordsmen, etc. started to move

towards Riten forest and Flam mountain gorge.

Rose troop and BlackBird troop.

The combined number of the two troops was 2,500.

They had at least 500 more than Violin.

‘Although it isn’t that we will certainly win because we have more numbers.’

Roan smacked his lips and looked back.

Only the spearmen remained on the field.

Roan raised his spear and yelled.

“It won’t be an easy battle! But.....”

A loud voice.

“We will win! Let’s show the orc bastards the power of humans!”

Right after he finished saying that, the spearmen raised their spears high and stamped it on the ground.

Bang!

A tremble and a heavy sound was heard below their feet.

The faces of the soldiers turned red.

A confidence they could win and that they would certainly win

showed on their faces.

‘We will win. Certainly.’

Even for Roan, this battle held quite some meaning.

He faced through many battles since he returned to the past. But those were all battles he had been through in his past life.

Similar or the same.

Even so, they were battles he certainly had experience in or knew about.

But this battle was one that didn’t even happen in his past life.

Even Roan couldn’t know how the results would turn out.

‘I tied all the effective strategies in one place.’

He mixed all the best strategies according to this situation in one place.

‘I have to win.’

Roan bit his lower lip.

It wasn’t a battle he knew the future of.

The first battle he would face simply with his skills.

If he just attained victory on this battle, he would be able to get an incredible amount of experience and confidence.

Roan’s eyes shone.

‘Come you crazy female orc warrior!

His chest beat roughly.

He clenched his fists tightly.

‘I will send you next to the husband you love so much.’

The west wind blew again.

A killing intent was felt in the warm wind.

\*\*\*\*\*

A blade made by polishing animal bones.

The sharp and gray tip of the blade slashed through the arm.

Slash.

The flesh split and red blood flowed.

“Hrm.”

The owner of the arm licked the wound with the long tongue.

The blood soon stopped and only a wound remained.

A bloody wound.

Next to that, various additional wounds could be seen.



‘Don’t forget this pain. Before getting revenge for my husband, I have to suffer and feel pain.’

Eyes filled with madness.

Gray skin, rough and crumbly black hair, and the four canine teeth that sprouted over her mouth.

She put back the knife on her waist and stood up.

A body so big you wouldn’t be able to say that she was a female.

Adding to that, the arms and legs that sprout out of the armor were covered in muscles.

A look that made you understand how the capable orc soldier Sedek gave her his crotch.

Then, a heavy low voice was heard behind her.

“Troop commander Violin. We finished preparations to move.”

The owner of the voice was Kurk who served Violin nearby.

“You gave plenty of water to the lopuses, right?”

“Yes. We also gave them hog meat.”

At those words Violin nodded.

“There are no human troops in Slen region.”

Murderous intent could be felt in her voice.

“Until now we moved while evading the eyes of the human bastards. But starting from now, there’s no need to do so. We will charge through without stop. We will crush everything that blocks us and set it on fire. We will make an attack on Beno castle before they can finish their preparations!”

A blue fire appeared in her black eyes.

“Carve the eyes of rose troop soldiers and after you cut off their tongues rip off their limbs. And.....”

Violin clenched her two fists.

“I will certainly take care of that bastard called Roan.”

At those words Kurk bent his head.

“Yes. I will pass it down like that!”

A really concentrated look.

‘After Sedek passed away, her temperament became fiercer.’

If you did something wrong, you could have your head cut off in that instant.

After a while, Violin’s troop finished preparations and charged

towards Beno castle.

Kaang! Kaang!

The cries of the lopuses hit the skies and the earth.

But Violin's troop that ran without stop, could only stop at the entrance of Slen region.

“Huh?”

Violin, that was leading the troop in the front, frowned. An unexpected scenery spread before her eyes.

‘Human?’

Starting from Flam mountain's border and the spread Riten forest.

In the entrance of Riten forest, human soldiers were moving hurriedly.

‘There are human soldiers here?’

An unexpected situation.

Violin called Kurk with a gesture of her hands.

“It seems like our movements got leaked.”

“Even so, there are only tens of them.”

Kurk glared at Riten forest with fierce eyes.

“Just in case, take some guys and go over there.”

“Yes. Understood.”

Kurk hurriedly replied and took 500 orc soldiers and went towards Riten forest.

Until then the human soldiers seemed not to have noticed Violin's troop, but they were still moving logs here and there.

Dudududu.

As the lopuses charged roughly, the ground trembled.

“Huh?”

“What's this?”

The soldiers looked at the direction the sound was heard while still lifting the logs.

And then, their eyes got big.

“Huk! Damn! The bastards are already here!”

“Flee!”

“Flee!”

They got scared and started to run towards the forest while throwing the logs.

A look of fearing for their lives.

“Hmph! Cowards!”

Kurk looked at that and gripped the reins strongly.

He was planning to get in there in an instant and crush their heads.

Then, the lopus that Kurk was riding, started to shake its head to the sides roughly and let out a cry.

Kuaang! Kuaang!

Unpleasant movements and cries.

Kurk immediately pulled the reins and stopped the lopus.

The 500 orcs that were following from behind also lowered the speed and stood next to kurk.

Kng! Kng! Kng!

The lopuses all started to smell the ground at the same time as if they had agreed to beforehand.

Kurk frowned and made hand signs.

“Something’s not right. Check the logs the humans threw.”

“Yes.”

Some young orcs replied loudly and ran towards a log.

Crash.

As they crushed the log with a hand axe, a sickening smell was felt.

They frowned and yelled towards Kurk.

“The thing inside the log is oil!”

“There’s not only on the logs, but there is also a lot on the ground and on the grass!”

The orcs pulled out some grass with their hands.

Sticky oil got on their hands.

‘Nasty human bastards. So they wanted to attack with fire.’

Bloodlust appeared in Kurk’s eyes.

Meanwhile, Violin arrived while leading the main troop.

“What happened?”

At the short question, Kurk smiled coldly and replied.

“It seems like information got into the hands of the human

bastards. They were spreading oil in Riten forest.”

“Oil?”

Violin frowned and looked towards Riten forest.

Kurk continued saying.

“But it seems that our speed was faster than what they had thought. They couldn’t finish spreading all the oil and they fled. Hahaha!”

A magnanimous laughter.

He really seemed like he was having fun.

‘Looking that the human bastards are trembling I really feel good.’

In the other hand, Violin that was known to be hot tempered was rather calm.

“If they couldn’t even finish this they wouldn’t have been able to set up a formation.”

Kurk slowly nodded.

Violin opened her eyes sharply and said.

“We are quickly moving towards Beno castle before the human bastards finish their preparations.”

“Yes! Understood.”

Kurk replied in a loud voice and shook his hand towards the orcs.

The orcs that were stopped momentarily started to move towards Riten forest.

Then, Violin’s voice was heard.

“Wait!”

At that instant, the orcs all stopped moving.

Violin glared at Riten forest that was silent and didn’t seem like it had any humans in it.

‘We have never encountered a human army until now. But.....’

Soldiers appeared on Slen region that originally didn’t have a human troop.

‘What if they escaping to the forest was a well made act?’

There may be some traps on Riten forest.

‘But it’s true that they still haven’t finished their preparations.’

Violin touched her canine tooth and shook her head.

There was no need to lower their speed while investigating the forest.



She had another choice.

“Let’s go to Flam mountain gorge instead of Riten forest.”

“Yes? The human bastards haven’t even finished spreading oil.”

Kurk shook his head as if he was complaining.

But Violin wasn’t planning on changing her thoughts.

“You don’t know about that. That could have been a trap by itself. Even so, there’s no need to take chances for nothing. We are going to Flam mountain gorge.”

“A gorge is a really good place for enemies to hide in ambush.”

Kurk said with a worried face.

But this time also Violin shook her head.

“As the length of the gorge is short, even if they are lying in ambush it isn’t that big of a problem. We will pass through it quickly.”

She raised her large blade to the sky.

“Let’s go! Our objective is Beno castle!”

“Waaaaaaa!”

The orcs all yelled in one voice and pulled the reins.

The heads of the lopuses that was looking at Riten forest turned

to Flam mountain gorge.

Dudududu.

A sound shaking the ground.

Violin's troop only left a dust cloud and disappeared in an instant.

Swish.

Then, the grass of Riten forest shook and the soldiers that threw away the wooden logs appeared from it.

The guys that were pale and screaming even a while ago.

But now they were putting a faint smile.

“Until now, is everything going according to our plans?”

At the words of one soldier, another one nodded.

“Yes, until now everything is going according to what adjutant Roan said.”

At those words the soldiers all had amazed expressions.

‘He's really an incredible person.’

‘To lead the more than 2000 orc troop with only tens of people to where he wants.’

‘He’s not someone that would end simply as a spearman.’

A surprise look could be seen on them.

Then, one soldier clapped his hands.

Clap!

“Now! There’s no time to be idling like this. Let’s pass to the next thing quickly!”

“Right! Let’s hurry.”

“Hurry up!”

The soldiers nodded and started to move busily.

Roan’s plan still didn’t end.

No, precisely speaking now was only the start.

# Chapter 43 : Revenge Battle (4)

---

‘They really are coming.’

Jefferson had a surprised look.

His sight was directed to below the gorge.

Dudududu.

Violin’s troop appeared along with a dust cloud.

‘I thought that it was impossible.’

When I first heard of it I thought that it was absurd.

But he couldn’t ignore him.

‘It’s the strategy made by that Roan, that thought of the Prely river inundation tactic.’

He hid himself in Flam mountain gorge while having his doubts.

‘But for them to really come over here.’

When normal people passed through this region, they didn’t use a bulky ground road, but a path in the forest.

Because the forest was wider and more comfortable.

‘If we had the time to prepare and attack with fire, it would have been better to lure them to the forest....’

They lacked time to spread enough oil.

On top of that it was also a problem that the wind blew from the west.

‘If we made a mistake, we could be the ones bathed in fire.’

Violin’s troop had slightly changed their direction.

The reason is that they chose the east to charge through Beno castle in the shortest time possible rather than going to southeast.

And making preparations for this, Rose troop and BlackBird troop left back Sleion river that was in the north, Riten forest and Flam mountain that was west and chose to wait on the plains that were in the east.

Because of that, there was a high possibility for them to get covered in flames because of the wind that blew in the opposite direction.

In the end Roan chose ambushing in the gorge rather than attacking with fire.

But for that, he had to lead Violin’s troop to the gorge instead of the forest.

‘For him to succeed doing it with only tens of soldiers.’

He completely tricked them with only a few oil barrels and thirty

soldiers.

‘He’s really an amazing guy.’

He thought that he could now understand a bit of a reason as to why these many people showed that big of an interest.

Dudududu.

The lopuses charged through roughly.

The soldiers, that were hiding on the sides of the mountain with the gorge in between, felt that their bodies were trembling a little.

Then, Jefferson stood up and raised his hand high.

“Attack!”

The order fell.

The flagman shook the flag roughly to the sides.

“Waaaaaa!”

“Kill!”

“Roll the rocks!”

“Fire arrows!”

The archers fired arrows and the swordsmen rolled rocks.

Sweeeeee! Rooooooooooll!

A sharp sound and the sound of rocks rolling was heard.

“Damn!”

Violin, that was charging roughly at the front, looked at the falling arrows and rocks and cursed.

‘They were preparing to attack with fire in the forest and they prepared for an ambush here?’

Then it meant that they had been quite prepared for it.

‘At the slightest slip it gets more difficult.’

They may need to make a big battle in Slen region while not being able to get to Beno castle.

‘Damn!’

Curses followed.

‘Just what troop are you! What are your identities!’

Her eyes got red.

Her hot temperament slowly showed itself.

“Kukh!”

“Kek!”

Then, the cries of the orcs were heard.

‘Kugh. It’s not the time to be here!’

Fortunately, her boiling temperament calmed down.

“Charge! Charge while only looking at the front!”

Violin yelled towards the orc warriors with all her strength.

The distance of Flam mountain gorge was short.

If they charged in even a bit faster they would be able to get out of it.

Kung! Puk!

“Krr!”

“Kugh!”

The orcs that fell behind the troop got hit by the rocks and the arrows and fell.

But certainly, even if the gorge was short, it was too short.



Among the 2000 orcs, only 200 lost their lives in the ambush.  
The others got into the plains safely.

“Whew.”

Jefferson looked at the orcs getting out of the gorge and let out a long sigh.

At first glance, it seemed like he hadn't fulfilled his role well.  
But on his face, a satisfying smile could be seen.

“He really got it right.”

When he first heard of this strategy, Roan had clearly said.

<With the ambush in Flam mountain gorge we won't be able to give them that big of a blow.>

Not that good of words in the position of the troop commander and the soldiers.

‘Soldiers want to accumulate merits.’

Then Roan smiled brightly and said.

<There's a task more important than the ambush.>

Then, the words that followed made him hit his knee.

‘Then, shall we quickly go down?’

Jefferson made a hand sign towards the flag man and sent down the order.

“Descend! We are going down the mountain path!”

Strength could be felt in his voice.

“We will block their road to escape!”

The battle hadn’t even started, but to talk about escaping.  
A weird order was sent.

“Waaaaaaaaa!”

“Quickly, move quickly!”

But no one had their doubts.

The soldiers got down into the gorge quickly and started to sever the mountain path.

\*\*\*\*\*

Dududududu.

Violin's troop rode quickly towards the entrance of the gorge.  
In that moment, a wide plain was seen in front of their eyes.

“Ah.....”

Violin pulled the reins along a low exclamation.

Her expression stiffened..

Her eyes that were filled with bloodlust lost their trajectory.

‘Just what is.....’

She couldn't believe the scenery in front of her eyes.

Violin and all the other orcs stopped.

Everyone had perplexed looks.

“Thi, this looks just like a fortress.”

Kurk approached and frowned.

Violin nodded without saying anything and glared at the front.

There were wagons, that had night soil buckets, lined up on the plains.

The wagons and the buckets were ordinary ones you could see anywhere.

But looking at the hundreds of wagons lined up as if it was surrounding the entrance, the intimidation it gave was incredible.

On top of that, the wagons were linked with ropes so you couldn't try to force your way.

‘In this situation, we won't be able to fully use our movement.’

They needed space for the lopuses to run however they wanted.

‘In the end it means that we have to charge through one place.....’

Charging through the north was meaningless as they would face Sleion river later.

In the end they had to choose between the east and the south.

Violin's eyes moved quickly.

‘To the south? Or to the east?’

The pondering deepened.

Then, a heavy sound hit their ears.

Boom.

At the same time, the many wagons started to move their direction along with the sound of wood tangling.

Drrrrrr. Click! Drrrrrr. Click!

The wagons started to line up towards one direction.

Boom.

Once more time, they felt a heavy shock.

This time, the wagons started to slowly move.

Drrrrrrrrrrr.

Sound of wheels spinning.

“Huh?”

“What?”

“The, the castle is moving.”

The orcs looked at the wagons closing on them with a perplexed expression.

‘They weren’t just standing still?’

Violin was also hugely surprised.

Meanwhile, the wagons that were at quite some distance closed the distance.

Bang!

The wagons took positions along with a heavy sound.

Pat!

At the same time, the long spears that were inside the buckets and below the wagons showed themselves.

The sharp tips of the spears pointed towards the orcs.

A moving wagon fortress and the spears that were like spikes.

“Troo, troop commander Violin.”

Kurk gulped down his dry saliva and called out to Violin.

But she didn't reply.

She just glared at the wagon fortress with fierce eyes.

Then, an orc that was at the rear yelled.

“The gorge is blocked! Humans are approaching from the gorge!”

At that voice, some orcs assented.

But Violin didn't show any reactions.

‘They should be the ones that ambushed us.’

She took in a deep breath.

‘Damn. To think about making a fortress with wagons and

buckets.'

She wanted to see the bastard that thought of this at least once.

'Although the situation is difficult.....'

But in this situation they couldn't keep idling.

If they delayed any longer they would suffer a pincer attack.

'We will charge through.'

Although they would take some losses, the priority was to charge through and go to Beno castle.

Then, one man showed himself over a wagon.

He had a childish face but he was a youth that had a rank 5 adjutant badge on his chest.

It was Roan.

Violin frowned.

"So you are the commander?"

Roan just smiled faintly instead of replying.

'It should have been perplexing.'

They used wagons and buckets to limit their movements, no,

made a fortress.

There was no strategy like this until now.

‘A strategy that would be used by a rebel of Estia empire 5 years from now on.’

But of course it wasn’t exactly the same.

The rebel army used broken carriages instead of wagons and buckets.

On top of that there was a big difference in the strategy Roan used.

And that was that Roan’s fortress could move.

‘Lander’s words became the decisive help.’

That it would be good if a fortress fell from the skies.

Then, the various wagons and buckets that were on the plains came into his view.

‘This place is narrow because of Sleion river. On top of that, the yielding of the crops is really good so there are plenty of wagons and buckets provided per village. A good condition to make a fortress with wagons as a blockade.

A strategy that fit perfectly with the surrounding topography.

‘Until now, everything happened as planned. Then, let’s also work hard together. Violin.’



Roan smiled faintly and pointed at Violin with his spear.

“I’m the class 5 adjutant from Rose troop that belongs to the 7th corps of Rinse kingdom.”

Violin frowned.

‘Roan?! If it’s Roan!’

Roan read Violin’s thoughts.

“Right. I’m the one that slew Sedek.”

Boom.

Violin’s face instantly stiffened.

At the same time, her gray skin started to turn red.

Rage.

Her two eyes became filled with amazing madness.

Srung.

She pulled out her wide blade.

“I finally meet you.”

A voice that was filled with bloodlust.

“I won’t have to go to Beno castle.”

Even her eyes turned red.

“I will skin you and chop you into thin slices. I will make you beg me to kill you.”

Violin ground her teeth.

A look that she would attack if he replied.

Even so, Roan’s expression was relaxed.

“You should have really loved your husband.”

His voice was composed.

“If you want it, I will send you next to your husband.”

Roan tilted his finger.

“Come.”

A short provocation.

“I, I will kill you!”

Violin couldn't hold it anymore and exploded in rage.  
She kicked the lopus and ran towards Roan.

“Uh? Huh! E, everybody follow troop commander's back!”

Kurk was surprised but pulled the reins after he sent the order.

“Troop commander! Troop commander Violin! You can't get agitated!”

He followed Violin's back closely and yelled.

The other orcs also kicked the lopuses and moved quickly.

Roan kept standing on top of a wagon with a composed expression.

The orcs that were close to 2000 came charging with a ferocious intent and their formation wasn't messed up at all.

“I will chew you down!”

Violin that came charging with a ferocious intent.

“Guard the Troop commander!”

“Charge! Charge!”

The orcs that followed her back.

The orcs lowered their bodies and grabbed the reins to catch up with Violin.

Then, Violin who was in front, stopped in front of the wagon fortress.

“Bastard!”

Violin shouted towards Roan that was as close as her reach.

The lopus seemed to know how its owner was feeling, and it charged through with strength.

At that moment!

Psk.

Its front legs got buried on the ground.

Kaang!

A cry as if it was perplexed.

Kung!

The lopus hit its head on the ground and fell forward.

Udkkk.

It was the sound of its neck breaking.

It was an instant death.

Violin, who was riding it, also bounced to the front.

‘Kgh!’

She twisted her body and tried to balance herself.

Boom!

Violin rolled on the ground with a heavy sound.

Continued by that, the orcs that followed her back also fell on the same trap.

Boom. Booboom!

“Kuk!”

“Huk!”

Only after hundreds of orcs fell, Violin stopped the charge.

“Uhhhhhhhh.”

Violin stood up with a cry that seemed to be that of an animal.

She grabbed the blade that was rolling on the ground and started

to move again.

Her objective was Roan.

Violin had already lost her nature because of the rage.

“Uaaaaaa!”

She let out a yell.

Tat!

She charged to the front and went towards the wagon.

“Where do you!”

“Get the head of the orc leader!”

The soldiers stabbed with their spear with all their strength.

Spat!

The spear passed next to her.

“Don’t interrupt!”

Violin swung her blade while having the spear in her armpit.

Slash!

The strong spear got sliced off in an instant.

“Huuk!”

“Hup!”

The spearmen gulped in air and became afraid.

However Violin wasn't interested in them at all.

She continued charging towards Roan.

“I will face you!”

Then, Pierce appeared while saying it with strength.

Spat!

The spear that moves strangely and cuts the air quickly.

Pierce was different from normal spearmen even with the movements.

Stab.

The spear danced and slashed Violin's body in a big way.

The corner of Pierce's mouth slowly raised up.

‘How is it? This is sir adjutant Rian’s spearma.....’

His face instantly turned stiff.

“Kuuuuuuu.”

Violin gave away her body and snatched Pierce’s spear.

“Kuk!”

Pierce pulled the spear with all of his strength but it didn’t even flinch.

‘Impossible! How is she this.....’

His talent was certainly outstanding, but he still lacked experience.

As another situation happened contrary to what he was expecting, he lost his calm.

“I’m sure I told you not to interfere.”

Violin smiled ill naturedly and raised her blade.

“Huh!”



Pierce was perplexed and his body froze.

Slash!

At the same time, the wide blade cut through the air.

‘Ugh!’

Pierce ground his teeth as he thought that he would die like this.

Then!

A strong spear appeared and hit the side of the wide blade.

Clang!

A clear sound of metal.

“Kuk!”

Violin’s arm and blade bounced off.

Meanwhile Pierce was blinking with a surprised look.

The owner of the spear showed himself.

“Pierce. You rest in the back.”

It was Roan.

He had a really faint smile on his face.

“This crazy orc is my guest.”

## Chapter 44 : Revenge Battle (5)

---

He knew about Violin's hot temperament really well.

‘If it was a commander with a calm temperament, this kind of strategy wouldn't have worked.’

The average commanders would have sent a scout team when they discovered the soldiers spreading oil on Riten forest.

‘But Violin wouldn't have had the leisure to do so when she had to quickly charge through to Beno castle.’

Because of that, she perfectly fell into the trap Roan had prepared.

Furthermore the biggest problem was..

‘This is not the end.’

Roan smiled faintly and looked at Violin.

“Die!”

She suddenly swung her blade.

A quick and strong blow that was hard to follow with the eyes.

However Roan had Kalian's tear.

That fast and strong blow was so slow in his eyes it made him yawn.

Also it was to the point that he could count the amount of dust on the blade.

‘If it only didn’t place strain on my eyes I would be invincible.’

If you started to forcefully see a movement slowly, it placed an incredible amount of strain on your eyes.

‘Above that, it’s not that it’s leisurely.’

Just because he could see everything slower didn’t mean that his movements were also free.

Taat!

He charged to the front to dodge the blade.

However his body reacted so slowly it clogged his breath.

‘Damn. My physical abilities can’t follow my sight at all.’

In his thoughts, he wanted to lightly dodge the blade that was so slow it made him yawn and after he closed in on her he would punch her five times and then slice her head off.

But his hands and feet couldn’t follow his will.

Spat!

The tip of the blade closely passed by his chest.

“Hmph!”

Roan snorted and swung his spear.

The spear drew a line and went towards Violin’s top of the head.

Cheng!

Violin pulled the blade without much difficulty and after she blocked it she closed in on Roan.

As she was also an experienced warrior, she knew how she had to face a spearman.

But unfortunately, Roan was much more of an experienced soldier than Violin.

Roan spun the spear to block at the stabbing blade and then twisted his wrist.

Pabat!

The long spear spun like a windmill between Roan and Violin.

Checheng!

The blade that was trapped on the spear flew off.

Roan turned his shoulders and stood slanted.

The spear that was spinning like a windmill and drawing a beautiful arc went in to cut off Violin's neck.

“Kugh!”

Violin ground her teeth and dodged the spear by lowering her head.

‘I have to counter.....’

She wanted to at least stab him in the chest.

But she couldn't even try it.

On the place where the blade of the spear passed by, the end of the spear took place.

“Damn!”

Violin cursed and lowered her head once again.

Spat!

The end of the spear that passed by closely.

Violin thought that this was the opportunity.

Because Roan cut off the air twice.

Even at first glance, Roan's upper body was unguarded.

Swung!

The blade cut through the air and was accompanied by a heavy sound.

Just like they say, right before his head got smashed.

The spear that passed next to her soon returned and blocked the blade.

Tung!

A heavy shock.

“Ikk!”

Violin put more strength while grinding her teeth.

Kigigi.

The blade passed through the spear along a displeasing sound.

‘Just how is she this strong.....’

In this situation, even Roan couldn’t help but get perplexed.

Violin showed a more powerful strength than what he had thought about.

‘If it wasn’t for the spear Corps Commander Aaron gave me, it would have split in two.’

It was a strength that amazing.

Even so, it wasn’t the time to feel leisure.

Because even right now Violin was eating up the spear with her blade.

Roan pulled his right leg back and twisted his body and the spear lightly.

Kigigigi.

The blade that was gearing with the spear slipped off and fell to the ground.

“Kugh.”

Violin’s body fell to the front as she lost balance.

Roan turned around while having his body tilted and hit the back of Violin’s head with his spear.

Puk!

“Ugh!”

Violin fell to the ground along with a heavy shock.

Roan pointed his spear to her back and tried to stab her.



‘Where do you dare!’

Violin quickly rolled on the floor and went in to cut off Roan’s talon.

Roan didn’t get perplexed and jumped while stabbing the spear on the ground.

At the same time he was falling down, he kicked Violin’s side.

“Hmph!”

As it was an attack Violin also expected, she lightly rolled her body and dodged.

She stood up from the place and swung the blade fiercely.

Roan didn’t fall back either and went in to stab his spear.

Cheng! Checheng! Cheng!

The spear and the blade clashed and metal clashing was heard.

Violin certainly overwhelmed Roan in strength and stamina.

However Roan was so quick to the point it was difficult to believe and showed a good sense.

On top of that, his skills in handling the spear was also impressive.

Cheng! Checheng! Cheng!

The clash of the two people continued without knowing the end.

Meanwhile, around the wagon fortress, quite an ordinary battle was happening.

As the lopuses and orcs fell in the trap and got stuck on the ground, the soldiers that were hiding behind the wagons showed themselves while holding their spears.

“Kill them!”

“Kill them before they get up!”

Tens of spears moved while cutting through the air.

“Kugh.”

“Damn. Just what is.....”

The orcs hurriedly brought their hands to their waists.

But the movements of the soldiers was faster than theirs.

Slash. Stab.

The sharp blade pierced the orcs' bodies.

“Kugh.”

“Kek!”

“Da, dam.....”

Their last words they couldn't even finish.

Kurk, that was checking on the situation, yelled with all his strength.

“Attack! Everybody attack! Rescue your allies!”

At that order, some orcs that had stopped in front of the trap, grabbed the reins of the lopuses.

Koong! Koong!

The lopuses jumped over the traps along a cry and started to run towards the soldiers.

The orcs swung their blades with a bloody intent and yelled.

“Human bastards! Receive the blade of an orc warrior!”

“Nasty bastards! I will show you what a soldier is!”

An atmosphere that a rough collision would happen anytime.

Then, the soldiers that were killing off the orcs on the ground turned back and started to pass the fortresses.

A perfect retreat that happened on an instant.

The soldiers hid their bodies again behind the wagons and stuck out their spears.

The orcs that were charging through became just like a dog chasing a chicken that ended up looking at a roof.

“Thi, thi, these bastards.....”

Kurk’s face became red.

He also had a hot tempered side in him, probably because he also served that kind of troop commander.

“Attack! Attack! Kill the human bastards! Push over the buckets and break the wagons!”

An order sent down stubbornly.

Violin was driven by insanity and was clashing with Roan.

The orcs could only follow Kurk’s order.

“Attack!”

“Kill them!”

An ignorant charge towards the fortresses begun.

When they got near the wagons.

“Bring them down!”

The yells of the adjutants and squad commanders shook the battlefield.

The soldiers that were hiding themselves got up in an instant and pushed the buckets.

The buckets shook for a moment and started to fall.

Boom! Boom!

A heavy sound.

The bucket fell towards the orcs that were running towards the wagon fortress.

“Kuk!”

“Kugh!”

The orcs couldn't dodge and got squashed by the buckets.

“Dodge it!”

“Stop! Stop!”

But the majority of the orcs succeeded in grabbing the reins and stopping the lopuses.

‘What is it? Why are they breaking the fortress with their own hands?’

‘What are you planning now?’

The orcs looked at the buckets with uneasiness.

Then a loud yell was heard.

“Roll it!”

“Roll!”

At the same time, a long and huge cylinder shaped bucket started to roll with a heavy sound.

“Huh?!”

“Uh, uh!”

The orcs pulled the reins with a surprised expression.

The lopuses started to slowly walk back.

Crush.

As the bucket was one huge cylinder, it passed the digged ground and traps without trouble.

Perhaps, if they moved it along the wagon, the wheels would have fallen in the traps.

The speed the bucket’s roll started to increase.

The soldiers started to push the bucket with more strength and in unison.

“Da, damn! Block it! We also have to stick together and stop it!”

Kurk swung his blade and yelled.

If they just let it be, they would really end up inside their trap.

‘Damn!’

‘Can’t do anything about it!’

The orcs also knew very well about this truth.

They couldn't do anything about it, and got down the loupes and started to stick on a side of the bucket.

At that moment!

Spat! Pabat!

Behind the buckets, tens of long spears surged up.

That was different from a normal spear.

The length of it was almost twice of it.

'Bastards, this is a real long spear!'

'It's the provisional long spear adjutant Roan thought of!'

These were all pieces of work made by Roan that he made one by one.

The soldiers stabbed the long spear between the spaces of the buckets.

As the length of the bucket was quite big, if it was an ordinary spear it wouldn't have reached the orcs.

However, with the spear Roan made, it was enough to attack the orcs that closed up on the bucket.

Stab. Slash.

The sharp blade of the spear pierced the bodies of the orcs.

“Kuk!”

“Kugh.”

The orcs, that were trying their hardest to stop the rolling buckets, fell at the spears that appeared out of nowhere.

Because of that, the morale of the soldiers raised even more.

“Kill them!”

“Don’t leave even one of them!”

The long spears cut the air along a loud yell.

At the same time, the buckets rolled without stop and closed in on the space of the orcs.

Stab. Crush.

“Grr.”

“Kuk!”

The orcs were stabbed by the spear or got crushed on the buckets and started to fall back little by little.

‘Damn. This became difficult.’

Only now did Kurk get ahold of himself.



The rage that made his head messy, calmed down in an instant.

‘Like this we will get annihilated! Annihilated!’

It was a situation where they may really go to hell to meet with Sedek.

The number of the orcs that were close to 2000 lowered to 1000 at the attack of the fortress and the buckets.

‘For now, we have to survive. Only if we do would we be able to take revenge or do something!’

Kurk quickly checked his surroundings.

‘The east, south and north are blocked by that damned wagon fortress and buckets.’

In addition, even if they charged through the east or south, they would get even deeper to enemy territory.

In the end, what was left was Flam mountain gorge and Riten forest.

But even this wasn’t an easy situation.

‘The human bastards are blocking the gorge and the entrance for Riten forest.....’

Riten forest was placed slightly more north than Flam mountain gorge.

Because of that, the wagon fortress that was blocking the entrance was at the back of it.

Kurk's sight goes to the north.

'If we flee towards the gorge where humans set up defenses, that's no different to suicide. In the end what's left is going to Riten forest.'

There was the fortress and the buckets, but the feeling the fortress of the east was different.

A somewhat sloppy feeling.

Even the speed that the buckets come rolling seemed slower.

'We will charge through the fortress in the north and we retreat through Riten forest.'

In an instant a plan was made.

Kurk looked at Violin.

She was still battling Roan.

It didn't look like she was being pushed back even while dodging the buckets.

'If I tell her to retreat, she will make a scandal.'

But he wasn't in a leisure situation where he could receive her tantrum.

‘Can’t do anything about it. Even if I get punished later on, surviving comes first.’

Kurk got on the lopus and raised his right hand.

“Advance party to the front!”

At those words, the biggest and boldest ones got to the front.

Kurk revealed his plans in detail.

“Kuak!”

“Kuk!”

“Grr!”

Meanwhile, the orcs fell one by one as they couldn’t hold back the charging of the buckets.

Kurk’s face became urgent.

“You all understood?”

“Yes! Understood.”

The advance party all nodded and ground their teeth.

They rode their lopuses and started to ride in a high speed.

Their objective was Roan and Violin.

“Huh?! Sir adjutant is in danger!”

“The orc bastards are coming!”

The soldiers that were pushing the bucket yelled with an urgent expression.

Austin, Pierce and the 12th squad members raised their spears and ran towards Roan.

However they couldn't beat the lopuses that had better mobility.

They reached in front of Violin and Roan in an instant.

Half of the orcs attacked Roan and the other half assaulted Violin.

“Tch!”

Roan, that was pressing Violin fiercely, bit his lower lip at the sudden attack.

In the other side, Violin yelled towards the orcs that were grabbing Violin's arms and legs.

“Let go! Let me go!”

But the orcs didn't react at the orders.

They tied down Violin with a rope they had prepared.

Kurk, who arrived late, carried her on his lopus.

“Pardon my negligence.”

“Kurk! Let this go! Let me go! I have to kill that bastard!”

Her eyes and voice were filled with madness.

Violin struggled to break free of Kurk.

Kurk didn't mind her and pulled the reins and went towards the north.

"Troop commander. Like this we will get annihilated. Annihilated. Don't we have to be alive to at least be able to take revenge?"

"Shut up! Untie this, this instant!"

Violin didn't even want to listen to Kurk.

But Kurk was also that way.

He didn't react at Violin's words at all.

Rather, he yelled towards the orcs in a loud voice.

"Retreat! Retreat! Advance troop, open a path!"

Right before he sent down the order, the orcs that were tying down Roan fell back as fast as a current of water.

They crossed the plains and rode towards the north that was blocked by the wagon fortress.

A well ordered look.

Kurk continued to yell.

"Follow the advance troop! Follow them!"

"Waaa! Pierce through!"

"Open a path to flee!"

The orcs yelled and kicked the lopuses.

They also realized that this was the last opportunity for them to survive.

Bang!

The wagon fortress on the north clashed hardly against the orcs.

At first, the fortress seemed to defend well and protect the place.

But as the thousand or more orcs kept pushing in, it started to get pushed back little by little.

“Damn! Fall back!”

“Regroup with your allies on the sides!”

“Fall back!”

In the end, a retreating order came out of the mouths of the soldiers.

And Kurk didn't miss that chance.

He led the advance party and the orc warriors and looked for the blind parts of the fortress.

In the end.

Bang!

The wagon fortress fell.

The line that got pierced through.

Kurk and the warriors kicked the lopuses with expressions filled with cheer.

They wanted to get out of this hell like plain as fast as possible.

Dudududu.

Violin's troop entered Riten forest along the steps shaking the ground.

Silence fell on the plains in an instant.

To the point you wouldn't be able to believe that a fierce battle happened here.

“Whew!”

The soldiers let out a long breath.

A somewhat relieved expression.

It wasn't an expression someone that could annihilate their enemy should have.

Then, Roan got on a wagon and looked at the orcs entering Riten forest.

A faint smile appeared on his face.

“Flee.....I'm sorry, it's too late.”

A firm voice.

“You already fell in my trap.”

The real trap wasn't on the gorge nor on the plains, it was in the forest.

Roan raised his spear highly and yelled.

“Block Riten forest with the wagons and buckets!”

The soldiers all looked at Roan.

They knew.

That everything that happened until now was happening according to Roan's plans and guesses.

Respect and fear appeared in their eyes.

Roan pretended not to notice that and continued saying.

“It's becoming time to finish this battle!”



# Chapter 45 : Revenge Battle (6)

---

“Kurk! Untie me! Right now!”

Violin continued to yell while struggling.

Kurk didn't react at all as if he had become deaf.

‘I'm sorry.’

He let out a sigh and looked backwards.

‘They really are chasing us.’

The spearmen were chasing them while yelling.

‘Even so it's impossible to catch up to us who are riding lopuses.’

Different than the horses, the lopuses didn't lose that much mobility in the forest.

‘Now that I look, I can't see the enemy's cavalry?’

It was a weird thing.

‘Are they maybe ambushing us in the forest?’

But in the end he shook his head.

If it was a normal commander, he wouldn't do such things as hiding the cavalry to launch an ambush.

‘The important thing right now isn't that.’

Kurk threw away the complicated thoughts in his head.

‘Sons of bitches. I will certainly pay you back for today.’

He ground his teeth and kicked the lopus.

He could see the exit of Riten forest from far away.

The white light between the trees seemed like the door to heaven.

A faint smile appeared on his face.

‘If we just get out the.....’

Then, Kurk's face stiffened.

Because an amazing path of fire surged from the entrance of the forest.

‘Flames?!’

Kurk looked at his surroundings with a really nervous expression.

Fortunately, there were no more places that were set on fire.

‘Damn. So they are blocking our escape route?’

They lacked oil to set the entire forest on fire.

But even so, it wasn’t that the fire stayed still.

It was obvious that the fire would spread to the insides of the forest through the west wind.

“Sir adjutant Kurk!”

All the orcs stopped and looked at Kurk.

Kurk’s eyes rolled quickly.

‘We charge through like this? No. Charging through the path of fire is impossible.’

The flames were burning fiercely with the help of the wind.

‘The south is blocked with the gorge, and the humans are attacking us from the east. The place that’s left is.....’

His sight goes to the north.

Sleion river.

‘Although the riverside is a bit narrow.....’

Even so, it wasn't so narrow for them to not be able to move.

'We follow the riverside and retreat to the west.'

It was a much safer route than charging through the flames.

Kurk pointed to the north.

"We will follow Sleion river and retreat to the west!"

"Yes! Understood!"

The orcs replied in one voice and pulled the reins.

The lopuses turned to head towards the north and started to run.

Kurk looked at the red flames and clicked his tongue.

'We completely fell. We completely fell by the hands of the human bastards.'

He ground his teeth.

'Everything had would have been a plan and strategy since we discovered the humans in the entrance of Riten forest.'

They just reacted and moved towards the places the humans wanted them to go into their trap.

'Damn.'

Anger surged up.

‘I will certainly pay you back for what happened today.’

Kurk ground his teeth and glared his front.

It was difficult to see clearly because of the white smoke.

‘Anyways, it doesn’t seem like they are setting the forest on fire any more.’

It seemed like the humans couldn’t plan up to this point.

Then, the orcs that were in the front got out of the forest and arrived at the narrow riverside.

Flash!

The smoke disappeared and a beautiful scene was spread outspread.

The golden side and the flashing blue river.

The green plains that extends beyond Sleion river.

Everything was beautiful.

Except for one thing.

‘Thi, this.....’

Expressions as if they couldn’t believe this at all.

“How can this be!”

Kurk couldn't hold it anymore and yelled.

He looked at the front and the rear alternating with a stiffened face.

The human cavalry were taking place on the west and the east with Violin's troop at the center.

‘Damn! Just how far are you seeing things through!’

Kurk was curious as to what the man that set up this perfect trap looked like.

He didn't know that Roan was responsible for this strategy.

Meanwhile Gale, who was leading the cavalry, glared at the orcs and put on an ill smile.

‘Everything is like Roan's plans.’

In the first place, Roan thought up a strategy to massacre the orcs that got out of the forest by using flames with the wagon fortress.

But there were two big problems in the flame strategy.

The first one was that they really lacked oil.

The second was that the west wind continued to blow without stop.

In the end, Roan had to pluck and fix the strategy to make it

perfect.

‘I send Violin’s troop to the gorge by showing them soldiers spreading oil on purpose. After that, we push them to Riten forest with wagon fortresses.’

Because of that, Violin’s troop get to enter Riten forest with a west direction and face the opposite blowing wind.

‘Even if I don’t have that much oil, the fire can cover the orcs with the help of the wind.’

Actually, the orc troop didn’t have any choice. A right for choices.

The place that they could run off to escape the fire was only to the north, where the Sleion river was located.

When the orc troop gets tired by the continuous attacks, they attack them with the cavalry they hid until now. they would attack them with the cavalry they’ve hidden until now.

This was Roan’s ultimate strategy.

And for this, Roan sent the order to Gale and the cavalry to wait on Sleion’s riverside.

‘He certainly said that they would flee towards here.’

And those words became true.

Gale looked at the orcs with fixed eyes.

‘It’s became time to end the battle.’

He raised his right hand highly.

“Attack!”

A loud yell.

“Waaaaaaaaa!”

“Kill them!”

“Don’t let even one of them escape!”

The cavalrymen started to charge forward with a fierce intent along with the yell that shook the earth.

“Kuk! Damn it!”

Kurk ground his teeth.

He had nowhere else to escape to.

The fire was being eaten by the flames, and in front of their eyes the Sleion river was flowing calmly.

On top of that, the lopuses were also tired.

“Damn!”

He cursed out and cut off the rope that tied up Violin.



“Go.”

“What?”

Violin frowned at Kurk’s words.

Kurk gave her his lopus and yelled.

“We are going to die here. If it’s already been decided.....”

His eyes got filled with madness.

“Take revenge for Sir Sedek.”

At those words Violin bit her lower lip with strength.

Kurk yelled once more.

“Go! We will block them here!”

Violin looked at Kurk’s two eyes fixedly.

And then, she hardly gripped the reins and nodded.

“Let’s meet in hell.”

At those words Kurk burst out in laughter.

“I will be waiting for you first.”

A farewell.

Violin quickly kicked the lopus.

Her eyes were already tainted with madness.

Now, there was no need to hold onto the rope of sanity.

Kuong!

The lopus let out a cry and started to run towards the forest.

“Huh?!”

“Huh!”

Gale and the cavalrymen looked at her with surprised looks.

“Catch her!”

“Get her!”

At Gale’s and the adjutants orders, the soldiers grabbed the reins.

Then, Kurk and the other orcs blocked their front.

“We can’t send you!”

“Where do you want to go!”

They were already determined to die.

In the end, the cavalry ended up losing Violin.

“Kuak!”

“Kek!”

The yells of the orcs that were on the side were heard continuously.

Kurk looked at the spears flying towards him and then closed his eyes.

‘A warrior thinks that dying in the battlefield is glorious.’

Stab.

“Kuk.”

A sharp spear stabbed in his chest.

Gale looked at Riten forest and let out a sigh.

‘Did we miss the most important troop commander?’

Looking at the situation, it seemed like she went to find Roan.

‘In the end, it seems like Roan has to end this battle.’

This battle was really a battle based on Roan.

Gale's sight followed Violin's back who couldn't even be seen.

‘Nothing has to happen.’

Riten forest was filled with white smoke because of the fire.

A situation where it was difficult to look in front.

‘I don't know why but it feels comfortable.’

He tasted bitterness in his mouth.

An uneasy feeling flowed back his spine.

\*\*\*\*\*

‘This much is enough.’

Roan looked at the forest that was half gulped down by the flames in an instant and let out a long sigh.

The orcs fled to the riverside just like he had thought.

‘They would get massacred in the ambush.’

If they meet with the cavalry Gale was leading, everything would get solved.

From Flam mountain gorge, to the wagon fortress and buckets, and finally the flame attack in Riten forest and the ambushing cavalry.

The orcs went through many things in a short while.

‘They will be out of their mind.’

Roan’s corner of his mouth slightly raised. The corner of Roan’s mouth slightly rasied.

He clapped and yelled with all his strength.

“Now! Everyone, we are falling back to outside the forest!”

The orcs had already charged to a deep part of the forest.

There was no need to chase their back anymore.

On top of that, the smoke was filling the forest entirely.

“Yes! Understood!”

The soldiers replied in a loud voice and moved quickly.

Because their eyes and nose hurt because of the white smoke.

“Cough. Cough. It seems like sir adjutant is fine. I’m almost dying.”

Lander looked at Roan while fanning with his hands.

Roan just put a faint smile instead of replying.

‘It’s all because of Kalian’s tear and Brent’s ring.’

Actually, the part of his eyes not hurting and not feeling any heat were things he had already expected.

But he didn’t know that he would be fine after breathing in smoke.

It certainly smelled like smoke, but his nose and mouth weren’t uncomfortable or hurt.

‘The abilities Brent’s ring has may be more various than what I thought.’

On top of that, the white forest that was filling the forest couldn’t obstruct Roan’s sight.

It wasn’t that he could see clearly, but even so he could see more clearly than normal people.

‘Searching for each ability that Kalian’s tear and Brent’s ring have will also be fun.’

Roan smiled brightly and touched his ring.

He, and the 12th squad protected the forest until the end.

They were looking thoroughly for any orc that got left behind.

“It seems like they all retreated.”

Austin approached while fanning with his hand.

Roan nodded.

“Good. Then we are also getting out of the forest.”

At those words, Lander smacked his lips as if it was regrettable.

“It’s so regrettable that we lost Violin, that crazy orc bitch. This battle that was planned by sir adjutant Roan from start to end will end up in the hands of another person.”

“I don’t care much.”

Roan shrugged his shoulders.

Lander, that looked that, clenched his fists tightly.

“If you don’t want to, at least I can.....”

“Stop talking. Please. What are you going to do after you catch Violin?”

Austin frowned and rebuked.

At those words, Lander hit his armor.

“I want to place an adjutant badge on my armor after catching that bitch. Only then will you, vice squad commander, not be able to say anything to me.”

“What?”

Austin raised his hand as if he was going to hit him at any moment.

Lander acted as if he got really frightened by that and started to run in front.

Roan looked at that and smiled.

‘Even so, it’s fortunate that everyone is safe.’

On a battlefield where tens of people, and thousands of people died, no one from the 12th squad died.

They did receive big and small wounds, but they kept were still keeping their lives.

‘Now that it became like this, I would like it if I can stay with everyone until the end.’

Roan looked at the back of the squad members and took in a deep breath.

That was because he knew really well that it would be difficult.

Then, Lander who was walking in front, looked at his surroundings and yelled.

“Where are you everyone? Come, come quickly please.”

Meanwhile, the smoke got denser and it became difficult to differentiate what was in front of you.

Roan looked back.



Tadak. Tadak.

The sound of the flames eating up the trees was heard.

Every now and again once and then, white and black smoke surged up.

‘Huh?’

Then, a really small and displeasing sound was heard.

‘A sound that shakes the ground.....’

He quickly turned his head towards the place the sound was heard.

At that instant, Roan’s two eyes became round.

“Violin!”

He could see Violin running through between the smoke.

“Yes? That was sir adjutant right now, right? You said Violin? Just because I made a joke right now, even you are.....”

When Lander talked up to then.

The white smoke got pushed.

Roan looked at the scattering smoke fixedly.

The whole world's movement became slow.

Spaaat!

The lopus that charged through the smoke really slowly.

And Violin that was swinging the blade on top of the lopus.

Roan opened his eyes abruptly and yelled.

“Lander! Dodge!”

The loud yell rang throughout the forest.

Lander, who was looking around looking for Roan, lowered his body with a surprised look.

Slash!

The blade that pierced through the smoke instantly cut off Lander's neck.

“No!”

Lander's face was chopped off in front of got hardly stabbed in Roan's two eyes.

The head that fell to the ground really slowly.

The light in his eyes still didn't go off.

Roan raised his spear and ran towards Lander.

“Wha, what happened?!”

“Sir adjutant?”

The 12th squad members, that had it difficult to look at the front, shook their hands and followed Roan’s back.

“Lander!”

Roan cried out while holding Lander’s head.

“Uaaaaaaaaaaaaa!”

## Chapter 46 : Revenge Battle (7)

---

The sound that rang throughout the forest.

For Roan the 12th squad had a special meaning.

The first squad he got to command since he returned to the past.

Because of that, each and every person was too precious.

“Violin! I won’t leave you alive!”

Roan stood up.

The other squad members also arrived late.

“Lander!”

“Ah.....”

“Ho, how could this.....”

They were speechless at the miserable sight.

The ones that had a weak heart like Keep and Glenn were already shedding tears.

Roan carefully gave Lander’s head to Austin.

“Austin. Retreat along with the squad members.”

At those words, Austin got a hold of himself.

“What are you going to do?”

Roan replied shortly and charged forward.

“I will cut the neck of Violin for Lander’s sake.”

His sight followed Violin who was hidden in the white smoke.

She had lost her direction because of the smoke that blocked her sight and was moving towards the fire path.

It seemed like she didn’t even know who she had slain.

‘Dog like bitch! I will offer your head to Lander.’

Roan hid himself in the smoke like that.

“You can’t! We are already near the fire. It’s dangerous!”

“Sir adjutant! It’s dangerous!”

The 12th squad called out Roan late and tried to stop him.

But they couldn’t hear Roan’s voice anymore.

“Damn!”

Austin kicked the ground.

As he couldn’t see well, he couldn’t move as he wished.

In the end he could only follow Roan’s order.

He looked at Lander’s corpse that was on the ground.

“Ah.....”

A low exclamation came out from between his lips.

It's been 8 years since they roamed the battlefield together.

In that time, many comrades died.

But it was the first time he felt this heavy.

“Stupid bastard.”

Austin kneeled in front of Lander's corpse.

“What kind of crazy bastard yells like that on a battlefield. Huh? Who shouts like that!”

He hit Lander's chest and cried.

“You bastard! You said you wanted to wear the adjutant badge! That you wanted to shut me up after you became one!”

Austin couldn't hold it and in the end, tears came out.

“Kugh.”

“Kuk.”

The other squad members also ground their teeth and their eyes

reddened.

Pierce, who usually lacked a way to express his emotions, wiped off his tears and mumbled.

“Damn. Because of the smoke..... Kuk.”

But he couldn't hide the crying sound that came out from his voice.

“Uhhhhhhhh.”

“Kuhhhh.”

Keep and Glenn couldn't hold it anymore and started to cry loudly.

They remembered the sight of Lander who liked to smile and talk.

< After this battle ends, let's have a proper squad meal. >

The words he spoke before going to battle.

Pierce forcefully gulped down the tears and shook his head.

“What fun is a meal without Lander.....”

Sorrow denser than smoke filled the forest.

Today, they didn't lose a comrade, but a piece of their hearts.

\*\*\*\*\*

Tadadak. Tadak.

The sound of the fire eating the trees was clear.

A red flame.

In the middle of that, there was Violin.

“Only now can I see well.”

She looked in front of her and smiled ill-naturedly.

As she ran while evading the white smoke, she was soon in the middle of the fire.

Maybe it was because of the fire, but the smoke that covered her eyes became faintly dispersed.

“I will have to cut off your neck.”

The owner of the cold voice was Roan.

He slowly breathed out and calmed himself down.

“The one that died right now was your underling?”

“Lander. That was his name.”

Roan spoke coldly and bit his lips.

Violin smiled faintly and nodded.



“As I couldn’t see in front, I cut off the neck of the one that talked loudly. I wondered what would I do if it was you. Because you don’t die that easily.”

She pointed at the fire spreading because of the wind.

“Isn’t this the best place to die together?”

Violin thought up of the death of her husband again and was filled with madness once more.

“Together? It’s certain that you are a crazy bitch.”

Roan pointed at Violin with his spear.

The fire gulped down the trees at the sides and shook.

Even so, Roan and Violin didn’t react at all.

‘Once again, i’m seeing the effects of Brent ring.’

Thanks to one of the ring’s abilities, that was temperature regulation, he felt warm even when he was in the middle of a fire path.

‘But of course, it’s not that my skin is fine.’

Brent's ring only regulated your temperature, it didn't block the heat entirely.

If the fire became fiercer than now, there was a high possibility that he would get burnt.

In the other side, Violin couldn't feel the heat because of the madness.

In one sentence, she became really crazy

“Kuk! I will kill you first and follow you back.”

Srung.

Violin laughed strangely and unsheathed her blade.

Tadadak. Tadadak.

For a while, only the sound of burning trees was heard.

Swuk.

Then, a spark flew between Roan and Violin.

The spark was precisely in between their sights.

Tat!

The two of them charged forward just like they had agreed beforehand.

Cheng! Checheng! Cheng!

The final battle started in the fire along the sound of metal clashing.

“Kuk!”

“Kugh!”

Roan’s and Violin’s attacks continued without stopping.

Once the battle started, the surrounding fire didn’t affect them at all.

The two only focused on each other.

They lightly ignored the spark that fell on their armour.

Spat!

Violin’s blade slightly cut off Roan’s shoulder.

‘She’s a monster.’

Roan looked at Violin and ground his teeth.

Her body was shining in red because of the attack she suffered from Pierce.

She had lost a lot of blood.

But even so, her movements were no different from usual.

No, rather it seemed like her movements were faster and stronger.

When he was facing her, he got the feeling that she resembled a mad warrior.

‘I can’t get pushed like this.’

Roan quickly turned around and stabbed with his spear.

“Hmph!”

Violin snorted and swung her blade.

Then, the spear moved faintly like it was dancing, and its trajectory changed.

“Kuk!”

Violin ground her teeth and pulled her blade back, but it was too late.

Stab.

The spear pierced her left shoulder.

“Kugh!”

However it wasn't a complete success.

Violin grabbed the spear with her left hand.

Roan stabbed the spear with all of his strength, but it didn't move an inch.

Violin's strength was that amazing.

Even after that, Violin's and Roan's attacks continued without even one inch of concession.

Cheng! Checheng! Cheng!

The sound of metal clashing without stopping.

Kugung. Boom.

The trees that fell without being able to hold the fire.

The heat of the battle became hotter with many meanings.

"Die!"

"Die!"

The blade and spear swung with all their strengths.

Cheng!

Sparks flashed along with the sound of metal.

Tat!

In the end Roan and Violin distanced themselves.

“Pant. Pant. Pant.”

Roan was almost out of breath.

His shoulders, chest, abdomen and thighs were filled with big and small holes.

“Haa. Haa.”

Violin was also exhausted.

It had also been a while since the madness that made her forget her nature disappear.

On top of that, her injuries were worse than Roan's.

You could see many deep wounds.

They exchanged sights.

‘Let's end this now.’

‘This is the last one.’

Even if they didn't say anything, they understood each other.

Boom. Booom.

The flames were already near them.

Even if they wanted to keep fighting, they couldn't.

Roan and Violin took in a deep breath and charged forward.

Spat!

Roan's spear sliced Violin's shoulder.

"Kukh."

Violin's movements were also dull as she was exhausted.

She just confronted him and swung her blade.

Roan ground his teeth and twisted his body.

Slash.

The old armor got cut off cleanly.

Not only that, but his clothes and flesh also got cut quite deeply.

'Kugh.'

Roan ground his teeth.

It wasn't to the point where he couldn't endure it.

He turned around quickly and swung his spear.

Violin pulled the blade without even showing that she wanted to dodge and blocked the spear.

Cheng!

The spear used the rebound and spun to the other side.

‘Let’s end it with this.’

Roan was planning to execute the 7th stance of Pierce’s spearmanship, no, Roan’s spearmanship.

It was the strongest one amongst the ones he could execute in his current state.

‘Hph!’

He took in a deep breath.

Muscles on both of his arms swelled up.

Spat!

The spear head cut through the wind.

The body of the spear widely shook to the sides.

‘Damn!’

Violin looked at the spear that moved gorgeously to the point it made her dizzy and bit her lips.



Because the spear swayed too widely, she couldn't be certain if it was aiming for her right or for her left.

“Uaaahap!”

Violin cried out loudly and swung her blade.

Then.

Tung!

The spear hit the air with a heavy sound as if it got bounced off.

The spear evaded the blade and cut into her left side.

‘Kuk!’

A movement she hadn't expected at all.

Violin twisted her body all she could and swung her blade.

But the movement of the spear was much faster than what she expected.

Stab.

The blade of the spear got stabbed into her side.

‘It has ended.’

Roan felt the heavy feeling transmitted to the end of his hands and let out a long sigh.

Then Violin swung her blade widely and cut off the spear.

Stab.

The strong spear got cut off cleanly.

‘Damn!’

Roan fell back and had a surprised expression.

‘When we battled on the plains, a crack appeared on the body of the spear.’

The part where it was a bit broken when it faced against the blade.

Violin looked for that place and broke it in two in an instant.

“Kuk.”

She grabbed the spear stabbed in her side and staggered.

It must certainly feel nasty and painful, but there was a smile on her face.

“It seems like I won this battle. You are empty handed but I have my blade.”

Violin swung her blade.

Roan threw the short body of the spear and shook his head.

“I wonder. We have yet to see that.”

He brought his hand to his waist.

He touched the long steel stick with the tip of his hands.

‘Travias spear.’

The spear he couldn't use in the Pedian's plain battle because he didn't have mana.

But in this situation, this was the only weapon he could use.

Violin looked at that and sneered.

“Kuk! You will fight with that small piece of metal?”

She shook her head and moved towards Roan.

“Let's go to hell together with me.”

Violin bit her lower lips tightly and swung her blade.

As she still had the spear stabbed in her side, her movements were really slow and unnatural.

Swush.

Roan barely dodged her blade and stabbed his Traviass spear towards her neck.

“Hmph!”

Violin snorted and grabbed the piece of metal with her left hand.

Roan tried to pierce more with all his strength but it didn't move at all.

“Do you think you will be able to kill me with this metal stick?”

The tip of the metal stick touched Violin's chin.

Roan smiled faintly and nodded.

“If it's this much, I can kill you plentifully.”

“What?”

Violin frowned.

Just how could this piece of metal, where the end was blunt, be able to kill her!

Then, Roan's voice was heard.

“Grab there tightly.”

“What did you say?”

At the words she didn't know the meaning of, Violin frowned.  
Then, Roan twisted his wrist and turned the tip of the stick hard.

Kigigi.

A displeasing sound.

The end of the spear criss crossed and turned to the sides with  
the sound of oxidized metal turning.

“Huh?”

Violin opened her eyes roundly at the stick in her hands that was  
changing.

“Greet Sedek for me.”

Roan's farewell.

At the same time.

Click.

The tip of the spear separated with the sound of sawtooths went  
in gear.

Cheeng.

A sharp blade surged up along with a clear sound of metal.

Stab.

The blade passed through Violin's chin and pierced her head.

"Grrrrrrr."

The expression of Violin as if she couldn't believe it.

She fell to the ground.

"Whew....."

Roan also let out a long sigh and staggered for a moment.

The feeling of all his strength leaving his body.

'She was a strong opponent.'

She was one of the strongest opponents he had faced until now.

'I have to quickly learn mana.'

If he didn't do so, situations where he will have it hard with only an orc commander will keep repeating.

Tadadadak. Boom. Kung.

Then, the surrounding trees fell because of the flames.

‘I will have to get out of here for now.’

Roan pulled out the Travias spear and cut off Violin’s head.

She still had her eyes open.

‘I will offer your head to Lander.’

Roan ground his teeth.

At the same time, he moved his steps while looking at the burning flames.

Kugugugung.

Then, on the place he left, trees started to fall and flames took its place.

\*\*\*\*\*

The battle ended in a complete victory.

Violin’s troop got annihilated, and the losses of rose troop and blackbird’s troop were minimal.

However on the faces of Gale, the adjutants and the soldiers happiness couldn’t be seen for their victory.

They all looked at Riten forest with anxious looks.

Boom. Kugung.

The trees falling because of the fire.

And the amazing smoke that is continued by that.

“Ah.....”

“Sir adjutant Roan.”

“Please, you have to be safe.....”

They were still waiting for Roan who couldn't get out of the forest until now.

Now, Riten forest was completely enveloped by flames.

Then, Pierce walked to the front.

“I can't hold it anymore. I will go in.”

At those words Austin put a surprised expression and grabbed him.

“What are you doing!”

“Then are you telling me to just stand still and watch! I will go in and bring sir adjutant Roan!”

Pierce's yell.



At those words the 12th squad ground their teeth.

“Won’t it be fine if we pour water on ourselves?”

“We will also go in.”

The members of the 12th squad were taking the lead on each other by saying that they would get inside the fire.

At that look Gale, the adjutants and the other soldiers let out a low exclamation.

‘The comradeship of the 12th squad is amazing.’

‘He has good subordinates.’

Then, Austin that was stopping the others, pointed at Riten forest.

“Huh?!”

A really surprised expression.

Everyone turned their heads and looked at Riten forest.

“Ah.....”

A low exclamation came out from the mouth of everyone.

The place where their sights gathered.

The youth they longed for that much showed himself in front of the entrance.

The youth who was releasing hot steam while being covered in blood was Roan.

“Sir adjutant Roan!”

“Sir!”

The squad members all ran towards Roan.

Roan raised Violin’s head towards them.

“I bought a gift for Lander.”

He looked hopeless, but he still had strength in his voice.

The squad members looked like they would cry at any moment.

They didn’t say anymore.

They just hugged themselves with the heat.

# Chapter 47 : To The South (1)

---

“Miss. He’s amazing, right?”

A good looking middle aged woman smiled brightly and asked.

“What’s amazing? The orc troop must have been stupid.”

From the other side a fine voice was heard.

The owner of the voice was a woman in her early twenties.

White skin, quite large facial features, and long black hair. It was quite a cute lady.

Only, her face was filled with playfulness so she gave a childish aura.

Then, a heavy and a low voice was heard.

“No. Jane’s right. This Slan battle was really amazing.”

The man that was seated next to the young woman was also a handsome man in his early twenties.

At those words, the middle aged woman and Jane widely opened their eyes.

“Right? It’s true that our 7th corps soldiers are amazing. Sir Owells.”

“I told you to just call me Walter.”

“Yes? Yes. Mister Walter.”

Jane hesitated and nodded.

Walter Owells was a noble and she was no different than a commoner.

Because of that it was still awkward to call him by his name and not his surname.

“Are the soldiers of our 7th corps really that amazing?”

The young woman leaned her head on Walter’s shoulder.

Walter slightly pinched her cheek as if it was cute.

“Mary. I have never seen the strategy used in Slan region anywhere else. They made a fortress by utilizing wagons and barrels? It’s a strategy I can’t imagine at all.”

“Ah.....”

At those words the young woman, Mary smiled merrily and buried her face on Walter’s chest.

A really happy look.

She was Mary Tate, the daughter of Aaron Tate.

‘Walter is praising our 7th corps.’

She felt proud.

“As it’s something said by the strongest and most intelligent

person, I can believe in you right?”

“Of course.”

Jane butted in.

“Hmhm.”

Walter cleared his throat as if it was embarrassing.

However, pride showed on his face which he couldn't hide.

“Anyways, I want to meet the person that thought of that strategy. And.....”

Walter gulped the last words.

‘I also want to meet the soldier that slew the crazy female Orc warrior Violin.’

Something hot was felt deep in his chest.

Competitiveness.

He too, was a man.

“That’s why we are going to the battlefield.”

Mary pouted her lips.

Before she entered Slen region, she met with the messenger

Aaron had sent.

Because of that they waited for 4 days in the nearest castle until the battle ended.

And right two days before, she heard the notices that the battle had ended by travelers and merchants.

No, it wasn't a notice of the battle simply having ended.

They told them the stories and the actions of the 7th corps in a detailed fashion.

The marvelous strategy and of course an outstanding commanding and strong military.

There wasn't one thing that wasn't amazing.

'I still can't forget Walter's surprised expression from back then.'

A proud feeling for nothing.

Actually, she was feeling a guilty conscience from Walter.

She was from the outer areas of the kingdom, from the eastern boundaries, and also didn't have any family or reputation to show.

Compared to her, Walter's father was a really powerful influential person as he was the leader of the knights of the count.

Outstanding looks and amazing skills, on top of that a family whose future seemed really bright.

Walter was more outstanding than Mary in every aspect..

'That Walter got surprised by the activities of our 7th corps.'

Her lips continued to raise.

A feeling she wanted to give a kiss to the one that thought of the strategy and the one who slew Violin right now if only they were in front of her.

Then, Walter's voice was heard.

"It was a nonsense favor, but thanks for listening to it."

At those words Mary shook her head.

"No. If Walter wants to see it, we have to go whatever happens."

Walter, who heard of the stories from the merchants and travellers, begged Mary to let him meet the soldiers of the 7th corps.

Mary nodded immediately as she felt she could do something for Walter.

It wasn't important if it was possible or impossible.

She just wanted to listen to Walter's favor.

In the eyes of Mary, who was looking at Walter, love completely filled it.

Jane looked at that and smiled.

'The lady also grew up.'

It has already been 20 years since she has been with Mary.

She had never parted ways with Mary from when she was born until she became 20 years old.

‘You certainly have to grab mister Walter.’

Jane slightly looked at Walter.

A really clear appearance and look.

Most of all, his mouth and thick chin that seemed to have rostrum made him look more manly.

‘His family is good, his looks are also good, and as he’s a pupil from the head of Pavor academy his abilities also are good..... There’s no one better for our lady Mary.’

On top of that, Walter also treated Mary really well.

It was also him that told her to go and congratulate Aaron’s birthday first.

‘There are some times where his competitiveness get excessive, but if he’s a man it’s a point he certainly needs.’

If he was someone that would become big in the future, he needed that temperament.

‘Perhaps, he would be able to enter the royal knights. If he does.....’

Mary would also be able to leave this outer region and go to the capital of Miller which they had only dreamt of.



‘On top of that, the two of them really suit each other.’

Jane and Mary looked at Walter alternately and shut their mouths.

Then, the direction of the carriage turned a little along the cry of the horse.

Johnson, who was driving the carriage, yelled in a loud voice.

“I see the troop’s camp!”

At those words, the three people gathered in the window.

They could see the tents that were spread far away on the plains.

It was the camp of Rose troop and BlackBird troop.

In that instant, Walter felt his heart beating wildly.

‘Are we arriving soon?’

Over there was the soldier that thought of that amazing strategy and the one that slew Violin’s head.

‘I will learn what I have to.....’

A smile appeared on his shut mouth.

‘I will battle with him if I can.’

Deep in his heart, competitiveness boiled.

\*\*\*\*\*

Although the battle preparations had only lasted for 4 days, the battle itself didn't last for more than a day.

Even so, the soldiers were completely exhausted.

They wanted to say down and sleep like that, but there were still many things they had to do.

First, they had to catch the fire of Riten forest and gather the corpses of the orcs in one place.

And of course, they also carefully gathered the corpses of their fallen allies.

They also filled up the traps on the plains and repaired the wagons and barrels or made new ones.

Because they couldn't make the farmers of this region suffer through this battle.

Because of that, the soldiers that could move had to sweat like crazy.

And that was the same for the 12th squad.

Even so, because of Gale's consideration, they got to take care of organizing the goods of the camp.

“Now! Pile it up properly. Properly.”

“Move this over there.”

“Give me that.”

The members of the 12th squad and some other squads moved

busily and piled up the remaining food and equipment in one place.

Then, Keep stealthily left the place.

But even without Kalian's tear, Austin caught up with the lazy guy like a ghost.

"Hey! Keep! Where are you going!"

At those words Keep flinched and grabbed his waist.

"I'm going to pee."

"Tch! Go quickly!"

At Austin's words, Keep nodded and moved his feet.

Only after he got out of the camp did he loosen his belt.

"Uo. How refreshing."

Keep closed his eyes and trembled, and then frowned.

'What's this sound?'

It was a really small but familiar sound.

He roughly adjusted his pants and moved towards the plain.

Then, he saw the carriage that was moving quickly.

“Carriage?”

For a carriage to appear in a zone where a battle had just ended. Keep rubbed his fingers on his thighs and ran inside the camp.

“Vice squad commander.”

“What is it?”

Austin, that was distributing the goods, asked back with a tired expression.

Keep said in a voice so low, it seemed like he was whispering.

“A carriage is approaching.”

“Carriage?”

Words he had never thought of.

Austin put down the food bag he was carrying and moved to the entrance of the camp.

Keep quickly followed his back.

The soldiers on the entrance had already raised the fences and put on a vigilant posture.

Austin looked at the carriage coming quickly towards the entrance and frowned.

‘Why a carriage so suddenly.....’

While he was thinking this and that the carriage already got close

to the entrance.

“Huh? That flag.....”

As the carriage got closer they could see the small flag stuck on the roof.

A really familiar flag.

Keep, that was looking next to him, frowned.

“Isn’t that baron Tate’s symbol? The symbol of corps commander Aaron Tate.”

“It is. I’m certain.”

Austin nodded.

It was impossible that they didn’t know of the family symbol as a soldier of the 7th corps.

“Perhaps, corps commander?”

At Keep’s words Austin shook his head.

‘Corps commander enjoys riding a horse rather than a carriage. On top of that, there’s no way only one carriage would move when the commander himself is travelling.’

Then, only one thing remains.

‘It means that someone from the Tate family is riding it.....’

Whoever it was, it was a situation difficult to understand it.

‘Is there a reason for the lady or the madam to come?’

However he rolled his head he couldn’t find an apparent reason.

Meanwhile, the carriage stopped in front of the entrance.

Purrrrrr.

The carriage stopped along the burbling of the horse.

Austin and Keep looked at the door of the carriage with quite nervous expressions.

Kiig.

The door opened along with a wooden sound.

The first one that appeared was Jane.

She stood in front of the door with a humble posture.

Next to that, Walter showed himself.

He smiled faintly and looked at the entrance of the camp.

‘The attitudes and the eyes of the guards are good.’

He felt that all the rumours about the battle were true.

Then, Mary showed herself through the door of the carriage.

Walter quickly grabbed Mary's hand and gently escorted her.

A really elegant and beautiful movement.

Austin and Keep, who were looking without a word opened their eyes widely.

'Lady!'

It's lady Mary!'

Baron Tate's daughter appeared in their camp.

A really uneasy feeling as if something would already happen.

Then, Mary smiled brightly and approached.

"Pleased to meet you. Do you know who am I?"

"Yes. Milady."

Austin and Keep bent down.

Mary smiled even more brightly and shook her hands.

"I came to meet Uncle Rose."

"U, Uncle Rose.....:"

Their processing ability stopped for a moment.

Mary pouted her lips as if they didn't even know that.

"The troop commander here. I'm talking about Mister Gale."

"Ah! Troop commander."

Austin and Keep understood it only then and nodded.

Behind them, a low voice was heard.

“What’s going on?”

The owner of the voice was Roan.

While he was distributing the goods inside the camp, he discovered the carriage and had come over.

He had taken off his upper clothes and got covered in bandages to get treatment for the wounds he got in the chest by Violin.

On top of that, as he vaguely washed himself, the water still didn’t dry off.

Because of the endless training, practice and the battles his body was quite built up and the skin had a pleasing colour to look at.

Because he trained with the best training methods available 20 years from now on, the bones and muscles took their place well and because of that he became a bit taller and his body’s balance became better.

In short words, a really well made body the moment you saw it, it would make you speechless.

On top of that, the hair that was messy and the water drops that dripped from it emanated a wild charm.

‘He’s cool.’

Even Austin and Keep were hanging with their mouths open.

And that was the same for Walter and Mary.



‘It’s a feeling he overwhelms people.’

Walter’s thoughts.

‘Wh, what is it? He’s wild but at the same time he feels really sad.’

Mary’s thoughts.

‘My god. How cool!’

The last one was Jane’s thoughts.

Roan was really exhausted in mind and body because of Violin’s battle and Lander’s death.

And that also emanated a really strange atmosphere.

Sadness and malaise.

‘It feels like he’s bearing all the weight in the world.’

Mary’s eyes shone.

But she didn’t know.

That Roan was just exhausted and his eyes were giving in.

Roan passed Austin and Keep and stood in front of Mary and Walter.

“I’m class 5 adjutant from Rose troop. What happened?”

Only then did Mary get a hold of herself and smiled.

“I’m Mary Tate. I came to meet Uncle Gale.”

“Ah.....”

Roan slowly bent down.

‘So this person is the daughter of Commander Aaron.’

He thought he now knew the reason Aaron treasured her so much.

‘She looks cute.’

He made hand signs to the guards.

Srr.

The wooden fences blocking the entrance were taken off.

“I will lead you.”

At Roan’s words Mary nodded.

“Please.”

A clear and gentle voice.

Roan slightly nodded and started to walk one step in front of them.

Behind him Walter, Mary and Jane followed.

As soon as they got inside the camp all the soldiers put down their things and gathered as soon as they saw a woman.

“Huh? It’s the lady.”

“It’s Lady Mary.”

“What is she doing here?”

Everyone recognized Mary and shook their hands or bent down.

Walter, who was walking behind, looked at that and smiled.

‘It seems like she’s popular between the soldiers.’

It meant that she didn’t have a bad temperament.

‘I certainly picked a good person.’

While Walter was thinking like that, Roan who was walking in front stopped walking.

At the same time a thick voice was heard.

“Lady!”

The middle aged man that comes smiling brightly.

It was Gale, who Mary referred to as uncle.

“Uncle!”

Mary also smiled brightly and shook her hand.

The two people grabbed their hands and said hello for quite a while.

After a while, Mary pointed at Walter late.

“Here is Walter, Walter Owells.”

“I’m troop commander Gale of rose troop from the 7th corps.”

Gale bent down deeply.

As he had seen Mary since she was a newborn he could talk with her without hesitation, but it was different in the case of Walter.

In front of status, age and rank didn’t matter at all.

“I’m Walter Owells.”

Walter was also skillful in acting disrespectful.

After the short introductions ended, Gale looked at Mary.

“But why did you come here?”

“Ah.....”

At those words Mary looked at Walter for a moment and replied in a low voice.

“They say there’s someone who planned a really amazing strategy in Slen battle. I want to meet that person. Who is it? Is it perhaps Uncle Rose? Or the black bird uncle? Or perhaps one of the adjutants?”

She was referring to troop commander Jefferson when she said black bird uncle.

Mary didn’t even breath and after she finished her sentence she looked at Gale’s two eyes fixedly.

Eyes implying to answer immediately.

Gale smiled brightly and replied.

“If it’s that guy you have already met him.”

At those words Mary and Walter had surprised expressions.

“Huh? We met him?”

“Yes.”

Gale replied shortly and pointed at Roan who was still next to them.

“This friend here is the one that planned the strategy.”

Boom.

In that moment, Mary’s and Walter’s eyes became big.

They had expressions as if someone had hit the back of their heads.

“I’m class 5 adjutant Roan from rose troop.”

In the other side Roan bent down with a calm expression.

‘This is the person that thought of that amazing and marvelous strategy?’

Mary looked at Roan’s face fixedly.

However she looked he didn’t look like he used his head.

‘Oh right! There was one more.’

Mary calmed herself down and looked at Gale again.

“There’s someone else I want to meet.”

“Tell me.”

“They say there’s a soldier that slew that crazy female or warrior Violin. Where’s that person?”

Gale smiled brightly again and replied.

“You also have already met that person.”

“Huh? We also already met that person?”

Mary put a surprised expression and looked around.

It was when Walter also looked at his surroundings.

Gale placed his hand on Roan’s shoulders.

“This friend here is the one that slew the head of Violin.”

Boom.

Once again their eyes became big.

No, this time it was even more so.

They were all hanging their mouths open unconsciously.

In the other side Roan nodded with a calm expression again.

“I’m class 5 adjutant Roan from rose troop.”

## Chapter 48 : To The South (2)

---

“Uoo.”

Mary let out a weird noise.

She looked at Roan as if it was difficult to believe.

And Walter was also the same.

‘That the one that thought up of the strategy and the one that slew Violin’s neck were the same person?’

She hadn’t heard that rumour.

As the battle had ended not too long ago, the detailed and precise information was missing.

Roan smiled at the gazes falling upon him.

He looked at Gale and shrugged his shoulders.

‘From now on, things like this will happen a lot.’

Gale laughed it off with that kind of meaning.

Roan turned to look at Walter and Mary again.

He couldn’t speak as he wished so he only looked at their faces alternately.

After a while, Walter got ahold of himself and extended his hand.

“It’s Walter Owells.”



Roan grabbed his hand and bowed.

“It’s Roan.”

Only then did the greetings start.

“Mary.”

Mary also got ahold of herself.

But on her face, a surprised look still remained.

‘It’s somewhat unexpected.’

There was a personage she had thought of when she heard the rumours.

‘I thought that the man that thought up of the strategy would have a long beard and was a middle aged uncle, and the one that slew Violin had a big body and looked like a mountain thief.’

The guesses of the two people were wrong.

No, in the first place she hadn’t even expected that they would be the same person.

Then, Gale’s voice was heard.

“Let’s not keep standing like this and go inside.”

“Huh? Yeah. Right.”

Mary couldn't take her sight off from Roan even while nodding.  
And Walter was also the same.  
No, Jane who was at the back was also the same.

‘He’s a really good looking youth.’

But of course, only Jane was thinking of different things.

\*\*\*\*\*

Gale lead Mary, Walter and Jane to his tent.

And of course Roan too, who was the objective of their visit, was with them.

As soon as Walter sat down he started to pour questions onto Roan.

“First, shall we talk about the strategies implemented in the Slen battle?”

“Yes. Understood.”

Roan talked about the flow of the battle, the strategies he used and the countermeasures for when things turned out the way he hadn't expected.

Walter nodded with a serious face or exclaimed, but he always showed an honest reaction.

“So you are saying that you had taken countermeasures for when they got out of the forest?”

“Yes. That’s right.”

“Mmm.”

Walter touched his chin for a moment and fell into his thoughts. After a while, he looked at Roan and said with a careful attitude.

“But you know. I know that your strategy is outstanding, but I have some doubts about it.”

“I will listen to them.”

“First, that region uses Riten forest as the main moving route rather than Flam mountain gorge, right?”

“That’s right.”

“Then, if you hadn’t taken oil barrels, Violin’s troop would have passed the forest. Then what about stationing the wagon fortresses you made on the east of Riten forest and made it so they couldn’t get out?”

Walter looked at Roan’s eyes fixedly.

“You did say that you lacked oil, but I think that if you only lit the west entrance of the forest it would have been enough to cover them.”

Roan shut his mouth and didn’t talk without permission.

Walter smiled faintly and made hand signs.

“It’s fine so tell me what you think about it.”

At those words Roan said in a voice as if he was whispering.

“It’s a strategy that can be thought over plentifully. Only, it’s not a big forest to be able to carry 2000 warriors. Following by that, to give Violin’s troop a big blow we have to light the forest on fire the same moment they get inside of it. Because of that, we should have poured oil in the western part of the forest before hand.”

A clear voice and with strength.

Roan continued saying.

“But the oil we had was really cheap and of bad quality. Because of that, the smell was really bad. If we had poured oil on the west entrance of the forest it was obvious that the lopuses would stop by smelling the oil. And actually, the lopuses showed a big reaction to the oil barrels in this battle.”

Lopuses were monsters similar to dogs or wolves rather than horses.

They were quite sensitive on smell.

“Ah.....”

Walter let out a low exclamation.

Certainly, if it were lopuses they would be able to detect the smell of the cheap oil.

Walter hit the end of the table with his finger.

“That’s right. I was short minded. I’m learning one more thing like this.”

A quick and honest admitting.

Roan was surprised.

‘Was there a noble like this?’

He had heard that he was a disciple of the knight chief of Pavor academy and his house was also good.

On top of that, his looks were obviously good and his temperament was also good.

‘I obviously know about Owells family, but why can’t I remember anything about Walter?’

If he was a person like this, he would remember him with whatever he did, but in Roan’s memories there was no such name of Walter Owells.

And there would be two cases for it.

‘He lived a meaningless life.....’

Roan turned to look at Walter.

‘He died early on even before his abilities could bloom.’

Even so, when he looked at Walter right now, there was a high probability for the latter one being the case.

‘Thinking about it, there would be countless geniuses that died without me knowing.....’

Excluding the ones that succeeded big way, there may also be geniuses that died before they could bloom.

‘Aside of the geniuses I know from the past, I have to also find the hidden ones.’

It was important to use the memories of the future, but it was also important to build a new future with his own effort.

When he thought up to that point, Walter’s voice was heard.

“And one more thing. About the traps in front of the wagon fortress.”

“Yes. We dug into the ground and filled it with sand and water.”

“Yeah, that. If it was to the point you precisely guessed the location they would pass to, wouldn’t putting sharp pieces of metal or spears have been more effective than sand or water? What do you think?”

At those words, Roan put a surprised expression instead of replying.

And then he smiled bitterly.

“I couldn’t think of that. I did think that I should tie down the legs of the lopuses, but I couldn’t think about damaging them with the trap itself.”

He lowered his head.

“This time i’m learning big way.”

“Really? This time I was a step ahead? Hahaha.”

Walter became happy and laughed loudly.

Gale and Mary’s faces, who were looking next to them, changed in a strange way.

‘I do know about Roan’s abilities well, but Mister Walter is also amazing at such a young age.’

Gale’s thoughts.

But Mary’s thoughts were really different.

‘Is this something to be that happy about?’

She couldn’t understand anything about strategy or the things they talked about.

‘If this happens you do this, and if that do that. Is this that

funny? Even so.....’

Mary looked at Walter’s side.

‘If Walter likes it, I also like it.’

Her mouth raised by itself.

Roan and Walter kept talking about strategy and tactics for a long while even after that.

It was to the point that Gale, who had roamed the battlefield for tens of years, got tired.

Walter clapped.

Clap.

“Today’s conversation was really useful. I learned this and that and realized many things.”

“I also learned many things.”

Roan bowed.

Walter looked at that Roan and put on a regretful voice.

“Actually. When the conversation ended I wanted to battle you. I wanted to taste the abilities of the one who slew Violin’s neck myself. But.....”

He pointed at Roan’s chest.



Bandages covering the deep wound.

“I can’t fight with a wounded person. That’s why.”

Walter took off the small badge he had on his clothes.

“If you completely heal, come and find me to Pavor academy. Let’s test our abilities then.”

He couldn’t completely subdue his competitiveness.

Mary, who was next to him, put on a surprised face.

“They give that badge to each of the disciples in a class. Can you give it just like that to anyone?”

At those words Walter shook his head.

“It’s not to anyone, and it’s not giving it away like that. I’m giving it courteously to someone that has the skills.”

He extended the badge towards Roan.

Roan looked Walter’s eyes for a moment and then grabbed the badge.

“I will be going later.”

“I will be waiting for you.”

Walter smiled brightly and stood up.

He shook his hand towards Gale.

“I’m sorry for coming so abruptly when you would still be busy.”

Gale just smiled instead of replying.

Mary stood up and blinked.

“You are finished now?”

“Yes. I’m finished.”

“Then we can go, right?”

“Yeah.”

At those words, a blooming smile appeared on Mary’s face.

The stories about strategies and tactics were too boring.

Then, Gale’s voice was heard.

“Shall I escort you to Ipen castle?”

At those words Mary rejoiced.

“Really? Good for me. Even if you didn’t, I.....”

Then, Walter butted in.

“No. It’s fine.”

He shook his hand and looked at Gale and Roan alternatingly.

“You still haven’t finished cleaning up. I can’t take off forces as I wish.”

Really, looks that fitted a disciple of a head chief knight.

Gale slightly bowed.

“Thank you for your consideration.”

At the coming and going conversation, Mary pouted.

“Only I feel like a spoiled kid. I also don’t need any guards.”

She stucked her tongue to Gale and got out of the tent with Jane.

Walter looked at that and smirked, and then moved his feet.

Gale, Roan and the other adjutants followed them back and saw them off.

Mary glanced at Walter before leaving and said in a voice only Gale and Roan could hear.

“Rose uncle. And Roan.”

A sweet voice.

“You have done well. And thank you.”

She winked and got in the carriage.

Walter shrugged his shoulder as if implying what happened, but Gale and Roan didn't say anything.

Walter smacked his lips as if he couldn't do anything about it and got in the carriage with Jane.

Hiiiiing

The carriage started to move along the cry of the horse.

Gale, Roan and the adjutants protected the entrance until the carriage couldn't be seen anymore.

“Whew. Even so, it ended without anything happening.”

Gale's voice that was a bit relieved.

Roan smiled faintly and nodded.

“Anyways, it seems that you will slowly get more famous seeing that rumours about Slen battle already spread.”

Roan only smiled at Gale's words.

“Like this, won't the count come to find you?”

He said something comical and hit Roan's shoulder.

Then, Roan slightly bowed and said in a low voice.

“Troop commander Gale.”

“Huh? You have something to say?”

“Yes.”

A short reply.

Gale tilted his head and asked back.

“What is it?”

At those words Roan took in a breath with difficulty and said.

“I would like to have a temporary retirement.”

\*\*\*\*\*

“You really are returning, right?”

Gale asked again even when he knew he shouldn't.

“Of course.”

Roan had repeated this answer tens of times.

The two people were standing in front of the 7th corps, Aaron's office.

Gale sighed.

‘When I first heard that he was temporarily retiring, my heart sunk down.’

Because of that, even when he was a troop commander he grabbed Roan in front of the soldiers and made a fuss.

‘Well, although the fuss the 12th squad made was even more amazing.’

They grabbed Roan’s legs and said that they could never let him go.

Even Chris sided with the squad members before leaving to Miller.

Roan had to convince the squad members for 4 days that he would return after he finished what he had to do.

Only after he said that tens, hundreds of time did the 12th squad barely accept Roan’s retirement.

Gale also confirmed that he would return and even made a promise, and only then did he send the retirement application to Aaron.

‘Has it been 7 times that he returned it?’

Aaron returned the retirement applications being sent.

And when they sent the 8th one, Aaron’s reply came back.

<Come to the corps headquarters.>

Gale and Roan looked at the tightly closed door of the office.

“Shall we go in?”

At those words Roan nodded.

Kiiig.

The huge wooden door opened along with a creaking sound.

As they got inside the office, Aaron who was checking everywhere, turned his head and looked at Roan.

A stiff expression and unusual eyes.

He approached Roan.

‘Ugh. Is he angry?’

Gale, who was next to him, fell to the sides.

Meanwhile Aaron, who reached in front of Roan, said with a really stiff face.

“You really are returning, right?”

Roan replied once more the answer he had said to Gale and the 12th squad.

“Of course.”



# Chapter 49 : To The South (3)

---

Sponsored chapter!

“Good. Fine then.”

Aaron unexpectedly seemed to consent to it.

He turned back and walked towards his table and then he stopped and turned to look at Roan again.

“You really are returning, right?”

The same question.

Roan just nodded instead of replying.

Aaron let out a long sigh and went towards his table.

He spread the vacation petition and raised pen.

‘If I sign it now Roan will leave.’

Aaron bit his lower lip.

He wasn’t a staff officer nor a troop commander.

A mere class 5 adjutant was asking for a vacation.

And the reason for it was also clear.

‘A relative that is south of the kingdom passed away.....’

On top of that, it was a normal case where soldiers that were above the class of adjutant asked for a vacation.

It was different in each cases, but a spearman could at most take 1 year off.

Even so, it didn't matter much for the corps as they wouldn't be getting their salary.

Even so, he couldn't sign it easily.

He could change his mind and decide to retire right away, and most of all what he hated to think the most was that Roan got transferred to another corps.

But of course, it wasn't that common.

As they had their own relationships within the troops, they couldn't just take a member of another troop as they wished.

‘But if it's a troop that's on a higher class than us, it will be different.’

An upper class troop would even be able to blackmail Roan. No, even in a middle class or a lower class troop, they could utilize a method to newly recruit a retired one.

Whatever it was, Aaron was worried about Roan disappearing from him.

‘Most of all, the western region is noisy because of rumours about Roan.’

Half a month had already passed since Slen battle had ended.

After the battlefield got cleaned up, the soldiers that returned from blackbird troop and rose troop kept talking about Roan's

prowesses.

And even if they didn't do so, it seemed like a rumour about a soldier that used an amazing strategy and at the same time slew Violin spread through travellers.

Meanwhile, the rumours that were vaguely roaming spread properly through the confirmation of the soldiers.

‘He got out of my pocket quicker than I thought.’

He didn't think that he would be able to hide a fang in his pocket forever.

But at least, he wanted to take him to his side even a little more certainly, before it got out.

‘I couldn't even get the reply of viscount Reil Baker.....’

Aaron took in a deep breath.

‘Right. If he only returns, it may be better to be out of this region.’

Now that it turned out like this, it wouldn't be bad to create some distance with the people interested in him.

Scribble.

The tip of the pen moved over the paper.

Aaron finished the signing and let out a long sigh.

And then looked at Roan's two eyes fixedly.

“Are you reall..... No. How long do you think it will take until you return?”

The southern part was far.

It was almost the exact opposite of this place to Ipen castle.

There was no way it would be short.

At those words Roan replied without hesitation.

“If i'm quick one month, and if I get delayed three months.”

Aaron nodded.

“Don't forget that a promise for a soldier is more important than their own lives.”

“Yes. I will remember it.”

Roan smiled brightly and bowed.

Aaron moved his feet and stood in front of Roan.

He lent him the retirement permission and hit his shoulder.

“Have a safe trip. And certainly return.”

“Yes. Thank you.”

Roan bowed.

Aaron returned once more to his seat.

“Ah! And I have some more presents to give you.”

“Presents?”

As Roan asked back Aaron nodded.

“Yes. But the preparations still aren’t finished. If you come back later, I will give it to you then.”

“Understood.”

Roan didn’t ask further on and bowed.

Aaron looked at the scroll in Roan’s hand and shook his hand.

“You can get out.”

Even if he tried not to show it, he put on a rather unwilling expression.

Gale and Roan saluted shortly and got out of the office.

Aaron, who got left alone, looked a bit more at the pieces of paper and pushed them to the side of the table.

“Whew.”

He let out a long sigh.

‘I did send him away for now.....’

Now he only had to wait for Roan to return.

He was a man worth the wait.

‘Because even the eldest son of the Owell’s family got amazed.’

Mary and Walter who arrived for his birthday.

The two people, and especially Walter, praised Roan nonstop while they were staying at Ipen castle.

‘If I make Roan mine and Mary grabs Walter.....’

A smile appeared on Aaron’s mouth.

‘Just imagining it is fun.’

He buried his body in the chair and closed his eyes.

He wanted to enjoy this happy imagination a little bit longer.

\*\*\*\*\*

“I told you there’s no need to send me off.”

“No. Until the entrance of the castle. We will escort you until there.”

Many men walked down the street in a pack.

The people that came and went recognized him and waved their arms.

No, precisely speaking, their interest was pouring on the youth walking at the front of them all.

“Huh! Mister Roan! Where are you going?”

“Slen battle was really the best!”

“Take one fruit!”

The youth that receives all of the people’s interest.

He was Roan who was starting the long journey towards the south.

And of course, the 12th squad that followed him.

“Now really go back.”

Roan stood outside of the entrance and waved his arm.

Austin and the other members saluted.

“We will wait here from when the first month starts.”

“If you didn’t return, we will just stay here and become rocks.”

“Have a safe trip!”

Everyone’s eyes were hot and fierce.

‘Don’t worry. I will certainly return. No, I can only do so.’

Roan looked at every faces of the members and moved his feet.

‘If my future is in Potter region, this place has a spring of a foothold.’

He had to return here to Beno castle for various reasons.

Strength started to be put in Roan’s steps.

‘I’m finally going to Potter region.’

One of the first plans that could be picked in one hand after he realized that he returned to the past.

‘But before that.....’

He had a place to go.

In the first place, his destination was a bit to the southwest.

As he walked for almost a quarter of a day he saw a small village.

Roan passed the entrance of the village and went to a house located under a big tree.

Knock. Knock. Knock.



“Who are you?”

After he knocked a shabby wooden door, a really slim middle aged woman appeared after a while.

Roan bowed.

“I’m class 5 adjutant of rose troop. I was the commander of your son.”

“Ah....”

The woman let out a low exclamation.

Roan couldn’t even raise his head.

“I couldn’t rescue your son because I lack a lot. I’m really sorry.”

A visit that wasn’t related to his travelling.

The place he came to was Lander’s hometown.

“Sob.”

The woman cried without making any sound and then wiped off the tears with the back of her hand.

“I’m the mother of Lander.”

The end of the sentence trembled.

“Don’t bow like that.”

She covered Roan’s face with both of her hands and raised his head.

“On the last vacation, Lander talked a lot about you. That you were a really amazing man. I was really curious as to who you were, but we get to meet like this.”

Roan couldn’t say anything.

He looked at the woman’s face for a moment and then took out a small bag.

“There’s no way this will comfort you.....”

“I don’t need money. I already received a lot.”

The woman turned back the back to Roan and shook her head.

There were tears on her eyes.

“Even so it seems like Lander has been with some really good people. Quite a lot of people came and went from Beno castle.”

“From rose troop?”

“Yes. The troop commander came, and the soldiers of the 12th squad also came saying that they were Lander’s friends. Especially the soldiers of the 12th squad came every time they had the leisure to do so and helped with the farming. They are really thankful people.”

At those words Roan shut his mouth.

‘The reason they nowadays cut off the one night of free day was because of that? They really are nice people.’

He felt thankful towards Gale and the 12th squad.

‘If it’s these people I can be together for life.’

It was good to have good abilities and talent, but he also needed good people and well mannered ones.

Roan grabbed the hands of the woman.

“Lander was a really great soldier and ally. You raised a truly amazing child.”

At those words the woman forcefully smiled.

“As he was recognized by the adjutant he always admired, Lander will also like it. Sob.”

In the end she buried her face in Roan’s hands.

Roan gritted his teeth at the hot tears that were felt on the back of his hand.

‘I have to get stronger. Only then.....’

Resolution formed in his eyes.

‘I can rescue at least one more person.’

The tears of the mother that lost her son hit him.

His heart that was a bit scattered at the thought that he was finally going to the south was strengthened.

Today at this moment, Roan felt once again.

That he had many things to do.

\*\*\*\*\*

Roan started his real trip after he received the really kind treatment of Lander’s mother.

For now, he went to the fishing village Pierr that was located on Poskein lake and had quite some scale.

Poskein lake.

As the biggest lake in the continent, the size of it was a bit smaller than Rinse kingdom.

Rinse, Istel, Dies, Aimas alliances were gathered around the lake as the center.

‘But now they aren’t able to utilize this lake properly.’

Roan looked at the lake that spread without end and shook his head.

‘Now, it’s only used as a place to catch fishes in a small village.’

It wasn’t only in Rinse kingdom, but even the other kingdoms that were at the boundary left it alone.

Because the lake had really big and monsters, which you didn’t know the identity of, which were abundant.

In the end, working as fishermen in the fishing village was everything.

‘But even before 10 years passed, a lot of blood will be shed by the 4 kingdoms to conquer this lake.’

A bitter smile appeared on his face.

‘The one that will conquest this lake is the pirate king Bek that’s called, Bright Shark.’

He was originally from the navy of Aimas kingdom, but he made himself independent and became a pirate.

He used outstanding navigation skills and strong fighting power as the background to conquer Poskein lake, and not satisfied with that he attacked many villages and towns and plundered.

‘The navy of the four kingdoms allied themselves later to subjugate it but it was pointless.’

Roan let out a long sigh.

‘I can’t get Poskein lake taken by that violent guy also in this life.’

He planned to dominate Poskein lake faster than anyone.

‘Poskein lake is one of the most important places for my plans.’

But there was a big problem.

‘There’s no proper person.’

Not even one person who was skilled in the navy appeared in Rinse kingdom.

Even the outstanding genius strategist Ian Philips failed to find and appoint a skilled and strong marine.

‘In this life, I will do it myself.’

Roan was planning to do something even Ian had failed.

And his first plan for that was to travel with a ship rather than on the ground.

‘Until now, it will be something no one had tried.’

Getting on a ship and traveling a long distance was something unthinkable yet.

Roan was planning on finding someone that would step up and

challenge something that no one had done yet.

For now, he went to the village of Boodoo that was at the south of Pierr village.

Big and small fishing boats and big fishermen were abundant.

Roan carefully asked to the one that looked the most manly.

“Can you get me to Potter region?”

The reply came immediately.

“Don’t say crazy shtuff!” (Not a mistake)

The man turned him down and yelled.

Roan smiled bitterly and looked another person.

But all the fishermen showed the same reaction.

“You crashy?”

“If your not crazy go back to the ground. That’s the safest place.”

“You will give me a lot of money? Kukuku. This man. If you have that much money why don’t you ride a carriage?”

“Say shit about money a bit more finely.”

Everyone talked sarcastically and shook their head.

In serious cases, there were some that cursed while punching.

“You telling me to die together!”

“You don’t know where a monster will appear! If you want to die do it alone!”

A loud yell that made his ear numb.

Even so, Roan didn’t give up.

He roamed around Boodoo, the market and the town for 4 days looking for someone that would carry him on their ship.

But even after his persistent effort, no one stepped up.

‘Whew. In the end do I have to go by ground?’

Roan sat at the boundary of Boodoo and looked at the blue lake.

The lake was calm and silent.

Sunlight shone on the lake.

Then a small voice was heard.

“Hey.”

Roan turned his head to where the sound was heard.

The owner of the voice was a youth that seemed to be the same age as him.

Only, his body was so slim he looked really pointy. The youth smiled awkwardly and said.

“About going to Potter region. May I do that?”



At those words, Roan stood up.

“Of course.”

A really excited voice.

At Roan’s reaction, the expression of the youth became a bit dark.

He scratched the back of his head and carefully said.

“But it’s only been a month since I started to sail a ship..... Do you care?”

“Of co.....”

The moment he said that without thinking of anything, he stopped.

‘One month?’

His sight was directed to Poskein lake.

It felt that the calm lake became rough.

## Chapter 50 : To The South (4)

---

Poskein was the biggest lake in the continent.

It was obvious that you could see the horizon, and when the wind was too strong the waves were also rough.

Daiv, who grew up in Pierr village, followed his fisherman father since little and lived on the lake just like it was his room.

He looked at the horizon that was spread ahead of him and raised a dream.

‘One day I will roam this lake as I wish!’

But even after he became a youth, that dream was still a dream.

‘Money and soldiers. I need a ship that doesn’t break even after meeting a monster and soldiers who can face those monsters.’

But two months ago, his father passed away.

What he left him was an old and shabby house and some wealth.

Daiv spent all of the wealth to repair and remodel the ship.

Because of that, it became a ship that was exaggerating to call a fishing ship.

‘But it’s still lacking.’

The ship he was imagining was completely different to what he had right now.

He needed a lot more money.

‘One day.....’

As he was suppressing his dream like that, he discovered Roan, who was looking for a ship in a street of Boodoo, in a market.

‘If I take him to Potter region will he give me a lot of money?’

Quite an interesting story.

He would gain a lot more money than catching fishes at the shore.

For others it would be nonsense, and something they had to put their lives on it, but for him it was an opportunity to realize his dream.

On top of that he had a method to go to Potter region.

‘It’s not that I have to cross the lake.’

Daiv, who finished his thoughts, went to Roan.

“Hey. About going to Potter region. May I do that?”

\*\*\*\*\*

‘How peculiar.’

Roan looked at the ship he was on and put on a weird smile.

<Flangtek ship>

The shape of Daiv's ship was different to what he saw until now.

'It feels like it's floating?'

What was fortunate was that the crew seemed quite experienced. Then, Daiv approached him and said with a voice with strength.

"I only have to take you to Potter region, right?"

"Yes. The faster it is, the better."

The reason Roan chose to travel by water wasn't simply just to conquer Poskein lake faster than anyone.

'I became a bit late because of Slen battle.'

Because of that, his plans of reaching Potter region were late.

'If I travel by ground, I may not be able to reach there before that accident happens.'

If he wanted to go there by ground he had to take a detour with an arc like direction.

Compared to that, if he was to travel by lake he would be able to at least save 10 days.

Roan didn't have that much time.

Then, Daiv's voice was heard.

"I'm planning to move following the shore."

"Ah....."

Roan exclaimed lowly.

'There certainly was a reason he stepped out confidently. But.....'

The method to reach Potter region in the shortest time was to cross it.

But this method was too dangerous.

Because the farther they got from the shore, the more monsters there would be.

On the other side, if they followed the shore it was safer on the point of the attacks of the monsters, but it was difficult to sail.

'As the shore is shallow and the winds are too strong, if he's not a skillful person there's a high probability to crash.'

Roan looked at Daiv's two eyes fixedly.

'But a person that has only sailed a ship for one month chooses to

go by the shore?’

Something difficult to believe.

Roan said his thoughts honestly.

“You sailed a ship for only a month, do you think that will be possible?”

At those words Daiv smiled brightly and shook his head.

“It is indeed one month since I sailed the ship myself, but it’s already my tenth year that I ride one.”

He looked at Roan’s eyes.

“And just because my experience is short, it doesn’t mean that I don’t have the skills.”

An overconfident voice.

“On top of that, I have a secret weapon with me.”

“A secret weapon?”

As Roan asked back, Daiv smiled brightly and pointed his ship.

“This guy is different than the others.”

“Ah.....”

Roan exclaimed lowly.

‘That’s why I felt that it was floating, but there really is something different.’

Then, Daiv turned his head and looked at the crew.

“Now! Are you all ready!”

“Yes! Captain! We are all set!”

The crew yelled in one voice.

Daiv stood at the deck and raised his right hand after looking at Pierr village once more.

“Flangtek ship! Sail off!”

“Sail off!”

A loud yell.

At the same time, the shabby ship started to move along with the sound of creaking wood.

Swhooosh.

Then the warm west wind blew.

The wind hit the sail.

Flop!

The sail pushed the ship and it raised.

The ship split the waters and started to move towards the south.

\*\*\*\*\*

Roan was standing at the stern looking at the Poskein river.

‘Daiv.’

He gathered information about Daiv while sailing.

‘He followed his father since he became 10 and grew up on the ship.’

As his head was bright and his body swift, he did the work of an adult person.

‘The problem was that his thoughts were peculiar.’

The guy that boasted about his great number of fishes caught, started to dream of a peculiar thing.



‘And that is moving on Poskein lake as he wished.’

After Daiv’s father died and left him his ship, he started to act earnestly.

He ripped off the ship and repaired it.

As he couldn’t go somewhere far from the lake immediately, he planned to make a lap following the shore.

Because of that the ship became a really strange and shallow one.

‘Anyways, all of the crew members recognize his brilliance.’

Roan smiled faintly.

‘The courage of not fearing Poskein lake at all, and a dream that others hadn’t thought of. On top of that outstanding skills.....’

He would be a big help in the conquest of his plans.

Roan kept looking at Daiv with interesting eyes.

\*\*\*\*\*

“Amazing.”

Roan was truly amazed.

He was now looking at Daiv and the crew while standing at the stren.

“Grab the ropes for the sail!”

“Don’t get pushed to the east! It’s dangerous if we get far from the shore!”

“Watchmen, don’t ease your nervousness!”

Daiv certainly wasn’t an ordinary sailor.

Take into account his suitable orders and commanding abilities without flaws, but first his abilities to sail the ship were amazing.

His eye to be able to read the current of the water was good and his abilities to utilize the wind was also outstanding.

‘The words of the crew were true. Daiv is a genius.’

Roan, who didn’t know much about ships, could clearly feel it.

If it wasn’t for Daiv, the ship would have already turned over or crashed.

‘Potter region is already in front of me.’

While following the shore, there were several crises.

The ship could have turned over because of a strong wind, and they could have gotten done in by underwater reefs.

But every time, Daiv overcame it all with at the moment’s wits.

Most of all, the amazing thing was the ship’s performance.

Externally it looked shabby and old, but because of the repairs Daiv did, it showed a greater performance than what he had

thought.

Especially, spreading and folding the sail was so comfortable they could dexterously act according to the direction of the strength of the wind.

‘Why couldn’t someone like this show prominence?’

In his past life, there was no one like him.

Roan pondered for a moment and then shook his head.

‘With his temperament, there’s a high chance he challenged the lake early on and died.’

He bit his lower lip.

‘In this life, I will take him to the end. If he doesn’t die early and is able to further his abilities, he’s someone i’m expecting to be able to reach the distance.’

Then, the yell of the watchman was heard.

“I can see Potter region!!”

Roan and Daiv had finally reached Potter region.

“How was it?”

Daiv approached Roan and asked.

Roan smiled faintly and nodded.

“It was more amazing than what I had thought.”

Daiv just smiled.

Roan took out a big bag.

When he got on the ship, he had already paid him.

‘But what is this bag?’

Daiv looked at Roan with a weird expression.

Roan read that and smiled faintly.

“It’s an investment”

“An inversion?”

Daiv still had a weird expression.

Roan continued saying.

“Yes. Mister Daiv. I want to be your patron.”

“To a sailor like me? Just what is the reason.....?”

Roan replied without even a trace of hesitation.

“The reason I want to do it.....”

He paused for a moment and then smiled brightly.

“It’s because there’s a future in Poskein lake.”

“Fu.....ture?”

Daiv couldn’t understand and frowned.

Roan added.

“The country that dominates Poskein lake will be able to possess the water bodies of the four kingdoms.”

Strength was put in the voice.

“Probably, the commercial rights utilized in this lake will develop widely in a short time. Incredible amounts of goods will come and go with the 4 kingdoms as the center. And if there is perhaps someone that dominates Poskein lake.....”

“He will be able to gain an incredible amount of passing rights. No, is it still lacking? You wouldn’t even be able to sail a ship without permission.”

Daiv continued saying and opened his mouth.

“But what are you going to do after I betray you? And if I act as if I don’t know you even after receiving the investment?”

Quite a provocative question.

But Roan's expression was still calm.

"I wonder. I will have to think of that by then. If I already start thinking about that....."

His mouth raised.

"I can't do anything about it."

Roan had many things he had to do from now on.

And also had many plans.

Because of that, if he focused too much on a failure there was a big possibility he would be too late or wouldn't even be able to accomplish it.

'It's better to do several things at once taking into account the probability of failure.'

Even if Daiv failed or betrayed him, it didn't matter.

Anyways, it's impossible to conquest Poskein lake alone.

Roan was planning to find other sailors, invest in them, and make a big organization.

'This is no different than the first step.'

The light in his eyes dimmed calmly.

‘I will slowly need a lot of money.’

His head spun quickly.

As he ran a plan, the other one came immediately.

Then, Daiv’s voice was heard.

“Those are good words. That if you have many worries in your head, you won’t be able to do anything.”

He smiled faintly and continued saying.

Meanwhile, the ship reached a small fishing port in Potter region called Tig.

The west wind kept blowing,

\*\*\*\*\*

Spring was ending and summer approaching, but even if that was the case, it was too hot.

A heat wave raised on the main road.

“Ugh. So hot.”

“Right? It is indeed hot.”

People gathered below a tree that was next to the road.

They kept fanning with their hands without stop.

Then, their sight was directed to the end of the road.

“That person doesn’t seem to be hot at all.”

“He doesn’t even shed a drop of sweat.”

“Is it because he’s young?”

The youth who was walking at the end of the road was walking towards them.

A strong body that couldn’t be hidden with clothes and messy hair.

The identity of the youth that gave a wild feeling was Roan.

He separated with Daiv in Tig village and started to walk towards the south without stop.

‘If it wasn’t because of Brent’s ring I would also be dying because of the heat.’

He touched the ring on his finger and let out a long sigh.

Roan could bear the heat because of Brent’s ring.

“Oy! Youth! The weather is hot, come and rest for a moment! Drink some water!”

The people that were resting in the shade made hand signs towards Roan.

Roan moved towards them and then shook his head.



“I still have a long way to go.”

At those words, the middle aged man with a hawk nose asked.

“Where are you going?”

Roan pointed the south.

“I’m going to Maiel mountain.”

“Mmm.”

At that moment, the people glanced at each other and shook their heads.

The hawk nosed man let out a long sigh.

“Whew. If it isn’t for something important don’t even be around it.”

At those words Roan frowned.

“Did something happen?”

“Right. There is. Yes.”

The hawk nosed man nodded and then said as if he was whispering.

“Nowadays peculiar thing are happening on the mountain. Just like beasts coming down the mountain, or bugs crying like crazy and dying, and even birds hiding themselves.”

“Right.”

Roan’s expression became severe.

“That’s why it will be better to be away of the mountain for now.”

The hawk nosed man put a really preoccupied face.

Roan slightly bowed.

“Thanks for worrying.”

He also put on a worried face just like the other people.

But he was a bit hurried inwardly.

‘It’s already starting.’

Roan looked towards the south.

‘I have to hurry a bit more.’

# Chapter 51 : Mana Technique (1)

---

“The village is too empty.”

“This is all because of Maiel’s mountain. Even so, aren’t we also supposed to be far from it?”

“Ey. Why take it to that? There’s nothing different aside from the beasts having hidden themselves. People will also return soon.”

“Ahem. Well, that’s true. But even so I can’t do anything about feeling like this.”

As two old men conversed, they sighed.

It has already been 15 days since strange things have happened in the mountain.

Meanwhile, most of the villagers momentarily escaped to other regions because of their uneasiness.

Because of that, the only restaurant and bar in the village, called Fran Restaurant, has been empty for a couple of days already.

Then, an unfamiliar stranger appeared from the open door.

It was a youth that emanated a wild aura and had a childish face.

It was Roan.

‘Whew. At least it doesn’t seem like i’m late.’

He put down the bag he was carrying and let out a long sigh.

He would be able to reach his destination before that thing happened because of his constant walking.

He stood in front of the counter and looked for the owner.

One of the old men who was conversing approached.

“You lookin fo’ somethin?” (E/N: I’m pretty sure this is on purpose)

“Yes. Water, bread and dried meat.”

“How much?”

Roan made some calculations and then said.

“Give me a small barrel of water, two days worth of bread, and ten for the dried meat.”

“Wait a moment.”

The old man folded his fingers and then went into the inner part of the kitchen.

After a while, the old man came out while holding some things.

Roan put the additional luggage in his big bag.

“You travellin?”

The man that was looking at the sides asked.

Roan smiled brightly and nodded.

“Yes. I’m checking what’s happening on the south.”

“Working so hard when it’s this hot. But.....”

The old man said in a whispering voice.

“If you can, avoid going to Maiel mountain. Some strange things has been happening over there..... Ahem. Anyways, take care.”

“Thank you for worrying.”

Roan bowed deeply and grabbed his bag again.

The heavy feeling was felt on all of his shoulders.

‘With this much the food will be enough.....Now, should I go to the mountain?’

After he greeted the old men, he got out of the restaurant.

The sun shone down strongly, but because of Brent’s ring he didn’t feel the heat at all.

‘The place I remember needs to be exact.’

Roan searched through his memories and continued walking.

The memory of a person was a really scary thing.

You wouldn’t know if you didn’t remember at all, but thinking that he remembered clearly could be gravely mistaken.

‘If my memories are wrong.....’

Aside from not being able to get what he wanted, he may lose his life.

But this was one of the most important things that was in his plans.

‘The fire monarch Reid. I must obtain his impaired mana technique.’

\*\*\*\*\*

Roan set up camp on the entrance of the mountain.

He had left some distance while not being too far either.

He had placed a piece of cloth as the roof and decided to lodge here.

‘Is it already the fourth day since I camped here? It should slowly start.....’

Roan chewed on the dried meat and looked towards Maiel mountain.

A mountain where the sound of birds and insects couldn’t be heard.

Because of that, it emanated a gloomy feeling.

‘It should be time for Viscount Potter to send someone to report that Maiel mountain is strange.’

He didn’t remember the exact date, but it was something that had clearly happened in his past life.

‘Now! Maiel mountain, wide grounds. Tremble quickly. Quickly’

He put strength in his eyes.

The speed of chewing the dried meat became faster.

But nothing happened in the mountain.

‘Will today also pass like this?’

Roan looked at the western sky where the sun was already setting, and let out a long sigh.

It was then.

Pruu.

The sunset slightly shook along the skyline.

‘Huh?’

Roan opened his two eyes widely.

The sunset had clearly shaken.

‘No, I’m the one shaking.’

He got down on the floor after he grabbed the ground with his two arms.

Kugugugugu.

The earth was crying.

And soon, the mountain and the plains trembled like they were dancing.

Kugung. Kugugugung. Kugung.

The rocks that were on the hillside crumbled down and the trees of the forests trembled to the sides and started to fall.

Kugung.

The cloth roof fell and the food rolled onto the ground.

‘It’s here! The earthquake is finally here!’

That thing he wanted to happen that much.

Roan was waiting just for this earthquake.

He looked at Maiel mountain while still lying on the ground.

He could see the landslide sweeping the mountain.

‘My memory isn’t that wrong.’

Fortunately, the landslide fell down, avoiding the place where he was at.



Kugugugung.

The surface of the earth started to split with a weird sound.

Some places surged up, and some sunk down, and holes appeared.

What was fortunate was that the holes weren't deep enough to put him in danger.

Roan still glared at Maiel mountain while on the ground.

‘One day for the earthquake to end and for the aftershock to come. Meanwhile, I have to locate the cave where the sleeping fire monarch is.’

After the landslide happened because of the earthquake, the hidden caves will appear.

And in that place, there is the mana technique of the sleeping fire monarch, Reid.

‘After the aftershock happens, rocks will cover that place. Because of that, one of the two volumes for the mana technique ends up being destroyed.’

Roan bit his lower lip tightly.

‘In my past life, Viscount Potter obtained quite a fine first volume.....’

He suffered an attack from Duke Voiza, who got the news before he could learn it or he got taken by the kingdom, and lost his life.

‘And Duke Voiza gave that mana technique to his son. Although it had only half the volume, that guy.....’

He became one of the strongest guys in Rinse kingdom.

‘The problem was that he betrayed the kingdom and he escaped to Estia Kingdom.’

Roan ground his teeth.

Because he remembered the fierce and cruel war that happened because of him.

‘Anyways, it’s a clear truth that he became incredibly strong just with half of the volume.’

Flames appeared in his eyes.

‘But today, I’m not getting only half of it, but the complete technique.’

His chest beat.

His eyes were fixed on a mountain hillside.

‘There, or there. Somewhere should be the fire monarch.’

Kugugugung.

Maiei mountain trembled roughly just like it was making the last movements.

A weird sound was spread far away through the wind.

And that was just like the sound of announcing a historical fomentation.

As soon as the earthquake stopped, Roan started to climb the mountain.

His face was filled with confidence.

‘For now, everything I remembered is correct.’

As a result, there was a high probability for the location of the cave to be the same as his memories.

‘Right. There’s no way it’s wrong.’

The scandal that shook not only Rinse kingdom, but the entire continent.

The scandal that made Estia Kingdom, which was the homeland of the fire monarch, increases Rinse kingdom’s status as its first enemy country.

It was something impossible for Roan, who was a soldier of Rinse Kingdom.

‘It certainly was discovered at the southwestern part.’

Roan searched through his memories and searched many hillsides.

His hands, clothes, face and hair became a mess with dirt.

Because of the shape of the ground, it wasn’t even easy to walk.

“Whew.”

Even so, Roan didn’t rest.

No, he rather moved even quicker.

Those tenacious steps crossed the mountain.

And finally, it was when he reached a valley after he passed a big rock.

“Ah.....”

A low exclamation came out of Roan’s mouth.

There was a cave on a cliff in the valley.

‘It’s there. I’m certain it is.’

Roan instinctively knew.

Although it was a scene that wasn’t in his memories, his entire body reacted strongly.

‘There’s the mana technique of the fire monarch Reid.’

Roan started to climb the valley with a half absent minded face.

He jumped off and dirt and rocks fell over his head, but he never stopped.

And finally he arrived in front of the cave in the Potter region that he longed for so much.

“Whew.”

Roan let out a long sigh and moved inside the cave.

His heart was beating fast and his ears went numb.

A mana technique he hadn’t even thought of learning in his past life.

But in this life he would be able to learn the mana technique of one of the strongest person in the world titled the fire monarch Reid.

That chance was right in front of him.

Footsteps filled the entire cave.

How long had he walked?

Roan, who was walking with strength, abruptly stopped.

A skeleton was sitting at a side of the cave while leaning on it.

‘Fire monarch Reid.’

It was certainly him.

Between the torn and disintegrated clothes, three books with a red cover were in it.

Everything had dust and dirt covering it, but only the three books maintained a perfect state.

‘Why is it three books?’

Reid mana technique was certainly a book divided in two volumes.

The truth of a third volume existing was something that wasn’t in his memories.

Roan slowly approached and carefully grabbed the books.

The big letters engraved in the red cover sharply pierced his eyes.

<Flamdor mana technique.>

This was the mana technique the fire monarch used.

And it was certainly composed of two volumes.

‘Then this.....’

Roan looked at the third and final book.

<Reid’s art of fighting.> (It says boxing, but a bit weird for the time)

“Ah.....”

A low exclamation came out.

‘There was also the art of fighting of the monarch in this place.’

He had a thought.

‘Would the soldiers of Viscount Potter also have discovered this book in my past life? Or did it also get destroyed along the second volume?’

He couldn’t know the answer.

But even until the day Roan died, no one that mastered the monarch’s art of fighting appeared.

‘In the end, did this also get buried in the ground?’

Roan took in a deep breath.

‘Anyways, it will become of great help to me.’

A harvest he hadn’t expected.

He calmed down his excited heart and stored away the three books in his bag.

‘Is this the real start?’

Roan tightly bit his lower lip.

From now on it was time to experience things he hadn't in his past life.

‘Mana training.’

He took in a deep breath.

‘But now I have to leave the mountain before the soldiers of the viscount come.’

But he wasn't planning to move far away.

He was planning to study the mana technique in a secluded place.

No, precisely speaking.

‘It would be feeling the mana.’

Roan hit his chest.

‘If Reid was the fire monarch.....’

His mouth rose.

‘Am I the fire spear king?’



But then, he shook his head.

His eyes shone.

‘Fire monarch.’

Roan clenched his teeth.

‘I will become the fire monarch.’

Then, he saw the laid down skeleton of Reid.

‘Ah! When the aftershock ends tomorrow, the soldiers of Viscount Potter will come to investigate.’

Then, a really bad thing happens to the skeleton.

The soldiers break it to pieces saying that they would take it away.

‘I can’ let that happen in this life.’

Roan took out the cloth used to make a roof and carefully stored away the skeleton.

He concentrated to see if he had missed any small pieces.

“Huh?”

Then, something grabbed his attention.

A silver semicircle object the size of a nail.

That was below Reid's right hand.

In the end of the pondering, Roan extended his fingers.

Tuk.

The thing he thought would be hard, was really squishy.

“Ah!”

Roan instinctively yelled with a surprised expression.

Because an incredible chill was felt from the tip of his fingers.

At the same time the semicircle object that was on the ground disappeared like something washed it away.

“Huh?”

Roan looked everywhere for it but he couldn't find it.

‘It didn't get absorbed by my finger, right?’

He looked at his finger and then frowned.

Fortunately, there was nothing wrong with his body.

‘I feel weird for nothing.’

He smacked his lips and after searching the cave once more he shook his head.

‘Well, it won’t be anything.’

He erased his uneasiness and then carefully raised the delicately packed skeleton.

Then.

Kurururu.

His feet trembled.

“Huh?”

Roan frowned and looked inside the cave.

‘Aftershock?!’

Something he hadn’t expected at all.

‘Shouldn’t the aftershock start tomorrow?’

The source of the calamity was that he had dropped his guard

because everything happened just like memories.

He looked at the entrance of the cave.

Kugugugu.

The tremor and the sound worsened.

Tududuk. Tuduk. Tuk.

Rocks fell on the entrance of the cave.

“No!”

If the entrance got blocked it would be hard to leave.

Roan hurriedly charged forward and threw himself.

However.

Bang! Baaang!

An amazing sound exploded.

At the same time, the open entrance crumbled.

“Ah.....”

Roan stood at the tightly blocked entrance and let out a low exclamation.

His memories of his past life.

Everything was right until now except for one thing.

The time when the aftershock happened.

Because of that he ended up being trapped inside the cave.

Roan's mouth twisted.

“Damn it!”

He cursed unconsciously.

## Chapter 52 : Mana technique (2)

---

The cave was pitch black but it wasn't a big problem because he had Kalian's tear.

Roan kicked and pushed the rocks but they didn't even flinch.

'My memories about the aftershock were wrong?'

He sat in the entrance and shook his head while picking up some pebbles.

'No. The aftershock certainly happens tomorrow.'

Then only one case remained.

That a landslide or the collapse of the mountain he didn't know of had happened.

'If my assumption is true, then the aftershock will happen tomorrow and the rocks at the entrance will get cleared. But.....'

By then, soldiers of Viscount Potter would be located at every place on the mountain.

'They wouldn't just send out a person that came out of a cave like that.'

If he was unfortunate, not even losing the books would be enough, he would even have his neck cut off to prevent rumours

spreading.

“Damn.”

Roan threw away a pebble that he was holding.

He wouldn't be able to clear the rocks from the entrance like this.

‘I have to find a method to get out.’

That was the way to live.

Roan stood up and moved towards the opposite side of the entrance, to the deeper parts of the cave.

But as it got more narrow, a completely different space appeared.

“It was completely blocked off.”

Roan then returned to the entrance.

He saw the worn cloth that had wrapped Reid's skeleton.

‘This is all because of you sir. Why are you here from all the many plac.....’

Roan, that was grumbling, frowned and tilted his head.

‘Now that I think of it, what's the reason for the fire monarch to have come all the way here?’

Reid was a duke of the defeated kingdom of Estia and the head of the strong powerhouse 'Flame' 50 years ago.

But what could be the reason that that kind of person came to die in the southern region of Rinse kingdom and in a small and secluded cave that was on a mountain like Maiel mountain?

Roan slowly looked through his memories.

He was searching for Reid's whereabouts from his countless memories.

And the most convincing rumour of them.

'He battled against the goddess of water Biate and the both of them ended up wounded without gaining anything.'

Biate was also one of the strongest that could be counted on one hand who shook the continent.

Especially because she was the first human, and the strongest messenger, who made a contract with the water spirit king Elaim.

Reid, who used the force of fire, didn't like Biate who used the force of water at all.

'Fire and water. They wanted to see who was stronger through the battle.'

But Biate, who distanced herself from battles and wars kept declining the duel request countless times and hid herself.

'But if the rumours are true.....'



Roan looked at the cave slowly.

‘This cave may somehow be related to miss Biate.’

But there was nothing worth anything here to be called a trace in this small cave.

‘Maybe.....?’

Then, Roan pulled out his bag and took out the three books Reid had left.

‘Wouldn’t he have left something when he died here?’

He carefully spread the first volume of the Flamdor mana book and cautiously checked if there was anything related to Reid’s death.

The sound of pages being flipped through filled the cave.

And when he passed the last one, Roan’s two eyes turned big.

“Ah.....”

A low exclamation.

There was something.

The content that Roan was looking for was on the last page.

His eyes moved sideways quickly.

<Reid Flamdor. I'm leaving a short word before dying.>

He started by announcing that he didn't have much to live.

<I came over here after finding out that the water goddess Biate Ellon's dwelling place was inside Maiel mountain. I requested for a duel but she served me some tea and declined indirectly. In the end I grabbed her, who was trying to wash off her hands first and flee, forcefully and battled her. We fought for four days and four nights inside her dwelling place. We were really angry at each other. I believed that I was the strongest among humans. However while fighting, I have never overwhelmed her even once. In the end I, who was blind because of the competitiveness, used my final weapon which shouldn't have been used. At that moment, the duel that was looking for who was superior ended up being a life and death one.>

His heart beat quickly.

'The rumours were true!'

The reason the fire monarch Reid and the water Goddess Biate who disappeared approximately at the same time 50 years ago was because of their duel, no, because of the life and death battle.

Roan hurriedly checked the following content.

<In the end she and I ended up gaining nothing but injuries.

We realized that we didn't have any possibility in surviving because of the severe wounds.

I wanted to die under the hot sun if I were going to die.

I came out of the dwelling place and came to the cave, but I didn't have the strength to move anymore.

When I was leaving my last words while looking at the sunlight that shone at the entrance, the water spirit king Ellaim came to look at me.

He may have wanted to take revenge because I made her die.

However Biate forgave me.

She left to Poskein lake along with water spirit king Ellaim.

I didn't know the exact reason, but it couldn't have been the same as me.....

The moment I was dying I longed for a hot place, and she would be longing for a deep and wide body of water.>

The handwriting became dimmer and shook.

<I'm leaving the Flamdor mana technique and Reid battling skills to the one fated to me.

Don't even think about returning it back to Estia kingdom or to the Flamdor family. Only, if it gets taken by them that is also unavoidable. Because the strength of the fire can only be obtained by the strong ones.>

The letter was finally showing its end.

<Also, the fated one will be able to get near Biate. But only the

fated one.>

Roan moved his sight away with the last sentence.

<I die after realizing that fire and water aren't non compatible but, a coexistence.>

These were words that he didn't know the meaning of.

However, the important thing wasn't the last sentence.

'This place is the entrance to get inside miss Biate's dwelling place.'

His sight moved inside.

'But it means that the tight space is the entrance.....'

Roan bit his lower lip.

'He said that only the fated one would be able to get in.'

But he didn't have any relationships with Biate.

But even so, he couldn't just stand still and waste time.

'Anyways, there's a place beyond that wall for me to hide.'

Roan put the book away and held his bag.

And he carefully embraced the cloth with the skeleton.

Step. Step.

Footsteps was heard inside the cave.

Roan stood in front of the wall once more.

‘There has to be some kind of secret device.’

He kept checking the wall up and down, and to the sides.

However he couldn’t see any special traces even after having checked everywhere.

‘Then, next.....’

Roan extended his right arm and put it on the top right.

The tips of his fingers moved to the end of the walls.

He wasn’t hurried.

He carefully checked the wall while putting all of his concentration at the tip of his fingers.

Then, Roan’s finger reached in a middle part.

“Ah!”

A surprised voice and expression came out.

Roan moved his hand away from the wall and looked at his finger.

‘I suddenly feel an incredible chill.....’

A familiar feeling.

‘Ah! The silver semi-circular object that was on the floo.....’

When he was thinking like that.

A small change occurred on the stone wall.

A silver water drop appeared in the place where he took his fingers off.

“Huh?”

His eyes turned big.

‘This is the same as the silver object from before?’

Roan fixed his sight on the wall.

Pat.

Then, the water drop that surged out took the shape of a wheel.

And after that it started to spin.

Guguguguk.

At the same time, the sound of rock and sand grinding was heard.

“Ah.....”

A low exclamation came out of Roan’s mouth.

The stone wall that was blocked without even having a bit of space, started to open to the sides little by little.

Boom.

An entrance appeared along with a heavy sound.

Roan didn’t hesitate.

He moved inside the door.

Guguguguk.

The stone wall turned to its original place once again and perfectly blocked the cave.

The silver wheel that was spinning once more hid itself in the wall.

A perfect darkness and silence.

Nothing could be felt inside the cave anymore.

\*\*\*\*\*

Roan was half absent-minded.

He couldn't believe the scene that was spread out in front of him.  
A huge space that was spread out in a small cave.

‘Is Maiel mountain completely empty inside?’

To the point he thought that.

However, seeing that mines were being developed in many places, this scene was difficult to understand.

‘Just piercing through a little bit seems like this region would appear.’

Roan tilted his head and then went down the stairs.

‘It certainly is miss Biate's space, whoever sees it would think this.’

It was to the point he thought Biate? Even when he didn't have previous information.

In the huge place, water streams were flowing from east to west and north to south, and in the place the two rivers met, there was quite a large pond.

The surprising thing was that on one side of the wall, a huge



waterfall was falling.

‘I certainly can’t hear a thing when this much water is splashing.’

It was a feeling that his eyesight and hearing senses turned bad.

Roan evaded the many small and big ponds that were at various places and went to the place where many books were piled up.

A huge table.

And the books that were spread everywhere.

‘So this is the place where miss Biate battled against sir Reid.’

Taking that into account, the place was too neat.

The two of them were the strongest in the continent.

They wouldn’t have fought like normal soldiers.

‘There should also be some secret in here.’

Roan started to thoroughly check the books that were spread around in a sloppy way.

‘Sir Reid also left a letter while dying. Miss Biate wouldn’t have left something like that.’

They were historical figures even when they were alive.

He thought that there would be no way those kind of people left the world without even leaving a last mark.

Especially if it was the beautiful and ladylike Biate that was beautiful to the point she was called as a goddess.

His hand, that was moving on the table, stopped.

A shallow book reached his fingers.

<.....Leave it to you.>

Because of the many books covering it he could only see the last words.

As Roan pulled that book, the other books tumbled down.

‘Certainly!’

Roan put on a faint smile after checking the contents of the book.  
It seemed that he had found what he wanted.

<Biate Ellon leaves you her last words.>

The following content was just like what Reid had left behind.

But the only difference was that it wasn’t Reid, but Biate.

However at the end, a completely different story was written.

<The reason I chose this huge empty cave as my dwelling place is because it was the lair of blue dragon Berr. All the space is filled with water energy. Because of that, it also isn’t bad to choose this as my last one.

But even so, I like Poskein lake even more.

There are children that follow me over there.

That's why i'm thinking of living my last days over there.

To the one who fate has connected us.

For you to have entered here and be reading this means that you realized the essence of water or you absorbed it.>

‘Huh? The essence of the water?’

Roan frowned.

He remembered the silver waterdrop that was absorbed by his fingers.

‘That's the essence of the water? But why was it on the floor?’

He didn't know.

Roan continued to read through the letter.

<I will entrust you the lair of sir Berr. It's fine to use what's here however you like. Even so, it would only be useless books and some objects.

If perhaps you really want to climb to the top of the water, come to Poskein lake to find me.

I will leave my last piece over there.

The one that finds that piece will be able to obtain the strength of water and my children.>

These were difficult words to understand.

Different than Reid's words, that were frank and concise, Biate's words were entirely gentle and significative.

Even so, the last word was quite frank.

<Goodbye.>

“Whew.”

Roan let out a long sigh and covered the book.

He sat in the chair and fell into his thoughts.

‘For now I can understand why this place is unbelievably big and strange.....’

It has already been 200 years since dragons disappeared.

But the stories about them kept being passed along without missing anything.

And the dragon lair was the same.

A lair was a place humans couldn't get in as they wished or make a dent with their strength.

Roan took in a deep breath.

‘Duke Voisa, who took away the Flamdor mana technique from Viscount Potter couldn't have not seen the words sir Reid left.’

He slowly started to remember.

“Ah.....”

A low exclamation came out.

“So that’s what happened. I wondered why Duke Voisa was interested in developing Poskein lake.....”

A feeling the puzzles in his head fell into place.

‘Duke Voisa would have done everything to try to enter this place. But as he couldn’t enter at all, he must have turned his attention to the lake.’

He thought that Biate would also have left something like Reid while dying.

But even so, if he moved that openly then flies could gather.

‘That’s why he suddenly came out with developing the lake.’

But even so, he wouldn’t have received the results that he wanted.

Rather, because of Duke Voisa’s movements, the other three countries jumped in on the development of the lake competitively.

‘And on that process, the pirate king Beck app.....’

When he thought up to that.

Bang.

Roan abruptly stood up.

The chair fell and rolled on the ground but he didn't care.

He yelled in a loud voice as if he was possessed.

“Beck! So that bastard found the piece of miss Biate!”

# Chapter 53 : Mana technique (3)

---

Of course everything was a guess.

But if it was like his guess, everything would fit.

‘The reason the four kingdoms, Rinse kingdom included, jumped in to develop the lake and the reason why Beck, who was originally a marine, could become the pirate king.’

The things that weren't related to each other fit together like a puzzle.

‘Then, the children miss Biate talked about.....’

Roan had a faint smile.

‘They are the mermaids.’

They were very similar to humans overall, but they had rakes in their toes, their skin was so smooth it seemed transparent, and their eyes were really mysterious.

They had gills behind their ears, so living underwater was possible for this race, and they were staying in a deep part of Poskein lake.

‘It's not known for now, but after 10 years they appear along with Beck.’

In his past life, Beck and the head of the mermaids were a couple.

Because of that, Roan and other ordinary people thought that the reason Beck received the help of the mermaids was because of that relation.

‘But if he obtained the piece miss Biate left.....’

And if the children Biate was talking about were the mermaids, Beck would have been able to treat them merely as sea creatures because of the artifact Biate had left.

“Whew.”

Roan let out a long sigh.

‘But in this life everything changed because of me.’

First, as he had obtained the Flamdor mana technique and Reid’s skeleton, the soldiers of Potter wouldn’t be able to obtain anything.

And also Duke Voisa wouldn’t be able to obtain anything, different to his past life, and the development of the lake wouldn’t happen.

A naval force wouldn’t be created by the Aimas alliance and Beck wouldn’t become a marine.

‘Is this a good thing? Or a bad thing?’



He couldn't know yet.

However the really certain thing was that only Roan had this information and the pieces of the puzzle in his hand.

‘Is it a monopoly for now?’

His mouth raised slightly.

The Flamdor mana technique, Reid battling skills and continued by the lair of blue dragon Berr and the hidden artifact of Biate.

All these things became his.

“Anyways.....”

Roan looked at the tip of his fingers.

The silver waterdrop.

‘Is that really the essence of water?’

He searched on the other books Biate had left but in the end he gave up.

The contents were really varied and there were a lot of books, so finding the information he wanted immediately was close to impossible.

‘I would be able to do it if I do it slowly.’

Anyways, he had to stay here for quite a while.

‘At least one month.....

‘

By then the knight and the soldiers of Viscount Potter, who were searching the mountain, would all have gone back.

Roan looked at his bag.

‘By then, let’s learn the Flamdor mana technique.’

He couldn’t waste even a day.

He was planning to train in mana in this place.

But unfortunately, Roan had overlooked about one truth.

That this was the lair of the blue dragon and it was filled with water energy.

\*\*\*\*\*

Roan thought seriously.

‘Aren’t I a genius?’

The reason he thought like this.

‘I felt mana in only one day.’

He sat and took a posture just like the book told him to and then he breathed and concentrated.

Meaningless repetition of inhaling and exhaling.

Even so, his concentration didn't scatter.

‘Even Pierce, who was called a genius, took two days to feel mana.’

He threw away the uneasy feeling.

But exactly one day.

Something soft came in along the breath.

‘Mana!’

At the new and surprising feeling, his concentration scattered, and the mana he sensed that was like a thread disappeared instantly.

But he was certain that it was the mana he saw in books or dreams.

Roan took a posture again and sat.

When he repeated breathing twice more.

He once again felt something soft.

But it was only up to there.

‘I certainly can feel mana.’

The energy that flowed through his skin.

The energy that entered his body through the nose and mouth.  
He clearly felt the thing called mana.

‘But why doesn’t it pile up on my body?’

But this hateful mana just went sightseeing in his body and fled again to the outside world.

The mana hole that was the size of a fingernail and was in his lower stomach was still empty.

‘Let’s concentrate. Concentrate.’

Roan fixed his posture and continued to pull mana towards his body.

The mana spun around in his chest and abdomen.

But that bastard escaped again to the outside world with the exhaling.

That thing repeated nine times.

“Even if this is wrong it’s seriously wrong.....”

Roan let out a long sigh and shook his head.

There was exhaustion on his face.

He wasn’t tired physically, but mentally.

‘Am I understanding the technique wrong?’

He spread the first volume of the book.

But however times he read and reviewed it, he didn't find any wrong points.

No, rather, the wrong point was in the mana.

‘I just have to pile up the mana itself inside my body. As I only pile up the separated fire essence.....’

Originally, the thing called mana was an energy which all the attributes were gathered together.

On top of that, they were fiercely free and liked to scatter.

Because of that the normal process was that of pulling mana inside your body and accumulating it.

But in the Flamdor technique, in the accumulation process, the fire essence was separated from the mana inside the body, and after separating the other essences the remaining energies went outside the body again.

And only the remaining fire essence was accumulated in the mana hole.

‘Normal mana techniques are different in each situation, but most are non attributed. However the Flamdor technique shows a pure fire attribute to the point it's an extremity.’

Reid used this mana technique that utilized only one essence to the extreme and became the strongest human.

‘But why can’t I separate the mana? It just feels like there was no fire essence from the start.....’

Roan, who was shaking his head, stopped and opened his eyes widely.

His sight was directed to a side of the wall.

“Ah.....”

A low exclamation.

He saw the waterfall falling non stop.

“You stupid.”

Roan hit his dull head once and then shook his head.

‘In the last words miss Biate left it was certainly written. That because this place was the lair of blue dragon Berr, it’s filled with water essence.’

He tried to accumulate fire essence in a place like this.

‘The fire essence in this place would be really scarce.’

When he thought that, there was another thing that worried him.

Roan spread his hand.

‘If the silver waterdrop that got absorbed in my finger is really the essence of water, won’t I have problems in mastering the Flamdor technique?’

However he had never felt any changes in his body or felt weird. He let out a long sigh.

‘Did I get stuck from the start?’

Even so, he didn’t give up.

‘However much there is the essence of water, there couldn’t not be the essence of fire.’

After training and training the technique he would at least be able to separate a grain sized essence.

Roan opened the spread book and pushed it to the sides.

‘Huh? Now that I see.....’

Then, the thought that passes through his head suddenly.

‘Didn’t mister Reid fight in a place like this with miss Biate and reach a stalemate?’

This place was really filled with water essence.

It was the worst place for Reid, who utilized the essence of fire.  
But even so the result was a stalemate.  
Roan took in a deep breath.

‘Mister Reid was certainly a lot stronger than miss Biate.’

At least in strength.

His affection and interest in the Flamdor mana technique became even bigger.

He fixed his posture and closed his eyes.

‘Let’s concentrate.’

Anyways, he didn’t have anything to do for one month.

Roan slowly took in a breath and pulled mana in his body.

The continued process of separation and accumulation.

But the process was of course a failure.

However he didn’t give up.

And didn’t even falter.

Roan kept concentrating on the technique while seated.

\*\*\*\*\*

The wide space was sickly quiet.

Roan was seated on a place where water splashed without sound.

He was firmly seated on the ground.



A peaceful face.

His chest and abdomen that heaved up.

It felt just like time had stopped.

Then.

“Whew.”

Roan let out a long sigh and slowly opened his eyes.

A faint smile appeared.

“Finally success.”

Trembling voice.

‘I finally separated the essence of fire and accumulated it in the mana hole.’

It has been twenty days since he first sensed mana.

Although it was only the size of a grain, he was satisfied.

No, he was shuddering.

‘I, I can also use mana.’

He wanted to stand up immediately and yell.

However Roan pressed down those feelings.

‘I don’t want to let go of this feeling.’

He realized that it was possible to accumulate fire essence in this place filled with water essence.

Roan didn’t want to let go of this feeling of having separated the mana and accumulating fire essence.

He closed his eyes once again.

‘If ten days pass, it becomes one month. It’s time to slowly get out of here.’

Roan took in a deep breath.

‘If I get outside I will light a fire first. So that it gets filled with fire essence.’

Mana moved inside his body along the inhaling.

He slowly moved the mana inside his body.

Time flowed and kept flowing like that.

\*\*\*\*\*

Roan stood up and looked at Brent’s ring.

‘Although the mana is the size of a coin.....’

Even so, he thought that he would be able to use one of the

abilities of the ring that were asleep.

In his face, expectation he couldn't hide, appeared.

Roan softly clenched his fists and walked to the front.

He injected mana into the ring.

As the mana road was still narrow and the operation was rough it took quite a long time.

Then.

Pat.

Light shined from the ring and after that a ball of light the size of two fists, no, a light marble appeared.

‘So this is light magic. It's still small and.....’

When he thought up to then.

Pat.

The light marble disappeared without a trace.

At the same time, the coin sized mana in his mana hole also disappeared without a trace.

He spent all his mana on just calling a light marble.

‘I still shouldn't say that I know how to use mana.’

Roan smiled bitterly and operated the Flamdor mana technique while seated.

The mana that was spent didn't mean that it disappeared.

The mana that was outside his body would slowly gather to the original place.

Roan utilized the mana technique to gather the mana a little bit faster.

He still had one more thing to do.

After a while, Roan let out a long sigh and stood up.

The coin sized mana was once again filled up.

He grabbed the metal stick on his waist.

‘Travias spear.’

The guy that needed mana to show itself.

‘It will still be difficult to see its real shape.....’

Roan grabbed the stick with his right hand and sent mana to it.

He didn't twist it like he was washing clothes with both of his hands anymore.

Click.

The sound of gears turning.

Cheeng.

At the same time, a clear sound of metal and a sharp blade surged up.

The stick was entirely sharp, excluding a small part.

Until now, it was what he had seen several times.

Roan kept on inserting his remaining mana.

Chang!

A pleasing sound.

At the same time, the metal stick surged up and the blade started to get a bit longer.

The stick that was originally smaller than the arm of an adult now was similar to a long sword.

Because of that, the part it that seemed like the blade of a sword also seemed like the blade of a spear.

“Ah!”

Then, a low exclamation came out of Roan’s mouth.

The mana had all been spent up.

Chang!

At the same time, the spear returned to its original length.

“Whew.”

Roan sighed with a regrettable face.

‘It certainly is difficult to see the real shape of the spear.’

Travias spear.

According to the amount of mana inserted, the length of the blade and the body and the thickness of it could be controlled as he wished.

On top of that, as it was made with refined gold dinyum by a dragon, the consumption of mana wasn’t that big.

‘Wait a little bit more. I will soon let you smell the battlefield.’

Roan smacked his lips and twisted his hands again.

Cheng.

The blade hid itself and it became a stick again.

Roan placed the spear on his waist and moved towards the desks.

‘Should I get out now?’

It had already been a month since he entered here.

It was time for the knight and the soldiers to return back.

Roan put the books and the skeleton in his bag and chose some gems that were piled up on a place and stored them away.

‘It’s the lair of dragon.....’

Just like the words Biate left behind, the amount of the gems or gold wasn’t that much.

At least two bags.

But of course even with that much was something normal people wouldn’t be able to touch their entire lives, but Roan who had to do many big things from now on was really lacking.

Even so, he didn’t feel regret at all.

‘Anyways, I can earn plenty of money through operating mana crystal mines and gem mines.’

Rather, because of this amount, he became able to make an investment in each field a little bit faster.

Roan piled up the remaining objects well and raised his bag.

Anyways, there was no one in this life that knew of this place.

On top of that, even if they did know, they weren’t able to enter as they wished.

‘There’s nowhere safer than here.’

He looked around and then moved towards the entrance.

‘It’s a bit regrettable that I couldn’t identify the silver waterdrop.....’

He had thoroughly searched the books while training, but he couldn't discover anything related to it.

‘Well, it’s not a problem yet.’

Regardless of his worries, he could also learn the Flamdor technique.

For now he was planning to cover it.

Roan stood in the entrance and took in a long breath.

‘Thank you for the past month. Stay well until I return.’

The place that saved him.

The place he would be born anew.

He couldn't do anything about the special affection he felt.

Roan looked around for a while and then extended his hand towards the door.

Just like the last time, as he placed his finger in the middle, a chill was felt.

At the same time, the silver waterdrop appeared over the stone wall.

It changed to become a wheel and started to spin.

Guguguguu.



The wall was pushed to the sides along the sound of stone and sand grinding.

Roan moved without hesitation just like before.

Gugugugu.

The stone wall closed back like it had been waiting.

In the place Roan left, a heavy silence fell.

Then, a strange sound that wasn't heard until now rang out in the place.

Chwaaaaa.

And that was the sound of the waterfall.

At the same time, the waterfall that was flowing on the fall, split to the sides.

And from between it, a beautiful lady appeared.

Blue hair, transparent skin that made your eyes hurt.

She, who was wearing a white dress, was barefoot but it didn't have any meaning.

Because she was floating just like a cloud.

The lady looked at the entrance from where Roan left just now and had a weird expression.

And that was an expression intersecting expectation, sadness and regret.

“For the kid that absorbed my tear to learn the Flamdor mana

technique.”

The voice that melts softly.

Around the lady, blue light gathered like a stream of water.

She hesitated for a moment and then went back to the waterfall again.

“Is this a good thing or a bad thing... Oh Biate, I still can’t understand your meaning.”

The lady that called Biate, who was dead for tens of years, like a friend.

Her last words filled the cave that had no one in it.

# Chapter 54 : To The North (1)

---

Fortunately the mountain was quiet.

As aftershocks kept happening, the soldiers had turned back.

Roan used Kalian's tear actively and went out of the mountain while avoiding the eyes of people.

He first moved towards the south rather than the north, where the rose troop was.

His objective was a plain that was spread on the boundaries.

'The hottest place in the kingdom.'

Roan wanted to bury Reid's skeleton in the hottest place possible.

'Actually I wanted to bring him to Etna mountain.....'

The Etna volcano that overflowed with lava during the four seasons.

However the mountain was located at the southwestern end from even Dies kingdom.

As Roan didn't have a permit, he couldn't cross over to another kingdom.

'Sir Reid. This is the hottest place in the kingdom.'

He thought that being hot was similar to the essence of fire resembling the essence of the sun.

Roan dug into the ground in a place that didn't have many humans and then placed the skeleton in it.

After he piled up some dirt over it, he placed wood and grass on it.

‘This is everything I can do for you.’

He used a flint and set it on fire.

The dried logs and grass instantly lit on fire.

‘If my understanding in the Flamdor mana technique was deep I would have been able to create fire with just the flick of my fingers.’

Roan looked at the fire and sat down.

He was trying to operate the mana technique in a place other than Biate's place.

As he started to breathe, the mana started to flow inside his body.

The amount of mana compared to the place of Biate certainly fell behind.

But.

‘Ah.....’

An incredible heat covered his body.

‘Hot.’

In the mana spinning in his body, there was abundant fire essence.

An amount of essence that couldn’t be compared until now was separated.

The essence of fire violently flowed following the mana road.

Roan kept breathing and accumulated the essence of fire in his mana hole.

The mana hole that was the size of a coin started to swell up and then it became the size of half a fist.

“Whew.”

Roan let out a long sigh and slowly opened his eyes.

The fire that was burning had lost strength and was dying.

‘Is it because I absorbed the fire essence?’

Roan smirked and stood up.

He wanted to keep training in the mana by setting all of this place on fire.

However, operating the mana technique in this empty place was quite a dangerous thing.

‘Anyways, it’s certainly more effective than the lair of the blue

dragon.'

He was happy and satisfied with just that.

Roan placed some more grass and logs on the dying fire and bowed.

'I will write a new history with the mana technique and the brawling techniques you had left.'

Roan said his thanks and his last words and then started to move.

The bright flame danced like it was saying it's farewell.

\*\*\*\*\*

Roan moved towards the north.

But this time, he didn't use a ship but went by ground.

His objective was the capital of Miller.

'I have to meet with mister Chris.'

The reason why he was looking for in the middle of returning to the troop.

'My memories about battles, war, strategies and things related to army of the kingdom are clear but.....'

There weren't many things he could trust in aside of those things.

Especially, it was all the more so about merchants and commercial rights.

'About when I died, goldmaster Seil was monopolizing everything.'

Because of that, he didn't have many memories about merchants.

'I need a safe information importing in for the future.'

Because of that he had to raise a young merchant and business.

But however he found in his memories, that there was no one suitable for investment.

'If there's none in my memories, I will have to find them myself.'

Roan was planning to ask that to Chris.

'There's nowhere like Miller with had an abundance of people.'

There would certainly be many young merchants that became discouraged and broken because of the clash with reality.

He had to pick the ones with talent and had a future amongst them.

‘If it’s mister Chris he will be able to do it.’

Chris bit his lower lip.

His steps started to become faster.

Because he walked constantly, he reached to the capital in a shorter time than he thought.

Even in his past life, he had only visited the capital 10 times.

It was a place that wasn’t that related to him.

‘But in this life it’s different.’

To reach a higher place he could only get closer to the capital.

Fortunately, he could pass the inspection at the entrance faster than anyone.

Because he was a class 5 adjutant from the kingdom.

Roan soon went to Lisa street.

The street had Chris told him to come to when he came.

“Now! There are fruits imported from the south!”

“There are medicinal herbs taken from Grein mountain! And also medicinal waters taken from Mas river!”

“There’s good quality paper! And also good quality ink!”

“Look at the wheat of Peidan’s plain!”

Noisy sounds.

There were hundreds of small and big stalls at the sides, with tens of varieties.



‘Certainly, rather than a high class shopping district, there’s a more human smell in Lisa district.’

There was nowhere like this place in Miller.

But of course, this was Roan’s personal taste.

He asked about Chris’s whereabouts to the people that came and went.

‘Oh. He already opened his travel agency.’

Roan was truly happy.

‘I won’t be able to go in empty handed.’

He went to a nearby fruit store.

“Oh! Welcome! What fruit may I give you? Nowadays, the strawberries are really sweet.”

Roan ate one strawberry that the owner gave him and nodded.

“Give me one basket of it.”

“Oh! Thank you!”

The owner placed the strawberries on a wide leaf and started to roll it.

Roan started to walk after he finished his business.

“They said it was around here.....”

He stopped walking and looked at the sides.

“Ah.....”

A low exclamation came out that instant.

‘However shabby it is, it is too much.’

A really worn out building compared to the others.

He saw a small signboard in front of him.

<Chris travel agency.>

‘This is the right place.’

Roan fixed his clothes and then opened the door.

“Welcome!”

A loud voice.

A familiar voice was heard.

Chris, who was studying a book in the small place, stood up.

“What may I help.....”

He was greeting him while walking towards Roan and then, he froze when he saw him.

Roan smiled faintly and slightly bowed.

“Hello mister Chris. It’s been a while.”

“Si, sir adjutant Roan?”

Chris fumbled with a surprised expression.

Roan smiled brightly and lent the strawberries he had in his hands.

“Want to eat strawberries together?”

\*\*\*\*\*

Bang!

Rock scraps flew along with a loud noise.

“Sir viscount! I already told you, you can’t break the stone pillars!”

The young soldiers yelled with a surprised expression.

On the other hand, the middle aged man that broke the pillar smiled brightly and lightly swung the spear he had in his hand.

Tung! Tutung! Tung!

The big rocks that were on the ground floated.

Grip.

He put strength in his hands.

Pat!

The spear split the air.

The trace only left was the tail.

Pubuk! Puk! Pubuk!

The rocks that were in the air turned to dust even before they fell to the ground.

Marvelousness.

Just like it implied, it felt like watching the technique of a god.  
(T/N: Word joke. It can be viewed as Marvelous:god – ness:technique.)

The middle aged man put back his spear and let out a long sigh.

“Good. Finished my morning training!”

At those words, the soldier said displeased words.

“Ah.....I’m dead.”

“The steward said he couldn’t break the pillars.....”

The middle aged man ignored those words and walked.

He walked with his shoes that were filled with dirt and went towards the office.

“Whew! Certainly, the morning training is the most refreshing!”

The middle aged man wiped off the sweat with his sleeve and put a satisfied smile.

Both of his hands, clothes and shoes were filled with dirt.

However he didn’t care at all.

Rather, he placed his legs over the table that was filled with piles of paper.

Then, the door opened and a middle aged man with clean clothes appeared.

He let out a long sigh while standing in front of the man covered in dirt.

“Whew. Viscount Baker. You broke the pillars again?”

At those words, a humorous voice was heard.

“Kevin. I told you to just call me by my name when we were alone. What’s with Viscount Baker? Just call me Viscount Reil.”

It was a really comical expression and hand movements.

The middle aged man covered in dirt was the rumoured genius spearman Reil Baker.

Next to him was the steward Kevin, who served him for more than 30 years.

“We are nobles that don’t even have a territory, but we have a need to act like one. On top of that, do you know how many things there are as nobles? Even now there are many people that wish to see you and some invita.....”

When he talked up to then.

Reil raised his right hand.

“Stop. I understand so stop the lecturing. Just how many things are there to do?”

At those words Kevin took one more step and gathered all the papers and letters that were spread on the table.

“Excluding the non important ones, this much remain.”

A paper mountain that surged up the table.

At that moment, Reil frowned and had a weird expression.

“Huh? Why is there this much?”

“It gets piled up as you don’t do any work all day and just focus on training in the spear.”

A sulky voice.

Kevin was a bit upset.

Reil wanted to say something but didn’t.

‘If I talk wrongly here I have to hear his complaints for 10 days.’

He glanced at Kevin and then put his hand among the pile of paper.

“Ahem.”

An awkward cough.

It meant to tell him to get out, but Kevin didn’t move at all.

<Review it quickly.>

His eyes were telling that.

Reil smacked his lips and then looked at the pile of papers.

“Mmm. This is a request to give a speech in Miller academy. I did it last year so... declined. This is an invitation to a brat’s party that’s from the family of a duke, obviously declined. I already met

this one the past month, so declined. This region, I went the last month.....”

Swish. Swish. Swish. Swish.

The papers and the letters flew to the sides busily.

Reil vaguely looked at the titles and kept yelling decline.

Kevin’s body started to tremble.

He was right before exploding.

There was no way Reil didn’t discover that.

‘He’s angry. Angry.’

Reil, who was about to throw away one more letter, stopped. Then he acted as if he was looking at the letter thoroughly.

“Mmm. It’s sent by Baron Aaron from the east. If it’s Aaron Tate.....”

He acted like he fell into his thoughts just to cool down Kevin’s anger.

“Ah! He’s the one I met at Miller kingdom when I went to the forge! His ability to pick a spear was outstanding.”

A forge operated by one of the three best blacksmiths in the kingdom.



Reil met Aaron at the regular forgery he went to.

He thoroughly checked every weapon, unlike a noble, and then bought the spear Reil had picked.

‘As he was different to the other nobles, I liked him.’

Then, they greeted each other and promised to meet each other next time.

‘Now that I see it, he raised great merits at this Slen battle and Pedian’s monster subjugation.’

He also knew about the news about the 7th corps.

Suddenly, he felt interested.

“Why would baron Aaron Tate have sent me a letter? Hmm. Hm. Hm. Hm. Hm.” Reil hummed and stamped the letter.

And then after a while of reading the contents, he burst out of laughter.

“Huh! This man, I thought that he was fine but he’s a real bragger.”

He shook his head.

Kevin, that was looking at him, and frowned.

“What’s the contents?”

He was also curious.

Reil smirked and looked at the letter.

“I will tell you what’s written. He says that there’s an 18 year old class 5 adjutant on one of his troops and he found out about the ambush of a goblin army and slew their leader. Not only that, but he found out about the large scale surprise monster attack of Pedian’s plain and faced the ogres on top of that. This is not the only thing. It wasn’t enough by planning the inundation strategy on Prely river, but he also slew the orc leader Se.....”

“He slew Sedek?”

Kevin butted in.

“Huh?”

Reid had a bit surprised face.

“How did you know that?”

At the question, Kevin shook his head.

“That’s why I told you to read the battle reports I gave you thoroughly.”

A rebuking sound.

Rein opened his eyes roundly.

“Then all of these things are true?”

“Yes. If it’s a letter sent by Aaron Tate of the 7th corps.”

Kevin answered with a rather uninterested expression.

In the other hand, Reil had a surprised face.

“Wow. So all of these things are true, huh?”

His mouth slightly raised.

Then, Kevin’s voice was heard.

“After looking at this Slen battle report, the soldier that slew Violin’s head also seems to be that class 5 soldier.”

“Ohhhh!”

‘An 18 year old greenhorn accumulated these kind of merits?’

Certainly, there was no way for a person that had good eyes for picking good weapons to not be able to see well.

He raised the letter and looked at Kevin.

He was glaring at him with sharp eyes.

‘Anyways, if I stay here I will just keep hearing his nagging.....’

He looked at the letter again.

‘And the contents of the letter are also interesting.’

Now he was also curious about the 7th corps that was being a lot nowadays.

‘I have never gone to the eastern parts of the kingdom.....’

A smile appeared on his face.

He shook the letter and looked at Kevin.

“Kevin. I will go to the east to sight see for a while.”

At those words Kevin shook his head.

He pointed to the piled papers, letters and invitations.

“There are still these many things you have to check.”

A firm and determined voice and attitude.

Reil smiled brightly and nodded.

He stood up and then swept up everything on the table with his right arm.

Paaat!

The papers and letters that scattered in the air.

“Wh, just what.....”

When Kevin was fumbling with a surprised expression.  
Reil’s humorous voice was heard.

“All declined.”

## Chapter 55 : To The North (2)

---

Roan and Chris kept talking about light things for a while.

After the strawberries were starting to fall short, Roan asked in a low voice.

“How’s the agency going?”

At those words Chris looked at the insides of the building and smiled faintly.

“It’s not bad taking into account I just started.”

He settled in quite a fast time with the comrades he used to run errands with.

And now he was requesting the entrance application for the tourists that wanted to come to Miller castle and the surroundings instead of them.

‘However.....’

Chris gulped down the words that surged up to his throat.

“How good.”

Roan sincerely congratulate him.

‘I can’t do it.’

Chris, who hesitated for a moment, stood up as if he couldn’t hold it in anymore.

“Wait a moment.”

Then, he went to a table and looked for something and after that he came back with piles of paper.

“Will you look at this?”

The piles of papers he gave to Roan.

Roan carefully received it and asked back.

“What’s this?”

At those words Chris laughed awkwardly and scratched the back of his head.

“It’s information I gathered about Miller castle and the surrounding regions while running the agency. I was doing it unconsciously.”

“Ah.....”

Roan let out a low exclamation and started to look at the contents.

For a while, only the sound of paper passing was heard.

Chris seemed somewhat uneasy.

‘I feel like an academy student that’s being evaluated on a subject.’

He smirked and shook his head.

After a while Roan placed down the papers and looked at Chris.

His face was stiffened.

Chris gulped dry saliva.

“Why are you like this? Is this such a mess?”

At those words Roan whispered like he was whispering.

“It would be good if you didn’t publish this as you wish.”

“Ah.....Is it that much?”

Chris was really dispirited.

Then, Roan continued to say.

“There is really important information written down systematically. If you make a bad move you may be seen as a spy of an enemy kingdom.”

“Ah.....”



Chris let out a low exclamation.

His stiffened face loosened up and his mouth raised.

‘I got recognized.’

Actually, he was pondering in big way about his identity.

Travel agency and information group.

Although he did start working like this, he felt bigger fun just by collecting information about Miller castle and the surrounding regions.

‘It’s the first time I felt this much fun since I was born.’

Every time he heard small information and unbelievable rumours, he put in more effort to gather more authentic rumours.

It wasn’t because he wanted to be treated in some way or because someone asked him to.

He just felt too much fun.

‘If I were to pick the travel agency or the information group.....’

The answer was already set.

Then Roan’s voice was heard.

“Mister Chris. This is really amazing. The height of Miller castle, length, precise location of the gate, structure, the shifts of the

guards, and the inner castle. Not only that but the location of the surrounding villages and main roads, and important information of each village is registered.”

“Yes. I gathered and analyzed all the information I could gather.”

Chris replied like it was nothing.

No, he replied like it truly was nothing.

Roan continued saying.

“On top of that there’s also information about important people in this region.”

“After gathering the rumours, I just picked out the authentic ones.”

Certainly, it was a casual voice.

No, he tried to make it seem that way.

Roan smiled faintly and said in a low voice.

“Mister Chris. I think that your talent is even more amazing than what I had thought.”

Boom.

Chris felt a big rock falling on his chest.

A joy he couldn’t precisely describe with words surrounded his entire body.

Roan just looked at that Chris.

Actually, he was much more surprised than what he was showing.

‘To even guess the things that would happen from now on.....’

There were some things written about what would happen in the future, and among them there was information Roan actually knew.

‘The cases that would really happen.’

Chris had precisely guessed the future with limited information.

‘He certainly is the head of the agency that had all the information on the continent in his hands and made the continent shake.’

After looking at the papers, he felt an even greater urge to grab Chris.

However he didn’t want to force him.

He was planning to wait until he truly wanted to do it himself.

Then, Chris that was looking down at the papers, said in a low voice.

“If I get to work in things related to information, what will I be doing?”

He pointed at the papers.

Roan felt that the situation was somewhat weird.

‘The time of choice has come.’

He took some breaths and said with a composed voice.

“Yes. You have to do these things. Only.....”

“Only.....”

Chris copied Roan’s words unconsciously.

Roan pointed at the pile of papers and continued saying.

“You will be handling information about a wider world and broader information.”

“Ah.....”

A low exclamation followed.

Chris felt that his heart beat quickly and that his blood flowed quickly.

This world was much broader and colorful than Miller.

‘I’m grasping all of those things.’

Something that made his chest swell just by thinking of it.

Chris slowly calmed his breath.

He smiled faintly and looked at Roan.

‘Mister Chris.’

Roan forcefully hid his urgent feeling.

He just waited for Chris’s reply.

A moment’s silence.

Poke.

Chris poked the pile of papers with his finger.

“Much broader information and more various than this.....”

His voice was calm but the end slightly shook.

He couldn’t know if he was nervous or excited.

Chris looked at Roan’s eyes fixedly and continued saying.

“I want to handle it.”

Roan didn’t show any reaction.

He just looked at Chris’s eyes.

However Chris didn’t feel stuffed or uneasy.

Roan’s hot eyes.

That was enough.

Chris stood up.

“Sir adjutant Roan.”

He bowed his head.

“Take good care of me from now on.”

A voice filled with strength.

As it turned out like this, Roan too couldn't keep still.

He stood up and bowed.

“Also take good care of me.”

A historical day.

Roan and Chris grabbed hands.

The people who were looking at different directions now looked at the same one.

Then, Roan smiled brightly and said in a low voice.

“Then, should I give you the first task?”

“Already?”

Chris asked back with a surprised expression.

Roan smiled faintly.

“The world is wide but time is limited.”

At those words Chris nodded.

Roan continued to say.

“I’m planning to invest in the merchants in Miller. To the young merchants that are a bit vague right now but have a bright future. I’m talking about people just like you.”

This was the reason he came to Chris in the first place.

‘Should I listen to Chris’s opinion?’

Roan put a strange smile and carefully asked.

“Don’t you have anyone to recommend to me?”

At those words Chris went silent for a moment.

But it wasn’t because he didn’t have anything to say.

The instincts of an information gatherer in getting the initiative of the conversation.

Chris took in a breath and replied in a calm voice.

“There are some. They have talent and their nature is great, so their future is bright.”

“How many are they?”

At the question, Chris extended five fingers.

“Tio, Lidia, Eska, Lego, Ford. It’s these five people.”

Confident voice.

Roan didn’t ask anymore and took out the bag containing the gems.

“Take this.”

Chris carefully received the bag.

“What’s this?”

“Investment. As I don’t have much time and on top of that I am a soldier, my actions are really limited. So I would like you to invest in those five instead of me.”

Chris had a surprised expression.

“What if something goes wrong as I invest as I wish?”

Roan answered like it was nothing.

“You can’t always succeed at investing. It doesn’t matter if it fails with everyone. That by itself will become valuable information.”

At those words Chris slowly nodded.



“And.....”

Roan took out one more gem bag.

“This is investment i’m giving to you. You will need quite a lot of money to make a full fledged information agency.”

“Ah.....”

Chris let out a low exclamation.

He then nodded.

“I understand. I will do my best not to disappoint you.”

“Yes. I believe in you.”

Roan grabbed his bag and stood up.

“Then, I will be leaving.”

“Already? Why don’t you eat something?”

It was an urgent voice.

However Roan shook his head.

“The path I have to walk is long.”

He extended his right hand.

Chris couldn’t talk back anymore and grabbed that hand.

“I will find you with good results.”

“I will be waiting for you.”

Roan smiled faintly and nodded.

“Then, I will be leaving.”

A farewell.

Roan shook his hands once and then moved outside the agency.

Chris let out a long sigh.

‘Is it a new start?’

He felt his chest beating even more than when he first opened the travel agency.

‘First, should I go and find those five merchants?’

Chris bit his lower lip and slowly moved.

This was his first task and road.

\*\*\*\*\*

The Lancephil was a weird family for various reasons.

He was one of the five counts from Rinse kingdom that didn't

have a residence in the capital of Miller, didn't even have a territory and was located in a barren land in the south.

Because of that Ipen castle, Beno castle, etc. were all inside the territory of Count Lancephil.

But the real reason he was special was because of Io Lancephil, who was the head of the family and one of the five counts of the kingdom.

This year he turned out 60, but he didn't have any children.

Of course, there were various reasons for that, for a count that was in his sixties to not have any children was a really exceptional case.

Because of that, a similar conversation came and went in the castle everyday.

“Sir Count. You aren't late yet. If you marry now.....”

“Just stop hohoho.”

It was a laughter that made people feel good.

The middle aged man who was suggesting with an earnest heart let out a long sigh.

‘Whew. He's once again laughing like this.’

He looked at the old man and had a regretful face.

‘To devote all of his youth for the sake of the kingdom and to already become that old. Tch. It's the frailty of life.’

The man seemed to have read the thoughts of the middle aged man and he laughed off once again.

“Hohoho. Albert. I’m really fine.”

At those words the middle aged man Albert Wein bowed.

“Yes. I understand sir Count Lancephil.”

The man that seemed good natured was one of the five counts in Rinse kingdom and the lord of the eastern region, Io Lancephil.

Io slowly started to move while carrying his baggage.

“Then, should we go outside the castle?”

“Yes. Understood.”

As Albert shook his left hand, the knights that were lined up to the sides ran outside the castle a step ahead of them.

Io and Albert followed them from behind.

Albert looked at Io’s white hair and bit his lower lip.

‘He could have been in possession of the central region but he said he would keep Byron kingdom and Estel kingdom in check and he personally was put in charge of the outer regions as his territory. As the love he feels towards the kingdom is that extreme, his interests would obviously change.’

It had already been more than 30 years since he served Io.

He was called as the second lieutenant knight guard until now, and he even received a title of viscount.

‘If my health was good I would have served him a bit more.....’

Retirement was decided for Albert.

Then, Io who was walking in front let out a short sigh.

“It doesn’t remain long for you and this scenery.”

“I’m sorry sir count.”

“There’s no need to be so. You are also quite old. Holding onto you until now was also my greed.”

At those words Albert lowered his face.

“Viscount Kali Owells, who was decided to become my successor is a more outstanding knight than I am.”

“Really? Hohoho.”

Io burst out in laughter.

However it somewhat felt like he didn’t completely like it.

After they got out of the castle they entered a long road.

Io liked inspecting Pavor castle, from what he had to do, the most.

It was the opportunity to check the lifestyle of the residents himself and sympathize with them.

And the residents truly liked Io and respected him.

Because of that, the day when Io did the inspecting, the road was more noisy and busy.

Just like there was a festival.

But today it was an exception.

The road was dead silent.

Io looked at the residents with a strange expression.

‘The expressions.....’

They had really scared looks.

Then, a serious looking middle aged man approached him.

He bowed towards Io and Albert.

“We finished the preparations for the investigation.”

In that instant, Io knew the reason as to why the residents were scared.

‘It seems the knights scare them.’

He felt bitter.

“Hohoho.”

A laugher.

But this one was filled with displeasure.

He looked at Albert and said in a whispering voice.

“Albert. I don’t know why but it seems like I will already miss you. Hohoho.”

At those words Albert glared at the middle aged man in front of him.

‘Kali Owells. You stupid bastard.’

The middle aged man who looked serious.

This was the successor for Albert and the one that was leading the knights, Kali Owells.

He was the head of the Owells family and was also the father of Walter Owells who was related with Roan.

‘Kali. Your abilities and talent are outstanding, but that excessive aspiration is the problem of your ambition.’

Albert became speechless and looked at Io.

He was still laughing.

However Albert could know.

‘He’s really angry.’

He wanted to loosen his mood with whatever he could.

Then, a young knight passed over the crowd and approached them.

‘Huh?’

While he frowned and tilted his head, the guy approached and whispered.

“Ah.....”

At that instant, Albert’s face brightened.

He looked at Io and said as if he was whispering.

“Sir Count. Even so it seems like he have to leave the inspection for another time.”

“It seems like something has happened?”

Io slightly tilted his head and asked back.

“It seems like Viscount Reil Baker has come to visit to Ipen castle.”



## Chapter 56 : To The North (3)

---

‘I knew that he was a free person.....’

Aaron was a bit dumbfounded.

Although he was riding a horse, his conscience was half gone.

And that was because of the middle aged man riding the horse and having fun in front of him.

“Hahaha! The taste of riding the plains of the east is good!”

A magnanimous laugh.

A face full of playfulness.

That was the rumoured genius spearman Reil Baker.

‘To appear early at dawn with only one knight accompanying him.’

Aaron was astounded.

Even he, who was free and open, wasn’t as much as Reil was.

“Hahaha! Liam! Your cavalry skills are a mess! Why do you keep falling behind?!”

Reil, who was riding in front, yelled towards the accompanying knight.

The knight, Liam, laughed awkwardly and kicked his horse.

‘Sir viscount. Please save me some face.’

He remembered the entrusting words Kevin told him before leaving their territory.

<The accompanying knight doesn’t only have to escort. He has to protect Viscount Baker’s dignity.>

Liam let out a sigh.

‘In the first place, there’s no dignity to protect.’

For now he stuck next to Reil.

“Umm sir viscount. I know that you feel good, but even so, at least.....”

When he talked up to then.

Reil pointed forward and yelled.

“I can see Beno castle!”

And then, he yelled towards Aaron and the following soldiers.

“The person that arrives the latest buys breakfast!”

An absurd story.

However Reil stuck his chest towards the horse and started to ride fiercely.

When Aaron and the staff officers of the 7th squad were putting an absent minded face, Liam let out a sigh and said.

“He’s truly saying that.”

And then he also kicked the horse and started to ride quickly.

“Huh?”

“What?”

Aaron and the officers.

The others laughed awkwardly and looked at each other and then grabbed the reins and started to ride.

And they started to kick their horses almost at the same time.

Heeeeeng!

The rough cry of the horse.

The sudden race competition started just like that.

\*\*\*\*\*

“Whew. I’m full.”

Reil patted his stomach and looked at Aaron.

“Baron Aaron. I ate really well.”

“Yes? Ah, yes. I’m glad you did so.”

Aaron looked at his empty money pocket and shook his head.

‘For him to really receive food.’

Of course, the last one in the race was Aaron.

However, normally it wasn’t a custom for a person of a higher rank to be treated from someone by a lower rank.

‘He really has no ranks in mind.’

Aaron looked at Reil, who was riding in front, and had a faint smile.

He couldn’t get a grasp of him and he was beyond himself, but he liked him quite much.

“Anyways, it’s still regrettable. I wanted to meet adjutant Roan.”

Reil smacked his lips.

Only after he arrived at Ipen castle did he come to know that Roan was in a retired state.

At most he said that it would take three months, so the remaining time was one month.

Then, Aaron's voice was heard.

“He will return soon, so why don't you wait some time and meet him?”

“Mmm.”

Reil pondered for a moment and then shook his head.

‘Even so, I can't leave my territory for one whole month.’

He bitterly smiled.

“That will be a bit difficult.”

A negative answer.

Regret was shown in Aaron's face for a moment.

‘Can't do anything about it.’

Actually, for a viscount or a noble to wait one month to meet a mere 5 class adjutant was an absurd thing.

Aaron bowed.

“Then, I will go and find you the moment he returns.”

It was a really sorry expression.

However, it wasn't his fault.

Reil had more of a fault that couldn't check the letter beforehand for being taken in his spear training.

“Do so. For now, I will be satisfied with just meeting rose troop.”

It was the troop Roan belonged to and had a reputation for having taken the biggest role in Slen battle.

‘Just by looking at the Slen battle report, it was quite an outstanding troop.....’

Meeting an outstanding commander and the soldiers was always a fun thing.

Having ridden from Ipen castle to Beno castle without resting was also to experience that fun.

“I will lead you.”

Aaron started to walk one step ahead.

They walked the streets of Beno castle and then they arrived at the headquarters of rose troop.

Every time he passed a building, a faint sound was heard.

‘Mmm?’

But the only one that heard that among them was Reil.  
He flinched for a moment and then changed directions.

“Huh? Viscount Baker, it’s not over there but here.”

Aaron called him aloud but Reil started to walk in a weird direction as if he was possessed.

‘It’s a really sharp noise.’

Reil went around the building and stood around a big empty lot.

“Ah.....”

A low exclamation flowed out.

It was quite the large training ground.

One youth was training in his spear.

But his spear skills were really strange.

‘It’s not a spearmanship taught by the kingdom.’

Reil hid his presence and looked at the youth training his spear for a while.

Aaron, Liam and the officers that followed late also hid their presence like him.

Paat! Pabat! Paat!

A sharp sound hit their ears continuously.

The spear drew a line of light as if it was dancing.

The spear that drew an elegant line and the movements that followed softly.

“Ah.....Amazing.”

Liam, who was watching him, couldn't hold it in and let out an exclamation.

Aaron and the other officers were the same.

A surprised look was seen on their faces.

Reil looked at Aaron and asked in a low voice.

“Who's that youth?”

“Yes? Th, thats.....”

Aaron was perplexed for a moment and then looked at the officers.

However the officers also laughed awkwardly and shook their heads.

“He has such an amazing spearmanship but you don't even know who he is? Hahaha.”



Reil laughed magnanimously and moved his feet.

He approached the youth with big steps.

“Hey!”

A loud yell.

The youth stopped in the posture that he was swinging the spear in.

“Who.....Huh?!”

The youth who was looking at Reil with a weird expression looked at Aaron. His eyes traces the others around his back and he hurriedly fixed his posture.

“Sir!”

He had a straight posture.

Aaron lightly shook his head.

“He is Viscount Reil Baker. Answer his questions.”

“Yes!”

The youth answered in a loud voice and looked at Reil.

“I’m spearman Pierce from the 12th squad of rose troop belonging to the 7th corps!”

The youth, his identity was Pierce.

Reil smiled faintly and grabbed Pierce's shoulders.

“What's the spearmanship you executed just now? It wasn't a spearmanship from the kingdom.”

At those words Pierce was a bit perplexed.

He hesitated and couldn't reply easily.

Aaron frowned.

“Pierce. The Viscount is asking you.”

Pierce looked at Aaron and Reil alternately and let out a long sigh.

“That's.....It's a spearmanship I learned separately.”

“Separately? From who?”

Reil asked.

‘It's an amazing spearmanship. It's a really strong spearmanship that even normal soldiers without mana can execute.’

He really wanted to know who was the one who taught him this.

Pierce hesitated once more and then answered as if he couldn't do anything about it.

“It’s adjutant Roan from rose troop.”

Boom.

At that instant Reil, Aaron, and all the others had surprised expressions.

It was because a name they hadn’t expected at all had come out.

‘I knew that Roan had outstanding talent.....’

He didn’t know that he had learned this strong spearmanship.

No, he didn’t know he was so skilled to teach this to others.

“Ho!”

Reil feigned a laugh.

‘An 18 year old adjutant taught this kind of spearmanship?’

He looked at Aaron.

“Baron Tate.”

“Yes?”

Aaron replied while confused.

Reil continued speaking with a serious expression.

“Give me a room to stay for one month.”

And then, he looked at Pierce.

“And you. Were you called Pierce?”

“Yes? Yes!”

Pierce replied while putting a stiff posture.

Reil’s mouth rose.

“You will have to talk with me.”

\*\*\*\*\*

Roan, who left the capital of Miller was entering the eastern region of the kingdom.

‘In two more days is it Slen region.....’

Meanwhile, the season turned to become summer.

The sun shined strongly and the west wind came blowing with a strong heat.

But of course Roan couldn’t feel any heat because of Brent’s ring.

He looked down at the ring.

‘However I think of it, this isn’t an artifact a human is capable of manufacturing.’

Although Louis was a magician of the 6th circle, he lacked the skills to make this kind of artifact.

This meant that Brent’s ring was that amazing.

‘To even be able to breathe under water.’

Although he couldn’t maintain it for long because the mana spent was too severe, he could certainly breathe underwater.

Not only that, but he could record the sound of a conversation or memorize a scenery or a sight.

‘But of course, this also spends a lot of mana.’

Anyways, it was a ring that showed more functions, which he hadn’t even thought about, the more his ability to operate mana increased.

‘Now that I see it, Kalian’s tear is also an amazing artifact.’

Roan moved his sight and looked at the end of the plain.

A normal scenery that was no different than usual.

However, as he inserted mana in the tear, the scenery changed in an instant.

A golden wave filled his sight.

‘So this is mana.....’

When he inserted mana into the tear, he could see the mana spread aorund in the world.

Although it was a function that didn’t help him at all in normal situations, it was quite a useful ability in battles or emergencies.

Because when someone used mana or moved, the golden wave in their surroundings contorted or producesd a slight change.

Because of that, Roan could guess the actions of the opponent beforehand and know what it was.

‘If the level of my mana increases, more functions will appear, right?’

An expression filled with expectation.

Roan pulled back his mana along with a faint smile.

At that moment, the scenery that was filled with golden waves turned to normal.

‘Huh?’

Then, he saw a displeasing movement at the end of his sight.

‘That’s.....’

Roan glared at the end of the plains.

At that instant, the scenery that was far away got expanded.

‘Goblin?’

A small goblin army was running across the plains.

On top of that, all of them were holding blades.

Although they were far away, he could feel a ferocious intent from their bodies or expressions.

Roan bit his lower lip.

‘Are they planning to attack the village?’

It was something that happened frequently in a place that was not inside the safe zone.

‘Although this village should have a vigilance guard.....’

Just by guessing, the number of the goblin army was close to 200.

At the slightest slipup, the guards would collapse and the village would be annihilated.

‘If there are no forces that inspect the territory or they don’t have a region troop.....’

It was quite a dangerous situation.

Roan didn’t think anymore.

Tat!

He charged through and started to chase the backs of the goblins.  
In the worst case, it was to at least help them by himself.

Passs.

Behind Roan's back, a hot wind blew

\*\*\*\*\*

“Damn! Block them! Don't let them cross the fence!”

Gut stood at the watch tower and kept firing arrows in succession.

Chwee! Chwee!

The cries of the goblins hit their ears.

Beyond the fence that was built with several layers, 200 goblins were charging through.

Sweeeee!

Arrows poured from the watch tower.

However, the skills of the guards of this village weren't that



outstanding.

Pusk. Puk. Puuk.

Most of the arrows hit the ground and not the goblins.

‘Damn! That’s why I told you to practice firing arrows even when you are busy with farming!’

Only Gut, who was the head of the guards of Whose village, showed cool skills and fought alone.

Puk!

Chwee!

One arrow pierced the head of a goblin.

‘I wondered why they were so calm nowadays.....’

The goblins of this region normally grouped in tens and attacked big and small villages.

However, nowadays those things had stopped.

When Gut and the others were slightly relaxing.

Suddenly, an amazing number of goblins they hadn’t faced until now appeared.

‘Damn. Will we be able to block them?’

Doubt was seen in his eyes.

The number of the guards were 30.

And adding the men who had some experience they amounted to 100.

Although they were at a disadvantage with numbers, taking into account that their enemies were goblins, it wasn't that pessimistic of a situation.

However.

‘How do you want us to fight with pickaxes!’

Only 30 people were holding things that could be called weapons.

The guards and the villagers were originally farmers so they neglected weapon maintenance.

Because of that, most had pickaxes, sickles, and hoes.

‘Damn. It's kill or die!’

They did send the fast guards to the nearest region troop, but they had almost no probability to hold until they arrived.

Chwee! Chwee!

Meanwhile, the goblins came near the fence.

Bang! Babang!

They smashed the fence with their bodies or tried to jump over it.

Fortunately, as they were short, they couldn't cross it in one go.

“Die!”

“Dirty goblin bastards!”

The guards stuck to the fences and stabbed them with their spears.

Stab.

“Kyaaak!”

“Chweee!”

The goblins who were trying to get inside the village without any fear were stabbed with the spear and lost their lives.

“Throw rocks!”

“Fire arrows!”

They started to throw rocks and arrows from the watchtower at the goblins that were gathered in the fence.

The number of the goblins that started to fall increased.

Chwee! Chwee!

As it turned out like this, they could have retreated, but they would rather charge more fiercely.

The goblins climbed over the corpses of their dead allies and started to cross the fence.

Boom.

Corpses that piled up over the other corpses.

In an instant, a solid foothold was made outside the fence.

Chwee!

The goblin that seemed to be the leader shook his hand and cried.

Chwee! Chwee!

The goblins started to run towards the fence while holding their blades.

Tok! Todok!

They stepped on the corpses of their allies and jumped over.

“Huh?! Block them!”

Gut, who was looking at the situation, yelled.

Only then did the guards and the villagers raise their blades, spears, hoes, and sickles.

“Block them!”

“Kill!”

“If this gets broken through, our families will be in danger!”

They put their lives on the line for their loved ones.

Cheng! Checheng! Cheng!

As the blade of the goblins clashed with the weapon of the farmers, sparks flew off.

“Kuk!”

“Kugh!”

The guards and the village men ground their teeth and held on, but because of their lacking experience and weapons, they started to slowly get pushed back.

‘Damn. We aren’t in a situation to be firing arrows.’

Gut tightly bit his lower lip.

The 100 plus goblins started to climb the fence in turns.

Then.

Sweeeee!

A sharp sound hit their ears.

‘What is it?’

Gut turned his head to the place where the sound was heard.

Puk!

The spear trembled while being stuck in the ground.

“Just what is.....”

The people that were on the fence and the goblins who were trying to cross over the fence had surprised faces and looked towards the place where the spear came flying from.

“Huh?”

“Chwee?”

Their eyes grew big.

One youth was running along the west wind.

He came with a fast speed and fierce intent.

His rough hair fluttered with the wind.

A youth that was still a child but emanated a wild feeling.

It was Roan.

# Chapter 57 : To The North (4)

---

Chwee! Chwee!

The goblins let out cries.

The comrades that died helplessly at the spear suddenly came flying back.

Their eyes turned red.

Chwee!

Four goblins, who still hadn't crossed over the fence, kicked the ground and charged towards Roan.

The distance between Roan and the goblins closed in an instant.

Slash! Stab!

The four goblins swung their blades consecutively.

“No!”

“Damn!”

Whoever saw it, Roan's life was in danger.

The blade of the goblins was about to hack over Roan's body.

The people in the watch tower couldn't watch anymore as they turned their heads and frowned.

However, only Gut fixed his gaze.



‘That’s not a scared or an urgent expression at all!’

Roan’s expression was very calm.

On top of that, his mouth was slightly raised.

Actually, Roan didn’t feel pressed at all.

‘Now, things such as goblins are funny.’

Roan looked at the blades flying towards him, fixedly.

Swaaaaa.

The scenery turned slowly to the point where he yawned.

Roan circulated the mana and nimbly moved his body.

Swish.

They were soft movements.

He slightly twisted his body and dodged the first blade with leisure.

Cheng!

At the same time, he took out a small and sharp blade from his waist.

Stab.

The short sword stabbed the back of the first goblin.

Paaat!

Every blood drop was seen continued by the pulled sword.

The scene in front of him was so slow it made you sick and it was seen clearly.

‘I’m not the me from before.’

Although the level of his mana wasn’t high yet, knowing how to utilize it and not knowing was like the difference between heaven and earth.

‘Now, I can attack the blind spots through the weak spots I can see with Kalian’s tear.’

But of course, he was still lacking a lot.

It was like he could try something which he hadn’t even been able to before.

He was at a level where he could face basic warriors like goblins and orcs, easily.

Spat!

Roan also dodged the second blade and stabbed the sword into the chin of the second goblin.

‘Hmph! Where!’

At the same time he extended his left hand and grabbed the throat of the third one.

Chwee?

The goblin broke his posture and was pulled.

Right over him, the blade of the fourth goblin fell with a fierce intent.

Slash.

The head of the third goblin was cut off by the fourth one.

Pat!

At the same time, the scenery that was so slow it made him yawn, returned to normal.

‘Kugh. My eyes hurt a lot.’

As he saw the scenery in slow motion through Kalian’s tear, his eyes were hurting.

Then.

Grr. Grrrr. Grr.

Three goblins that were standing completely fine, collapsed almost at the same time.

Blood started to fall from their neck.

Chwee?

The fourth goblin that got left alone in an instant, opened his eyes roundly.

He had an expression where he couldn't believe that he killed his ally with his own hands.

Roan passed by next to him with a casual expression and swung his sword.

Pibit.

A thin red line appeared on the neck.

Grr.

The last and fourth one also fell onto the floor.

‘Im, impossible!’

Gut, who was checking the situation, opened his mouth.

‘What just happened right now?!’

He couldn’t believe the scene that happened before him.

‘He was closing in the goblins, they were swinging their blades, and he pulled back.’

It certainly seemed like that.

However the moment Roan made his third step, three goblins fell.

And the fourth one also fell while grabbing his neck.

‘It happened in an instant and I couldn’t see anything.’

But there was one certain thing.

That Roan perfectly took care of four goblins.

‘Knight? Soldier? Mercenary?’

When Gut was rolling his eyes to try and identify Roan’s identity.

Roan walked and stood in front of the spear that was stuck in the ground.

Swush.

As he stepped on the two goblins that had the spear pierced in them and pulled it, a dark red blood flowed with the spear.

Roan walked while holding his spear.

‘Take care of the goblins at the fastest possible speed.’

He needed to hurry a little more to save any unnecessary deaths.

Tat!

He charged forward and flew into the air.

“Wha, what is it?”

Chwee?

The people and the goblins looked at Roan and had surprised expressions.

At that moment, Roan’s spear drew a line of light.

Spat!

The spear slashed the goblins.

Pibit!

Following the spear, a line of dark red blood spread into the air.  
At the same time.

Kyaaaaaak!

The cries of the goblins hit his ear.

\*\*\*\*\*

Io, who spent most of his young times in the battlefield, couldn't stand still while looking at the knights and soldiers that had skills and also had a good nature.

Not enough with big and small amounts of patronage, he also invited people regardless of their identity and rank and even spent some days with them.

However, nowadays it was difficult to find a guy that he liked.

No, even so, there was one he liked.

‘Viscount Reil Baker.’

A treasure of Rinse kingdom and the spear genius.

He was also a middle aged man that was in his forties, but his skills were amazing to be counted in one hand.

And not only his skills.

His nature and personality was also great.

Rather than obsessing in useless ambitions, he concentrated and focused on his training.

‘Viscount Baker is the best in Rinse kingdom right now.’

Although there were famous knights and captains, but Io picked Reil as the best.

‘It just seems like watching my young self.’

A proud smile.

However Io frowned.

‘I sent him countless invitations.....’

As he appreciated him a lot, he wanted to leave him at his side and check what he did.

However Reil had various excuses and didn’t participate in the parties.

‘But that kind of guy suddenly visited the castle?’

Io had a weird expression.

It was difficult to believe, but there would be no way the report was wrong.

‘I don’t know the reason, but it’s certain that it’s a good opportunity.’



The distance between Pavor castle and Ipen castle wasn't that far.

An opportunity to meet him and converse for a long while.

His mouth slightly raised.

‘Does he like it that much?’

Even Albert, who was looking him at the side, started to smile.

‘To depart the moment he received the report.’

On top of that, he chose a horse rather than a carriage as the means of transport.

Io liked and appreciated Reil that much.

Dudududu.

The sound of horse steps hit their ears.

Then, Kali Owells who was riding at the front, turned back and yelled.

“Sir count!”

He had a stiffened expression.

Albert replied in a loud voice instead of Io.

“What happened?!”

Kali pointed the end of the plains.

“I think that something happened.”

At those words, Io and Albert opened their eyes sharply and looked towards the end of the plain.

A village could be seen faintly.

Black smoke was seen along with unusual movements on the fence.

There certainly was something wrong.

‘Maybe?’

Io’s and Albert’s faces turned hard.

‘Did monsters raid the village?’

A possible story.

Io quickly sent the order.

“Now, let’s go.”

“Yes! Understood!”

Kali replied in a loud voice and kicked his horse.

The escorting knights followed his back.

‘They have to be safe.’

Io took in a deep breath and grinded his teeth.

Dudududu.

The sound of horse steps became clearer.

\*\*\*\*\*

‘Wha, what’s this youth?’

‘A roaming warrior?’

‘Is he a mercenary?’

The guards and villagers of Whose village were half absentminded.

At the end of their sight was Roan.

And Roan was slaying the goblins while moving like wind between them.

‘It’s an amazing spearmanship.’

A strong and concise spearmanship even in the eyes of an outsider.

Chwee! Chwee!

If goblins could talk in human tongue, they would have yelled like this.

<You monster bastard!>

But unfortunately, the sounds they could make was limited.

Chwee!

It was a dispirited cry.

Kyaaaak!

And a sharp last cry.

The goblins couldn't become Roan's opponent.

'Where!'

There was leisure in Roan's movements.

On top of that, he even checked the state of the villagers in the middle of the massacre.

"It's dangerous."

A short shout.

At the same time he pulled the shoulders of the villager.

“Hut!”

He staggered, and stepped back.

At that moment, a blade stabbed into the ground where he originally was.

If he made a wrong move, he would have had his neck cut off.

“Ah.....Tha, thank you.”

The villages man bowed with an absent minded expression.

Roan smiled faintly and swung his spear once more.

A one sided slaying and massacre occurred.

Chwee! Chwee!

The cries were spat out faster.

Urgency and a bit of fear could be seen in the ugly faces of the goblins.

Chwee!

In the end the leader raised his right hand.

It was the retreat sign.

Chwee! Chwee!

About 30 goblins crossed to the other side of the fence and fled outside the village.

“Where!”

Roan wasn't planning on leaving them alone.

If he did so, other villages would also be attacked.

‘I can't miss even one!’

It was when Roan was about to charge to the front for a perfect clearing.

Sweeeeee!

Pubububuk!

Suddenly, a rain of arrows fell outside the fence.

Kaaaaak! Kyak!

The goblins became like porcupines and fell one by one.

When Roan turned to look, he had a weird expression.

Dudududu.

The sound of horse steps shaking the ground was heard.

At the same time, tens of soldiers appeared. No, they certainly are...

‘They are knights.’

Flashy armor and a huge long sword.

They were the escort knights of Lancephil.

The knights massacred the fleeing goblins without missing one.

Roan stepped on their corpses and looked at them.

“Wh, what are they?”

“Looking at how their armor shines, they must be knights.”

The villagers gathered behind Roan.

Gut, who appeared late, and extended his head over the fence.

“Ah.....”

A low exclamation came out.

Even so, he had recognized the symbol drawn on their armor.

“It’s the symbol for the Lancephil family.”

At those words, nervousness was seen on the faces of the people.  
They stuck themselves closely behind Roan.

Rather than the flashy knights, Roan who looked kind of simple seemed to be more friendly.

Meanwhile, the knights that massacred the goblins approached the entrance of the village.

“Open the doors!”

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Kali hit the tightly closed entrance with the end of his sheath.

As Gut made eye signs, the guards hurriedly ran and opened the doors.

Clop. Clop.

The knights lined up into lines at the sides.

After a while, Io and Albert showed themselves between them.

Roan was still stepping on the corpses of the goblins.

At that instant, Ian and Roan made eye contact.

‘He slew tens of goblins alone. It was an amazing spearmanship.’

Amazement could be seen in Io’s face.



He stood outside the village and looked at Roan's actions.

‘A concise and strong spearmanship for an actual battle. Although he looks childish he is a veteran in spear skills.’

His mouth slightly rose up.

Roan was stuffed with his own meaning.

‘I'm finally meeting Count Lancephil.....’

A person he had to meet someday, somehow.

That meeting occurred the moment he hadn't expected, and suddenly.

When his stifling thoughts continued.

Kali yelled in a loud voice.

“It's Count Io Lancephil!”

Not a barone, a baron, nor a viscount, but a count.

A noble with only five of its position.

The villagers of Whose village who couldn't see Io as frequently as the residents of Pavor castle hurriedly got onto the floor.

And Roan was the same.

“Hohoho. Don't do that.”

Io frowned and looked at Kali.

It was a really displeased look.

Kali clapped while having flinched.

Clap!

“Everyone stand up! There’s no need for that excessive mannerism!”

At those words, Roan and the others slowly stood up and attended politely.

Io looked at the goblin corpses in the surrounding area and nodded.

“The number of the goblins wasn’t low, but you blocked them well. Outstanding. Who’s the leader of the guards in this village?”

“It’s Gut.”

A polite posture and voice.

Io hit his shoulder himself and laughed.

“Hohoho. Amazing. You blocked the goblins really well.”

“Tha, thank you.”

Gut just put on a confused expression.

Then, Io called out Roan with hand signs.

“Come here.”

At those words Albert, Kali and the others turned to look at Roan.

Sights filled with amazement and curiosity.

Roan stood in front of Io with a null expression.

‘His body is strong and his balance is also good. It’s a really well built body.’

Io was amazed.

The Roan, when he looked closely, was different to when he saw him from afar.

“What’s your name?”

A lightly asked question.

Roan saluted and bowed.

“It’s class 5 adjutant Roan from Rose troop of the 7th corps.”

“Rose troop of the 7th corps? Roan?”

At the unexpected answer Io, Albert, the knights and the townspeople had surprised expressions.

Although the 7th corps was located on a region inside the territory of Count Lancephil, this village was quite far away.

‘Roan.....’

On top of that, he didn’t know why this name was so familiar to hear.

He slightly looked at Albert.

Eyes implying if he had heard of it.

‘Anyhow, can’t do anything about him.’

Albert smiled faintly and approached.

And fortunately, he knew a bit about Roan.

‘He’s someone that is putting his name in battle reports a lot. Although I never expected to meet him here.’

Albert slightly looked at Roan and whispered towards Io.

“He’s the one that planned the inundation tactic at Prely river and the soldier that slew Sedek. And recently, he executed a weird strategy and also slew Violin.”

“Ah!”

Io let out a low exclamation.

Only now did he remember.

‘Right. Class 5 adjutant Roan of Rose troop. I can remember

now.'

The strange strategies and outstanding spearmanship he read in the reports; he was amazed every time.

Io smiled brightly and looked at Roan.

"So you were Roan. I know about your performances."

"I was just lucky."

He was not excessively humility.

"But what's an adjutant of Rose troop doing over here?"

"I just finished my temporary retirement and was in the middle of returning."

At Roan's answer, Io smiled.

"That's really good. We were also going to Ipen castle. How about traveling together?"

A sudden proposal.

Roan slightly raised his head and looked at Io.

'Just the thing I wanted.'

He bowed once again.

“Yes. I will follow your wish.”

At those words, Io clapped with a joyful expression.

Clap.

“Good. Then we will be able to speak while traveling.”

He then called one knight over with a hand sign.

“Give one horse to Roan.”

“Yes. Understood.”

Soon, he came forward with an extra horse.

Roan stood up on the saddle with a quite experienced posture.

‘Oh. His posture is amazing.’

Io smiled faintly and nodded.

He had a kind look.

But contrary to Io, there was someone sending him a displeased look.

Kali Owells.

‘It’s displeasing.’

He didn't like that Roan suddenly accompanied them at all.

He was a commoner and on top of that, a normal soldier and not a knight.

He wasn't someone to fit in with him.

On top of that, he couldn't forgive the face that he received all of Io's interest.

His eyes naturally became fierce.

Roan felt that gaze and smiled bitterly.

‘So that person is Kali Owells.’

Although he couldn't remember Walter Owells in the first place, he did remember things about Kali.

‘He did a really shocking thing in my last life.’

The person with the highest probabilities to become his first stepping stone.

That was Kali Owells.

Then, Io's voice was heard.

“Then, shall we slowly depart?”

“Yes. Understood.”

Albert replied quickly and shook his hand.

Kali and the other knights reorganized their ranks.

Meanwhile, Io grabbed the hands of the villagers himself and consoled their surprised hearts.

Roan, who was looking at that, bit his lower lip.

‘Sir Count Io Lancephil.....’

The reason why he returned to the eastern regions even after having acquired the mana technique and the fighting manual.

That was related in a big way with Io who was in front of him.

Then, Albert’s voice was heard.

“We finished the preparations.”

At those words Io shook his hand of the people and got on the saddle.

“We are departing.”

A short order.

“Depart!”

Albert yelled in a loud voice while grabbing the reins.

Dudududu.



Then, the sound of horse step was heard clearly.

The hot wind became a bit cooler.

The heads of the horses were pointing towards the east.

A new story, new relations and a new future was over there.

# Chapter 58 : A New Start (1)

---

Outside the gates of Beno castle.

Pierce looked at the south while leaning on the thick walls.

‘It’s time for him to return.....’

He was forced to put on a casual expression but anxiety could be seen in his eyes.

‘Sir Adjutant Roan, when are you returning?’

It’s already been two months since Roan left for his temporary retirement.

And the 12th squad members were guarding outside the gates in shifts.

Then, a familiar voice was heard.

“Pierce!”

It was a pronunciation that was mixed with many notes.

Pierce knew the owner of the voice even without turning back.

‘Sir Viscount Reil Baker.’

He fixed his posture and looked at the place where the voice was heard from.

A middle aged man approached him from the insides of the gate while smiling brightly.

Just like Pierce's guess, the owner of the voice was Reil.

"I wondered where you went without even training in the spear, but you really were here!"

A face filled with playfulness.

Pierce saluted him.

"Sir!"

"Don't act that stiffly."

Reil approached him and hit Pierce's shoulder.

He looked at the widely spread scenery and shook his head.

"I think that today will be the same."

At those words, Pierce looked towards the south.

Just like Reil's words, you couldn't see a trace of Roan.

But it was still too early to get disappointed.

"I'm planning to wait until the sun sets."

"And what if he doesn't come."

"I will have to come tomorrow."

“What if he doesn’t come tomorrow?”

“I will have to come the day after.”

“What if he doesn’t come the day after?”

Reil kept asking in succession.

Pierce took in a breath and replied in a calm voice.

“Then, I can come the day after that. Because tomorrow always comes.”

A powerful resolution.

Reil was astounded.

‘I heard that the 12th squad was only formed a few months ago, but to have this much trust and loyalty.....’

Probably Pierce and the others of the 12th squad would keep waiting until the day Roan returned.

‘Roan. He’s someone that I want to meet the more I learn about him.’

It’s already been 10 days since he stayed at Beno castle.

In the meanwhile, he had heard many stories about Roan.

And especially about that, the most interesting one was related to Roan’s spear skills.

‘At first, I thought that he just taught him what he knew.’

But while conversing with Pierce, he realized that that wasn't everything.

‘Roan spearmanship.....’

He would have to ask him the precise things himself, but if it's true that Roan made it himself...

‘It means that he's a genius among geniuses.’

Even Reil lasted 10 years until he first made a spearmanship.

Even for Reil, it took him almost 10 years until to make his own spearmanship technique.

‘Is it already time to put down the title of spear genius?’

He didn't have any frustration.

Rather, his heart pumped faster because of the expectation.

‘Roan. I will wait for you here. Be it one day, two days, ten days or a month.’

He had that resolution.

‘Instead, you have to spar with me every time I want to.’

His mouth slightly raised up.

Perhaps it was because he wanted Roan to return quickly, but his eyes kept staring at the south.

Then.

‘Huh?’

Reil sharpened his eyes.

Because a dust cloud arose from the end of the plains.

‘A knight squad?’

It was still difficult to identify them precisely because they were still far away.

Then, Pierce’s voice was heard.

“They seem like knights.”

At those words Reil frowned.

“You, you can see that?”

“Yes.”

Pierce nodded with a calm expression.

Reil was astounded.

‘He can see that far at this distance? This guy certainly isn’t a normal one either.’

Because of Roan, he was a bit overshadowed by him, but Pierce’s talent was also excellent.

‘Although I can’t judge Roan’s talent before I personally meet him, the talent of this guy.....’

Reil slightly bit his lower lip.

‘He’s more amazing than me.’

He had a kind of proud feeling.

He felt like he became rich.

‘For now, did I at least acquire one?’

If perhaps Roan’s talent was not that good, he had to at least acquire Pierce.

‘It’s slowly time to raise a disciple.’

The thing every noble wanted from him.

For the spear genius Reil Baker to train a disciple.

However Reil put out every kind of excuse until now and

pretended not to know about that.

But looking at the shining talents Pierce had, he slowly felt that he wanted to raise a disciple.

‘If on top of this, Roan has a more outstanding talent.....’

His mouth slightly rose up.

Meanwhile, the knights came quite close.

“They certainly seem like knights.”

Shining armors.

Only then could Reil identify them.

Dudududu.

Horse steps shaking the ground was heard.

Now, the knights were so close you could check their faces.

“Huh?!”

It was a surprised expression.

Reil let out a low exclamation.

“Count Lancephil?!”



The old man leading the knights.

He certainly was Io.

Only after he arrived at Ipen castle did Io get to know that Reil and Aaron were at Beno castle.

He didn't rest a moment and went towards Beno castle.

“Hohoho! Viscount Reil Baker!”

Io, who arrived at the gates, discovered Reil and laughed.

“Greetings to Count Io Lancephil.”

Reil hurriedly bowed.

Pierce was also nervous as he was tense

Io slowly got off the horse and grabbed Reil's hands.

“It hurt my feelings that you declined all the invitations I sent you until now.”

“I'm sorry. As I concentrated on training, I lacked the time to go to other places.”

“Right. Right. There's nothing more important than focusing on your training.”

Io had a satisfied expression and nodded.

And then, said as if he was whispering.

“But what did you come all the way to Beno castle for?”

At those words Reil smiled bitterly.

“Actually, there’s someone I wanted to meet at all cos.....”

When he talked up to that point.

“Huh? Huh? Huh?”

Pierce’s voice was heard.

A really perplexed look.

“Hm?”

Reil frowned and looked at Pierce.

Eyes implying what happened.

Pierce pointed at the knights.

Precisely, it was at the back of the knights wearing flashy armor.

There was a youth wearing a shabby and normal outfit.

Pierce yelled with all his voice.

“Sir Adjutant Roan!”

Roan had finally finished his retirement and returned to Beno castle.

And with the big shot noble Io Lancephil.

\*\*\*\*\*

‘Is this really a scene in my office?’

Gale was astounded.

For the past 10 days, Reil and Aaron had stayed in the headquarters of his troop, but even so there was no instance he felt as short of breath as he did now.

‘Count Io Lancephil.’

The pressure a count gave you was amazing.

Reil, who was always free and full of playfulness was also a bit nervous.

‘There’s Count Io Lancephil, Viscount Reil Baker, and Corps Commander Aaron Tate in this small and shabby office.’

The reason why they gathered here.

Gale slightly turned his head to look at Roan.

‘He’s becoming more of a big shot every time.’

A proud and uneasy feeling.

‘It feels like he would leave far away like this.’

Then, Io's voice was heard.

“Hohoho. So Viscount Baker has come to meet Roan.”

He looked at Roan and nodded.

‘He certainly is a kid to have interest in.’

Io conversed about many things with Roan while traveling to Beno castle.

‘His thoughts on strategies and tactics were so deep and clear to the point you wouldn't believe he's an 18 year old.’

Abilities you had to have to become a good commander.

‘On top of that, his spear skills are also good.’

He remembered the sight of Roan massacring 100 goblins in Whose village by himself.

Io, then looked at Reil.

“So, how does it feel after you met him yourself?”

At that moment, a strange silence fell on the office.

Reil put a weird smile on and looked at Roan.

‘His body is really good. He has great balance.’

But there was a limit as to what he could see with his eyes.  
The smile on his mouth became denser.

“Roan.”

A gently calling sound.

Reil moved his feet and faced Roan.

Naturally, the sights of everyone gathered on him.

Gulp.

A nervous feeling to the point where it was weird.

Reil hit Roan’s chest.

“Spar with me.”

A really unshapely and direct battle proposition.

“Hohoho.”

Io laughed.

‘To abruptly propose for a spar. Although Roan’s skills and talent are outstanding in the end, he’s a normal soldier. For Roan, who’s a normal soldier, to face the best spearman like you.....’

When he thought up to that point.

Roan smiled faintly and nodded.

“Yes. Understood.”

He had a calm and clear attitude.

Everyone’s eyes turned wide.

Even Reil was a bit surprised.

‘Look at this guy.’

His mouth rose.

‘He doesn’t have any hesitation?’

It was pleasurable.

This was the first case.

His body moved.

“Really? Then let’s go to the training field right now.”

Reil walked one step ahead with an excited look.

Roan followed his back without saying anything.

After the two people left, an awkward silence fell in the office.

“Hohoho.”

The thing that broke the silence was Io’s laughter.

“We will see a good spectacle.”

He smiled faintly and moved.

Only then did Aaron, Gale, the knights and the adjutants start to move.

‘A spar so suddenly?’

‘Will Roan be able to face him?’

Even if Roan’s talent was outstanding, he wasn’t an opponent for Reil.

Everyone thought like that.

Even so, there was some kind of expectation in Aaron’s and Gale’s hearts.

‘What if Roan wins.....?’

The two looked at each other coincidentally.

Aaron and Gale understood their thoughts and laughed awkwardly.

And then they shook their heads.

‘But even so, it’s impossible to beat Viscount Reil Baker.’

That was the most normal and correct judgement.

The steps of the both of them directed to the training field that was at the back of the troop headquarters.

\*\*\*\*\*

Roan and Reil.

The two of them were facing each other while holding wooden sticks used for training.

The surrounding was filled with the soldiers of rose troop that heard the notices and came running.

Swish.

Roan and Reil took their stances while being five steps away from each other.

‘It’s a clear posture without flaws.’

Reil looked at Roan’s posture and was amazed.



‘But the feeling is somewhat strange.’

A feeling he couldn’t express with words.

To find an exact expression.

‘It kind of feels like it gets blurry.’

The sun that shined, the wind that blew, and the trees that slightly shook.

It felt like Roan permeated himself in the scenery and became blurry.

It was a state that was easy to lose his presence if you didn’t concentrate.

‘If I slip, the stick may hit my stomach.’

Reil took in a deep breath.

His five senses became sharper.

Actually, the reason why Roan’s presence and intent became blurry was because of Brent’s ring.

‘I have Brent’s ring with me but.....’

Roan looked at Reil and was astounded.

Reil certainly didn’t have any artifacts on him.

The casual outfit and a shabby wooden stick was everything.

But even so, the intent in his eyes was very strange.

The tip of the stick emanated a frightening and sharp intent, but aside from that he couldn't feel anything from his body.

Just like.

‘It feels like only the stick is floating in the air.’

Reil was certainly tens of times stronger than Roan while solely looking at spear skills.

But even so, there was a reason in which Roan could accept the sparring petition with a calm and composed attitude.

‘There was a time when Viscount Reil Baker and Pierce sparred in my past life.’

But of course the time and situation were all different.

In his past life it occurred exactly after 1 year, when Pierce showed his skills in the battle of Int forest and Reil came to see him.

At that time, Roan was training with Pierce and because of that he could check everything next to him.

‘That day is just like today. There was Count Lancephil and Viscount Baker hit Pierce's chest and asked him to spar once.’

Although the time was pulled and the concerned person was him and not Roan, but the start of the battle was the same.

This made him think of the past Int forest battle.

‘A future that’s different in time and situation but the structure itself is the same.’

This battle could be the same kind of future as the battle of Int forest.

‘If perhaps, my guess is true.....’

He thought of the battle in his past life.

He clearly remembered the conversation and the contents they had just like it was yesterday.

The day his and Pierce’s life perfectly split.

They were memories he couldn’t forget even if he wanted to.

Roan gripped the spear tightly.

Grip.

He felt the rough texture of the wood.

‘Last time, everyone expected for an overwhelming victory on part of Viscount Baker.’

Then the results?

‘Just like their expectations, Viscount Reil Baker obtained an overwhelming victory.....’

Pierce from back then, was a normal spearman and didn't even know mana, but regardless of that they sparred for fifty blows.

‘Although Viscount Baker faced him in quite a relaxed manner, it was a really shocking result.’

Because of that Pierce could become Reil's disciple.

A duke and supreme commander of Rinse kingdom.

The start of that road was the spar against Reil.

‘On top of that, aside from victory and defeat, I can't miss the opportunity to spar against the best spearman in the country.’

The spar Roan was thinking about could be completely different to the one in his memories.

But even so, he really wanted to spar with him.

‘Because I didn't even have the chance to do so in my past life.’

Roan looked at Reil fixedly.

‘If perhaps, this spar is the one that will happen the next year just like my guess.....’

Calmness sank into his eyes.

‘Viscount Baker will laugh brightly.....’

And surprisingly, Reil smiled brightly as if he was waiting.

‘Then he said, ‘Shall I check your skills?’

When he thought like that.

“Then, Shall I check your skills?”

Reil’s voice was heard.

A look that coincided with Roan’s thoughts.

‘Ah.....’

Roan forcefully gulped down the exclamation.

His guess was right.

This spar was certainly the one Reil and Pierce did in his past life.

‘Why are you still? Are you scared? Then, should I move first?’

His memory was clear.

“Why are you still? Are you scared? Then, should I move first?”

There wasn’t even one mistake.

Roan took in a deep breath.

‘From now on, the spear comes piercing against my body. But that’s a feint. Actually, he’s looking to attack my left foot.’

Not differently, Reil bent his left knee slightly and quickly stabbed with his stick.

A really strong and quick stabbing.

Roan focused on the wooden stick and his wrist.

The wrist that slightly twisted in front of his stomach.

At the same time, the end of the spear fell towards the ground.

‘It’s the same as my past life.’

Roan hurriedly pulled back his left foot.

Tang!

Reil’s spear hit the ground.

“Oho! You are good?”

A humorous voice.

However, amazement was seen in Reil’s eyes.

‘You dodged this?’

His mouth slightly rose.

‘Then, should I play earnestly?’

Reil smiled brightly once more and swung his spear.

Roan fell back and lowered his body.

The trace of the spear filled his sight.

But he didn’t become astounded.

‘Although it’s not that I remember all the attacks.....’

He remembered the first and the last 50th attack clearly.

‘If Pierce from back then could face him, then the me from right now also can.’

At least, the Roan from now was stronger than Pierce from back then.

On top of that, if his guess was right Reil wouldn’t even have put strength into his attacks.

‘I just have to endure until the 50th blow.’

The last blow Roan was thinking about was the 51st one.

It was the next blow which Pierce couldn’t block and was done in.

## Chapter 59 : A New Start (2)

---

Spat!

A sharp sound.

Tak! Tadak! Tadak! Tak!

Continued by that, sounds of heavy blows were heard.

The hard wooden sticks for practice split the air without stopping.

‘Is, is it even?’

‘Roan has equal skills with Viscount Reil Baker?’

The soldiers surrounding the practice field opened their eyes roundly.

They also knew that Roan’s spear skills were outstanding.

But his opponent was the best spearman in Rinse kingdom and the one called spear genius.

“Ey. Viscount Baker is going easy on him.”

The mumblings of a soldier.

The soldiers around him nodded unconsciously.

Meanwhile, the battle was facing its conclusion.

Reil’s stick twisted like a snake and tried to stab Roan’s side.



It was a fast and strange attack.

However Roan wasn't perplexed.

He stamped the floor with the stick and twisted his upper body to the side.

Spat!

Reil's stick missed its target and stabbed the empty air.

Roan hit the stick that was on the ground with the back of his feet as if he was waiting for it.

Paat!

The stick drew a line along with sharp sound and surged up to attack Reil's chin.

'He's good.'

Reil smiled at Roan's sharp attack and took one step back.

Spat!

Roan's stick passed in front of his nose.

A movement just enough to barely dodge the stick.

It was the perfect distance.

‘Amazing.’

Roan was astounded.

Reil was really relaxed even in the middle of this fierce battle.

‘Having looked at him from the side and facing him directly is certainly different.’

In his past life, the confrontation between Reil and Pierce, where he watched from the sideline, was as beautiful as a dance.

The spear drew lines and the both of them repeated closing in and backing up.

The sound of the sticks hitting each other and cutting through the air was heard as music.

‘That was the day I saw Pierce’s real look, which I couldn’t see because I was too close.’

In his past life, Roan and Pierce started together from the training camp and spent 2 years together.

At first, Roan took care of the shy and timid Pierce.

Although all the trainers and the seniors of the troop raised their thumbs saying that Pierce’s talent was the best, at that time Roan was full of confidence.

‘I also thought that there was nothing I couldn’t do.’

However, everything changed after meeting Reil.

Pierce, who was shy and timid, became one of the most influential people that would be able to lead the kingdom's future after the confrontation against Reil.

Pierce became Reil's disciple just like that and left his side.

And.

‘When we met again he became a vice corps commander, and I was still a normal spearman.’

Roan and Pierce.

The lives of the two people, who were almost equal, started to change after this confrontation.

‘That's why I can't forget it even if I want to.’

He had a bitter smile.

Roan bit his lower lip.

He wasn't in a situation to be reminiscing about things from the past.

The attacks continued without letting him rest.

‘My breath is getting heavy.’

If there seemed to be a weak point, Reil's stick closed in on it stubbornly.

Tak! Tadak! Tak!

A light sound.

It certainly was a difficult situation, but Roan didn't get pushed back.

No, rather, he was even with Reil.

Although he couldn't use the mana because of the gazes of other people, with Kalian's tear and his strong body, the tip of the stick moved sharply and elegantly.

Spat!

Roan's spear cut through the air and started to make big movements.

He was now executing Pierce's spearmanship, which was now Roan's spearmanship.

'So this is Roan's spearmanship.'

Reil's mouth slightly rose up.

'It certainly is different than what Pierce executed.'

Even if Pierce was a genius, it had only been two months since he started training in Roan's spearmanship.

Compared to that, Roan already had more than 10 years.

His spear twisted and looked for Reil's: arms, legs, stomach, private parts and joints.

Everything was deadly and vital.

‘Kugh.’

Reil grinded his teeth for the first time.

It was because Roan’s attack was much sharper than what he had initially thought.

‘If I keep being relaxed, I might face an embarrassing situation?’

Reil put strength in his grip and charged forward.

His defensive attacks changed to become offensive ones.

Tang! Tadang!

Even the sound of the clashes became different.

‘Kugh.’

Every time the spears clashed, his palm became numb.

‘He’s planning to end it now.’

Roan grinded his teeth.

The number of blows had already reached 40.

‘Whew!’

Roan let out a long sigh.

Actually for him, this battle had much meaning.

‘From the many futures, there’s one that always happens, no matter what I do.’

Int’s forest battle was like that, and this battle was also the same.

‘In the battle of Int forest, the time and the troops participating were different than my past life.....’

When the orc that came charging forward but fell because of a branch, it coincided perfectly with his past life.

Although it seems like I have the advantage because I know the future, the events are....

Reality wasn’t like that at all.

‘What if there aren’t changes even in the results?’

What if the ones that should die, died, and the ones who should live, lived?

What if everything flowed like a preconceived result?

What if in the end, he ends up dying in the battlefield just like his

past life?

‘The results of right now has no meaning at all.’

But of course, it wasn't that the future had to happen as he knew it.

The slightly different future just like the Prely river battle, and Slen battle that weren't in the future at all.

‘If my guess is correct.....’

In the future he would face from now on, there would be many of these types of cases.

The cases he knew in the future, and the same cases.

Slightly different cases.

Completely different cases.

Cases he didn't know about, etc.

Various different types of the future were mixed together causing uncertainty and were also approaching closer.

‘Because of that, I don't know if the situations that I am aware of will happen exactly like in my past life.’

That's why he wanted to check it.

When Reil requested a battle after hitting his chest.

‘I really got my act together.’

The battle against Reil and Pierce that he remembered.

The start of it was certainly the same.

‘Will I be able to change the results of this battle?’

If he could, there was no need to be afraid of the incoming future.

‘I can’t keep relying on the future I know.’

On top of that, the thing called the future was really uncertain.

He was at a point where he could rely on it passively but had to actively take the initiative.

Because of that, this battle against Reil was really important.

‘I will crush all the different futures where the results are already pre-determined.’

Then, a sharp sound was heard.

Spat!

The spear drew a line and flew towards him.

Roan took two steps back and twisted his wrist.

Tang!



The spears collided against each other.

“Amazing. I had quite the fun time, sparring.”

This was Reil’s voice.

Roan gritted his teeth.

“Block this one too.”

They were some lightly tossed words.

The battle was coming to an end.

In his past life, Pierce couldn’t block the last attack and lost.

‘I will block it. I will block it and change the future.’

Roan opened his two eyes abruptly.

Paat!

In that instant, the surrounding scenery and spar became slow in Roan’s eyes.

Meanwhile, only Reil showed any fast movements.

Spaaaaaat!

The spear closed in while it cut through the air.

He could see that the tip of the spear vibrated in all directions.

At first glance it seemed like it was aiming for his stomach but actually it was a continuous attack followed by the two thighs, sides, and back.

Roan glared at the tip of his spear and turned his body.

Everything was really slow to the point where he yawned.

At the same time, Reil's spear lowered and aimed for the thigh.

‘Hph!’

Roan took in a breath and charged forward.

Spaaaaaat!

Reil's spear slightly grazed Roan's thigh.

But the attack didn't end there.

Tuk.

The spear stopped like it was all a lie, surged up, and then twisted.

It was a movement aimed at the sides.

‘Quicker!’

Roan felt trapped because of his slow movements.

He turned his body and closed in on Reil.

A perplexed look could be seen on Reil.

Taaaaat!

Roan passed by Reil's body like that and made it to his back. At the same time, he tried to kick Reil's ankle. The movement was executed perfectly and everything flowed together.

‘It's done!’

A faint smile appeared on Roan's face.

Then!

Reil's two feet, that were solidly stuck to the ground, started to float in the air.

‘Impossible!’

Roan looked at himself kicking the empty air and frowned.

He thought that it was the perfect attack.

‘What kind of reaction is this fast!’

Then, he felt a pain as if someone was poking his eyes with a needle.

It was because he had used Kalian's tear over-excessively.

However, Roan endured it and swung his spear.

Paaaat!

The spear moved through the air very slowly.

After a while.

Puuuuuk!

The tip of the spear hit Reil's back.

‘Kugh!’

Only then did Roan blink once.

Pat!

At that moment, the scenery that was slow until now returned to its original speed.

Tat!

Reil, who jumped to the air, turned his body with the spear.

He made some distance with Roan in an instant.

“Kugh.”

Pain was felt in his back.

‘What the hell just happened?’

Reil frowned.

He executed one of his own spearmanship techniques that he had saved to finish the spar.

He thought that with Roan’s skills he would be able to either dodge or block the attack that was aimed for the thigh.

‘But I thought that he would fall by the following attack.’

His guess was wrong in a way that was good to see.

But it wasn’t to the point it completely slipped away from him.

Roan showed quick movements to the point that it was surprising and then closed in on Reil.

At the same time, he turned his body. After that he was at his back he tried to kick him.

Reil kicked the ground and jumped away instinctively.

However, he couldn’t block the attack that followed.

‘If this was a real battle, my back would have deep cut into it.’

Reil glanced at Roan.

‘I can’t measure his skills.’

He thought that he had measured Roan's skills to a certain point during the spar.

But the moment he thought of the last attack, Roan showed skills beyond his estimation.

He was truly amazed.

“Are you also able to blo.....”

The moment that he was planning to compliment him.

Pat!

Roan charged through and faced him with a fierce intent.

‘Kugh!’

Reil gulped some air and raised his spear.

Offense and defense happened again.

From now on, it was something Roan also faced for the first time.

It was a battle that didn't happen in his past life.

‘I'm changing the results!’

Just because the situation changed a bit, he couldn't be relieved.

This was because the future was still uncertain.

‘A blitz warfare!’

From now on, he couldn’t use Kalian’s tear for a while.

Tak! Tadak! Tak!

The clashing sounds filled the training room.

The fierce attacks continued.

“Amazing.”

Io mumbled with a surprised expression.

The people around him nodded in agreement.

They were surprised at two things.

The first, obviously was Reil’s spear skills.

‘The skills of Viscount Baker is really famous.....’

But what was even more surprising was Roan’s spear skills.

‘For the skills of an 18 year old spearman to be this high.’

Io was amazed.

A faint expectation appeared in his face.

‘The one who will continue the legacy of Viscount Baker, no, he may become a commander that surpasses him.’

Io’s mouth slightly rose up.

‘If he teaches him well from now on, he will certainly.....’

The deeper his thoughts grew, the closer the battle approached the climax.

Roan put strength into his grip.

‘Let’s end it with this.’

He was planning on executing the 7th stance of Roan’s spearmanship.

This was the strong technique that stabbed the spear on Violin’s side.

‘Hph!’

He took in a deep breath.

The muscles on both of his arms swelled.

Spat!

The spear split the wind.



At the same time, the entire spear moved to the sides.

‘Is this also Roan’s spearmanship?’

Reil looked at the gorgeously moving spear, to the point that it made him dizzy, and smiled.

He wasn’t certain if he was aiming for the left or the right because of the big movements.

‘Is it the left or the right?’

Reil glared at the tip of the spear and then twisted his wrist.

The place he tried to block was his left side.

Then.

Tung!

The spear hit the air as if it was flicking along a heavy sound.

The tip of the spear suddenly changed trajectory and came carving into Reil’s right side.

‘Amazing!’

It was an extraordinary change.

Reil hurriedly pulled back his spear and twisted his body.

Then.

‘Kugh!’

He felt a pain in his back.

‘Damn.....’

He was surprised with Roan’s attack.

Because of this moment’s discomfort, his movements were slow.

‘My ribs will be smashed.’

Reil bit his lower lip.

At this state, he wouldn’t be able to block the spear, nor dodge it.

‘Roan. I’m sorry but I can’t do anything about it.’

He bitterly smiled and took in a deep breath.

In that instant, a soft feeling surged up from his stomach.

Paaaat!

At the same time, the spear split the air at an amazing speed.

Reil’s spear hit Roan’s spear.

Pagak!

A sharp sound.

Roan's spear broke in a way that was easy to see.

“Kugh!”

Roan grinded his teeth at the amazing shock that was felt and quickly spread out from his palms.

But even so, he didn't let go of his spear.

‘Is it mana.....?’

He guessed the identity of the strength that surged up from his body in an instant.

“Kugh.”

His body trembled.

Viscount Baker showed his amazing strength, worthy of being a man of his reputation.

‘So this is Viscount Reil Baker's real strength.’

The difference in having mana and not having mana was certainly big.

‘What would have happened if I also used the Flamdor mana technique?’

He would have succeeded in that last attack.

Regret was left.

‘But even so, I have to hide my mana.’

He had just started training in it.

If he made a mistake and rumours spread, he would have his mana technique taken away from him even before he reached the peak.

“Whew.”

Roan let out a long sigh.

‘Does it end like this.....?’

Roan looked at his broken spear and shook his head.

Then, Reil’s voice was heard.

“I’m sorry.”

He bitterly smiled and slowly walked up.

And surprisingly enough, he slightly bowed.

“It’s my defeat.”

This was a sudden declaration of defeat.

The soldiers who were around the training ground had surprised expressions on their faces.

“He lost?”

“Viscount Reil Baker lost?”

“Impossible!”

They couldn’t understand.

The one with the broken spear was Roan and not Reil.

On the other side Io, Aaron, the knights, and etc. nodded at Reil’s declaration of defeat.

‘He even used mana while facing a normal soldier, so it’s right that it’s his defeat.’

Io had a faint smile and nodded his head.

Everyone was thinking the same thing.

They didn’t know the truth; Roan was currently learning a mana technique.

‘Even so, he’s the real thing.’

Io’s sight moved to Roan.

He had the skills to evenly fight against the spear genius Reil, and the outstanding strategies and tactics he showed in the battles.

‘He said he was only 18. Then.....’

Many plans were being set up in his head.

On the other side, Roan was a bit perplexed at Reil’s sudden defeat declaration.

“No. The one that lost is m.....”

Roan, who was raising his broken spear, staggered.

It seemed like the mana Reil put in his body still remained inside him.

Reil hurriedly grabbed Roan’s hand and supported him.

“The internal shock would have been greater.”

Reil awkwardly smiled and grabbed Roan’s wrist.

He was planning to calm his interior when it was a mess.

“I’m, i’m fin.....”

Roan hurriedly tried to pull away his wrist, but he couldn’t beat Reil’s strength.

Then.

“Huh?!”

Reil, who was inserting mana through the tip of his finger, had a surprised expression and looked at Roan.

And then, he shook his head as if it was astonishing.

“You were more of an amazing guy than what I initially thought.”

He whispered in a really low voice in Roan’s ear.

“I will keep it a secret for now.”

Roan bitterly smiled.

Because he knew what Reil was talking about.

“Instead, you will have to speak with me.”

Roan just nodded instead of replying back.

Reil was still holding onto his wrist.

And then, he was astounded.

‘A normal soldier is accumulating mana inside his body?’

Reil fixedly looked into Roan’s eyes.

‘He gets funnier the more I know about him.’

He had a thought that the things that would happen from now on, they were going to even more fun.

And that feeling got it exactly right.



# Chapter 60 : A New Start (3)

---

“Waaaa!”

The training field was just like a celebratory party.

The soldiers, who were watching at the spar while holding their breaths, couldn't hold it any more and yelled.

Even if Reil was considered a hero in Rinse kingdom, Roan was their fellow soldier and a good friend.

That's why they could only get excited at Reil's declaration of defeat.

“Waaa! Certainly, sir adjutant Roan!”

“Roan! Roan! Roan! Roan! “

“Waaa! Sir adjutant Roan was my predecessor!”

“Kuha! He certainly is the pride of our 13th squad!”

“I knew that he would become big!”

The people with the biggest voices even in the middle of the cheering, they were the 13th squad that served with Roan before it became the 12th squad.

Vice squad commander Austin of the 12th squad and the commander of the 13th squad, Tane, were shaking hands while they were beaming.

“Wuooooooooo! Roan! Roan! Roan! Roan! “

The noisiest one was Pete, of the 13th squad.

He cheered Roan with a voice as loud as his body was big.

“You sure are popular.”

Reil smiled brightly and hit Roan’s shoulder.

Roan just smiled awkwardly instead of replying back.

Then Aaron, Gale, etc., approached him with Io at the front.

“It was an amazing spar.”

Io complemented Reil first and then looked at Roan.

It kind of felt like he wasn’t interested in Reil.

‘For the man that sang the Baker, Baker, Baker song to be like that.....’

Albert, who was looking at the sides, was astounded.

“Roan. It really was an amazing fight.”

“Thank you.”

Roan bowed deeply.

‘Kugh.’

As the internal shock wasn’t completely gone, the state of his

body wasn't that good.

'If Viscount Baker showed all of his skills.....'

He knew that Reil had held himself back in this fight.

If he didn't do so, this battle wouldn't have flowed in a normal way in the first place.

"Rest for now, and then let's talk."

Io was very leisurely and benign.

'What's more precious and doesn't return is time. And rather than that time, he's someone I don't want to let go.'

Roan was someone he didn't want to let go.

'Perhaps even more so than Viscount Baker.'

His mouth slightly rose up.

"Roan! Roan! Roan! Roan! "

"Rose! Rose! Rose! Rose!"

The soldiers surrounding the training field yelled with all of their strength.

Now, for them, Roan was a hero as amazing as Reil.

But of course he still had many things to do until he became a real hero.

\*\*\*\*\*

Roan could stay in a lodging all alone because of Gale's efforts.

When he was still settling down in his imperfect interior, footsteps were heard outside the door.

‘He came.’

Roan put his mana in order and stood up.

As he stood in front of the entrance, the sounds of the footsteps stopped.

Kiiig.

The creaking of the wood was heard when the door opened.

“Oh! You were waiting for me?”

It was a familiar voice.

It was Reil.

He closed the door and walked in.

“How’s your body?”

At the question, Roan faintly smiled and nodded.

“I’m fine.”

At that instant, Reil checked him with his eyes.

“You are okay? Does that mean that things such as my spearmanship isn’t that much?”

“N, no.”

As Roan shook his head with a perplexed expression, Reil burst out in laughter.

“Hahahaha. It’s a joke. A joke.”

And then, he sat down in a chair.

“Then, shall we talk?”

Reil had a weird expression.

“Yes. Understood.”

Roan sat at the opposite side and nodded.

“You learned mana, right?”

Reil, went directly to the point.

Roan replied with a calm expression.

“Yes. I did.”

“So I was right.”

Reil put on a faint smile.

He looked at Roan while crossing his arms.

“It hasn’t been that long since you learned it?”

“Yes. It’s been about a month.”

“Then that means that you learned it during your retirement.”

The smile on Reil’s face became even bigger.

Roan just looked at Reil’s eyes.

‘Is it time he asked me how I learned it?.....’

He had already prepared an answer in advance.

‘I learned it from a retired soldier.’

It was the answer he used when Tane, the commander of the 13th squad, asked him where he learned his spear skills after he observed Roan.

The first time it was about fate helping by giving him a retired soldier who taught him the spear in his childhood. This time it was about him learning mana.

But rather because it was too obvious, there was no space to doubt it.

‘How many retired soldiers, knights, and powerful hidden people are there.....’

But of course, learning spear skills and mana from one of those people was quite a scarce difficult thing to actually do.

But even so, it wasn’t impossible.

‘Now, ask me quickly.’

Roan was prepared to answer.

However, Reil just spat out strange words.

“But your mana technique is quite peculiar.”

“Yes?”

“I don’t know it well but it feels like it’s not stable.”

When he grabbed Roan’s wrist to calm down the internal shock, Reil could certainly feel it.

‘It had a feeling like many different natures were mixed into it.’

But what was fortunate was that one energy was really rough and active and the other energy was was calm and still.

Because of that, the energies weren’t hitting or clashing against each other yet.

‘Was it originally this kind of mana?’

Reil looked at Roan well.

And Roan also had a confused face.

‘It seems like he’s not even conscious of it. Then, that means that it’s not that big of a problem.....’

Reil took in a deep breath.

If by chance the energies collided against each other, it may not simply end at him losing his mana.

‘He may become disabled.’

Roan, who has outstanding talent, become disabled?

Reil wanted to block at least that much.

“How did you learn the mana technique?”



It was a question thrown out to exactly grasp the situation that doesn't have any rebellious intent.

Roan brought forth the answer that he had prepared.

“I learned it from a retired soldier.”

For a while, Roan narrated the story that he had created a while ago.

Reil slowly nodded.

‘I don't know the skills of that retired soldier, but the mana technique may be unstable by itself.’

He bit his lower lip.

‘I will have to keep checking up on him for now.’

There was nothing that he could do right now.

Reil forced a laugh and looked at Roan.

“Then, Roan's spearmanship is also.....?”

“Yes. I learned it from the retired soldier. As it didn't have a name, I put in my name.”

Roan shyly laughed and bowed.

‘Pierce, i'm sorry.’

But even so it was Roan that had some considerations.

“I would also like to meet that retired soldier once.”

Looking at the level of Roan’s spearmanship and the fact that he had learned mana from him, he certainly wouldn’t be an ordinary soldier.

His warrior’s curiosity surged up.

“I’m sorry. He tends to move around quite a bit so I don’t know his precise location.”

“Hm. Can’t do anything about it then.”

Reil shook his hand as if it was okay and nodded.

It was up to there.

Reil didn’t ask anymore about questions related to the mana or the spear.

‘There’s no need to ask anymore.’

In the first place, this was what Reil’s personality was like.

The current state was what was important and not who taught him, when, where and how.

On top of that.

“I will keep it a secret for now.”

He decided to keep his mouth shut about Roan learning mana.

‘There’s no need for me to spread it when he himself is trying to hide it. On top of that, he has just started to learn it. If rumours were to spread, he may be targeted by people that wanted the mana technique.’

But there was only one thing he had to be certain about.

‘The possibility of being a spy.’

But that possibility was really low.

‘According to the words of Duke Tate, he had already investigated him once.’

But even if he was still uneasy, he just had to check the information of the kingdom or ask a request to the thieves guild.

Reil looked at Roan.

‘Whatever it is, it would be good if he grew quickly.’

His thoughts were rather fixed in a weird way.

‘Only then will we be able to spar again.’

Reil was a real warrior.

He was expecting for Roan's mana technique and spear skills to grow a lot more compared to now.

‘I was too bored until now.’

There weren't many opponents for him in Rinse kingdom.

The knights and magicians didn't suit him in temperament or what they did.

‘Even so.....’

He felt regret.

“It's regrettable.”

His thoughts popped up unconsciously.

“What is?”

As Roan carefully asked, Reil let out a short sigh.

“Whew. Because you learned another mana technique.....”

His last words dimmed a bit.

Roan just waited for the next words.

“I can’t formally take you in as a disciple.”

Reil smacked his lips.

“It’s really something to say this right in front of you but I quite like you.”

But of course, that wasn’t the only reason.

‘If I taught him myself, he would be able to grow more quickly.’

Then, he would be able to properly battle a little bit quicker. But he couldn’t formally take in someone who learned another mana technique, as a disciple of the Baker family.

“Ah.....”

Roan let out a low exclamation.

‘Did I get recognized by Viscount Reil Baker?’

A corner of his heart became numb with pride.

In his past life, he couldn’t even get a glance from Reil.

But right now, Reil wanted to take him in as a formal disciple.

Reil continued speaking.

“Because formal disciples of the Baker family have to learn the Baker mana technique.”

Roan just nodded.

Becoming a formal disciple of a family meant that the first thing you had to do was to learn the traditional mana technique of the family.

But although not every family was like that, that was the common practice and custom.

“But even if that’s the case, I can’t ask you to forget the mana technique you already learned.”

Reil smacked his lips.

Roan put on a smile.

‘I can’t give up on the mana technique of the fire monarch Reid. And.....’

His eyes became calm.

‘Even if that wasn’t the case, I can’t become your disciple.’

Roan took in a deep breath.

In the first place, he wasn’t planning on becoming his disciple.

No, precisely speaking he couldn’t.

‘I can’t leave this place for the moment.’

Roan had many things he had to do from now on.

He had to have a solid start for his future actions.

They were very important things.

‘I don’t know if you would stay here and teach me yourself.....’

It was impossible to leave for Reil’s territory.

But even so, Reil also couldn’t keep roaming around in the eastern territory of the kingdom while leaving his own territory empty.

In the end it became a situation where Roan couldn’t become Reil’s disciple.

“Regrettable. Too regrettable.”

Reil continued to smack his lips and shook his head.

Then, Roan’s mouth slightly rose up.

‘Should I tell him now?’

The solid starting point for the future.

And it was one of the most important things even amongst them.

Roan whispered in a low voice.

“If it is okay with you, may I recommend you a soldier?”

“Recommend?”

Reil had an interested expression.

‘Mmm. Recommend.....’

He had already checked his outstanding abilities but he didn’t know about his eyes in judging people.

‘Well, it isn’t bad to hear you out for now.’

Reil slowly nodded.

Roan brightly smiled and continued saying.

“The soldier I want to recommend.....”

Strength was put in his voice.

“Is spearman Pierce from rose troop of the 7th corps.”

\*\*\*\*\*

“No! I don’t want to!”



It was a rough voice and one with a firm attitude.

You could see in Pierce's attitude and expression his absolute intention to decline.

"Pierce. Do you know just how amazing of an opp....."

Roan said as if he was easing him up but.

"I don't want to. I don't want to leave your side."

Pierce cut off his words right from the start.

Roan had a troubled expression on his face.

It was an expression of various mixed emotions.

'It's stifling but at the same time proud.'

Looking at Pierce wanting to remain at his side whatever happened, he really felt great.

But even so, he couldn't leave him at his side.

'Pierce. You have to become Viscount Baker's disciple.'

Roan was planning to send Pierce towards Reil.

'And fortunately, the viscount also sees you in a good light.'

It was after Reil had personally checked Pierce's talent in the 10 days he spent at Beno castle.

He was rather surprised and happy as his thoughts coincided with Roan's.

'There's no way for Viscount Baker to not recognize your skills.'

Roan pulled up Pierce who had a cold and hard expression and sat him down in the chair in front of him.

"Pierce."

He called out in a low calling voice.

Pierce just turned his head away instead of replying back.

It meant that he didn't want to talk.

'I also have it more comfortable if you are by my side.'

Pierce was picked to be the one with the best talent in all of history.

He became a supreme commander after having climbed up to become a duke in his past life.

He was one of the existences that lead Rinse kingdom to prominence.

That existence was Pierce.

He really wanted to leave him by his side and take care of him so that no one could steal him away from Roan.

However, he wouldn't be able to make Pierce's real talent bloom that way.

'You have to learn spear skills from Viscount Baker. Only then will you become the spear genius from my memories.'

He looked at Pierce's face fixedly.

He was still dodging his sight with a stiffened expression.

"Pierce. Do you remember what I told you last time?"

A sudden story.

Pierce, who was resolved to not converse at all, slightly turned away.

An expression implying what he meant.

Roan smiled faintly and said.

"The day when the two of us remained when of all the others went on vacation."

"Ah....."

Pierce let out a low exclamation.

Roan continued saying.

"That time you told me. That I will become a great general that makes the continent tremble."

“Yes. I certainly did so.”

Pierce unconsciously nodded and replied back.

Roan brightly smiled and asked in return.

“So what did I tell you then?”

At that instant, Pierce flinched.

It was a memory that he couldn't forget.

As he hesitated, Roan continued saying.

“That if I become a great commander, you will become the best spearman in the continent. I certainly said so.”

Roan took in a deep breath.

“I still haven't changed my mind about that. Pierce, if it's your talent you will certainly be able to become the best spearman in the continent.”

He had eyes that don't even have the slightest movement.

Pierce's heart began to beat faster.

Roan started to put in more and more strength in his voice.

“Pierce. I will work hard to become a great general that makes the continent tremble.”

It was a declaration.

It was a really bold one.

It wasn't something a mere class 5 adjutant should be saying.

But even so, Roan's eyes and expression was still serious.

‘Actually, i’m planning to become a monarch.....’

He wasn't in a situation to be able to say that yet. Roan continued saying.

“If I become a great commander, i’m planning to use you as a general as promised. And because of that.....”

His eyes became hot.

And that was also the same for Pierce.

“You also need to become the strongest spearman in the continent as promised.”

Boom.

A big rock fell down in Pierce's heart.

“Strongest spearman in the continent.....”

He bit his lower lip.

‘To become a spearman stronger than anyone.....’

Becoming Reil’s disciple was the most certain method.

Pierce raised his head and looked at Roan.

And Roan slowly nodded.

“The opportunity to become the best spearman in the continent is right in front of your eyes.”

Pierce’s face heated up.

Roan grabbed Pierce’s shoulders with both of his hands.

“Pierce. Grab this opportunity.”

A voice with strength followed.

“For me.”

# Chapter 61 : A New Start (4)

---

Dudududu.

Tens of cavalrymen rode down the plain escorting a big carriage.

“It’s a really secluded place.”

The carriage shook about.

A middle aged man that had a big build looked at the scenery outside the carriage and frowned.

‘Should I have rested instead?’

His regret came late.

But in the end the man shook his head.

‘No. I can’t just leave that Reil guy alone.’

If he slipped up, a force from the eastern region that followed him could appear.

“I can’t let him be like that. The eastern territory is my territory.’

The face of the man stiffened.

He was a middle aged man with a large build.

He was the commander of the eastern region of Rinse kingdom, Viscount Benjamin Doyle.

Then from the other side, a cunning voice could be heard.

“There’s no need for you to step out for things like this.....”

The owner of the voice was Baron Ive Lever, who was a staff officer that had the rank of a corps commander and was close to Benjamin.

He was putting on a smile as cunning as his voice.

“No. I have to certainly press him down at this opportunity.”

“Viscount Baker is only a skilled spearman. He doesn’t even have a force at his side, so why are you this worried?”

He made a stupid sound.

Benjamin’s eyes became fierce.

“Don’t say such comfortable things. There are countless people that would gather below him if he just raises his flag.”

He clenched his fists.

“Now is the only opportunity to press him down.”

If he raised a disciple or obtained a territory, it was obvious that his forces would grow at an amazing speed.



‘If that happens, it would be dangerous for me.’

Benjamin took in a deep breath.

‘I have to make the corps commander stand by my side at this opportunity.’

He needed to have a starting point which Reil wouldn’t even be able to touch.

A dense desire appeared in Benjamin’s eyes.

\*\*\*\*\*

“No. That’s not it. The position of your foot is wrong.”

Reil moved around busily and yelled.

He was checking on the training of the soldiers of rose troop while they were on the training field.

“You have to twist your wrist there.”

“Yes! Understood!”

The soldiers were putting in a lot of effort.

‘When will we be able to receive teachings from Viscount Baker!’

‘I have to learn all that I can!’

Their gazes were naturally directed to the front.

There was a youth with a childish face who trained just like them at the front.

‘This is all because of sir adjutant Roan.’

‘Sir adjutant begged Viscount Baker himself.’

The reason why the soldiers could receive Reil’s teachings.

That was because of Roan.

Actually, Reil already planned to teach Roan some important things before he returned to his territory.

Although he couldn’t take in him as a formal disciple because of the mana technique, he couldn’t just leave an outstanding talent alone.

In Roan’s case, if he fixed his many bad habits he had and altered some sloppy parts, he would be able to raise to a greater level than now.

Because of that, he followed Roan all day and taught him this and that.

And Roan realized that Reil’s teachings were quite an important thing.

At the same time, he thought that he didn’t want to receive the teachings alone. Instead he wanted to do it with the soldiers of rose troop.

Roan carefully revealed his thoughts and Reil accepted them with pleasure.

Because of that, the soldiers experienced an exciting situation that they normally wouldn't be able to have even once in their lives.

“Now! Let's do it from the start!”

Reil clapped and encouraged the soldiers.

“Good. You have to do it like that!”

Whether he complimented them.

“You have to step a bit more to the left when you do that.”

Or he gave them advice.

“Again! It's all wrong!”

Or he became angry.

Reil passionately taught the soldiers.

“Mmm.”

His sight moved towards Roan.

“Ah.....”

A low exclamation flowed out.

‘He certainly became better.’

Originally, Roan didn’t have many useless movements in his spear skills.

But even so, there were still some lacking points in Reil’s eyes.

He showed Roan some postures of himself, and Roan fixed them.

And the effects appeared on the spot.

‘Do I have to say that his eyes are good?’

Roan had an ability to not miss even the slightest movements.

Actually, Reil didn’t know it, but Roan’s ability was thanks to Kalian’s tear.

‘I get to see many more things in a short moment because of Kalian’s tear.’

Even if Reil made a small movement, he could grasp all of the information like: the position of the wrist, the foot, the twisting of the joints, etc.

‘Because of that, I get to know how to make a proper and precise stance.’

Roan ground his teeth.

Spat!

The spear cut through the air and moved.

‘It certainly became more comfortable.’

He had only changed some small movements, but swinging and stabbing the spear became much more comfortable.

‘I have to learn all that I can before Viscount Baker leaves.’

Roan was even more passionate than Reil.

Although he couldn’t become his formal disciple, he tried extremely hard to properly learn even a single stance.

Spat!

His spear cut through the air again.

\*\*\*\*\*

“Baron Tate, nowadays you would feel full even if you didn’t eat anything.”

“Hahaha. Honestly speaking, it is a bit assuring.”

Aaron faintly smiled and nodded.

He was facing Io and conversed with him.

‘To have the opportunity to talk with Count Lancephil for such a long while.’

He was noble that had only five such similar nobles in the kingdom.

For Aaron, who was only a baron, he was an existence that was really difficult to see.

On top of that, it was almost impossible to get closer to him with only conversing.

‘It’s already been four days since we were together.’

This was all for Roan.

‘It seems like he has fun when he talks about Roan.’

Io stayed in the headquarters of rose troop and talked about many things with Roan at his side.

Tactics and strategies were obvious, but they also talked about their own lives.

‘I have to get in his eyes in this opportunity.’

Aaron bit his lower lip.

If he could do so, he could gain a rock solid background into the kingdom.

“How long is Count Lancephil planning to stay in the kingdom?”

“Mmm. I wonder.....”

Io’s last words dimmed.

Even if he didn’t do so, he was already worried about that part.

‘I was planning to return to Pavor castle after meeting with Viscount Baker.....’

His first objective was returning to the castle after taking Reil.

But now, he was pouring more interest in Roan rather than Reil.

But even so, he couldn’t leave his territory empty.

‘It would be good to move when Viscount Baker also leaves.’

He wanted to take Roan with him, but there was something called procedures in the army.

‘I could also invite Roan later.’

Before that, he was planning to raise their intimacy.

“Probably ten.....”

When he talked up to then, a knock was heard.

Knock. Knock. Knock.

“It’s Mendel.”

The owner of the voice was the closest one to Aaron and the eldest among the staff officers.

“Come in.”

Aaron slightly smiled towards Io and then looked at the entrance.

Kiig.

The door carefully opened and Mendel showed up with a perplexed expression.

“What happened?”

At the question, Mendel bowed down.

“The gift you asked for has just arrived.”

“Ah.....”



A low exclamation came out of Aaron's mouth.  
He brightly smiled and nodded.

"It came at a suitable time."

His voice was a bit excited.  
But Mendel still had a perplexed expression.

"But....."

He couldn't finish his words and hesitated.

"But.....?"

As Aaron asked back, Mendel let out a short sigh.

"Whew. The commander of the eastern region, Viscount Benjamin Doyle, has brought the gift himself."

"Huh?"

Aaron frowned.

'Viscount Doyle moved by himself?'

Something he had never thought about had just occurred.

Benjamin was originally someone with a heavy butt.

Aaron's face stiffened.

'It's because of Viscount Baker.'

Benjamin not liking Reil was a fact that was well known.

'If I make a mistake, a disorder may hap.....'

When he thought up to this part.

Io's voice was heard.

"Don't worry too much."

He also knew a lot about how Benjamin was thinking about Reil.

But there was no need to worry.

Io brightly smiled and continued saying.

"I'm here."

Although Benjamin was the commander of the eastern region, he wouldn't be able to act as he wished in front of a count.

The smile on his mouth became even more dense.

\*\*\*\*\*

Benjamin was really displeased.

‘I’m here but they don’t even come to greet me?’

This was the arrival of a commander.

They had just sent a staff officer that was called Mendel.

‘He wouldn’t already have connoted to that Reil, right?’

His face stiffened.

Ive, who was looking at the side, shook his head with a cunning expression.

“Baron Tate is really bad mannered.”

It was a sound that scratched your insides.

Benjamin tightly bit his lower lip.

‘I will have to properly scold him.’

He was planning to show his imposing self.

‘I will make him realize where the 7th corps is from.’

Benjamin and Reil.

He was planning to clearly show him who he had to serve

between him and Reil.

Then, Mendel who was walking in front, stepped aside and bowed.

“It’s here.”

It was quite a shabby and small entrance.

This was Gale’s office.

“Whew.”

Benjamin spat a long breath and kicked the door.

Bang!

A sound that seemed the door may fly off rang out.

Benjamin moved inside through the open door and yelled with all his strength.

“Baron Tate! I came to visit myself but you dare.....”

But his intent soon disappeared.

“Huh? Huh? Huh? Huh?”

Benjamin stammered because he was seriously surprised.

He discovered Io too late.

Benjamin pointed at Io with a trembling finger.

“Why, why is sir, sir count here.....”

Then, Io brightly smiled and shook his head.

“Viscount Doyle. Did you just point your finger at me?”

At those words, Benjamin was surprised and hid his finger behind his back.

And then, he deeply bowed.

“Greetings to Count Lancephil.”

Ive also hurriedly bowed down.

But Benjamin slightly turned his head and looked at Ive.

‘Why didn’t you tell me that sir count was here?’

Those eyes.

Ive shook his head with a perplexed expression.

‘I also didn’t know.’

Those eyes.

Then, Reil and Roan appeared from the open door.

Reil discovered Benjamin who was bowing deeply and burst out in laughter.

“Hahaha! Viscount Doyle, you have come!”

Then, he hit Benjamin’s back and sat next to Io.

For Benjamin, this was a really humiliating situation.

‘Reil, you bastard.....’

Curses surged up to his throat.

‘Damn. Let’s calm down for now. Calm.....’

He forcefully smiled and stood still.

Only then did Aaron stand up.

“Come over here.”

“Thank you.”

Benjamin had a rotten smile and moved towards Aaron’s seat.

He bowed once more towards Io.

“I didn’t know that sir count Lancephil was here.”

“I hurriedly came here after hearing that Viscount Baker was

here.”

“Ah.....You did.”

Benjamin was still putting on an awkward smile.

Then, Aaron’s voice was heard.

“Sir commander. Should we start?”

A carefully asking look was seen on his face.

However Benjamin saw him to be really detestable.

‘Damn. I can’t even say anything because of Count Lancephil.’

He couldn’t do anything and just awkwardly smiled and nodded.

Aaron smiled brightly and looked at Roan.

“Roan.”

“Yes. Corps commander.”

Roan replied in a low voice.

He was feeling stifled right now.

‘Benjamin Doyle. Why did this Viscount come over here?’

His eyes became fierce.

‘In my past life, because of this viscount.....’

One of the reasons he would stay as an ordinary spearman.

That was because of Benjamin.

Then, Aaron’s voice was heard.

“Do you remember what I told you before you left for the temporary retirement?”

Roan didn’t reply hurriedly and waited for the next words.

Aaron faintly smiled and continued saying.

“That I would give you a gift when you returned to the troop.”

“Ah.....”

Roan let out a low exclamation.

‘He did. He said that he had some gifts for me.’

As he couldn’t get a hold of himself, he had forgotten that truth.

Aaron slightly looked at Reil.

“One of those was an invitation for Viscount Reil Baker.....”

Now, he looked at Benjamin.



“The other one.....”

Benjamin stood up as if he was waiting for it and extended his hand towards Ive.

Ive hurriedly approached and gave him a wide wooden box.

Click.

The lid of the box opened along with a pleasing sound.

Benjamin carefully raised the object inside the box with his two hands.

A round object that was a bit larger than a coin and had a high class silk band hung from it.

Aaron brightly smiled and continued saying.

“It’s a commander class military achievement badge.”

At that instant, Roan’s eyes turned big.

‘Badge?!’

This was a really unexpected gift.

‘At most, I thought that it would be a good spear or an armor.’

Just thinking about it made him satisfied. But to suddenly receive a badge.

“It seems like you’re really surprised?”

Aaron faintly smiled and grabbed Roan’s shoulders.

“Although it’s a commander class, it’s a military service badge that received permission from the kingdom. Do you know what this means?”

Roan shook his head.

Aaron said as if he was whispering.

“That however much you accumulate merits, there’s a limit to the rank of a commoner. At most they can become staff officers in their respective troops. Beyond that, you need a title of nobility.”

Roan nodded.

It was something he knew very well.

“But for a commoner to obtain a title of nobility and become a noble is as difficult as getting a star from the sky. You can see it as being almost impossible.”

Aaron’s sight moved to the badge.

“But if you have a badge, the situation changes. A commoner that has a badge reaches the minimum condition for enabling you to receive a title of nobility.”

“Ah.....”

Roan let out a low exclamation.

His eyes moved towards the badge on its own.

Aaron’s voice was heard.

“Roan. Now, the path to become a noble has opened up.”

## Chapter 62 : A New Start (5)

---

But of course, even if you received a badge, it didn't mean that you could become a noble immediately.

You only had the requirements to be able to become one only when you had enough accomplishments.

‘For me to get a badge.....’

Roan looked at Benjamin who was holding the badge.

‘And on top of that from Benjamin Doyle?’

A bitter smile appeared on his face.

‘In my past life the relationship between us was one of the worst ones.’

It wasn't enough that he ignored his merits but he even demoted him several times.

He was a bastard that he wanted to hit if only he could.

But he was able to receive a badge from him.

“I'm giving the commander class badge with the permission of Rinse kingdom to class 5 adjutant of the 7th corps..”

At Ive's words, Roan approached Benjamin and bowed.

“So you are Roan.”

Benjamin looked at Roan with an interested expression.

‘Ale gorge battle, Pedian plain’s monster subjugation, Int forest battle, Prely river inundation tactic, Slen battle..... For a normal soldier to accumulate this many merits.’

This was such a surprising thing.

On top of that Roan was only 18.

‘It means that he has more chances to grow from now on.....’

For Benjamin who had big ambitions, he needed someone with skills.

‘I will have to make him mine in this opportunity.’

He was planning to persuade the 7th corps and Aaron to take Roan to his side.

He hung the badge on Roan’s chest and hit his shoulder.

“Your merits were outstanding. You have done well.”

“Thank you.”

These were words he forcefully brought out.

He didn't want to say thanks to this bastard.

‘This situation is really weird.’

Although in his past life he certainly was in the worst relationship with him, in this life they didn't have any problems.

But of course, even if that was the case, he wasn't thinking of getting closer to him.

‘This bastard has many problems. Be it his temperament or abilities.....’

He was a guy that wouldn't be of any use even if you left him at your side.

No, rather, there was a bigger chance that he would affect you.  
But Roan erased his displeased feeling for now.

‘He's my superior for now.’

He was still in the eastern army.

If he acted as he wished here, his life would get tangled up just like his past one.

Then, Benjamin's voice was heard.

“I'm promoting Roan by one rank alongside the badge and naming him a class 4 adjutant.”

The badge and if it was a commander class badge, it was an obvious condition.

From here, a good spear and some money was given to him as a reward.

“Congratulations.”

Io, Reil, Aaron and Gale congratulated him.

Roan looked at his badge and the people and took in a deep breath.

This was the moment his emotions became immeasurable.

‘Count Lancephil, Viscount Baker, Baron Aaron and troop commander Gale.....’

They were all people he looked at from far away in his past life.

But now, they were all looking at him and applauding.

‘The path is certainly open.’

But he still didn’t know if the path was open for him to become a noble, a great general, or a monarch.

But at least, it wasn’t one where he would die without having done much.

Grit.

Roan ground his teeth.

‘I’m walking forward without getting arrogant.’

He held his resolution.

Then, Benjamin’s voice was heard again.

“Until now, it was only the normal reward of the badge.  
But.....”

A faint smile appeared.

‘I have to give him a good impression now.’

Benjamin wanted to take Roan’s interest.

“I will especially give you one more reward. If there’s something you wish, speak. If it’s something I can do, I will listen to it.”

It was an unexpected proposal.

And Ive also had a surprised expression.

Io, Reil and Aaron just looked at Aaron’s mouth.

Especially Aaron and Gale, who had already faced this once, had interested expressions.

And Roan also didn’t hesitate this time.



‘If it’s Benjamin Doyle’s character, the moment I decline it, it becomes as if nothing had happened in an instant.’

He knew about Benjamin’s character really well.

He was a greedy and selfish bastard.

It was more profitable to catch it when he was saying that he would give something.

If he declined or hesitated for a moment, it became as if it had never happened.

Roan slightly raised his head and looked at Benjamin’s face.

“There’s someone I want to bring to my troop.”

At those words, Benjamin faintly smiled and nodded.

‘That much is easy.’

If it was a soldier from the eastern army, he could move them from troops however much he desired.

“Who’s that?”

He asked confidently in return. .

Roan shortly replied back.

“It’s spearman Harrison from the 15th squad of thorn troop of 7th corps.”

Harrison.

The one that had a genius like talent in the bow.

It became time to bring him in.

\*\*\*\*\*

Sweeeee!

A sharp sound rang out.

Puk!

At the same time, one arrow pierced a small branch.

Pabat!

One youth ran through the forest quickly and knocked the bow.

Tung!

A heavy sound sounded out.

Sweeeee!

One more arrow pierced the wind along a sharp sound.  
The arrow that flew while it had evaded the many trees.

Puk!

The arrow pierced a small branch.  
The sharp sounds were heard continuously like that.

\*\*\*\*\*

“Where did this bastard go to!”

Vice squad commander of the 15th squad of thorn troop, Hass, was annoyed.

He had already taken a blow from the squad commander since early in the morning.

When he was looking where to vent his anger, he couldn't see a guy.

“He, it seems like he went to Polt forest.”

One squad member replied.  
Hass kicked the ground and yelled.

“Again?! So he's firing arrows again inside the forest!”

It was an expression that implied that he was caught.

“Even so, I was planning to teach him, it turned out well though. For a spearman to always train in the bow while leaving behind the spear.”

Hass clenched his teeth and ground his teeth.

Then, one youth appeared from the entrance of the camp.

He was holding a large bow and quiver on his back.

Hass hurriedly ran over and swung his fist.

As it was a sudden attack, he should have been hit in his face.

But the fist cut the air.

“Why are you like this?”

Because the youth with the bow quickly dodged.

“This bastard dares to dodge my fist?”

Hass opened his eyes abruptly and clenched his fists one more time.

Then, the sound of the door opening was heard.

“What is it? What are you doing!”

The owner of the voice was one of the adjutants of thorn troop, Pad.

He glared at Hass while he held a piece of paper in his hand.

“Are you bullying the kids?”

“Ahem. No, no.”

And then he loosened his fist stealthily and shook his head.

An awkward expression appeared on his face.

Pad glared at that Hass for a moment and then turned to look to the youth with the bow.

“Take this.”

“Yes? What’s this?”

The youth received the paper with a confused look.

Pad shrugged his shoulders and replied.

“It’s a transfer order. It seems like it was directly laid down by the commander.”

“Transfer order?”

The youth looked at the paper with a confused face.

However, he couldn’t read the contents of it.

“I’m sorry, but where are they taking me to?”

At those words, Pad shortly replied.

“12th squad, rose troop of the 7th corps.”

“Ah.....”

A low exclamation came out from the youth’s mouth.

“Rose troop.....”

It was a sound that rolled from his mouth.

How long had he waited for this moment?

A deep gratitude was seen in the youth’s face.

Then, Pad hit his shoulder.

“Pack your things immediately and depart now.”

“Yes. I understand.”

The youth bowed deeply.

Pad left after saying that.

Hass approached as if he was waiting for it and growled.

“Look at this bastard. He’s dying of happiness. You really didn’t like being he.....”

“Shut up for a moment.”

It was a cold voice.

The youth faintly smiled and looked at Hass.

It was a completely different attitude and eyes from earlier.

“Hass, i’m not your underling anymore. Don’t act as you wish.”

At those words, Hass’s face brightened up.

“Thi, this bastard! Are you crazy you bastard? Do you want to die?!”

He yelled with all his strength.

But the expression of the youth was still composed.

He looked at Hass fixedly.

“Hass. I’m not this bastard. My name is.....”

The youth continued saying with clear words.

“Harrison.”

\*\*\*\*\*

“Excellent. You certainly became better.”

Reil brightly smiled and clapped.

“It’s all because of Viscount Baker’s teachings.”

Roan bowed with an embarrassed expression.

“I have only fixed some stances.”

“Even so, i’m really thankful for checking up on me this carefully until the day before you leave.”

Reil who was being modest and Roan who was was truly thankful.

The two people looked at each other and smiled brightly.

Then, the accompanying knight Liam of Reil appeared from far away.

“Viscount Baker! It’s time to leave!”

“I know! I know!”

Reil yelled with all his strength.

It certainly wasn’t an action that a noble would be do.

He was that free and didn’t have a limit.

“I wanted to stay for a couple more days but.....”

Reil had a bitter smile while he was looking at Roan.

“I can’t leave my territory for long. A noble has a lot of paperwork and things to do.”



He smacked his lips as if it was regrettable.

Even after Roan received his badge, Reil stayed for 10 more days.

Because of that, Io and Benjamin were also there because of him.

While they were like this, a letter arrived from Kevin two days ago.

Although the detailed contents weren't revealed, Reil's face stiffened, so it probably meant that Reil should leave immediately.

‘As Viscount Baker is leaving, all the others would leave too.’

It had also been long since Io left his territory, and in the case of Benjamin, he wouldn't want to stay in a secluded place for long.

‘Troop commander Gale would like it the most.’

When Io, Reil, and Benjamin left today, Aaron would also return to the corps headquarters.

‘He had suffered for taking care of the upper ranked people until now.’

Roan felt a bit sorry towards Gale.

Because it was because of him that Io, Reil, Benjamin and Aaron ended up staying in the headquarters of rose troop.

Then Reil's voice was heard.

“Then, before I leave.....”

He took out a book from his chest.

“Take it.”

“What’s this?”

Roan received the book with his two hands.

Reil brightly smiled and replied.

“I wrote down the bad habits, movements, problems, and etc.. As you aren’t a member of my family and can’t be my formal disciple, I can’t teach you spearmanship. But even so I don’t want to leave everything as if I don’t know about it.”

“Ah...”

Roan let out a low exclamation.

His heart choked because of Reil’s consideration.

“What’s the reason you are taking care of me this much.....?”

Roan’s voice and attitude were very careful.

On the other side, Reil was still bright.

“I’m planning to teach Pierce everything I have. If it’s his talent, he would probably even surpass me. In the position of the master, it’s a really proud and happy thing, but looking at it from his point of view.....”

It was an empty kind of smile.

“It is a really sad and lonely thing. Not having anyone to spar with.....”

“Ah.....”

Roan bit his lower lip.

He understood the reason for the empty smile.

‘He was lonely until now.’

He didn’t have any opponents to face.

There wouldn’t be something more lonely and sad than that for a warrior.

Reil continued saying.

“Roan. I want you to become much stronger than now. For you, and for Pierce. And perhaps for me. I made this book with that kind of feeling. I would like it if it helped you in becoming strong.”

It wasn’t only Pierce but he was saying to become an opponent also worthy of him.

Roan slowly nodded.

“I understand what you are saying.”

At those words Reil smirked and hit Roan's chest.

“Take it into account. If you don't want to be put to shame the day Pierce finds you again, you will have to train and keep training.”

“I understand. At least in effort, i'm confident.”

A strong will was felt from the shut mouth.

Reil proudly smiled and nodded.

“Right. There's nothing more important than effort.”

He grabbed Roan's hands.

“You will be able to do well.”

“Thank you.”

Roan bowed.

Reil smirked and looked towards the south.

“Should I go now?”

Everyone should have finished preparations and was waiting for him.

“I will take the lead.”

Roan faintly smiled and started to walk one step ahead of him.  
But Reil started to walk next to him.

“No, not that.....”

He put his arm around his shoulder and brightly smiled.

“Let’s walk like this.”

Roan and Reil.

The two people relied on each other and moved.

The relationship had become thicker like that.

\*\*\*\*\*

“Come to Pavor castle to visit once.”

“Remember the words I told you.”

“If you wish, I can transfer you to the headquarters in the east.”

Io, Reil and Benjamin all said their farewells and stepped back.  
Now, the remaining one was only Pierce.

“Sir adjutant Roan.”

Pierce bowed in front of Roan.

“If I were to say honestly, I have greater feelings of wanting to stay here.”

“Pierce.....”

Roan said as if trying to ease him up.

Then, Pierce raised his head and looked at Roan’s eyes.

“But just like what you have said back then, I will leave for you sir adjutant.”

Strength was put into his voice.

“I will work hard and return in the fastest time possible.”

At those words Roan faintly smiled and nodded.

“Right. I will be waiting for you.”

Roan and Pierce.

The two people just looked at each other’s faces for a while.

After a while, Roan looked at Reil who was waiting at the back and grabbed Pierce’s shoulders.

“Viscount Baker is waiting. Go, now.”

“Yes. Then, I will be going.”

Pierce bowed deeply.

His heart was still immature and soft.

His shoulders trembled.

Roan pretended not to notice it and patted Pierce’s back.

“Go quickly.”

Pierce couldn’t raise his head and started to walk towards Reil.

Reil consoled Pierce and got on the horse.

Roan just stood still and watched that.

‘Pierce. Have a safe trip. When you return back.....’

Fire appeared in his eyes.

‘Many things will have changed.’

Only if it went according to his plans though.

‘By then, you will have many things to do.’

Pierce was more important than anyone else for Roan.

Meanwhile Io, Benjamin, Reil, and Pierce departed and went towards their objectives.

Aaron and Gale looked at them for a moment and then returned to their own headquarters.

The only one that remained until the end was Roan.

It was even after the members of the 12th squad guessed Roan's feelings.

‘Now, I can't even see them with Kalian's tear.’

He couldn't see Pierce's back anymore.

“Whew.”

A long sigh came out.

When he was about to look away because of his hurting eyes.

He could see one man that was approaching him from the end of the plains.

He had quite the nimble steps.

“Ah.....”

A low exclamation came out of Roan's mouth.

He had confirmed the face of the man through Kalian's tear.

He stopped his feet and just stood at the gates of the castle for a while.

After a while, the man that was like a grain soon arrived in front



of the gate.

He discovered Roan late and came in a hurried manner.

Clack. Clack.

The tools in his big bag clashed and made query sounds.

“Pant. Pant. Pant.”

The man stood in front of Roan and panted.

His heaving chest was calmed a bit.

Only then did he smile brightly and saluted Roan.

“Sir! I, spearman Harrison of thorn troop of the 7th corps received a transferral order.”

That man, he was none other than Harrison.

‘For Harrison to come when Pierce leaves.’

This was a strange fate.

This was a strange relation.

Roan faintly smiled and hit Harrison’s shoulder.

His eyes were really gentle.

He had a feeling of meeting his longing friend again.

“You came well. Harrison.”

He spoke in a soft voice.

Roan grabbed Harrison’s two hands.

“I was waiting for you.”

# Chapter 63 : War And More War (1)

---

“Whew.”

Roan let out a long sigh.

He sat down in front of a small stove.

Tadak. Tadak.

Although summer hadn't ended yet, a strong heat was emanating continuously from the stove.

“Certainly, the accumulation of the mana is much faster than when I was at miss Biate's place.”

Roan was now practicing Reid's Flamdor mana technique.

He had turned on the stove to absorb a little bit more of fire essence.

He slowly stood up and loosened his wrists and ankles.

‘I wanted to live together with my squad members but.....’

He had a place to be alone to practice the Flamdor mana technique.

And just in time, Aaron and Gale obtained a small and clean house near the headquarters because of the reward.

Roan excused himself from the squad members and moved to

another house.

And after that, he even shortened the time to eat or sleep and concentrated in training in the mana technique.

And on top of that, he lit the stove everyday. .

‘It’s already been three months since Pierce left.’

There were many things that happened in that while, but there were two especially important things.

One was that Roan started to train in the mana technique and Reid’s battle techniques earnestly.

The remaining one was that he had risen to the rank of vice troop commander of rose troop along with Keniss.

Roan, who had already reached 1 class adjutant tried to decline, but Gale was adamant.

It meant that he couldn’t leave him as a normal adjutant when he had received a badge.

At this point Roan convinced him to also add Keniss, and then he ended up agreeing.

‘Because of that I get to lead the spearmen squad, swordsmen, and archers.’

Roan tried to mix these squads and make a new structure but he gave up in the end.

‘The cavalrymen, defenders, and the strong ones are commanded by vice squad commander Keniss. If I make a mistake, I will only

cause a commotion.'

In the end he decided to put the squad and formation revisions for another time.

"Whew."

Roan let out a short sigh and grabbed Travi's spear that was in his waist.

Cheng!

As he put in mana, the blade appeared along with the pleasing sound of metal.

'Hm.'

One thread of mana surged from his mana hole and went towards his right hand.

The mana road was quite hard and smoothly cleared because of the long training.

Swush.

He felt his palm tickle and then mana was put in the spear.

Roan just condensed mana into the blade instead of increasing the length or thickness.

Oooong.

A white light appeared slightly on the blade with a short vibration.

Roan concentrated a bit more and poured more mana into it but there were no more changes.

“Whew.”

In the end, he let out a long sigh and retracted his mana.

Cheng!

The Traviass spear turned to become a steel stick again accompanied by the sound of metal.

‘For now, am I able to cover the blade with mana?’

Even so, it still wasn’t comparable to things such as normal blades.

‘Should I say that I just opened my eyes in the operation of mana?’

But even so, the encouraging thing was that Reid’s Flamdor mana technique was amazing.

Being able to cover the blade with mana with only three months of training was solely because of the mana technique.

‘This was one of the reasons I didn’t become Viscount Baker’s disciple.’

No, the biggest reason Roan didn’t become his disciple.

It was that he believed in the strength the mana technique had.

Although Reil’s mana technique and spear skills were strong, it wasn’t comparable to the mana technique of the strongest man in history, who was called the fire monarch.

‘Although it’s regrettable that I can’t learn the spear with Viscount Baker, the mana technique fills in the lacking points and is more than enough.’

On top of that, although they weren’t spear skills that utilized mana, Roan had tens and hundreds of real battle spear skills in his head.

‘Although I can’t make an amazing spearmanship like Pierce in an instant.....’

If he gathered the good points of many spear skills and took out the bad ones he was confident in being able to make a powerfully strong spearmanship.

Most of all.

‘I have Reid’s battle technique with me.’

Roan was planning to mix up the battle techniques with the real battle spear skills.

If it was Reil’s battle techniques that shook the continent, it would be able to seriously complement the weak and strong points that his spearmanship had itself. .

‘A combination of the spear and the battle technique.’

Roan bit his lower lip.

‘I will show you a completely new spearmanship.’

He took in a deep breath.

If it just became like that, he was planning on being able to beat Pierce even after he learned Reil’s spear skills.

‘First, the level of the mana technique itself is different.’

His heart beated loudly.

Now, he could really see a different future to his past.

‘Anyways.....’

Roan bit his lower lip and opened his hand.

Although everything was going according to his plans, there was



still one thing that worried him.

‘Why is the mana shining in white light?’

When he looked at the rumours, various documents, and the contents written in the mana technique book, the light of the flame monarch’s mana should have been red.

But Roan’s mana was rather transparent.

‘The element the mana has is certainly fire. Only that the colour is different.....’

He still couldn’t discover any more problems aside from the color.

Although he felt that the accumulation of the mana was a bit slow, he couldn’t confirm it as he hadn’t compared it with other mana techniques.

‘Is it because of that silver waterdrop?’

If that was the essence of water, wouldn’t it be having some influence on the mana technique?

He couldn’t be certain of anything.

‘I’m not even certain if that was the essence of water in the first place.’

Roan took in a deep breath.

It was a problem that didn't have answers even if he pondered about it.

‘If I get to find the pieces miss Biate left, wouldn't this problem be solved?’

He bit his lower lip.

He couldn't run to Poskein lake right now and retrieve Biate's piece.

He decided to leave it for later.

‘There are no problems right now.....’

No, rather because the color of the mana changed, there was also a good point in it.

‘Because it's not of a red light, other people would also never think that this is sir Reid's mana technique.’

In his past life, a war between Rinse kingdom and Estia kingdom happened because of this mana technique.

‘Because the color of the mana changed, I wouldn't have to worry about that war happening.’

People wouldn't be able to know that Roan was learning mana if he didn't reveal it himself.

Ududuk. Duduk.

Roan softly loosened the joints in all his body and opened the door.

There wasn't anything better than to train your body when your head got complicated.

He took in a breath of the dawn air and ran towards the east gate.

The world was still dark.

It was still really early before dawn.

There was still a lot things to do before the sun rose.

Even so, Roan's steps didn't hesitant.

The darkness wasn't any problem to him because of Kalian's tear.

He went towards a secluded place near the east gate.

The castle gates were still closed because it was still before the sun peeked the horizon.

But even so, he couldn't train in Reid's battle techniques in the headquarters training grounds.

'There's nowhere as suitable as this.'

Roan looked at the place that was covered with dense trees and smiled.

He stood off at one side of the secluded place and slightly bent his knees.

He clenched his two fists and slightly bent his body towards the side.

It was an action that seemed that he would swing his fist at any moment

“Whew.”

Roan breathed out and kicked the ground.

Pabat! Pat!

At the same time, the two fists split through the air without stopping.

Spat!

The two legs moved strangely and quickly.

After that, kicks followed up.

Reid's battle techniques was closer to mixed martial arts.

There were various techniques such as kicking, throwing, choking, and smashing included into it.

And those various strong techniques connected with each other and composed one big technique.

‘I'm still training in the basic techniques. I have to put in even more effort to master the intermediate and expert techniques.’

But of course, he also had to pour time and effort in training his mana technique.

‘I'm lacking time.’

It was Roan that nowadays thought that he would like it if a day was ten times longer.

Pabat!

It was a dark dawn.

Roan moved relentlessly inside that darkness.

\*\*\*\*\*

It wasn't that Roan just focused on individual training.

He also poured much time in training the spearmen, swordsmen, and archers as the vice troop commander of rose troop.

He taught the 12th squad the newest training methods he knew and several signals, etc. Especially the first.

Although he couldn't touch the formation of the troop, instead, he made it so spearmen could help each other, swordsmen between them, and archers between archers.

He had half imitated the formation.

Flock!

The flagman was shaking two different flag sideways.

At that instant, the squad members who were in their formations scattered to the sides and moved with purpose.

Flock! Flock!

This time, the two flags moved at the same time.

The squad members started to return to their original formation as if they were waiting for it.

Roan, who was checking the movements of the soldiers while he was standing at the top of the training grounds, nodded with a smile.

‘They are still at a basic level but they are all adapting at the signs.’

Because of that, he would be able to send simple but important orders faster than before.

“Retreat.”

As Roan let down the order, the flagman shook the flag widely.

In that instant, the soldiers that were running in the training grounds retreated like water.

‘Good.’

While he was being proud.

“Vice troop commander.”

One soldier hurriedly approached.

“What happened?”

At the question, the soldier pointed towards the entrance.

“Someone visited.”

Roan just waited for the next words.

“He says that he’s called Chris.”

At the following words, Roan faintly smiled and nodded.

‘He finally came.’

It had been a month since he sent the visit request to Chris.

He had finally arrived at Beno castle.

Roan ordered the soldiers to rest and then started to move.

As he approached the entrance, he saw Chris around it.

“Mister Chris.”

“Ah! Sir adjutant Roan. Ah, no. You became the vice troop commander.”

Chris faintly smiled and bowed.

“Thank you for coming such a long way.”

“No. Even so, I wanted to visit you once.”

At Roan’s words, Chris shook his hands.

“Let’s go to my place for now.”

“Yes. Understood.”

Roan and Chris walked side by side and asked each other about their well being. When they were talking about how they were, Roan’s promotion, the badge, and other things, they arrived at quite the fine house.

“Let’s go in.”

Roan opened the door first and moved inside.

Chris looked at his back and hurriedly scanned his surroundings.

It was the habit and mannerisms especially from an information agent.

‘There’s a great amount of books.’

The house was quite unshapely.

The proper furniture consisted of a table, some chairs, and a bed at most. In the remaining places, there were incredible amount of books everywhere.



“Did you read this all?”

Chris grabbed a book and asked.

Roan shook his head with a really composed attitude and expression.

“No. I couldn’t even read half of them.”

He had an awkward smile.

Those words were true.

Even so, it was a possible amount because he had also read in his past life.

He gathered books from everywhere because of his greed but he didn’t have much time to read books because of the training.

But the reason he didn’t stop buying books.

‘If it gets a bit more systematized, I will have to teach the soldiers to read.’

Roan knew that that was one of the conditions for a strong army.

“You were really surprised after reading my letter, right?”

At those words Chris shook his head.

“No. I was also planning to visit you, vice troop commander.”

“Really?”

“Yes.”

Chris took out a pile of paper while answering.

“Do you remember the five merchants I told you last time, in Miller?”

“Yes. Of course I do.”

Roan received the papers and nodded.

Chris continued saying.

“For the past few months I have continuously invested in the five young merchants: Tio, Lidia, Eska, Nego, and Ford.”

Roan attentively listened.

“Amongst them, Lidia, who’s a timber, and Eska who’s a chef, are bringing quite an amazing profit. On the other side Tio, who’s of the transportation industry and Nego, who’s of the loaning industry, don’t have many accomplishments to talk about. Lastly, mister Ford who’s of the mining industry.....”

Chris awkwardly smiled and shook his head.

“It seems like we wasted the investment. Precisely speaking, it seems like he even has debt.”

Roan just nodded.

In the first place, he didn't think that all of them would succeed. But that wasn't the important thing.

“In your opinion, what do you think their futures would be?”

At those words Chris hesitated for a moment and then replied.

“Honestly speaking, the accomplishments of Tio, Nego, and Ford aren't that good but.....”

He put in more strength in his voice.

“I think that there's worth in still checking on them.”

His eyes were filled with certainty.

Roan nodded.

He stood up and after he searched in the wardrobe next to the stove, he took out a big bag.

“I believe in your eyes in sizing up people.”

Roan took out three jewel bags that were quite heavy.

“Keep investing in them.”

Chris shook his hands with a bit of a surprised face.

“There’s no need to do this. As I have the profits from Lidia and Eska, it’s plenty with just one bag.”

He looked at the big bag.

‘He also gave me a jewel bag back in Miller.....’

He thought that it could be possible when he first received the investment in Beno castle.

He thought that it was a reward he received with the wanted reward.

But the jewel bag he showed back then and the one right now.

‘It’s not something that a normal soldier could accumulate.’

It was at a level where it could be accumulated in a few years if it was short, or some tens of years if it was long.

‘Now that I see it, there’s not much I know about vice troop commander Roan.’

It was quite an embarrassing situation to boast that he was an information agency.

‘Even so, I don’t want to forcefully check his background.’

At least, he wanted to give the information about Roan to him.

‘That’s the right thing.’

Then, Roan’s voice was heard.

“No. One bag won’t be enough.”

He shook his head and said as if whispering.

“You have new things to do.”

“Things..... to do?”

Chris asked back.

Roan nodded.

“The first thing.....”

He brightly smiled and looked at Chris’s eyes fixedly.

“You will have to move your agency to Pavor castle.”

“To Pavor castle?”

Chris asked back with a surprised expression.

Roan slowly nodded.

‘It’s time to slowly move. No, he must move.’

The reason why he returned to Beno castle even after he acquired Reid’s mana technique and battle techniques.

That was because he remembered a lot of things that happened in the eastern region of Rinse kingdom, but there was the most important reason.

‘War will soon appear.’

It wasn’t a war between monsters.

It would be human vs human.

It would be kingdom vs kingdom.

It was almost time for the eastern region of Rinse kingdom to increase in heat.

Roan looked into Chris’s eyes.

“You will have to grasp all the information in the eastern region into your hands.”

That was the first thing he had to do.

His voice was filled with strength.

His two eyes fiercely shined.

“It’s time to move earnestly.”

## Chapter 64 : War And More War (2)

---

“Is there a reason I have to gather information centered in the capital of Miller? No, in the eastern region of the kingdom?”

He asked a sharp question.

Chris honestly revealed his doubts.

Roan slowly nodded and replied.

“The region is not normal.”

“Meaning that.....?”

Chris slowly frowned.

Roan continued saying with a composed expression.

“The movement of the monsters became worse than last year.”

But of course, that was a lie.

‘That time came.’

If the same future happened as his past life, soon, many monsters would appear in the eastern region.

“Mmm.”



Chris nodded.

“They were always noisy. To gather information at Miller’s side just to grasp the movement of the monsters is a bit.....”

Monsters were always a problem.

It meant that the problem was that frequent.

Because of that, he felt that Roan’s countermeasures were a bit excessive.

Then, Roan’s voice was heard.

“What I’m worried about.....”

His expression and eyes were still composed.

“Is that there may be some stir because of the monsters.”

“Stir?”

Chris frowned.

Roan nodded.

“The stir of the monsters is starting with the eastern region as the center. When I analyzed their moving pattern and the regions they appeared in.....”

Gulp.

Chris unconsciously gulped.

Roan continued saying.

“It seems like they are crossing over from Istel kingdom. And as if they were being chased away on top of that.”

“Ah.....”

Chris let out a low exclamation.

He realized what Roan was thinking in an instant.

‘The monsters are crossing the boundaries as if they are being chased away.....If then.’

His head spun.

Several and various kind of guesses were built and crumbled.

And then, he placed down the most possible guess.

“Isn’t Istel kingdom doing a massive monster subjugation?”

It was the most standard of guesses.

This year, a similar thing happened at the Pedian’s plain monster subjugation.

‘Because the Byron kingdom did a massive monster subjugation one step ahead, the number of monster at the Pedian’s plain increased explosively.’

The stir of the monsters in the eastern region could be seen in the same context.

Roan nodded.

“That’s the biggest possibility.”

He lightly sighed.

‘Although precisely speaking, they are preparing for war.’

In his past life, it was a war he had never expected.

Because of that, the eastern region became a wasteland.

‘The monsters of Istel kingdom fled to our side because they were frightened by the many soldiers.’

But in his past life, he didn’t think about the stir of the monsters too highly.

Then, Chris shook his head and said.

“But it’s a bit weird. At this time, Istel kingdom.....”

The last words dimmed.

Roan smiled faintly and nodded.

“That’s right. Originally, they shouldn’t have power to spare to do a massive monster subjugation.”

“Yes. Because they should be focused on harvesting at this time.”

Chris said.

It was a time that the army and obviously the citizen should be focused on harvesting.

Because of that, nobody in Rinse kingdom could realize that Istel kingdom were preparing for war.

“But even so, they went out for a subjugation? Isn’t it a bit suspicious?”

Roan faintly smiled and asked.

Chris just nodded with a serious face.

“That’s why I want to know a bit more about it in detail. You will have to gather and analyze all the information in the eastern region of Rinse kingdom and of course the western region of Istel kingdom. And I would like it if you did that.”

Roan finished speaking and looked at Chris’s eyes fixedly.

It wasn’t a meaningless formal act.

‘A different future than what I know may happen.’

Because of that he had a need to gather and analyze information.

“Mmm.”

Chris nodded along a low exclamation.

“To do that, Pavor castle would certainly be better than the capital of Miller.”

He pondered for a moment and then looked at Roan while faintly smiling.

“I understand. As the situation is like this, I will immediately organize my agency and move to Pavor castle.”

“Thank you.”

A smile appeared on Roan’s face.

But he still had more things to do.

“And you will have to do one more thing.”

“Yes. Tell me.”

Chris opened up his ears while he was fixing his posture.

Roan slowly gathered the plans he had in his head.

“There’s a small fishing village called Perr in Poskein lake. There’s a sailor called Daiv in there.”

“Village of Perr, Daiv.”

Chris took note while mumbling.

Roan continued saying.

“You will have to make an organization of sailors with him as the center.”

“An organization?”

Chris asked back with a bit of a surprised face.

Roan slowly nodded.

His expression seemed to be having fun.

“Yes. We can’t just leave that wide lake like that.”

\*\*\*\*\*

Hoo. Hoo. Hoo.

The breath was rough.

But it wasn’t someone breathing.

Swush.

The warm wind shook the long grass.

Roan glared beyond the grass and made a sign.

The spearmen, swordsmen, and archers all lowered their bodies.

‘They came.’

A fierce light shined in his eyes.

Roan lowered his body and went towards the archer squad.

“Harrison.”

“Yes.”

At Roan’s call, Harrison replied in a low voice and approached.

Adjutant Jones, who was leading the archer squad, raised his ear because he was curious to see what happened.

Roan pointed beyond the grass with his finger.

“Do you see that goblin leader?”

“Yes, I do.”

Harrison nodded while gulping down dry saliva.

What Roan and Harrison, no, the spearmen and swordsmen squad of rose troop, and the archer troop were looking at beyond the grass while hiding, was a troop of goblins and kobolds that amounted to more than a thousand.

And among them, the biggest and strongest goblin was present.

He was the leader leading the troop.

Roan pointed at the goblin leader and asked in a low voice.

“Can you hit him?”

“Yes?! That’s impossible.”

The answer came from a weird place.

The owner of the voice was Jones, who was listening to them.

The experienced archer frowned and shook his hands.

“The distance between us is far and there are also a lot of obstacles in between. On top of that, he’s continuously moving.”

Those were the right words.

Currently, the goblin and kobold troops were moving inside Oat forest.

Roan and the soldiers were hiding in ambush at a place with high grass and trees.

Because of that, between them and the goblin leader, there were a lot of trees.

If only there weren’t any trees, the archer troop would already have poured a rain of arrows down on them

But even so Roan, had a really confident expression.

He looked at Harrison and waited for his answer.

“Whew.”

Harrison, who was glaring at the goblin leader and the obstacles, and judging the direction of the wind, put on a faint smile.

“I think I can.”

“Impossible.”



This time also, Jones' reaction was a step faster.

He shook his head with an expression full of disbelief.

'He took someone I hadn't even heard of.....'

Jones didn't like Harrison in the first place, who got transferred from nowhere.

And he especially disliked that he received a bit interest from Roan.

'He can hit the goblin leader from over here? Impossible.'

It was a situation where he had to persuade him from not doing it.

The moment he fired the arrow, their location would be discovered.

As rose troop was at a disadvantage in numbers, if a battle occurred, their lives would be in danger.

"Hitting the leader from here is im....."

When Jones was about to step up.

Roan patted Harrison's shoulders and nodded.

"I believe in you."

"Thank you."

Harrison bowed and then prepared an arrow.

“Huh?!”

Jones was stunned with a surprised expression.

Meanwhile, Harrison knocked the arrow and got up.

“Whew.”

He closed his eyes and felt the wind.

Roan looked at him and killed his breath.

‘If the leader dies, they will fall in confusion.’

If they could only take care of the goblin leader, they would be able to easily win.

Swish.

The hot wind blew once again.

‘The wind is a bit strong.’

Harrison slowly opened his eyes and pointed his bow towards the goblin leader.

The trees filled his sight.

They ran against each other and were lined up continuously.

‘I can see a path.’

Harrison held his breath.

The goblin leader, who didn't know of this, was just moving around leisurely.

When he made two more steps.

Tung.

Harrison let go of the arrow.

Sweeeeeeeee!

A sharp sound.

One arrow flew between the many trees.

Roan and Jones, and of course all the soldiers followed the arrow.

Sweee!

The arrow couldn't completely dodge the last tree.

Spat!

It slightly scratched it and the direction changed.

Jones growled in a low voice as if he was waiting for it.

“See? I certainly said that you.....”

But he couldn't finish his words.

“Im, impossible!”

The words were the same but the feelings they gave off were completely different.

Because the arrow that had its direction slightly changed flew towards the head of the goblin leader like a lie.

“Chwee?”

The goblin leader turned his head along the sound that hit his ear and froze like that.

The head of the arrow was as big as a rock.

The moment he thought he had to dodge it.

Puuk!

The arrow pierced his forehead and was stuck in his head.

Boom!

The goblin leader fell down like that and couldn't move anymore.

“Chwee?”

“Kak?”

The goblins and kobolds gathered near the goblin leader at the sudden change in situation.

At that sight Roan hit Harrison's back with some gusto.

“You did well!”

“Thank you.”

Harrison faintly smiled and bowed.

Roan nodded and raised his spear highly.

“Attack!”

In a loud voice.

The order to attack was sent out.

“Waaaaaa!”

“Kill! Kill them!”

The soldiers of the troop charged the ground as if they were waiting for it and ran towards the goblins and kobolds.

And Roan also did the same.

He was the one who was running in front of all of them.

He was holding his spear in his armpit and running.

A fierce intent flowed.

‘Left, right, right again.’

Roan could charge through the trees with the shortest distance because of Kalian’s tear.

“He, he’s really fast!”

“Don’t fall back!”

“Stick to him!”

The soldiers followed his back with a surprised expression.

“Chwee?”

“Kak?”

Only then did the kobolds and goblins get a hold of themselves.

They looked at Roan who was already in front of them and raised their rough weapons.

“Hmph.”

Roan snorted and pulled up some mana.

But he was in a situation where he still had to hide the fact that he was learning mana.

He operated his mana road quickly without being able to bring it up to the blade of the spear.

But even with just that, it was amazing.

“Chwee!”

“Kak!”

Their cries hit his ear.

“Die!”

Roan let out a shout and then lowered his body and twisted his wrist.

Pat!

The spear split the air.

A sharp and smooth line of light was drawn over the heads of the goblins and kobolds.

Sugk.

A horrible sound rang out.

“Chwee?”

“Kak?”

The goblins and kobolds who were facing him stood stupidly and rolled their big eyes to the sides.

At that moment.

Sssss.

A fine crack appeared in their heads and then blood started to flow.

Boom!

The bastards fell accompanied by a heavy sound.

It showed just how powerful and quick that attack was. .

Sugk! Spat! Slash!

Roan swept up the front of the battlefield and swung his spear.

In the first place, the goblins and kobolds weren't Roan's opponents.

“Grr.”

“Keek.”

Every time the spear cut the air, their heads fell to the ground.



Continued by him, the spearmen, archers, and swordsmen attacked.

They were in a formation that seemed sloppy but was solid at the same time.

They moved just like one unit and massacred the goblins and kobolds.

The important thing was that compared to before, the three squads moved according to the situation of each other and helped themselves at the same time.

The goblins and kobolds fell down helplessly.

Between them, Roan was sweeping up the battlefield and showed an outstanding might.

Slash!

The spear passed through the neck of a goblin.

As the battle happened in a forest and they were confused, the battlefield was limited.

The spear, which was a long weapon, was at a disadvantage the more the space became limited.

But Roan still acted leisurely.

‘The combination of spearmanship and battling techniques.’

He utilized Reid’s battle techniques at situations where it was difficult to use the spear.

No, precisely speaking, they were movements imitating Reid’s battling techniques.

Although it wasn't that he had created a new art by combining the two, but it was still powerful enough.

‘I fill up the weak points the spear has with the battling techniques.’

This was the best he could do with Roan's ability.

‘If my understanding of each art increases, I will be able to create a real spearmanship.’

As he knew his current abilities and the level he was at, he didn't think about doing that which was impossible right now.

He was planning to do what he could step by step.

Roan punched the goblin that got near him.

Puk! Pubuk!

It was a heavy sound.

“Krr!”

The goblins got their heads and ribs crushed to pieces and were flung to the side.

‘Strong.’

Certainly, the power of Reid's battle techniques were amazing.

‘For movements that are only imitations to be this much.....’

He couldn't even imagine how it would be when he properly executed it along with the Flamdor mana technique.

Puk! Pubuk! Puk!

The goblins became sludge at the consecutive punches.

“Chwee!”

“Chwee!”

In the end, the goblins that charged up to him became scared and fell back.

‘That's just what I was waiting for!’

Roan swung his spear as if he was waiting for it.

Stab.

The spear stabbed the chests of the goblins.

If they got close, use Reid's battle technique. If they were far, use spearmanship techniques.

Roan had two powerful weapons with him.

‘The combination of the spear and battle techniques is better than I thought.’

A smile appeared on his face.

He swung his spear without stop and punched out.

“Grr.”

The last words continued without stop.

There were countless corpses of goblins and kobolds near him.

The battle was now coming to an end.

“Whew.”

Roan looked at the battlefield and took in a breath.

The 12 and 13th squads were pushing back the ones that were fiercely fighting back.

‘The movements of the 12th squad is certainly the best.’

Anyways, you couldn’t do anything about it as they spent more time with Roan than the other squads.

Roan’s sight moved towards the archer squad.

Tung! Tung!

He saw a youth who was firing arrows without stopping.

Harrison.

Differently than the other archers, he ran across the forest and was sending precise arrows towards the goblins and kobolds.

Puk!

“Grr.”

One for one arrow.

On top of that, there were even times when an arrow killed two kobolds at the same time.

‘Certainly, Harrison’s talent with the bow is the best.’

Roan looked at Harrison’s face and smiled.

It was a happy smile.

‘He never put on that kind of expression in my previous life.’

Roan felt proud.

It was a feeling like he had made another person’s dream come true and not only his.

Then, the sound of the horn was heard that signified the end of the battle.

Puuuuuu!

A sound that made you flustered any time.

“Waaaaaaa! Victory!”

“Complete victory! Complete victory! “

“Rose troop! Hurray! Hurray!”

The soldiers yelled.

It had already been two months since monsters started to appear in the eastern region.

And now, it was rose troop’s 21st battle and they were all complete victories.

Roan waited for a moment so the soldiers could savour the victory.

“Waaaaaaaaa!”

When the yells calmed down a bit.

He yelled towards the soldiers while he still had his spear at his side.

“After we clean up the corpses, we repair the road, and we carve hollows and ditches for defensive purposes!”

“Yes! Understood!”

The soldiers replied with excited voices.

They quickly moved and started to gather the corpses of the kobolds and goblins in one place.

At the same time, they carved ditches and hollows at the sides of the road.

Roan looked at that for a moment and then moved outside the forest.

He could see the cavalrymen running from far away when he left the entrance.

They were the cavalrymen squad of Rose troop that included Gale and Keniss.

‘It seems like the subjugation of the plain also turned out well.’

The expression of Gale, who was running at the front, was bright.

Nonetheless, Gale laughed with a big voice and yelled as soon as he arrived.

“Hahaha. This battle was also a complete victory.”

“It’s all because of troop commander’s amazing commanding skills.”

At Roan’s words, Gale shook his head.

“No. No. Although I said it immediately, the reason we achieved complete victory is all because of you.”

A proud smile was on his face.

“It’s amazing to notice the stir of the monsters beforehand, but it was even more amazing that you precisely guessed the estimated region and time that the monsters would appear.”

At those words Keniss added.

“You really are worthy of being called the ghost of the battlefield.”

The ghost of the battlefield.

Roan thought once again that it was fortunate that he didn’t become a battlefield fortuneteller.

“I just guessed from the rumors and the stories of the citizens.”

He spoke in a humble attitude and voice.

“Anyways, what’s amazing is amazing.”

Gale was astounded.

Then, Keniss asked with a careful voice.

“But is Istel kingdom really behind the stir of the monsters?”

“There’s a high possibility.”



Roan nodded.

‘According to the analyzed information, Istel kingdom already finished their preparations for war.’

Until now, the situation and the time was similar to his past life.

‘Should I say that this is fortunate.....’

A bitter smile appeared on his face.

Gale let out a sigh with an uneasy look.

“Whew. We are setting up defensive lines in the eastern region for now with the monster subjugation as the excuse.....”

Roan knew the reason he was being uneasy.

‘Benjamin Doyle. That stupid bastard saw the report of corps commander Aaron and ignored it.’

When he first reported the stir of the monsters and the movement of Istel kingdom to Gale, Gale reported it to Aaron.

As he already knew about Roan’s abilities very well, he didn’t have any doubts or hesitation.

And Aaron also sent the report to Benjamin, who was the commander of the eastern region, right after he inspected the contents.

But.

<Don't make a fuss over some monsters running around a bit.>

What returned back to them were blame and reproaches.

Although Aaron sent the report, it was perfectly ignored.

In the end, he also sent the report to some corps commander he was friends with and were pouring all of their strength into making a defensive line.

‘That Benjamin bastard is making things difficult again.’

It was Benjamin that did nothing right even since his past life.

But even so, it was fortunate that some corps moved thanks to Aaron's efforts.

‘Even if those Istel bastards come charging, we won't crumble in an instant.’

In his past life they lost half of the eastern region because of the sudden attack.

At least, they wouldn't get pushed back that helplessly in this life.

‘We have to endure until the corps of other regions and that stupid bastard prepares for battle.’

That was something he could do plentifully.

At least, if it went according to Roan's plans.

But when did life flow as you wished?

One soldier approached and saluted.

“Sir. Vice troop commander Roan. Someone called Pens is looking for you?”

“Mmm?”

If it was Pens, it was one of the staff members Chris had.

Roan slightly bowed towards Gale and Keniss and then followed the soldier.

Pens was roaming a bit far away from the entrance of Oat forest.

He bowed towards Roan and then took out a small piece of paper from his chest.

“Boss Chris sent me.”

“Thank you.”

A hint of nervousness showed on Roan's face. .

He didn't know why it didn't feel good.

He carefully spread the paper and checked the contents.

And then his expression stiffened.

The letter started with a sentence that would not please anyone. .

<I have a bad premonition.>

## Chapter 65 : War And More War (3)

---

After the first sentence, the contents of the letter became worse.

<While I was gathering information on the eastern region, I heard some rumors from travellers that bothered me.

Even so, it seems like the movement of the Byron kingdom isn't right.

For now, I'll go there myself to check.>

The contents of the letter were simple.

Roan frowned.

'Byron kingdom?'

This was something he hadn't expected at all.

'In my past life they didn't show any movements until next year.....'

There was no way something this important would be wrong.

Then.

'The future changed again.'

Also with their movements, this was a really bad position for Roan.

He tore the letter and put it into his pocket, and then looked at

Pens.

“Then, mister Chris.....”

“Yes. He left four days ago.”

“Right. You’re all working hard.”

At those words, Pens hurriedly shook his head.

“No. They’re all working having fun as if it was their thing.”

At those words Roan slightly bowed.

“I will ask you to take good care of me.”

“I, I will do my best.”

Pens also bowed.

Roan became locked in his thoughts by himself after he separated with Pens.

‘I really can’t know when the future will change.’

The worth of the information agency could be seen because of this matter.

‘I did well in focusing on gathering information of the eastern region.’

The decision of not relying solely on his memories made him see light.

‘For now, let’s leave the side of Byron kingdom to mister Chris.’

There was nothing Roan could do right now.

There was also a possibility that the rumor Chris heard was fake.

‘The thing I should do now.....’

Stop the stir of the monsters and prepare for the attack of Istel kingdom.

He shook his head and looked towards the east.

There lied Istel kingdom.

He felt like the smell of the battlefield passed by his nose.

\*\*\*\*\*

Roan concentrated on subjugating the monsters while he waited for Chris.

When the subjugation ended, they set up camps or fences according to the topography and also dug ditches and holes.

People who knew that the movements of Istel kingdom weren’t normal were only soldiers with ranks above adjutant.

Normal soldiers still thought that the defensive lines were for the stir of the monsters.

“It slightly resembles the shape of a defensive line for now.”

As Benjamin ignored Aaron’s reports, some holes appeared at places, but even so as they did their best even if Istel kingdom came attacking immediately. They were confident in tying down their opponent’s feet for now.

Then one soldier approached.

“Vice troop commander. Someone called Chris is looking for you.”

At those words, Roan’s face brightened.

‘You finally came.’

It had already been 20 days since Chris left towards Byron kingdom.

As there was no news at all, he felt uneasy.

Roan hurriedly moved to meet him.

He could see Chris who was looking at him while standing still.

‘It seems like the trouble he went by wasn’t ordinary.’

Chris looked kind of haggard.

His hair was bushy and he looked dirty.

But even so there was a satisfied smile on his mouth.

‘It seems like he gained some accomplishments to be satisfied about.’

Roan ran towards Chris and grabbed his hands.

“I was worried because there was no contact.”

“As the atmosphere over there was too solemn, I couldn’t contact you as I wished.”

Chris shook his head.

“You have done well.”

“No. I just did what I had to.”

At Roan’s words, Chris shook his head once again.

And then looked at Roan’s eyes fixedly.

“I gained some big achievements.”

Roan just listened.

Chris continued saying.

“If I were to tell you the conclusion first, it is that the people of Byron kingdom are also preparing for war.”



He took out a pile of papers from his bag.

It was the information about the southern region of Byron kingdom which he organized.

“Mmm.”

Roan received the papers.

‘Certainly. Just why did the future change now? In my past life.....’

He suddenly brought up the memories.

The reason why Byron kingdom couldn’t move as they wished.

But he couldn’t remember the detailed situation of the kingdom.

‘How stifling.’

It certainly would have changed because of one of his choices.

Then, Chris’s voice was heard.

“Although I couldn’t acquire internal information, it isn’t precise. But even so it seems like the two kingdoms have held hands.”

“It seems so.”

Roan said.

Historically, Rinse kingdom and Byron kingdom were just like

cats and dogs.

Compared to that, Istel kingdom was on friendly terms with both Rinse kingdom and Byron kingdom.

But even so, if you had to choose a friendlier side, it would be Byron kingdom.

There was plenty of possibilities for the two of them to have held hands.

‘The objective in this war for Istel kingdom would be to advance on their western territory.’

The exact objective was revealed only after the war ended.  
It certainly was like that in his past life.

‘The situation is turning difficult.’

Roan let out a long sigh.

Then, Chris said as if he was whispering.

“But I conjured a hypothesis on why Byron kingdom became able to participate in this war.”

He had a somewhat hesitant look.

“Um.....I think that the reason is because of our kingdom.”

“Our kingdom?”

Roan frowned at the unexpected conjecture.

Chris nodded.

“Yes. We achieved a complete victory at the Pedian plain’s monster subjugation. Compared to last year, he gave them a loss almost close to annihilation. Especially, the ones with the biggest losses.....”

Roan continued speaking.

“The orcs of the north.....”

“That’s right.”

Chris nodded.

He continued speaking.

“There were many guys that set up attack lines to attack Byron kingdom. But they were all annihilated.....”

“The southern region of Byron kingdom became inactive.”

“That’s right. Even Violin ended up dying in the Slen battle. In the position of Byron kingdom, they are at a situation where they shouldn’t even have to worry about the orcs in the south.”

“Mmm.”

Roan gulped the silence.

‘I never expected that the results of Pedian plain and slaying

Violin's head would become like this.'

But of course, there were still many other orc commanders aside from Rak in the northern region of Rinse kingdom.

'But they are living in the northern region of our kingdom. Rather, our side is in more danger.'

Anyways, different than his past life, he thought he now knew the reason why Byron kingdom could prepare for war.

But of course, this was all a hypothesis of Chris'.

He couldn't actually know what kind of black curtain there was.

'I will have to report it to corps commander Aaron. However.....'

Even if he did that, he didn't think a sharp response would come back.

It was obvious that Benjamin would ignore the report.

But even so, he couldn't just report it to the king's palace while ignoring the army rules.

No, at this time he didn't even have the means to.

His pondering deepened at this large dilemma.

Chris looked at that face of his.

He also knew much about Roan's ponderings.

'Isn't there be anything I can be of help with?'

Chris mulled over his thoughts over and over again.

‘Ah.....!’

Although it wasn't a clever scheme, he still thought of one method.

“Vice troop commander Roan.”

Chris called out to him in a low voice.

Roan moved out of his thoughts and looked at Chris.

Chris faintly smiled and continued to speak.

“Should I spread a rumor?”

“A rumor?”

As Roan asked back, Chris nodded.

“We spread a rumor that the movements of Byron kingdom and Istel kingdom aren't normal around the capital of Miller and the northern region. Wouldn't a rational commander, who's not like commander Doyle, pay a bit of attention to it?”

“Mm.”

Roan gulped.

“It doesn't seem to be that good of an idea.”

“Ah, is that so?”

“First of all, it’s not easy to spread a rumor because the time and human power is limited. But most of all.....”

His face stiffened.

“If that kind of rumor roamed around, the citizens would feel uneasy.”

“Ah.....”

Chris let out a low exclamation.

He couldn’t move the feelings of the citizens just to make the commanders move.

“Normal people fear war a lot. If a rumor about Byron kingdom and Istel kingdom wanting to attack us spreads, an ensuing chaos would occur. Because for them, it would look like we aren’t prepared at all. If we are to spread a rumor, it would have to be after our preparations are solid.”

“I was short in my thoughts”

Chris slightly bowed.

He was a bit moved.

“I think that you’re really amazing. To think of the safety of the citizens first in this urgent situation.”

At those words Roan sighed.

“Whew.”

He looked at the village that was located at the south of the plains.

“Can you see that small village?”

“Yes? Ah, yes.”

Chris followed Roan’s sight and turned his head.

He could see a small but peaceful village.

Different than the soldiers who were setting up fences or digging ditches, the village men were solely focused on taking care of the harvest.

It was a scene that made you feel warm when you looked at it.

“It’s really pleasing to watch, right?”

“Yes. It feels like i’m getting happy.”

At Roan’s question, Chris faintly smiled and nodded.

On the other side, Roan’s expression was kind of dark.

“If we can’t perform our roles well, their lives will get stepped on.”

Even if his voice was low.

It was completely different to his positive and bright look.

Roan closed his eyes.

The smoke filled the sky.

The village that was peaceful and beautiful.

The cries and yells heard in his surrounding.

The ground wet in blood.

A horrible scenery happened in front of his eyes.

It wasn't something he made up with his imagination.

These were the memories of his past life.

‘The things that happened in the war against Istel kingdom.....’

No, it wasn't only during the war against Istel kingdom.

Everywhere war happened, a horrible scenery followed behind it.

‘I can't let that happen again.’

That was what Roan wanted to do.

A real monarch didn't betray his citizens.

Roan wanted to become that kind of monarch.

He slowly opened his eyes and looked at Chris.

“Mister Chris.”

He spoke in a low voice but with strength.



“Help me so I can help them.”

“Ah.....”

Chris exclaimed with a deeply moved face.

‘It certainly is sir Roan. If it’s him, if it’s him.....’

He clenched his fists.

‘I can spend all my life with him.’

Determination.

That was an oath of serving.

‘I have to do what I can even better. Help sir Roan to do what he does.’

He started the information agency because it was fun.

But now, he started to feel responsibility from those things.

He started to feel a sense of duty at what he started because of fun.

Today, Chris grew up one more level.

Meanwhile, Roan was wondering how to confront the Byron kingdom.

‘Won’t there be a good strategy.....’

His head spun.

Many strategies and tactics popped up.

But there was nothing good.

Chris, who was looking at that Roan, mumbled in a low voice.

“It’s the first time I miss the orcs this much. Just gathering the scattered ones would be enough to prevent Byron kingdom from moving as they wished.”

At that instant, Roan’s eyes opened widely.

‘Right! Orcs!’

His mouth raised up.

“Mister Chris.”

“Yes.”

“Even so, it seems like we will have to talk for quite a while.”

The smile on his mouth became even denser.

Roan continued saying in a low voice.

“I thought of a good thing.”

\*\*\*\*\*

“Scatter to the sides!”

“Don’t separate too much!”

“Get a hold of yourselves!”

In the eastern plains of Beno castle, rose troop was training earnestly.

Roan was checking the movements of the troop from a bit far away and recording the lacking points.

‘For now, we have safely evacuated the residents to a safe zone.’

Now, there wasn’t much time left until the attack from Istel kingdom.

They couldn’t leave the residents alone when they didn’t know when war would break out.

They gave the excuse that they couldn’t ensure their safety because the stir of the monsters was too severe.

And fortunately, the citizens reacted well to the instructions.

Because even for them, monsters frequently appeared in this region.

‘What’s left now is waiting for the answer from the transcript of the north.....’

The preparations were finished.

‘Whew!’

Roan let out a long sigh.

Then, the head of a war horse appeared at the end of the plain.

‘Mm?’

The war horse whipped up white dust and ran quickly.

As Roan focused on his sight, the warhorse that was far away was seen as if it was right in front of him.

“Ah.....”

At that moment, a low exclamation came out.

He had clearly seen it.

That the soldier was holding a red flag.

‘Is it starting?’

Roan bit his lower lip and raised his right hand.

Flop! Flop!

At Roan’s handsign, the flagman shook his hand and the troop stopped their movements.

They had lined up while setting up a rectangle formation.

When each adjutant and squad commander stood in front of their

spot.

The warhorse that was running through the plains came closer.

Flop! Flop!

The red flag that waved around with strength.

Roan and the soldiers moved their sight over the warhorse.

At the same time, the soldier riding it yelled with strength.

“The people of Istel kingdom have crossed the boundary!”

# Chapter 66 : War And More War (4)

---

“Uak!”

These were cries that resounded in your ears.

A fatty, who had his neck sliced open, walked two steps and collapsed.

Clark trembled and stepped back.

‘Ho, how.....’

He couldn’t believe the scene in front of him.

‘How are the bastards of Rinse kingdom.....’

The bastards approached them while holding spears and swords.

It was revealed that they were the soldiers from rose troop, of the 7th corps of Rinse kingdom.

‘Why are you bastards over here!’

Clark wanted to yell like that.

‘I know that there aren’t any troops stationed over here.....’

He was certain.

Because it was something he had studied over and over for more than a month.

‘It just seems like they already knew of our surprise attack.’

Clark grinded his teeth.

His teeth clashed without stopping.

His breath was clogged at the fear of not knowing if he was going to die.

‘Damn. I wanted to make Beno castle fall faster than anyone.’

He thought that Rinse kingdom wouldn’t have made any preparations.

But that wasn’t only Clark’s thoughts.

Everyone thought like that and thought that the battle would flow normally.

‘Wrong. We were wrong.’

Then, he felt a chilly presence when he was stepping back.

Clark stopped and turned around.

“Huk!”

He saw a spear that was right in front of his nose.

Clark couldn’t endure it and fell down.

“Are you the troop commander?”

The owner of the voice was someone with a spear.

Clark looked up while he was on the ground.

It was a childish face but had a somewhat rugged charm.

He was none other than Roan.

“Reveal your name and unit.”

Roan brought his spear to Clark’s forehead.

“Kugh.”

Clark frowned.

He had already resigned everything.

“I’m troop commander Clark of Pier troop of the 1st corps of Istel kingdom.”

Clark honestly revealed his unit.

‘It certainly was the Pier troop.’

The soldiers of rose troop who were surrounding him along with Roan smiled faintly and nodded.



“Did you know that we were going to attack?”

Clark regretted having asked that to Roan.

‘Someone who’s soon going to die has asked a meaningless question.’

He smiled bitterly.

“Let me know the name of the bastard who will take my head.”

Roan looked at Clark’s eyes fixedly and put strength into his wrist.

Swush.

The spear soared high to the sky.

“My name is Roan. I’m the vice troop commander of rose troop of the 7th corps.”

At the same time, the spear fell towards Clark’s head.

Clark listened to the sharp noise and closed his eyes.

Slash.

The spear instantly cut off his neck.

The body that lost its head slowly fell over.

Boom.

Roan shook his spear and waved the blood off.

The cries and yells in his surrounding had now calmed down.

‘The first battle is a complete victory.’

A smile appeared on his face.

The beginning of the war started off on a good foot.

‘At this point, the news of an infiltration attempt from Istel kingdom would have reached the eastern headquarters.’

Now that the situation turned out like this, even the stupid Benjamin wouldn’t be able to just sit still.

‘Even so, as Count Lancephil moved first, we could cover up some big holes we had in our defensive lines.’

Aaron reported this to Io instead of Benjamin, and Io lead the knights himself after confirming the situation and marched.

‘But it’s still lacking.’

To face Istel kingdom, he needed the forces of the eastern region and also an army provided by the palace.

‘We will hold until then.’

He didn’t need a complete victory like this one; to the point of completely massacring their enemies.

They just needed to tie their feet to not let them advance deeper in towards the kingdom.

But even so, it wasn’t that they had leisure in terms of time.

‘Byron kingdom would also have started advancing.....’

Although they also crossed the boundaries, they were advancing while riding the eastern boundary.

‘It would be to join with Istel kingdom.’

Roan took in a deep breath.

‘The 3rd and 4th corps have to do well.....’

He hatched a plan after having a conference with Aaron before the war started.

And that was that the 3rd and 4th corps had to face Byron kingdom in the north while the eastern region battled against Istel

kingdom.

But of course, they didn't have to battle with putting their lives on the line.

<Battle 20 times and lose them all.>

Their objective was pulling them into a deep part of the northern region.

There were two things he could gain by losing every battle.

'I will make them be off guard.'

But what was more important.

'We have to make the supply line as long as possible.'

If they pulled Byron kingdom deep inside their territory, they could only get further away from their provisions.

This was because of the speed difference of the troops and the movement speed of the supplies.

Because of that, the supply line gets longer and their military forces becomes thinner.

That was the point Roan was aiming for.

'If the warriors of the north attack them there.....'

Byron kingdom would fall in chaos.

No, it wasn't only chaos.

‘A troop without supplies can't continue doing war.’

Supplies were that important in a war.

But of course, it wasn't an important plan.

The moment one of his small plans deviated, Rinse kingdom would have brought a tiger to their den.

‘They have to accomplish their respective roles well.’

Then, a familiar voice was heard from his back.

“Roan. It's a complete victory. Complete victory.”

As he turned back, he saw Gale and Keniss approaching him.

They were slightly inspired at the complete victory.

“Where do we have to move next?”

Gale asked while looking at the battlefield.

Roan replied in a low voice.

“We have to wait until the information squad arrives.”

“Ah, information squad. Right. Right.”

Gale let out a low exclamation and nodded.

He looked at Roan's face.

‘Information squad..... Was there a person that made that and even used it in a war?’

When he first heard that Roan wanted to make an information squad, he couldn't easily understand it.

Because he thought that just using the patrolling guards were enough.

On top of that, he thought that it was nonsense to make a non battling squad when they were already at a disadvantage in numbers.

But when they made the information squad as per Roan's opinion, they could only get amazed at their role.

‘Although they can't figure out all of the information, they are able to grasp their movements.’

Having waited in ambush beforehand at the moving route of Pier troop was also because of the strength of information.

He looked at Roan with amazed eyes.

‘He's looking at me like that again.....’

Roan smiled awkwardly and looked away.

Nowadays, whatever happened, he always looked at him with those eyes.

Amazement, respect, awareness.

But of course there was envy, annoyance, and jealousy mixed in at times, but those were scarce.

Roan was receiving an overwhelming support from everyone.

‘Anyways, it seems like it was a good thing to make an information agency.’

In the first place he was planning to utilize Chris and his staff to gather and analyze information.

But for a normal person, that wasn’t a soldier, to roam the battlefield was one of the most dangerous things to do.

Because of that, he chose soldiers that had good eyesight and were nimble to make an information squad.

‘Mister Pens is leading them well.’

The squad commander wasn’t a soldier, but a staff of Chris’s agency, Pens.

‘After this, I will have to make Chris’s travel agency a formal information agency.’

The significance of information will be seen the more time has passed.

Before that, he needed a more systematic organization.

‘The time to start the agency has come.’

The best information group that grabbed all the information in the continent in his past life.

The agency.

The time came to make the first step.

\*\*\*\*\*

Chris was fruitful in gathering information about Istel kingdom because of the use of the agency and information squad.

Fortunately, their movements weren't that different to Roan's memories.

Roan's memories and the information gathered together.

The two things were combined and made a more precise and valuable information.

Because of that, the 7th corps and the other three corps could set up a defensive line before hand in Istel Kingdom's attack line.

After four days of having set up wooden fences and strong barricades, did the people of Istel kingdom appear.

Their numbers were as much as 80,000.

Compared to that, the amount of the four troops were as much as 30,000.

“Amazing.”

Aaron was astounded.

Even the other corps commanders gulped down dry saliva.



What was fortunate was that the location of their barricade was good.

No, precisely speaking, the location of Istel kingdom's camp was bad.

They could only take place somewhere in the empty plain because Rinse kingdom had already set up their barricade.

“It's just like Roan's information and the report of the information agency.”

Aaron glared at the end of the plains with a satisfied expression.

He was amazed once again at Roan's ability and quick eye.

Then, Mendel appeared with an urgent expression.

“Corps commander.”

Aaron and several corps commanders had turned their head and looked at Mendel.

Mendel continued saying with a stiffened expression.

“30.000 soldiers of the eastern army arrived at the Nerf region.”

Nerf region was one day away from here, Bink region.

“Ah.....”

The corps commanders exclaimed and put on relieved

expressions.

But Mendel's expression was still hard.

And Aaron didn't miss that.

"It seems like something happened."

"That....."

Mendel chewed his lower lip and hesitated.

And then, spoke with a slightly agitated expression.

"The eastern army set up a camp in the region of Nerf."

In that instant, the corps commanders frowned.

"What?!"

"What did you say?"

They had expressions as if they couldn't believe it.

For their allies to set up a camp in a region that was a day away from this place, that already had a camp set up.

It was something they couldn't understand at all.

"Commander Aaron. If the eastern army set up a camp in the region of Nerf, shouldn't we also fall back?"

"Oho. Do you think that makes sense? Will the enemies just sit still while we retreat over to the region of Nerf?"

The commanders discussed among themselves and pondered.  
And Aaron was also the same.

‘Benjamin Doyle. You really are a pain in the ass.’

Benjamin had big ambitions, but was too frightened.

He certainly would have gotten scared at the 80,000 soldiers of Istel kingdom and set up a camp in their rear.

‘Retreat? Or protect this place? Whatever we do, it isn’t a good situation.’

Then, Mendel’s voice was heard.

“How about calling Roan?”

“Roan?”

Aaron turned his head and looked at Mendel.

Mendel swallowed down dry saliva and nodded.

“Yes. If it’s Roan, won’t he have something good?”

“Mmm. Right. If it’s Roan.....”

Aaron touched his chin and nodded.

“Good. Call him.”

“Yes. Understood.”

Mendel deeply bowed and left.

The commanders that were discussing looked at Aaron.

“Who’s Roan?”

“I hear that name a lot.....”

“Ah! Is he the soldier that received a corps commander level badge.....?”

At those words Aaron nodded.

“That’s right. Ale gorge battle, Pedian monster subjugation tactic, Int’s forest battle, Prelly river inundation tactic, Slen battle, and the invasion of Istel kingdom and Byron kingdom. These distinguished merits were all accomplished by vice troop commander Roan.”

“Ah.....”

The commanders exclaimed out loud.

‘So he’s outstanding in strategies and tactics?’

‘They say his spear skills are also amazing.’

‘There’s a rumour that he went toe to toe with Viscount Baker.’

The commanders glanced at each other and had a smile mixed

with expectation.

After a while, the door opened and Roan appeared.

‘This childish youth is that Roan?’

‘He’s much smaller than what I thought.’

‘I heard that he was young, but he’s a complete greenhorn.’

The smiles on their faces disappeared.

An uneasy look appeared again.

‘I was also like that at first.’

Aaron looked at them and bitterly smiled.

‘But they will soon be amazed at Roan’s abilities.’

Just like him from the past.

“Did you call me?”

Roan saluted towards Aaron.

After Aaron nodded, he told him the truth that Benjamin set up a camp in the region of Nerf.

Roan bowed with a composed expression.

‘Benjamin Doyle. You are making things really difficult.’

However, he had kind of expected that the scaredy cat would have set up a camp at their rear.

‘The problem is whether Istel kingdom set up a camp in the region of Bink, just like the analysis of the information squad.’

The result.

‘Fortunately, it’s like we guessed.’

Then, there was no need to worry.

“The situation isn’t good. Do you have a good method to deal with them?”

This was Aaron’s question.

Roan replied as if he was waiting for it.

“We have to prepare for a night raid.”

At that instant, Aaron and the other commanders all frowned.

“Night raid?”

“Did he say night raid?”

“Are you telling me that Istel kingdom will launch a night raid?”

They all laughed.

‘They say that rumours tend to be excessive.....’

‘The merits he had accumulated until now would all have been a bluff.’

The commanders looked at Roan and shook their heads.

Then Philip Hass, who was the commander of the 5th corps and the one with the most experience, clicked his tongue.

“Tchtchtch. Look. Don’t you know that it has already been nine days since they crossed the boundary?”

“Yes. I know.”

Roan bowed.

The person who had reported that Istel kingdom had crossed the boundary was right himself.

Philip continued saying as if he was rebuking.

“An army consisting of 80,000 appeared in Bink region nine days ago. It’s quite a fast, no, a movement speed so fast you can’t even imagine it.”

“Right.”

The other commanders all nodded.

Phillip looked at Roan’s eyes fixedly.

“This means that they slept and ate the least amount possible and moved night and day. It means that it’s an amazing forced march. But they attempt a night raid the moment they set up a camp? Do you think that’s possible?”

He was making fun of him.

The other commanders also laughed.

“Hahaha. It seems like he doesn’t know about these things as he hasn’t faced a war this big yet.”

“Now that I see it, the merits he accumulated were all done while facing the ignorant monsters.”

They were pouring out cynical remarks.

But there wasn’t any change in Roan’s expression.

He pointed at the end of the plains with his finger.

The camp of Istel kingdom.

“Look at their camp.”

At those words, they stopped laughing and turned to look at the camp.

80,000 soldiers had set up camps while scattered about.

“Even if their number is amazing, the structure of their camp is too sloppy. This is just like they set it up however it turned out.”



Roan's words were true.

Although it was difficult to set up a camp because the numbers were big, even taking that into account, their camp was excessively unsteady.

Aaron mumbled as if he thought of something.

“That feels like they just camped down temporarily.”

At those words Roan nodded.

“That's right. They aren't thinking of staying in that place for long.”

Then, Philips said.

“Ho! Did you judge that they will make a night raid just by looking that? Just with that one reason?”

He clicked his tongue and shook his head.

Even the other commanders didn't falter.

However Roan's expression was still composed.

He gave Aaron a pile of papers.

“Will you look at this?”

“What's this?”

“Information about the generals of Istel kingdom.”

At those words Aaron looked at the paper with a surprised look.

‘When did he.....’

There was information written about important commanders on it.

But of course, it wasn’t minute and detailed information.

Their outlines, outer appearances, descriptions, and temperaments.

There also was information written about what merits they had achieved.

‘Although I couldn’t gather internal information, it was made up with the stories of the citizens as the background, but just with that, it became amazing information.’

It was information Chris and his agency gathered themselves while they were preparing for war.

For this they roamed pubs, plazas, slums, brothels, and also markets.

The newly made information that squad soldiers roamed these places and received the role of checking how well this information matched with the reports.

“Commander Aaron. Why are you that surprised?”

“Let me see.”

The commanders stuck themselves next to Aaron.

“Oho!”

“This is really amazing.”

The commanders gulped air.

Roan said as if he was waiting for it.

“The commander in charge of leading the army is Looter Beil. You will know if you see the reports but he.....”

The commanders all turned to look at Roan.

“He has a really strong fighting spirit. Looter Bale has already tried surprise attacks and night raids along the Aimas alliance.”

At those words everyone nodded.

The report was certainly written like that.

‘Even in my past life, Looter Baile decided to go with a night raid when he first met with Rinse kingdom.’

Although the time and place were different, Looter was a commander that had that tendency.

The tendency of the commander and the structure of the camp.

On top of that, Roan’s memories.

The possibility for a night raid was plentiful.

“Hmm.”

Philip smacked his lips and cleared his throat.

He had a somewhat uncomfortable look.

“Then, you are saying that we have to prepare for a night raid, right?”

Anyways, preparing for a night raid wasn't that big of a thing.

On top of that, if they prepared for it but nothing happened, there wasn't that big of a loss.

‘If I keep insisting here but they do make a night raid.....’

They would rather face large losses.

The commanders all turned to look at Roan.

Roan matched their sights and shook his head.

“No. We have to prepare for one more thing.”

At those words, Philip frowned.

“We have to prepare for one more thing?”

“Yes.”

Roan replied shortly and took in a deep breath.

He wanted to bring the flow of this battlefield to Rinse kingdom.

Roan continued saying while looking at the faces of the commanders.

“We have to prepare for a counter raid.”

# Chapter 67 : War And More War (5)

---

“The night air of Rinse kingdom is really good.”

Looter Beil took in a deep breath.

A chilly smile appeared on his mouth.

‘It’s a good weather to run for a while.’

His sight moved over to the foot of the mountain.

He saw hundreds of big and small barracks and wooden fences surrounding it.

The camp of Rinse kingdom.

At first glance it seemed solid, but Looter couldn’t know.

‘By now, they should be asleep right?’

Rinse kingdom would be careless.

‘They would think that we are dead tired.’

Not at all.

He didn’t think about that at all.

‘Stealth like surprise attacks and raids are my specialty.’

The gale of Istel.

That was the nickname of Looter.

On top of that, he had a reason why he could only go with a night raid.

‘The king said that the one with the most outstanding merits would receive half of the occupied territory.’

Half of the eastern region of Rinse kingdom.

He could only want it.

That was the reason why a corps commander like himself went out to do a night raid regardless of doing a forced march.

“Corps commander. We have finished preparations for the raid.”

At the soldier’s report, Looter faintly smiled and nodded.

‘Then, shall we also run a bit today?’

He went towards the entrance.

5.000 cavalrymen were showing a dignified look.

The horses had their mouths covered with a gag and the horse shoes were covered with cloths filled with grass.

Looter raised his right arm high.

“Let’s show the strength of Istel kingdom to the Rinse bastards.”

“Yes.”

A low reply came from them.

A weird nervousness flowed with the wind.

“Charge!”

Looter grabbed the reins and walked.

He was pulling and walking the horse to not make any sounds.

5,000 cavalrymen followed behind his back.

5,000 cavalrymen.

That was the most suitable number to do a night raid.

‘We retreat quickly after having messed them up.’

Even so, it wasn’t that it ended with just one night raid.

When they were confused, he was planning to try raiding it once more.

‘It wouldn’t even cross their minds.’

A smile appeared on Looter’s face.

He was the happiest in this moment.

Joy covered his body.

Soon, he could see the wooden fences that were set up in a solid fashion.



‘We are charging in one go.’

Looter got up on his horse and took in a deep breath.

And the others also did the same.

He uncovered the gag of the horses and kicked them.

Dudududu.

The warhorse fiercely charged and then jumped over the fence nimbly.

Behind him, 5,000 soldiers followed him.

“Set it on fire! Run amok as you wish!”

“Waaaaaaaaaaa!”

The soldiers, who were holding their breaths, let out cries.

They crumbled the bonfires and set the big and small tents on fire.

They were really spirited.

However, it didn’t last long until they realized that something wasn’t right.

“Huh?”

“Uh?”

The soldiers who were setting things on fire stopped with a perplexed expression.

Silence.

An uneasy silence roamed inside the camp.

They didn't see guards nor soldiers that got out of the tents.

‘Damn! Something is wrong!’

Looter looked at his surroundings and grinded his teeth.

Tens and hundreds of tents were burning, but the people of Rinse kingdom didn't even stick out their noses.

Then, a sharp noise was heard.

Sweeeee!

‘Arrow!’

Looter instinctively pulled the reins and moved towards the back of the burning tent.

At that same moment.

Pubububuk!

A rain of arrows poured over the cavalrymen.

“Kuk!”

“Kugh!”

They became porcupines who were not able to prepare themselves, and collapsed.

‘Damn! The Rinse bastards were already aware of the night raid!’

Looter clenched his fists with a frustrated look.

“Retreat! Retreat!”

The raid was a failure.

Retreating was the only option left if they wanted to live.

“Retreat! Retreat!”

The cavalrymen repeated the command and pulled the reins.

They dodged the pouring arrows and ran towards the entrance of the camp.

But.

“When you enter, you can come as you wish. But if you want to leave, you have to receive permission!”

“Where do you want to go?!”

Thousands of swordsmen and spearmen lined up following the fence.

At the same time, cavalrymen appeared inside the camp.

It was a perfectly encircled situation.

‘Damn. I can’t do anything in this situation!’

Looter grinded his teeth.

There were no methods.

No, there was only one order he could lay out.

“Pierce through!”

And that was piercing through the blockade and returning to their camp.

At Looter’s orders, the cavalrymen started to run towards the swordsmen and spearmen.

And Looter also followed his back.

“Block them!”

“Raise your spears!”

“Stab the horses!”

The spearmen of Rinse kingdom raised their spears high, grouped together, and made a root formation.

It was to stop them from piercing through.

Bang!

The people of the two kingdoms clashed.

Cheng! Checheng! Cheng!

The sound of metal clanging together was heard along with sparks.

An unavoidable battle occurred.

The spearmen and swordsmen didn't get pushed back easily.

And they didn't even let them pierce through.

Because of that, Looter and the 5,000 cavalrymen were trapped inside and wavered.

Meanwhile, the cavalrymen of Rinse kingdom attacked their backs.

"Let's show the strength of Rinse kingdom to these bastards!"

"We will send you to hell!"

A really spirited cry rang out.

The cavalrymen of Rinse kingdom pushed the other cavalrymen fiercely.

The cavalrymen of Istel kingdom collapsed helplessly at the attack from both sides.

"Kugh."

"Kek."

These last words were heard everywhere.

‘Damn! Can’t keep like this!’

Looter grinded his teeth and went to the front.

“Damn! Get away! Get away!”

He pulled up his mana and massacred the spearmen and swordsmen.

Slash! Stab!

The power of mana was amazing.

Looter faced the normal soldiers who had a big build like he was facing kids.

Every time he swung his blade, one or two soldiers lost their heads and collapsed.

“The ones that don’t want to die get away! Get away!”

Looter yelled.

The soldiers and spearmen hesitated and fell back.

They became scared at his overwhelming power.

‘Normal soldiers can’t face a corps commander that knows how to use mana.’

Roan, who was facing the normal soldiers at a place a bit far away

grinded his teeth.

‘If I leave them be, our losses will only increase!’

He couldn’t let them just die like that.

He cut off the neck of one cavalryman charging at him and then looked towards Austin and Keep.

“Austin! Keep! Make me a foothold!”

Austin and Keep, who were facing the cavalymen, understood Roan’s orders in an instant.

The two people put the spears at both of their sides and looked at Roan.

Roan slightly nodded and then charged forward.

One thread of mana surged up from his mana hole.

The muscles of his two legs twitched and were filled with energy.

Austin and Keep looked at each other and then rebounded their knees.

‘One, two, three!’

At the same time, Roan stepped on the two spears and jumped.

Pat!

Roan surged to the air using the rebound strength of the spear and his kicking strength.

Roan lightly jumped over the cavalrymen and flew towards Looter.

“Huh?”

“Uh?”

The cavalrymen of Istel kingdom looked at him and had surprised expressions.

Looter, who was massacring the soldiers, discovered that Roan was flying towards him too late.

“This impossible.....!”

Looter hurriedly tried to pull back the spear to hit Roan, but it was already too late.

Roan’s spear pierced the air and stabbed in towards Looter’s chest.

‘Damn!’

Looter twisted his upper body unavoidably and dodged below the horse.

Stab!



Roan's spear fell in the place he dodged.

The spear was deeply stabbed into the horse.

Hiiiiiiing!

The horse cried roughly and shook its body.

Roan kicked the head of the horse like that and lightly landed while out pulling his spear.

Meanwhile, Looter who was rolling on the ground with a perplexed look, glared at Roan and fixed his posture.

“Who are you?”

“I'm vice troop commander Roan of rose troop from the 7th corps.”

“Vice troop commander? Not even a general, but a mere adjutant? Hmph!”

Looter snorted and raised his longsword.

“Looter Bale of the 1st corps of the western forces of Istel kingdom will cut off your neck.”

He thought little of Roan.

Although he was at the intermediate-low level, his body had learned mana.

He wasn't at a level where a normal soldier could face him.

But of course, this guess of his was completely wrong.

Tat!

Looter got up from the ground quickly and ran towards Roan.

This was because it was dangerous to keep distance while facing someone holding a long distance weapon such as a spear.

Roan looked at Looter charging at himself and grinded his teeth.

‘I’ll get rid of him when he’s careless.’

He couldn’t use mana openly.

Roan swung his spear with all his strength.

It wasn’t a simple spear technique, but Roan’s spearmanship.

Spat!

A sharp sound was heard along the spear.

“Hph!”

Looter, who was charging in boldly, gulped some air and swung his sword.

Cheng!

A pleasing sound of metal against metal rang out.

The spear was bounced off to the side.

‘Kugh. Certainly, the strength of mana.....’

Roan grinded his teeth as he felt his palms going numb.

However, it wasn't to the point that he couldn't endure it.

He moved his two arms close to his body and pulled the spear that was bounced off with all his strength.

The spear that had lost its direction once again turned to attack Looter.

‘Damn!’

Looter grinded his teeth and swung his sword when he looked at the spear that continued softly.

Cheng! Checheng! Cheng!

Sparks appeared alongside the noise of metal sound.

At first glance, they were even.

But Looter was getting closer to Roan little by little.

Tuk.

Finally, Looter's right foot reached Roan's left foot.

“Die!”

Looter tried to stab him with his blade.

This was the critical moment.

However, Roan’s expression was still composed.

‘I waited for this!’

He inserted mana to his eyes.

At that instant.

Pat!

The movements of the people became sickeningly slow and the whole world was dyed in golden light.

The golden light that filled his sight was mana.

Roan just looked at Looter’s sword that was coming into him.

‘So mana moves like this.’

As the proficiency he currently achieved was low, he couldn’t grasp everything clearly. But, he could guess that the mana was flowing towards the blade from Looter’s mana hole.

Most of all, the mana that moved along with Looter’s movement was clearly seen.

‘I’m ending it here.’

Roan already felt his eye getting hot.

As he used mana and also Kalian's tear, his eye was beginning to feel the burden.

He quickly twisted his body to dodge Looter's blade and then he closed in on him.

Swuuuuush.

A really slow movement.

Although Roan was also moving while utilizing mana, the movements he saw by utilizing mana was so slow, it could make him yawn.

'Reid's battling technique.'

He grabbed the spear with his right hand and executed the basic stances of Reid's battle technique.

Swush.

The fist moved towards Looter's abdomen.

"Kuuuuuuugh."

The sound of Looter gulping down the sound became loud.

At the same time, he closed in on the shoulder that was swinging

the sword and he twisted his body.

Spaaaaaat!

Roan's fist barely missed Looter's abdomen.

At that moment, he felt an expression of relief from Looter.

'There's no need to like it that much. As this isn't the end.'

Roan pressed down the shoulder with the fist that missed.

At that instant, the balance crumbled and his whole body twisted to the left.

It was a look that seemed like they would fall to the ground.

Roan wasn't perplexed and then pulled his left arm to his right side and turned his body.

At the same time he wrapped Looter's legs with his right leg.

Tuuuuuk!

Looter's leg was trapped between his thigh and calf.

"Uhhhhhhhh!"

Looter's surprised voice became long.

Roan just pulled his leg like that.

Looter couldn't endure it anymore and lost his balance.

Looter slowly collapsed.

Then.

‘Kugh!’

Roan blinked at the pain he felt in his eyes.

At that instant, the world that was dyed in golden light turned to its original look.

Looter, who was falling so slowly it made you yawn, collapsed in an instant.

Boom!

“Uhh.”

Looter couldn’t get a hold of himself.

‘Damn! To wrap my legs in that situation.’

It was an attack he hadn’t expected at all.

‘It’s dangerous like this!’

He tried to turn his body quickly and stand up.

At that moment.

Puk!

He felt a strong shock in his side.

“Kuhuk!”

A feeling like his breath was cut shot through him.

Roan had kicked his side.

Looter flipped and spread out while looking at the sky.

Tuk.

Roan aimed at Looter’s throat with his spear.

Looter had a helpless expression.

“Kugh. Damn. To fall by a normal soldier and not even a general.”

He let out a sigh.

“Whew. Is the Gale of Istel ending here?”

At those words Roan put strength in his hands.

“You blew somewhere where you shouldn’t have gone in the first place.”



At the same time, the spear moved.

Slash.

A line appeared on Looter's neck and then, his head became separated from his body.

Roan stabbed the head with his spear and raised it high to the sky.

“Vice troop commander Roan of rose troop from the 7th corps has slain the neck of the enemy commander!”

A loud yell resonated out.

“Huh? Corps commander Beil?!”

“Ah.....”

“Impossible.”

Even so, the army of Istel kingdom that was getting pushed back one sidedly, looked at Looter's head and suffered a setback.

The bastards that were struggling until the end threw their weapons and surrendered.

“Hahaha! Roan! It's a complete victory. A complete victory!”

Aaron approached while riding his horse.

He also saw the other commanders at his back.

They were a bit surprised as the night raid had happened just like Roan had predicted it.

Aaron looked at the big and small tents that were on fire.

“Put the fires out!”

If they acted later, the whole camp would be covered in fire.

Then, Roan stepped up.

“It would be good to put the fire off later.”

“Huh?”

Aaron asked back what he meant.

Roan looked at the camp of Istel kingdom that was located at the other side of the plains.

“If we catch the fire quickly, they may realize that the raid had failed. Now, rather than putting it out.....”

He put strength in his voice.

“It’s time to go for a counter raid.”

“Right. It may look like we are the ones in chaos.”

Aaron nodded.

After that, he prepared 5,000 cavalrymen with Mendel at the front.

Behind them, more than 10,000 infantrymen moved into formation.

“Then, we will also depart after we cover the horses with gags.”

Mendel had a really spirited expression.

At that look, Roan shook his head.

“No. It would be good to let the 5,000 cavalrymen advance like this.”

“Like this? Are you telling me that we have to advance without covering the horses with gags in a frontal attack?”

At Mendel’s question, Roan nodded.

“Our camp is already on fire. And Istel kingdom will also be looking at this. They will be thinking that the raid was a success. Because of that, when 5,000 cavalrymen approach their camp they will think that their allies are returning to the camp after having succeeded in the raid.”

“Ah! Right. It will be impossible to check if they are friends or foes in this dark night!”

Roan nodded.

“Yes. So don’t advance while covering the horses with gags, but

instead approach them as fast as possible and the moment you enter their camp, set it on fire and run amok as you please.”

Continued by that, he looked at the 10,000 archers.

“Followed by that, the spearmen and swordsmen will sweep them up.”

At those words Mendel nodded.

And Aaron and the other commanders also did the same.

“Let’s do as Roan says.”

At Aaron’s order, Mendel slightly bowed and moved out of the camp while he was leading the cavalrymen.

Dudududu.

The sound of horse steps was clearly heard.

At the same time, the 10,000 swordsmen and spearmen left the camp without any sound.

They had all covered their faces and armour with dirt.

Because of that, they became one with the darkness.

And of course, the one in front of the 10,000 soldiers was Roan.

Sasasasak.

They crossed over the long grass.

A dense smell of blood was wafting through the air.

When they approached the camp of Istel kingdom.

Waaaaaa!

Flames surged up from the insides of the camp.

Roan's eyes shined.

‘It's now our turn.’

# Chapter 68 : War And More War (6)

---

‘What? How did this happen?’

Prain, who was in charge of guarding of the camp, didn’t have any control.

Even until flames surged up in the camp of Rinse kingdom and noises were heard, he thought that the raid was a success.

And it was also because the fire wasn’t put out, but it spread even more.

After a while, when thousands of cavalrymen were coming back to his camp, he thought that Looter was returning.

The reason he had opened the gates with a really happy voice was also because of that.

But the cavalrymen that entered the camp wasn’t Looter’s army.

‘They, they are from Rinse kingdom!’

Prain came to realize this too late.

He yelled towards the guards.

“Ri, ring the bell! Ring the bell and hit the jing!”

He had to let the others know of the infiltration by the enemy.

He had to let the others know that the raid was a failure and they were the ones getting attacked.

“Ye, yes!”

The soldiers who were checking the situation with absent-minded expressions ran towards the bell and the jing.

Then.

Sweeeee!

A sharp sound was heard.

Pubububuk!

“Kugh!”

“Kek!”

Then, the soldiers fell by becoming like porcupines.

At the same time, the people of Rinse kingdom came pouring in from the open entrance.

“Kill them!”

“Set everything on fire and collapse the tents!”

“Break the stables and release the horses!”

The 10,000 soldiers entered the camp recklessly.

“Huh?! Uh.....”

Prain stepped back with a perplexed look.

‘This large scaled surprise attack.....’

He had never thought that they would attack them, they had lower numbers in the first place.

‘I, I have to let the commanders know of this!’

Prain turned back and tried to run towards the camp.

At that moment, he felt a chilly presence at his back.

Stab.

At the same time, the sharp spear pierced the back of his head.

“Attack! Everyone attack!”

The owner of the voice yelled out.

The one who stabbed the back of Prain was Roan.

Stab.

He pulled his spear and charged the ground.

“Uooooooooo! Wha, what’s happening!”



“It’s a surprise attack!”

“Damn! Ar.. armour! Bring me the armour!”

The soldiers of Istel kingdom were really confused by the sudden attack.

Because of the forced march that lasted nine days, they were really exhausted.

Thanks to that, they just believed in Looter’s night raid and rested without thinking of anything else.

As the army of Rinse kingdom appeared in this situation, the soldiers couldn’t even wear their armour and got out of their tents holding their weapons.

And that was the same for adjutants and generals.

“Kuhuk! How, how are the Rinse kingdom.....”

“What happened with corps commander Beil!”

“Kugh.”

They yelled with a really perplexed expression.

“Block them!”

“Stop the fire!”

The commanders got a hold of themselves and led the soldiers.  
But at the unexpected attack, they were in chaos.

Stab. Slash.

And Rinse kingdom didn't miss this opportunity.

A one sided massacre and annihilation occurred.

“Bastards of Istel kingdom, fuck off to Istel!”

“Return to your land!”

“Die!”

The soldiers of Rinse kingdom attacked them with raging bellows.

Everyone swung their own weapons.

But even amongst them, the most outstanding one was Roan.

He was mixing Kalian's tear, Brent's ring, and the Flamdor mana technique suitably and showing the prowess of a monster.

Swing. Swing.

The spear turned roughly by riding the palm.

And everytime, several soldiers of Istel kingdom collapsed while shedding blood.

“Kugh.”

“Kek!”

Roan didn't show any mercy, even to the fallen ones.

‘I can’t leave any future trouble.’

If it wasn’t a situation where he could completely subdue them, he had to certainly kill them.

That was his ethics in battle, battlefields, and war.

The battle flowed one sidedly, but even so it wasn’t a situation where he could loosen himself.

‘If I make a mistake, I can get by legs grabbed.’

A raid was a raid.

If he became greedy because he was drunk in victory, he could suffer a big blow.

They were inside a camp with more than 8,000 soldiers anyways.

“Staff officer Mendel! Going deeper than this is dangerous!”

At Roan’s yell, Mendel who was fiercely pushing back the enemies pulled back the reins.

‘We moved deeper in than what I thought.’

As he slew the bastards of Istel kingdom that fell helplessly, he turned up entering to a deep place even without knowing.

“Fall back! Fall back!”

Mendel turned the head of his horse and yelled with strength.

Likewise, the cavalrymen that were pushing back the enemies started to retreat one by one.

‘Even so, it’s fortunate that we didn’t fall into a trap or become surrounded.’

When he thought until then.

A really displeasing sound was heard.

Sweeeeee!

A sharp sound rang out.

But it was heavier and more horrible than when a normal arrow pierced the air.

When Mendel thoughtlessly turned to look back.

Puuuuk!

A long spear pierced three cavalrymen alongside the terrible sound.

At the same time, the men of Istel kingdom scattered to the sides.

“Mm?”

“Huh?”

Mendel and the cavalrymen had surprised expressions at the sudden situation.

Their sight moved to the insides of the camp.

From between the split army, a group of people that were wearing flashy armour appeared.

Likewise, Roan also opened his eyes roundly.

‘They are knights!’

An existence he didn’t want to face at all.

Different than normal soldiers, knights knew how to use mana.

But fortunately, their number wasn’t that big.

At most, 30 men.

But even with just that, it was a number that you couldn’t just ignore them.

“Re, retreat! Retreat! We are falling back quickly!”

Mendel instantly grasped the situation.

He looked at the knights that were approaching them fiercely and yelled.

Hiiiiing!

The cavalrymen that hurriedly kick their horses.

But unfortunately the movements of the knights were a bit faster.

Stap! Slash! Spat!

A sharp long sword slashed the cavalrymen.

“Kuok!”

“Kek!”

The cavalrymen fell helplessly.

‘Damn. For the knights to appear this quickly.....’

Roan ground his teeth.

In the raid group of Rinse kingdom’s army, there weren’t even ten people who knew how to use mana.

‘It’s one of the biggest weak points among weak points.’

One of the biggest weakness that an army guarding a region had was the presence of knights and mages.

Only staff officers and the small minority of troop commanders knew how to use mana.

A really small minority at that.

Most belonged to the army of a region or a noble family.

Because of that Roan, Gale, Aaron, etc. wished for a more active participation from the region’s army.

But Benjamin ignored the report and they had set up a camp at

their rear.

‘Are the only ones I can believe in are Count Lancephil’s knights and the region’s army?’

Roan bit his lower lip.

At Aaron’s report, Io reacted right away.

But he was the owner of Lancephil’s territory.

He couldn’t just ignorantly step out to defend the boundary.

‘They have to get rid of Istel kingdom’s army who are sweeping up the territory.’

Because of that, they were late in joining.

Compared to that, as Istel kingdom was on the invading side, they had some knights in their ranks.

Only that as the knights were quite an important force, there was a large possibility they would be staying at the rear of the camp.

‘I thought that they wouldn’t show themselves until a full scaled battle happened.

Roan let out a sigh.

‘If the mage squad appears like this.....’

This would become a trouble beyond troubles.

They had already achieved a great victory in the raid.

‘We have to hurriedly retreat.’

If they suffer a big blow here, then succeeding in the raid became meaningless.

Roan gripped the spear tightly.

He saw the knights massacring the cavalrymen.

‘Hmm.’

His eyes shone.

‘I thought that the knights appeared quite fast, but they are all greenhorns.’

Although they certainly show great might, their movements were big and unnatural.

‘They are just guys that are in their apprenticeships.’

They were guys that were deployed probably to accumulate real experience.

‘Then.....’

When they were still drunk in the heat of the battlefield.



They wouldn't have any mind of themselves as they were busy slaying the soldiers in front of them.

‘Hph.’

Roan took in a deep breath and pulled some mana.

A heat that spread out while flowing into his palm.

He threw his spear with strength.

Sweeeeeek!

A sharp sound.

The spear showed a chilly intent and split the air.

One of the knights who was massacring the soldiers snorted when he looked at the flying spear.

“Hmph!”

He was confident in being able to block a spear that was thrown by a normal soldier lightly.

The young knight didn't even dodge the spear and lightly swung his blade.

Then, the voice of a man that was leading the knights was heard.

“Don't block it and dodge!”

“Huh?”

Only then had the young knight realized that something was wrong and twisted his body, but it was already late.

Puk!

Roan's spear pierced the body.

“Grr.”

His neck snapped along with the last words.

The young knight died with having a spear pierced in his body.

‘Impossible!’

The knights who were looking at the scene, looked at the spear with a surprised look.

‘A knight couldn't block a spear thrown by a normal soldier?’

‘Is it possible to throw the spear from that distance, pierce the body, and stab it into the ground?’

Everyone's eyes shone with doubt.

Then, Mendel and the cavalrymen hurriedly ran towards the rear.

“Huh?! Catch them!”

“Kill!”

The knights got a hold of themselves late and tried to kick off the ground.

There was a soldier that rushed into the insides of the camp, different than the cavalrymen that were retreating.

He had empty hands that didn't have a spear or a sword.

The youth with the childish face was Roan.

He charged the ground and jumped to the air.

‘I have to buy a little time!’

He just needed to buy time for his comrades to retreat.

He was confident in being able to buy that much time while facing the greenhorn knights.

Mana flowed into both of his fists.

‘Reid's battle technique.’

It wasn't only at the level of imitating the movements while holding a spear.

What Roan tried to execute was the basic technique of Reid's battle technique.

The two fists split the air while moving in a strange fashion.

“Crazy bastard!”

The young knights swung their swords with all their strength.

They were stiffened by the sudden death of their comrade.

They had realized that death was quite a close to them.

They had smelled the smell of the battlefield, the smell of death.

Swush.

Roan dodged the sword by moving his upper body and then turned.

At that short moment, his two fists split the air.

Pububuk!

The body of the young knight was hit by Roan's fists.

The flashy armour became bent and squashed.

“Kuk!”

The knight staggered at the shock that shook his insides and fell.

Roan hurriedly took away the sword of the knight and stabbed it downwards.

Stab.

The long sword was stabbed into the neck of the young knight like that.

“Huh?!”

“This son of a bitch!”

The other knights realized the situation too late and attacked Roan.

Roan calmly breathed in, and then threw the blade along with the corpse of the knight.

“Damn!”

“Kuk!”

The knights that were charging in were surprised and dodged.

And Roan didn't miss that moment.

He hurriedly threw his body to the ground and grabbed the spear stuck in the ground.

Puuk!

He kicked the knight that had the spear pierced in his body and put strength in his hand.

Spat!

The spear rose to the sky.

Roan turned his body following the spear and pulled some mana.

The allied soldiers were retreating to the entrance of the camp.

There was no need to hide his use of mana right now.

Paat!

The spear that had mana split the air as if it was dancing.

Roan executed the strong techniques consecutively.

“Kugh! This bastard! You weren’t a normal soldier!”

“Be careful! The strength behind the spear isn’t normal!”

The knights realized Roan’s true strength too late.

In this instance, the one who was in a situation difficult was Roan.

Although he was practicing Flamdor mana technique and Reid’s battle technique, the actual training time wasn’t that long.

If 30 knights assaulted him at once, he wouldn’t be able to do a thing.

‘I have to fall back before it becomes even too late for me.’

Roan clearly realized when he had to step in and fall back.

That was the precious experience and intuition he obtained while roaming the battlefield for 20 years.

The spear that had mana behind it, split the air and stabbed towards the body of a knight.

“Where!”

But the knights, who got ahold of themselves late, didn't face Roan's spear sloppily.

The moment they swung their swords to knock away the spear, they twisted their body to the side.

It was a movement to completely dodge the strength behind the spear.

But the next movement Roan did, completely missed the knight's common sense by a lot.

Spat!

Roan threw away the spear he was holding.

Sweeee!

It was a sudden javelin throw.

The knights looked at the spear thrown in front of them and hurriedly dodged.

As they saw that their ally had just died because the body was pierced by the spear, they couldn't even think of blocking it.

'Okay! Now!'

Roan didn't miss that opportunity

He hurriedly charged and threw his body.

He was attacking them fiercely but started to fall back.

“Ca, catch him!”

“Don’t lose him! We have to at least catch him!”

An enemy that used mana was an existence you had to capture or kill.

The knights chased Roan’s back a step behind him.

“Block!”

The normal soldiers of Istel kingdom blocked Roan’s fleeing path.

This was the moment of life or death.

However, Roan’s eyes calmly sank.

‘Left, right, right again, after that I make him fall by putting my feet.....’

Because of Kalian’s tear, he could grasp all the information in an instant.

Spat!

Roan moved his body to the sides and ran while dodging the soldiers.

Swong.



When a sword or a spear was about to reach him, he grabbed the neck and arm of a soldier and pulled him.

“Huh?! Uh!”

“No, no!”

Perplexed yells came out of their mouths.

Slash. Stab.

A horrible sound.

The soldiers of Istel kingdom stabbed their weapons into their allies, and not Roan.

“Damn!”

“Don’t swing your weapons mindlessly!”

At their spears and swords, an ally died.

That truth made the soldiers completely stiff.

Because of that, Roan’s movements became even more natural.

Pabat!

He soon reached the entrance of the camp.

Then, a displeasing sound was heard from his back.

“Kuhk!”

“We, we are allie.....”

The yells of Istel kingdom’s soldiers.

As Roan glanced back, he saw one knight charging at him fiercely.

A huge body with a thick lined face.

He was the commander of the greenhorn knights.

He, who seemed to be in his thirties, was running in a straight line while pushing away the allies in his front.

“Bastard! Don’t dodge and receive my sword!”

He had a voice that was like thunder.

He was Vernon Pollet, who had an outstanding skill in the blade, even amongst the young knights.

Although his skills were outstanding, he was quite hot tempered he was called the crazy bear of Istel.

Roan fell the soldiers at his side and charged forward.

This wasn’t a situation to battle him leisurely.

Then, he saw a warhorse roaming in the insides of the camp.

‘Good!’

Roan changed directions and ran towards the warhorse.

“Hmph!”

Vernon snorted and followed Roan's back.

As the level of mana operation was in a higher level, the distance between the two of them was closing in bit by bit.

Hiiiiing.

The cry of the horse was heard close by.

It was at a distance that seemed to be right in front of his nose.

But rather than the distance between the horse, his distance with Vernon was much closer.

“Stop!”

Vernon yelled and raised his sword.

He was in a really risky situation.

Then, Roan's eyes shined.

‘That!’

His sight moved to the sides.

‘Okay!’

He was looking at something others couldn't see.

A smile appeared in his face.

A faint sound was heard.

Sweeeeee!

A sharp sound.

However, Roan kept running to the horse and didn't show much of a movement.

Meanwhile, the distance between them closed even more.

“Die!”

Vernon tried to hack down the sword he had raised up.  
Then.

Spat!

One arrow passed next to Roan's left ear as if it grazed him.  
At the same time.

Puk!

The arrow was stabbed into Vernon's left eye along with a horrible sound.

“Uaaaaaaaak!”

Vernon, who was about to slash Roan in any moment, collapsed with a cry.

It was a situation that would make you surprised, but Roan didn't even look back and just charged forward and then jumped.

Hiiiiing!

The rough cry of the horse that was spread out.

He pulled the reins and kicked the horse.

Dudududu.

The horse ran outside the camp.

“Uaaaaaaaa! My eye! My eye!”

Vernon's yell was heard from his back.

Pubububuk.

The arrows the soldiers of Istel fired off late fell behind his back.

Roan stuck his chest close to the horse.

The place he was heading to wasn't the camp of Rinse kingdom.

It was to a place outside the line.

One youth was guarding that place alone.

Roan didn't lower the speed of the horse and extended his left

arm.

“Grab it!”

At the loud yell, the youth also extended his hand.

Pat!

He grabbed Roan's arm and then lightly jumped and got on the horse.

Roan turned the head of the horse towards Rinse kingdom's camp.

He yelled towards the youth at his back.

“Harrison! I was able to keep my life because of you!”

The youth that was guarding the place was none other than Harrison.

Harrison let out a long sigh.

“Honestly speaking, I wasn't confident.”

At those words Roan shook his head.

“There wasn't even an inch of mistake. It barely grazed my ear and it stabbed the left eye of that bastard.”

That one arrow that saved Roan's life.

The person that fired that was none other than Harrison.

He had a really excellent ability.

Harrison looked at the camp that was already close and yelled.

“The raid was a success!”

At those words Roan brightly smiled and shook his head.

“No, no.”

And then yelled with all his strength.

“It's not a normal victory, but a great one!”

Different to his bright expression, his eyes sunk calmly.

Roan mumbled in a low voice.

“Although the war has just started.....”

# Chapter 69 : War And More War (7)

---

The surprise attack was a big success.

They almost didn't have any casualties and the enemy camp became a sea of fire.

On top of that, they slew the only capable commander, Looter.

This was a real big success.

“How about attacking once more?”

Aaron carefully asked while looking at the enemy camp that was on fire.

Roan shook his head.

“No. Although they wouldn't have any control because they are putting the fire off.....”

Roan looked at Aaron and the commanders and continued talking.

“Now, it would be good to retreat.”

At those words, everyone frowned.

“Retreat? You want us to retreat after attaining this victory?”

Roan nodded with a calm expression.



His eyes calmly sank down.

‘If I get to raise a force, the first thing I have would to do would be changing the commanders.’

The actual Rinse kingdom, no, the majority of the kingdoms that were located east of the Grain mountains operated by approximating numbers.

Especially in the cases of corps commanders, many were part of a baron’s family but the problem was that they attained their ranks without having any relation to their skills.

‘Even in this place, excluding corps commander Aaron Tate, and Phillip Hass, the others are all commanders in name.’

The others were the ones who spent their lives as corps commanders without having any merits to back them up because of the excuse of being the eldest son of a noble family.

‘In the selection of a commander, abilities and human nature should come first.’

Roan took in a deep breath.

It was time to convince the commanders who only knew how to fight boldly without any abilities.

“The enemy knights are already outside of their camp. On top of that, the mages would also have finished preparations. Compared to them, we don’t have knights nor mages. If we were attacked in

this state, we would suffer big losses. And if it turned out like that, the success of the surprise attack becomes meaningless.”

“Mmm.”

At the stipulation about the knights and mages, the commanders shut their mouths.

Phillip, who was the eldest, nodded.

“It was also Roan that guessed the surprise attack and proposed counter attacking them. I think that it’d be good to also listen to him this time.”

His attitude had changed a lot from when he first met Roan. He was different than the other commanders who were only greedy without having abilities to back them up. Because he had been in the battlefield for a long period of time, he didn’t have any unnecessary greed or stubbornness.

‘We can’t keep ignoring him when he has showed such amazing performance.’

Although his eyes were dark, he had recognized someone with the abilities.

“I think that would be good.”

Aaron added and came to a conclusion.

“Then, let’s retreat immediately.”

As the situation turned out like this, Roan quickly revealed his thoughts.

“I think it would be good to first make the infantry retreat while lighting up the torches and leaving the tents intact.”

At this statement, Aaron and Phillips immediately realized his reasoning.

“You want us to seem like we’re protecting this place.”

“Yes. That’s right.”

Roan brightly smiled and replied back.

Aaron called Mendel and sent out the order of retreat.

And then, the whole camp started to move busily.

“Roan.”

Aaron called out Roan separately.

Roan slightly bowed and approached.

“The merits you’ve achieved by slaying the enemy commander and succeeding in the surprise attack is really big. I will certainly reward you after the war ends.”

“Yes. Thank you.”

Roan saluted shortly afterwards.

A proud smile appeared on Aaron's face.

‘He's someone that I really don't want to let go of.’

He was someone he liked more and more the more time passed.

‘As he slew a corps commander of Istel kingdom.....’

If he did well, he may be able to give him a title of nobility; a title of at least a baron.

This would be his incorporation into the noble's world.

‘I'll have to show my strength at least once.’

But to do that, it was important to attain victory in this war.

After a while, Mendel approached and bowed.

“We have finished the preparations to retreat.”

Aaron faintly smiled and looked at the other commanders.

‘I can't leave them behind.’

Retreating to Nerf region, where the camp of their allies was

located, was the safest path.

“My 7th corps will stay behind.”

As soon as Aaron finished speaking, the other commanders had surprised expressions.

“Oh! Will you really?”

“You’ve made a really difficult decision.”

They became happy at the truth that they would be able to retreat to a safe zone first.

Aaron bitterly smiled as he looked at their expressions.

‘The person that is suited to be in that position is Roan.’

He was talking about the bastards that occupied the seats of a commander just because they were nobles.

He felt bitter.

“Then, I will leave it to you.”

Phillip approached and extended his hand.

Aaron grabbed that hand and said the same thing.

“Then, I’ll leave it to you.”

Phillip, who realized what that meant, smiled bitterly.

After a while, the commanders left the camp while leading the infantry with Phillip at the front.

As the retreat happened really quietly in the middle of the darkness, Istel kingdom didn't realize it at all.

Aaron looked at the back of the commanders getting farther away and let out a sigh.

“Whew. Nothing has to happen.”

At those words, Roan and Mendel bitterly smiled.

“Does something have to happen?”

Aaron nodded.

“Right. As commander Hass is there, would something really happen?”

He awkwardly smiled and looked at Roan.

As a result, Roan also faced him and smiled.

But they couldn't expect it at all.

That the maybe would catch the person.

\*\*\*\*\*

When the sun rose, the 7th corps also started to prepare their retreat.

Roan stood in the middle of the empty camp and extended both of his arms.

“I think that it would be good to start a fire and make smoke appeared as if we are eating.”

“Oh, that’s a good method.”

Aaron nodded with a satisfied expression.

Soon, they lit up three thousand fires to make it look as if they were boiling soup and heating up bread.

They gathered plenty of branches and leaves on purpose and made it smoke.

The tents that were also set up on purpose took place along the fence.

“We will place scarecrows at the front of the camp.”

“Right. They will be suspicious if there aren’t any guards.”

Aaron nodded.

The soldiers used spears and weeds to make a scarecrow.

And they also put armor over it.

Although it was a scarecrow without doubt when you looked at it closely, it was enough to trick the Istel’s soldiers that were far away.

Aaron looked at the insides of the camp and took in a deep breath.

“We will have to retreat.”

“Yes. From now on, speed is life.”

Now, the camp of Istel kingdom’s disorder was controlled a little.

If they were late, they would get their tails caught.

Roan looked at Istel kingdom’s camp fixedly.

Because of Kalian’s tear, he saw the camp as if it was right in front of him.

‘They’re already preparing to attack.’

The soldiers of Istel kingdom were maintaining their camp and moving around busily.

‘There’s no more time to waste.’

Roan set an eye sign to Aaron.

Aaron nodded and climbed his horse.

“We retreat as quietly as possible.”

The hoof of the horses, that were covered with pieces of cloth, stepped on the ground without making any noise.

The remaining cavalrymen left the camp in an instant.

Three thousand fires and hundreds of scarecrows protected their empty camp.



\*\*\*\*\*

“Let’s repay the disgrace we suffered last time!”

Corps commander Baron Wett Landel of Istel kingdom raised his sword high and yelled.

“Waaaaa!”

The soldiers of Istel brought up their morale even when they were tired.

They knew how important morale was in a battle.

“Charge!”

Wett yelled with all his strength and pulled the reins.

He was quite excited.

‘The commander has left his seat.’

He planned to grab this opportunity.

‘Although Looter failed, I will succeed.’

If he won this battle, he would raise huge merits.

If that was the case, he would receive half of the obtained territory as a reward for his merits.

Wett mobilized a large scaled army and crossed the plains.

He closely approached the Rinse kingdom's camp and yelled with strength.

“Bastards! Cowards of Rinse kingdom! Don't stay hidden like that and fight!”

What he wanted was a confrontation in the plains.

But even if Wett and the soldiers yelled, the camp was still quiet.

Wett frowned.

‘Something is wrong.....’

Normally, when a side asked for a battle in between the two camps, the opponent had to reply to them.

Because of that, Wett led 10,000 soldiers and left his camp.

This was to be a battle between 10,000 soldiers.

He was confident in achieving victory with just his capabilities.

But the camp of Rinse kingdom was as quiet as a dead rat.

An uneasy feeling was felt in their backs.

Then, the closest person to him and the staff officer of the corps, Arr, approached him.

“Doesn't it seem weird?”

“Right?”

Wett frowned and asked back.

Arr turned his head and pointed at Rinse kingdom's camp.

“Even the guards that were standing guard by the fences didn't show any movements.”

“Mmm.”

Wett frowned and raised his right hand.

“Archers, to the front!”

At those words, the archers came to the front and readied their bows.

“Fire!”

As soon as the order was sent, thousands of arrows split the sky.

Sweeeeeeeeeeee!

A sharp sound rang out.

Pubububuk!

A rain of arrows poured over the camp of Rinse kingdom.

Even the guards that were on the fences became porcupines.

However they didn't yell or fall; they kept protecting their places.

Then, Wett frowned and yelled.

“Damn! Even if it's wrong, it's completely wrong!”

He grabbed the reins and started to ride towards the camp.

“Co, corps commander!”

Arr was surprised and followed his back.

Soon, all the remaining soldiers started to charge towards the camp with hurried looks.

Bang!

The entrance that was seemingly closed, opened up.

Wett, who went into a deep part of the camp, clicked his tongue with a hopeless look.

“Ho! We were completely done in.”

The camp was completely empty.

The guards that were guarding the fences were scarecrows made from weeds and spears.

On top of that, thousands of braziers were taking place at the

back of the camp.

Arr, who arrived late, discovered a piece of cloth between the braziers.

‘What’s that?’

He grabbed the piece of cloth and then frowned.

“What’s that?”

As Wett asked, Arr brought him the piece of cloth without saying anything.

There were letters written in it.

<You have done well coming all the way here. Make some food with this.>

“Thi.....this! Fucking!”

This was a major insult.

They were thoroughly conned.

Wett tore up the piece of cloth and ground his teeth.

His sight moved to the west.

“I will certainly pay back this humiliation.”

\*\*\*\*\*

The 7th corps that quickly left the Bink region, soon arrived in Nerf region.

“I can see the camp of our allies.’

Aaron pointed a huge camp that was placed at the side of a mountain.

The placement of the camp showed that it didn’t have any thoughts to attack.

‘You gave up the whole eastern region starting from Nerf?’

Aaron clicked his tongue and shook his head.

And Roan also did the same.

‘The problem is that his ambition is great for someone that frightened.’

Because of that, there were many cases where Benjamin spoiled things at important moments.

‘I can’t just let him be like this.’

But he couldn’t do anything right now.

Roan was merely a vice troop commander of the army in the region.

‘I have to grab an opportunity. For Rinse kingdom, no, at least for me I want to chase him away.’

And fortunately, Roan was confident in being able to do so.

‘He’s someone who makes a lot of mistakes.’

He was waiting for the opportunity to completely chase him away.

While he was thinking about this and that, the front of the 7th corps entered the camp.

“It’s corps commander Aaron Tate of the 7th corps.”

At Aaron’s words, the guards saluted and then opened the entrance.

As he moved inside the camp, many scattered soldiers approached.

“You achieved victory while facing the Istel kingdom?”

“Based on the words that arrived yesterday, they say that the strategy was planned by the 7th corps.”

“Nowadays I hear a lot about the 7th corps.”

They mumbled while looking at the soldiers of the 7th corps.

It seemed like rumors were being spread by the soldiers of the

other corps.

“Uhm.”

“Ahem.”

The soldiers of the 7th corps raised their chins up and widened their shoulders at the proud feeling.

Then, a group of people showed themselves from a deep part of the camp.

The group consisted of Benjamin, the staff officers, and the corps commanders.

Aaron and Roan hurriedly got off the horse and bowed.

“Oh! Corps commander Tate!”

Benjamin brightly smiled and faced Aaron.

However, he was boiling inwardly.

‘Damn. If I had known that Istel kingdom was that weak, I would have set up the camp in Bink region.’

He missed the opportunity to accumulate merits.

Benjamin was angry at that and felt regret.

“I received the report from Phillip Hass. You’ve truly achieved an excellent merit.”



Aaron slightly moved his sight and looked at Phillip.

Phillip bitterly smiled and shook his head.

His expression was somewhat bad.

Benjamin continued speaking.

“But you made one mistake.”

He clicked his tongue as if it was regrettable.

“Why didn’t you push back Istel kingdom even further when you had already achieved victory?”

“That.....”

When Aaron was about to reply with a calm voice.

Benjamin shook his hand.

“Anyways, it’s regrettable. It was an opportunity to annihilate them. So I was saying.....”

In the first place, he didn’t even want to listen to Aaron’s story.

Benjamin continued saying with a chilly expression.

“From now on, I’ll lead the soldiers myself and intercept the bastards.”

Aaron didn’t say anything.

‘He’s looking down on them.’

His heart scattered because they blocked the Istel kingdom’s attack with just three or four corps, and also gave them a big blow.

‘I now know the reason why Phillip Hass’s expression wasn’t good.’

Probably some other commander would have been seduced Benjamin with sweet words.

‘Stupid bastards.’

Istel kingdom wasn’t that easy of an opponent.

Benjamin grabbed Aaron’s shoulders.

“You should be tired because you raised big merits in this battle and even retreated while protecting the camp until the end.”

His next words felt somewhat weird.

“That’s why I’m going to exclude you from the next battle out of consideration for you.”

“Yes? But.....”

Aaron frowned and raised his head.

He could see Benjamin's face right in front of him.

He had an expression that was smiling but was somewhat severe.

Pressure and overpowering intent was felt from his eyes.

“But what.....?”

Benjamin repeated Aaron's last words.

Aaron tightly bit his lower lip and bowed.

“The 7th corps is to rest and then annihilate Istel kingdom when they get nearby.”

In one sentence, he was leaving the main part for himself and giving him the leftovers.

Aaron couldn't reply easily and ground his teeth.

Benjamin looked at that and snorted.

‘You've already raised a big merit. I can't let you accumulate more merits that catch the eyes of others. On top of that Aaron, you bastard.....’

He wasn't even on his side.

If he kneeled down and pledged allegiance to him, he was thinking of using him, but now this wasn't the case.

He felt rotten when he saw that he was acting friendly with Reil.

“Then, I'll be asking you.”

Benjamin didn't even listen to Aaron's answer, and disappeared to the insides of the camp.

The staff officers and commanders followed his back.

Phillip, who stayed still until the end, approached and grabbed Aaron's shoulders.

“Corps commander Tate. It's useless. Although I tried to express my opinion, as the mouthing of the others was too strong.....”

Phillip let out a long sigh.

Aaron forcefully smiled and shook his head.

“You didn't do anything wrong.”

The two looked at each other and smiled bitterly.

Phillip just nodded instead of replying, and then walked away.

Aaron looked at him getting further away and let out a sigh once more time.

“Whew. How untrue.”

It wasn't that he was greedy in accumulating merits.

However, it felt like he was everything taken away from what he had done.

Then, Roan approached.

“Roan. It’s useless. Everything was taken away by them.”

Aaron couldn’t even look into Roan’s eyes properly.

However, Roan’s expression was quite composed.

No, there was rather a faint smile in it.

He whispered in Aaron’s ear.

“No. Rather, it turned out well.”

Aaron opened his two eyes widely.

Roan continued speaking.

“The opportunity for us to end this war has come.”

# Chapter 70 : Danger Inside The Danger (1)

---

Roan knew the reason as to why this damned war was happening.

The war between Istel kingdom and Rinse kingdom.

As soon as this war had finished in his past life, Rinse kingdom analyzed and organized the information about the reasons this war started and the process with a fine-toothed comb.

‘We were about to lose almost all of the eastern region, including the territory of Count Lancephil to Istel kingdom.’

In that process, some truths were revealed, and Roan remembered a few of them.

One of them was the reason why this war started.

‘The harvest had slowly started to decrease since last year.’

The Istel kingdom, whose land was mostly composed of plains, was one of the best agrarian countries.

They exported their harvests and imported the products they lacked, and they made a living like that.

The overwhelming amount of harvest productivity was the root and trunk of Istel kingdom.

But last year, the harvests suddenly started to decrease with no apparent reason.

‘Although they barely held on for a year.....’

This year's harvest was even worse than the last year's.

They didn't even have crops for commerce, and it was to the point it made you worried as to what the citizens had to eat.

And the reason was of course, unknown.

On top of that, Rinse kingdom and Byron kingdom, who neighbored their borders, didn't show any signs of their harvests having decreased.

As the situation turned out like this, the Istel kingdom had to make a decision.

However, it was even difficult to ask for help from the neighboring kingdoms.

'In the end, they opted for war.'

They aimed for the eastern region of Rinse kingdom.

It wasn't as large as the plains, but it was a mountainous region that had minerals and natural resources in it.

They judged that if they conquered the eastern region, they'd be able to put out the urgent fire of a situation they were facing.

When he thought up to there, Aaron's voice was heard.

"The opportunity to finish this war has come?"

"That's right."

Roan replied with a calm expression.

Aaron gulped and nodded.

“Good. Let’s hear the detailed plan in another place.”

He moved away.

And Roan followed behind his back with a composed expression.

Soon at Aaron’s order, the staff officers and the troop commanders of each region, started to gather in the tent.

“Roan. What did you mean when you said that the opportunity to finish this war has come?”

These were the words that Aaron said aloud.

At these words, the troop commanders opened their eyes widely.

“The opportunity to finish this war?”

“We can’t even confront them directly, so what opportunity has come?”

Strange expressions were plastered on their faces.

Roan looked at their faces once and then opened his mouth.

“First off, we have to know the reason as to why Istel kingdom is declaring war.”

He explained the reduction of the harvest in Istel kingdom for a while.

“Mmm. For that amazing farming kingdom to worry about what



to eat.....”

“Now that I see it, the prices in the markets were overpriced. I thought that it was only temporary.....”

The staff officers and troop commanders showed various reactions.

Aaron certainly touched his chin and shook his head.

“Mhm. For a sudden decrease in harvest, how did that.....”

Roan didn't show any reaction.

‘The reason is revealed after two years but.....’

There was no need to say that right now.

Roan looked at their faces and continued talking.

“Just like I've told you, the situation of their food isn't good. It's already to the point that they have barely prepared provisions for this war.”

At those words everyone nodded.

‘They would have gathered it up by even sweeping through the kitchens of the citizens.’

As they heard the situation, even that wasn't enough.

‘That’s why they attacked us like that without thinking twice.’

This explained the incomprehensible attacks of Istel kingdom.

That reason was revealed just now.

“Following that, Istel kingdom doesn’t have the ability to maintain war for a long time.”

Roan put more strength into his voice.

“And that’s because before the war even started, we moved the citizens to the rear and cleared up the fields.”

At those words, Gale hit his shoulders.

“Right! It’s obvious for the food, but as we also moved over the livestock, ironware, and tools to the rear.....”

Mendel continued the last part.

“The Istel bastards won’t be able to acquire even an ounce of food.”

“Even repairing tools or acquiring tools is impossible.”

Several troop commanders brightly smiled and nodded.

And a smile also appeared on Roan’s face.

‘In my past life, we weren’t prepared at all for the Istel kingdom’s attack. Because of that.....’

They almost had all of their eastern territory taken away in an instant.

The Istel kingdom acquired supplies from the occupied territories and the war was prolonged.

‘Before the elite troops of the central and southern regions came, we suffered consecutive defeats.’

But it was different in this life.

The Istel kingdom already had their attack stopped once, and above that, because of the performance of the region’s armies that were preparing just in case, their advance became slower.

But even so, it was true that Rinse kingdom was getting pushed back bit by bit.

‘Even so, the only things they can acquire from the occupied territories are weeds.’

Roan bit his lower lip.

Then the voice of Richard, who was leading the special troop, was heard.

“If the supplies of the enemy aren’t enough, do we have to make the front come to a deadlock and make it a long war?”

At those words Roan shook his head.

“If we were only facing Istel kingdom, that would’ve been the right thing to do. But we have another enemy.”

Aaron continued.

“Byron kingdom.”

Roan nodded.

“Yes. That’s right. Right now, Byron kingdom is following the eastern boundary to go to the south.”

Everyone’s faces stiffened.

“If it becomes a long war and Byron kingdom joins Istel kingdom, the problem becomes serious.”

“It would. Because the supply problem Istel kingdom has, the problem would be greatly diminished.”

On top of that, the combining forces of the two kingdoms.

It was a situation that they had to avoid.

“So what do you want us to do?”

“What’s the opportunity for us to end the war?”

The troop commanders who were short tempered urged Roan on.  
Roan looked at their eyes fixedly and answered.

“To end this war.....”

His eyes shone.

“We have to cut off the supply line of the enemy and set the supply storage on fire.”

At those words, the troop commander's showed various reactions.

“Oh! That's right!”

“If we cut them off from their supplies, even they won't be able to continue this war.”

The people became amazed and surprised.

“Setting the supply storage on fire and cutting off the supply line means that we have to get inside an army that amounts to more than 80,000. Will that be possible?”

“On top of that, won't Istel kingdom know that an amazing number of enemy troops are moving in their conquered territory?”

“How will we find the supply storage?”

Their doubtful questions spewed out one after the other.

Roan looked at the various reactions and faintly smiled.

He took out a small piece of paper from his chest.

“I’m utilizing the information agency to find the supply storage and the supply line of the enemy. Although it was fruitless until now, fortunately before we arrived to the headquarters of the eastern kingdom, I was able to receive a good report.”

Roan gave the paper to Aaron.

Aaron quickly read the contents of the paper.

“You found one of the supply lines of Istel kingdom!”

The troop commanders opened their eyes widely while having dull expressions, and burst out with cantankerous laughter.

“Yes?!”

“Is that true!?”

They moved next to Aaron and checked the contents of the paper.

Aaron’s words were true.

Although the piece of paper was quite small, the location of Istel kingdom’s supply line was written in it.

“Rather than attacking the army that has more than 80,000

soldiers, we attack the supply line and the storage.”

Roan continued saying with strength.

“This is the opportunity to finish this war.”

“Ah.....”

Low exclamations came out from everywhere.

‘To have found the location of the enemy’s supply line.....’

Roan faced Istel kingdom in the 7th corps without rest.

On top of that, he blocked the surprise attack and in addition, gave them a big blow through the counter attack.

Battles kept happening without control.

And Roan had located the supply line and the supply storage while ordering the information agency even when all these other things were happening.

The point everyone was amazed at was this last part.

“What are the probabilities of this information being true?”

At Aaron’s question, Roan replied with a confident expression.

“It’s very high.”

It could only be.

It was information that Chris's agency and the information agency had gathered, and there were also Roan's memories.

He vaguely remembered the location of the supply storage.

‘As it wasn't exact, I needed to double-check it.’

And the results were that he could find a small scaled supply line.

‘If they keep searching with this supply line as the center, they'd be able to find the supply storage facility.’

A storage appeared in his imagination.

‘Then, we'll be able to end this war with our own hands.’

But he had something to do before that.

“If you saw the report of the information agency, the supply line of Istel kingdom is in enemy territory. We have to charge through and ride straight to the rear of Istel kingdom.”

“Mmm.”

Everyone gulped down.

Roan continued saying.

“A force consisting of 10,000 can't move in a territory conquered



by an enemy.”

“You are saying to divide the army, right?”

At Aaron’s words, Roan nodded.

“That’s right. We have a need to divide the army in the smallest unit.”

His words quickened a bit.

“Aside from making a small scaled troop to attack the supply lines, we have to patrol on enemy territory while annihilating their tributes and gather information about their supply line and storage.”

At those words, everyone nodded.

Aaron stood up after he organized his thoughts.

“Good. We will reorganize the army like Roan said.”

It was a dangerous tactic.

However, if they succeeded they could end this war.

“Rose troop will take care of the first supply line the information agency found. The remaining troops will focus on patrolling enemy territory and grasping the location of the supply storage.”

Aaron looked at the faces of the troop commanders.

“Each troop is to hurry and prepare to depart!”

“Sir!”

The troop commanders saluted and then went out from the tent.  
Roan also followed Gale’s back and was about to get out.

“Roan.”

Aaron’s voice was heard.

Aaron grabbed Roan’s shoulders.

“You also did a big one this time.”

He had a sincerely thankful expression.

“When this war ends, I will grant you a big reward.”

At those words Roan slightly nodded.

‘When this war ends.....’

His head rolled busily.

Autumn was already ending.

When winter came and the next year also came, Roan had to walk a new path once again.

‘That’s why I returned to the eastern region.’

But of course, to do that, everything had to flow like he planned.  
Roan ground his teeth.

‘For now, I will bring us to victory in this war.’

That was the most important thing right now.

\*\*\*\*\*

“Kek!”

One soldier fell along with that sound.

Stab.

The spear that had pierced his body returned to place.

“Whew.”

The owner of the spear let out a short sigh and checked his surroundings.

Several hundred corpses were spread out in the gorge.

‘This battle is also a complete victory.’

Calm eyes.

Cool expression.

The owner of the childish face was Roan.

‘It’s already the 13th battle.’

Rose troop roamed the eastern territory and battled against Istel kingdom.

No, precisely speaking, they were attacking the big and small supply lines.

And that had already happened 13 times.

“Roan.”

A familiar voice was heard.

As he turned his head, he saw Aaron, Mendel, and Gale approaching him.

“This battle was also a complete victory.”

Happiness could be seen in Aaron’s face.

Gale added.

“Hahaha. Based on the rumors, it seems like Istel kingdom is seriously perplexed.”

“They can only be. The food that has to enter their throat is all next to us. Hahaha!”

Mendel roared out in laughter.

Roan’s tactic was right.

‘Reform the 10,000 soldiers into smaller troops and dig up the Istel kingdom’s territory. And at the same time, find the supply line and supply storage location.’

Istel kingdom was really confused at the performance of the 7th corps.

‘Because of that, each troop could acquire quite the amount of supplies.’

Although they couldn’t find the supply storage yet, they were steadily cutting off the supply lines.

With just that, Istel kingdom that was roaming the eastern territory, fell into a troublesome situation.

“Hahaha! Thinking about the bastards that would be starving makes me feel refreshed.”

Everyone laughed while in a happy mood.

But Roan was the only one that wasn't that cheery.

'It's certainly an amazing accomplishment. But we have to find the supply storage now.'

Only then will they be able to give them a proper blow.

However, none of the troops of the 7th corps could find it.

Aaron looked at Roan's expression and asked in a low voice.

"Why is your expression that stiff? Is it because of the eastern army?"

The army Benjamin was leading was currently suffering consecutive defeats.

Because of that, the front line was getting pushed back to the Rinse kingdom's side.

Roan shook his head.

"No."

"Then is it because of the storage supply?"

At the repeated question, Roan couldn't reply.

Aaron grabbed Roan's shoulders.

"Roan. There's no need to feel that urgent. With just this, it's still an amazing accomplishment. Their advancing speed is slowing down."

At those words, Mendel and Gale nodded.

However, Roan's expression still couldn't be cheerful.

‘If time flows anymore like this, then Istel kingdom will end up joining with Byron kingdom.’

He had to block them from joining forces at any cost.

Then, a familiar faced man showed himself.

‘Was he a soldier of the special troops?’

He was a young soldier that belonged to Richard's special troop.

The young soldier approached with a bright expression.

“Sir! Corps commander. It's a communication from troop commander Richard.”

He took out a note from his chest.

Aaron quickly read the contents.

“Ah.....”

A low exclamation came out.

At the same time, his mouth raised up.

“What does it say?”

Mendel carefully asked.

Aaron took in a breath for a moment and then said with a calm voice.

“They have finally found it.”

“Yes? What does.....”

Gale asked back with a confused face.

Aaron looked at Roan properly and brightly smiled.

“They found the supply storage of the enemy.”



## Chapter 71 : Danger Inside The Danger (2)

---

The soldiers of the 7th corps were hiding behind a low mountain slope.

Their numbers amounted to 4,000.

They had moved in small troops until now, but half of them had gathered to attack the supply storage.

“This is their supply storage, right?”

“Yes. That’s right.”

At Aaron’s question, Richard nodded with a confident face.

“While we were patrolling, we discovered five wagons moving in the middle of the night. We followed them because it was a bit weird, and we ended up in this place.”

The empty lot they were peering down at was surrounded by mountains.

The empty lot was quite wide and flat, taking into account that it was located in the middle of the mountains.

The lot, that had the shape of a gourd, only had one entrance.

Only, they couldn’t see the insides of the lot clearly because it was covered by trees.

Wooden fences were surrounding the entrance, and a coarse watchtower was placed on the grounds.

Right inside of it, there were huge tents and houses built.

There were a lot of heavy sacks placed below the tents.

When they vaguely guessed the number of wagons, adding the ones they couldn't see, it amounted to at least 1,000.

'There's some left over even after providing for two corps.'

A smile appeared on Aaron's mouth.

Then, Richard pointed the pile of sacks.

"Those are the provisions of Istel kingdom."

Mendel, who was next to them, mumbled with a surprised expression.

"Even so, I didn't know at all that there was a place like this."

At those words, Roan, Aaron and Richard who were next to him, nodded.

'It's a place I hadn't expected at all. It's the best place to save provisions without getting caught. But.....'

It certainly was one of the best places because of the many advantages it had.

But storage facility only had one entrance, and the wide road that followed below the mountain was suitable for an army to cross on it.

And there was one bigger problem.

‘It’s too far with the front line.’

Istel kingdom had advanced quite a ways into the west.

‘Although it’s to protect the provisions safely.....’

There was nothing good in making the supply line longer.

Roan glared at the entrance.

At that instant, the entrance was zoomed in on.

He was looking at the soldier that protected the entrance.

Traces that wagons had come and go were seen.

There were no weird things going on.

‘Am I worrying too much?’

Then, Aaron’s voice was heard.

“What’s the number of soldiers guarding the supply storage?”

Richard and Mendel looked at the entrance and replied.

“It’s difficult to say the exact number as we can only see the entrance and the fences. But from what we can see, it seems like they are 500.”

Aaron frowned.

“500.....”

500 only at the entrance.

When he also guessed from the size of the interior, there may be three or four times more soldiers.

“They are at least 1500-2000.”

At Aaron’s guess, everyone nodded.

2000 enemy soldiers.

On the other hand, Aaron’s force was 4,000.

“You’ve done well, Richard.”

At Aaron’s compliment, Richard brightly smiled and bowed.

“I was just lucky.”

His humbleness was not too excessive.

However, Richard’s merit was quite big.

Also, Istel kingdom had hid themselves because of the repeated blows they had suffered.

They seriously lowered the amount of soldiers protecting the storage even after knowing that the advancing speed of the main troop would lessen.

They used a method to quickly spread small provisions in the middle of the night.

Thanks to that, the 7th corps was taking quite a lot of time to find the supply storage the more time passed.

But Richard, of the special troops, had found the supply facility.

It was a merit that was complementable enough.

Aaron turned to look at the troop commanders and said in a low voice.

“We hit at the fastest speed possible and fall back.”

“Yes. Understood.”

It was impossible to seize that amount of provisions, as it was the enemy's territory.

Rather, it was more suitable to burn it all and retreat quickly.

Aaron faced everyone and then stood up and shook his right hand.

The flagman who was waiting, shook his flag.

At the same time, the archers fired off arrows.

Sweeeeee!

Thousands of arrows split the air alongside a sharp sound.

Pubububuk!

A rain of arrows poured over the tents and the entrance.

“Kek!”

“Kugh!”

The soldiers who were guarding, became porcupines and fell down.

The 7th corps fired two more rounds of arrows and then charged forward.

“Take over the supply storage!”

“Kill them!”

4,000 soldiers poured out from the forest.

They ran towards the confused soldiers.

“Uo!”

“Kok!”

The soldiers of Istel kingdom couldn't properly fight back and fell by becoming cold corpses on the ground.

Puuuuu!

The only thing they did was blow a horn trumpet to let their troops know of the infiltration of the enemy.

The battle flowed quite one sidedly however.

“Don’t let even one alive!”

“Don’t let them go!”

The soldiers of the 7th corps charged through the entrance and were able to get into a deep part of the storage with a violent intent.

However, they couldn’t see any more enemies.

Roan, who caught up late, frowned.

‘The number of soldiers protecting it is too low.’

The number they had expected was 2,000.

However, the only ones guarding it were the 500, the ones from the entrance.

The situation in Istel kingdom wasn’t good.

To the point that it was difficult to stay in war for long.

‘But they are maintaining the supply this sloppily?’

There was no way.

‘Something’s not right.....’

A feeling that uneasiness took over his heart.

“Roan, why is your expression like that? This battle is also a complete victory, a complete victory.”

Aaron approached while brightly smiling.  
Then, one sack moved into Roan's sight.

'That!'

This was the reason of the uneasiness.  
He hurriedly tore up the sak.

Riip.

What fell outside of the sack were weeds covered in oil.  
Roan looked at Aaron and yelled.

"It's a trap! We have to get out immedi....."

When he talked up to that moment.

Something moved inside his sight.

One arrow that split the blue sky.

Roan concentrated on the tip of the arrow.

Because of Kalian's tear, every movement in the world became slow.

Sweeeeee!

The arrow flew while cutting through the air really slowly.



There was a flame at the tip of the arrow.

Sweeeeeeeeeeee!

Below the first arrow, hundreds more could be seen.

Roan's face stiffened.

He yelled with all his strength.

“Dodge!”

His voice was heard slowly.

The soldiers had confused expressions and looked at the surroundings at Roan's yell, and then kicked the ground.

Roan also grabbed Aaron's neck and threw him.

At the same time, the slow world's movement turned to the original speed.

Pubububuk!

Arrows poured over the heads of the 7th corps.

The tents and the sacks got caught in the arrow rain and caught on fire.

Whooooosh!

An amazing heat flew out.

The fire surged up to the sky and gulped down the sacks.

“Uhh. What is this.....”

Aaron was thrown by Roan.

He couldn't finish his sentence and shut his mouth.

And it was the same for Roan.

He looked at the path of fire burning fiercely and ground his teeth.

‘For it to be a trap.’

It was the first time since he had returned to the past.

He had achieved consecutive victories because he knew the future until now.

Roan's eyes sunk calmly.

‘For me to fall in a trap.....’

This was really, a really unexpected thing.

\*\*\*\*\*

“Hahaha!”

A magnanimous laughter rang out.

The one who was looking at the scene while standing at the top was a big builded middle aged man with quite a pretty face.

“We finally caught those rats.”

He looked at the place where his sight reached.

That was none other than the 2nd supply storage which the 7th corps of Istel had broken through.

‘As the big and small supply lines got cut off, the front troops fell in chaos.’

It was a troublesome and angering situation for the one in charge of the provisions.

He tried making a separate troop to annihilate the ones attacking the supply lines, but it was fruitless.

‘The scale of the troop was really small, and on top of that, their movements were quite swift.’

But even so, they couldn’t just stand still.

In the end, the middle aged man decided to set up a trap.

And there was even a suitable place.

An empty ground they used as the saving point of supplies at the start of the war.

It was a place they didn’t use anymore because of the advancing speed of the main troop.

They filled the sacks with weeds and oil.

And then set up soldiers and purposely spilled the location of the fake storage.

‘And they took the bait.’

The middle aged man was waiting at the cliff surrounding the storage and fired off arrows the moment the 7th corps broke in.

The fake storage, that was filled with weed and oil, was caught up in an amazing fire.

On top of that, they threw strong trees to block the entrance.

‘Although it’s regrettable that it isn’t rocks.....’

It wasn’t easy to find rocks big and strong enough to block the entrance.

Instead, they blocked the entrance with trees and set it on fire.

“The entrance has been blocked!”

“Damn! Look for an escape route!”

“Put out the fire!”

The 7th corps yelled while looking at the spreading fire.

“Hahaha! How good to see!”

The middle aged man saw that and burst out of laughter.

Then, a thick voice was heard.

“Troop commander Martin. Won’t it be better to pour more arrows?”

He had a huge body and a thick lined face.

The left eye that was covered with a clean cloth.

He was Vernon Pollet, who had lost his left eye because of Harrison’s arrow while he was chasing Roan’s back.

The middle aged man, Teise Martin shook his head.

“Even if we don’t do that, we are lacking goods. And that’s the same for the arrows. They will die by getting caught in the fire, so there’s no need to waste any more arrows.”

“Mmm.”

Vernon smacked his lips and stepped down.

‘You have to end it when you can.’

Actually, he didn’t quite like Teise.

If Vernon was a normal military officer, Teise was closer to being a civil officer.

Because of that, he liked to use his head to win battles rather than using force.

He was the polar opposite to Vernon, who liked to charge to the front without looking back.

‘If only it wasn’t for the wound.....’

He wouldn’t have fallen back to the rear like this.

He remembered the greenhorn spearman that made his eye like this.

‘I have to catch that bastard and kill him.’

Ududuk.

The sound of teeth grinding was clearly heard.

Then, a familiar guy was heard among the soldiers of Rinse kingdom.

‘Mmm?’

Vernon frowned and inserted mana in his right eye.

The guy who was leading the soldiers with a really calm attitude.

“That guy?”

Vernon opened his eyes widely.

His face burned in an instant.

“Kuhahahaa!”

The laughter that explodes.

“Wh, why are you suddenly like this?”

Teise shrunk down with a surprised expression.

A sharp and chilly bloodthirst was felt in Vernon’s eye.

“The bastard that made me like this is over there.”

\*\*\*\*\*

Chaos.

The storage resembled a chaotic place.

Whooooooooosh!

The flame gulped down the tents and the sacks.

Below that, the soldiers of the 7th corps had become porcupines.

The red fire gulped down the corpses.

“Get away!”

“Fall back!”

“Don’t push!”

The soldiers stepped back while dodging the fire.

They were pushing their comrades in order to survive.

“U,uak!”

“F,F,fire!”

“Save me!”

The soldiers that couldn't dodge, got caught up in the fire.

“Uuk.”

The disgusting smell of skin getting burnt spread out.

The roasted skin slowly started to melt.

The burnt corpses increased bit by bit.

‘Damn. There’s no escape.’

Roan ground his teeth.

He searched his back and his sides but there was no escape.

‘And we can’t climb the hill.’

In the end, they had to get out through the entrance they came in.

The problem.

‘That place is blocked by trees.’



On top of that, there was an amazing fire.

“The, there’s no way……. For, for it to be a trap…….”

Richard, who brought this information, was half absent minded.  
And Aaron also didn’t have any solutions.

“Don’t run about in confusion!”

He calmed the soldiers and fell back to a place that still hadn’t caught fire.

“Uooo.”

“Kuhuk.”

Cries filled with pain.

It was the groan of the wounded that couldn’t dodge the fire.

“It’s too hot! Too hot!”

“I, I don’t want to die.”

The ones that received disgusting wounds had their hearts crumble.

“Damn! Move the wounded to the inner part!”

“Take care of them so the wound doesn’t worsen!”

The troop commanders stepped out and commanded the soldiers.  
But they were also in a rush.

‘Damn! To get caught in a trap!’

They had lowered their guard at the consecutive victories.  
Aaron looked at the huge fire and shook his head.

‘Is this hell.....’

It was even painful to breathe because of the hot heat.  
Aaron blamed his impatience.

The supply storage of Istel kingdom.

He had plentifully expected the enemy to be prepared.

And because of that, he led half of his force.

However, as it was enemy territory, it was more suitable to  
attack quickly and retreat.

‘I have to check it more carefully.....’

Strength was put in his hand.

Then, he saw Roan’s back.

He had a kind of pondering look.

‘He’s calm even in this situation.’

He thought that it was really Roan like.

Then, Roan started to move.

And surprisingly enough, the place he was moving to was the burning entrance.

‘I can’t keep hiding my strength in this situation.’

Roan took in a breath.

The lives of the soldiers and his life was in danger.

This wasn’t the moment to be hiding his strength.

‘Let’s do it.’

He became determined.

For him, and for his comrades.

Roan moved towards the entrance.

‘If I pull all of my mana, I might be able to crush the trees.’

You wouldn’t know if it were other people, but if it was Roan, he had plenty of possibilities.

For now, he used Brent’s ring to not feel any heat.

If it was for a short moment, it was possible to approach the fire.

‘On top of that, the mana i’m learning is Flamdor. It was the mana technique of the fire monarch Reid.’

He could say that fire was the source of his strength.

Grip.

Roan gripped his spear tightly.

“Roan!”

“Roan! Where are you going!”

Aaron , Gale, and etc. called out to Roan to stop him.

Roan just turned his head to look at them.

A smile was on his face.

“Don’t be too surprised.”

They were words you couldn’t understand.

Roan started to move again.

An amazing path of fire surged up in his surroundings.

‘Kuk. Even Brent’s ring has a limit.’

It was weak, but he could feel the heat.

‘If I waste more time, my skin will get burnt.’

Brent’s ring only made you not to feel any heat, it didn’t make the energy itself powerless.

If he slipped up, he could get a wound when he wasn’t paying attention.

Then.

Sweeee!

A sharp sound was heard in his ears.

Roan instinctively threw his body even before he saw it.

Puk!

An arrow was stuck in the place where he was standing.

Roan looked at the place where the arrow was fired with a calm expression.

Because of Kalian’s tear, he could see the face of the man on the cliff clearly.

‘He’s the bastard that chased me back then.’

Vernon, who was on the cliff, was pointing his bow towards Roan.

‘I’m sorry, but I have no time to play with you.’

Roan was calm even while looking at the arrow pointing at him.

“Harrison!”

A loud yell.

“Yes!”

Harrison, who was at the back of the soldiers, replied in a loud voice.

Roan made a sign with his left hand and pointed to the hill.

“Ah.....”

Harrison, who followed the cliff with his eyes, let out a low exclamation.

Although he couldn't see it as clearly as Roan, he recognized Vernon at one glance.

‘That bastard dares to!’

Harrison shut his mouth and grabbed his bow.

He moved between the fire and knocked an arrow.

Jiiiiiiiiiiiiing.

The bowstring became tense.

‘Hoo. Hoo. Hup.’

His breath stopped.

At the same time, he let go of the fingers that were pulling the string.

Ting!

A clear sound.

Sweeeeee!

A sharp sound rang out.

One arrow pierced the fire and surged to the skies.

Roan looked at that and moved with a composed expression.

He didn’t look at the arrow anymore.

Because he trusted in Harrison’s ability.

‘Damn!’

Vernon, who was about to fire an arrow at Roan, fortunately didn’t miss Harrison inside the fire. He hurriedly pulled Teise’s arm and got on the floor.

When Vernon lowered half of his body.

Pat!

One arrow grazed his armour.

If he was a bit slower, he would have had his head pierced.

‘Damn! He’s the bastard that fired the arrow last time!’

His face reddened.

They were the bastards that made him have only one eye.

Those bastards were inside the fire.

‘I have to kill them with my own hands.’

Vernon stepped back.

“Where are you going?”

Teise frowned.

Vernon replied shortly after turning back.

“Even in this situation, I will have to receive indemnization for my eye.”

He started to climb down the hill following the back road.



Meanwhile, Roan stood in front of the trees.

“Whew.”

He let out a long sigh and gripped his spear.

The spear shined by receiving bright light.

‘Hph.’

One thread of mana surged up from his mana hole.

In that instant.

Flaaaaaaaame!

The fire that was burning the trees moved towards Roan.

It was a situation that may eat him at any moment.

“Roan!”

“It’s dangerous!”

Aaron and the soldiers, who were looking, yelled.

However Roan was rather calm.

No, he was actually a bit surprised.

‘This.....’

His respiratory tract had heated up.

And it was also the same for his internal organs.

‘Ah.....’

Vitality surged up.

Every time he breathed, an amazing amount of fire essence was sucked into his body.

The mana that was just a thread, that was like a raging billow, stirred in his body.

An amazing amount of strength was sent to the tip of his hands and feet.

‘I can do it.’

It was a strength he hadn’t felt until now.

He gained confidence from this.

He looked at the pile of trees in front of him and lowered his stance.

The spear was gripped with both of his hands.

Mana spouted out through his two palms.

Spat.

The colour of Roan’s mana was usually close to a transparent white light.

But it was different now.

This time, it had a red color.

Although it was difficult to recognize as it was dim, a red color was certainly seen in the blade of the spear.

Roan stepped up with his left leg and twisted both of his wrists.

Pat!

The spear split the air and crossed over the fire.

‘Kuk!’

An amazing heat was felt.

However Roan didn’t stop.

He executed the Flamdor mana technique and put strength into his spear.

Finally, the spear landed on the tree.

Baaaaaaang!

An amazing explosion rang out everywhere.

At the same time, the flames that were surging up to the skies, covered Roan.

“No!!!”

“Roan!!!”

A sound close to a scream came out.

The screams of Aaron, Gale and the soldiers rang throughout the empty lot.

# Chapter 72 : Danger Inside The Danger (3)

---

‘I’m dead.’

When the pile of fire poured over his head.

He instinctively thought that.

‘Can I absorb the essence of fire with the Flamdor mana technique?’

Roan thought that in that short moment.

Whooosh.

The fire was now close to touching his skin.

At that moment.

Something that was spinning in his mana, flinched as if it was blocked and then returned to the mana hole.

‘What is.....’

He was planning to try to control the fire by executing the Flamdor mana technique.

However, his mana technique didn’t listen to him at all.

‘Am I really going to die?’

The hair on his head rose up.

Then.

An amazing chill gathered on a side of his chest.

‘Kuk!’

The chill stirred up his body like mana and then exploded near his mana hole.

The chill that was emanated from his whole body clashed against the fire.

Poong!

A sound rang out so loud, it made your ears numb.

At the same time, the fire that was about to gulp him down at any moment, bounced back to the opposite side.

Even the trees couldn’t endure the amazing shock and crumbled.

‘Kugh.’

In an instant, the chill disappeared as if he had washed it off.

Just like it was something that didn’t exist in the first place.

“Whew.”

Roan let out a long sigh and operated the Flamdor mana technique.

Fortunately, the mana moved as he wished.

‘What was that just now?’

Even if he searched in every nook and cranny of his body, he couldn’t find the chill from before.

He wanted to sit down immediately and search the cause of that chill, but he didn’t have the leisure to do so right now.

‘I have to get out of here for now.’

Roan took in a breath and looked at the entrance.

He looked at the trees that turned to ashes.

The half crumbled trees, couldn’t endure the flames.

Although there were still some flames around, he had still secured a path to escape.

He carefully checked the far away mountain road with Kalian’s tear.

‘We just have to reach the mountain slope.’

It was a distance the archers on the cliffs may not even reach.

No, precisely speaking, they couldn’t fire because of the dense forest.

‘There we go, we charge through.’

Because of the dense forest, it would be difficult to chase them.

Roan, who organized his thoughts, looked back to the soldiers of the 7th corps.

Round eyes, slightly opened mouth were the expressions all around.

Aaron, Mendel, Richard, Gale, and everyone else all had the same expressions.

They were looking at Roan with absent minded expressions.

“Ho,ho, how.....?”

Even so, Aaron who got a hold of himself the first, fumbled and mumbled.

Roan slightly shook his head and pointed the entrance.

“We have to get out of here. Now!”

These were the words he shouted out loudly for them to wake up.

“Ah! Ri... right!”

Only then did Aaron turn to look at the corps and yell.

“Retreat! Retreat! Everyone get out!”

The soldiers got a hold of themselves late.



“Re, Retreat! Retreat!”

They were still confused.

They yelled retreat and started to run while taking care of the wounded.

“Th, thank you!”

“Truly thank you!”

While getting out of the entrance, the soldiers bowed and showed gratitude.

Roan faintly smiled and then looked at the cliff.

He saw Teise’s restless expression.

He was also absent minded at Roan’s performance.

However he couldn’t keep being like that forever.

“Fi, fire arrows! Pour arrows over them!”

This wasn’t the time to worry about the lacking goods.

Archers appeared over the cliff.

Sweeeeeee!

It was a sharp sound.

Thousands of arrows split the wind.

“Rose troop!”

Roan yelled with all his strength and sent a sign.

The infantry receiving Roan’s command that was at the rear, gathered together and raised up the wooden shields.

Pubububuk!

Arrow rain poured over them.

Roan sent another sign.

“Take a shield formation!”

“Don’t split apart!”

At the orders of each troop commanders, they moved with each other and moved.

They guarded the soldiers of the 7th corps with the shields that were over their head.

‘They do strange training everyday.’

‘Their movement are well ordered.’

The infantry could become valiant soldiers in a short amount time because of Roan’s training.

However, it was impossible to protect all of the soldiers of the 7th corps.

Pubububuk!

“Uak!”

“Kok!”

The soldiers became porcupines.

‘Damn!’

Roan ground his teeth and moved.

He twisted his wrist while holding his spear.

Hoong. Hoong. Hoong.

The spear quickly turned along with a heavy sound.

At the same time, Roan operated the Flamdor mana technique.

In an instant, the fire started to get sucked in the spear.

Flaaaame!

The red flame followed the spin of the spear and continued.

Pubububuk!

Some of the thousands of arrows got blocked in the path of fire and burned up.

“Ah.....”

The soldiers that had already gotten out of the entrance, became absent minded one more time at Roan’s performance.

The fire that spun alongside the spinning spear, as if it was covering it.

This was just like looking at a god of fire, at a fire king.

“Fire even more! More! Shoot everything you have!”

Teise turned crazy and yelled.

Thanks to that, he was standing at the peak of the hill.

Harrison walked to the front as if he was waiting for it.

A hail of arrows shot out from the cliff.

But even so, he didn’t show any movements.

‘Eat this!’

The moment he was about to let go of the bowstring.

One arrow that was fired by the soldiers of Istel, grazed by Harrison’s arm.

“Kuk!”

A really small movement was made as a result.

Tung!

The bowstring was knocked at the same time.

The arrow split the air and flew out.

“Fire! Fire! Fire more.....”

Teise’s madness couldn’t continue.

Puk!

Harrison’s arrow was stuck in his arm.

“Uaaaak!”

Teise frowned at the sickening pain and threw a tantrum.

“Tro, troop commander!”

The surrounding soldiers approached with urgent expressions.

The top of the hill became frenetic.

Because of that, the rain of arrows halted for a moment.

“Harrison!”

At Roan’s yell, Harrison brightly smiled back and then stepped back.

All the soldiers got out of the fake storage with him as the last ones.

Boom. Boom.

The tents and fences collapsed.

And the trees inside the fake storage also couldn’t endure it anymore.

The fire gulped down everything.

The lot without people resembled a fuel hole.

“Roan! Everyone got out!”

Aaron’s voice was heard outside the entrance.

Roan swung his spear to shake off the fire and moved out of the empty ground.

He felt a strong heat at his back.

Meanwhile, the fire became even more fierce.

If he was even a bit late, the entire 7th corps would have been eaten by the fire.

‘But it’s still too early to relax.’

Although they had gotten out, the situation still wasn't good.

‘Soon, Istel kingdom will climb down the cliff.’

They would have a capable leader aside from Teise.

‘We have to move as fast as possible.’

There was a place in the mountain slope he had seen with Kalian's tear.

“Corps commander! We have to move quickly towards the slope!”

Aaron realized in an instant where Roan was talking about.

Although he had made a mistake this time, he was a soldier that had experience in battles.

“I will take care of the back.”

Aaron hesitated at those words for a moment and then nodded.

“Please.”

It was a short but hot word.

Aaron ran to the front while passing by the soldiers.

The soldiers received Aaron's command and quickly retreated.

"Rose troop's infantry will take care of the rear!"

Gale and Aaron had moved to the front together.

Actually, Roan was the one leading rose troop.

"Yes! Understood!"

The soldiers of rose troop replied in a loud voice and stood shoulder by shoulder.

The strong shields moved with each other without leaving a space.

Pububuk!

The arrows flowing from the hill were stuck over it.

"Take formations!"

Austin's voice was heard.

The soldiers of rose troop protected the others and started to fall back little by little.

Roan moved one step ahead of them and acted as a scout.

Then.



“You bastards!”

A voice rang out that was like thunder.

A man with a big body and thick face appeared.

A man that covered his left eye with a clean cloth was Vernon.

He was in an excited state.

“Block them!”

Even before Roan stepped to the front, Austin’s order was sent.

Over the shields, long spears surged up.

A look that reminded you of a porcupine.

“Hmph! Ridiculous things!”

Vernon pulled up mana and charged the ground.

The long sword split the air with a scary intent.

Bang!

The shields and the sword clashed and a sound exploded.

The shield was split in half.

“KuoK!”

“Kugh!”

The soldiers trembled as if they would collapse by the shock transmitted in their palms.

The strong formation crumbled.

“Maintain! Maintain!”

Austin yelled with strength.

Soldiers walked to the front to replace the crumbled place.

‘Look at them.’

Vernon frowned at that quick movement.

This kind of movement was only possible in the central army of Istel kingdom.

‘Even so, they are merely normal soldiers!’

He swung his sword once again.

At that moment, tens of spears split the air and stabbed in.

An attack without flaws from head to toe.

But even so, Vernon didn’t get perplexed.

He turned his sword and knocked away the spears.

Cheng! Chechecheng!

Sparks appeared along the sound of metal.

“Kuk!”

The soldiers lost balance again at the spear that were knocked back too easily.

Their palms felt numb.

Because of the spears that were knocked to the side, the strong shield formation crumbled.

And this time also, Vernon didn't miss the opportunity.

“Die!”

He swung his blade after getting inside the formation.

Terrible explosive sounds were heard continuously.

The soldiers tried to rise their spears by standing shoulder to shoulder, but it was useless.

Vernon resembled a savage beast.

“Die! Die! You son of a bitches! I'm from Istel's kin.....”

The yell got cut off.

It was because of the spear that came in attacking his head.

“Hph!”

It was completely different to the attacks of a normal soldier.

The speed behind the spear, the strength, and the angle; it was all different.

Everything was strong, quick and concise.

Vernon hurriedly shook his head and charged the ground.

However, the spear continued following him just like the head of a snake.

‘Damn!’

Vernon ground his teeth and swung his sword.

The spear got knocked aside along with the sound of metal clashing.

Because he swung his sword in an unstable stance, the joints in his shoulders and elbow became numb.

‘Just what bastard dares to!’

Vernon glared at the owner of the spear that bothered him.

At that instant, the remaining right eye became big.

“This bastard. I finally met you.”

His eye boiled with rage.

Vernon was glaring at the owner of the spear, Roan. .

Roan, who was patrolling at the front, returned at Vernon’s appearance.

‘Normal soldiers can’t face a knight utilizing mana.’

If he just let him be, his losses would become too severe.

Roan sent a sign towards Austin.

‘Retreat.’

Austin, who was making the shield formation again, understood the order and sent the same sign towards the soldiers.

The disarmed shields moved together once again.

Step. Step.

It was a well ordered retreat.

But Vernon didn’t think of following them back.

His objective was Roan anyways.

Vernon smiled fishily and showed his yellow teeth.

“I will chew up your flesh piece by peice you bas.....”

“Your tongue is long.”

Roan cut his words and attacked him.

Cheng! Checheng! Cheng!

Attack and defense followed and the sound of metal was heard.  
Sparks appeared.

“It seems like you picked up the mana technique somewhere, but the level is really poor!”

Vernon teased and pulled up mana.

‘Kugh.’

In that instant, the strength behind the sword changed.

Just like he had said, compared to Vernon’s mana, the level of Roan’s mana was still lacking.

It clearly showed that the time he had trained was short when he battled a knight 1vs1.

‘If I just had that great strength from back then.....’

No, if he just had fire in his surroundings, the situation could have been better.

Pabat! Pat! Cheng! Checheng!

Vernon’s sword split the air and pushed Roan into a corner.

Shallow wounds of the sword appeared as he got cut on his wrist or thighs.

‘Kugh.’

Roan executed his spearmanship and real battle techniques, but the level of mana proficiency was too different.

Every time he blocked an attack, he felt a pain that would rip his palms apart.

“Now, give me your eyes!”

Vernon pulled more mana and swung his blade.

Roan, stepped in closer and raised his spear up high.

Cheng!

His spear and the sword clashed.

‘Kugh.’

An amazing strength was felt in his palm.

Gkkkk.

The sword was digging into the spear.

‘I’m dying like this.’

Right before his body and his spear was about to get split in half.  
Brent's ring moved into his sight.

‘Ah!’

Roan had forgotten it as he only concentrated on the spear, using only Reid's battle techniques and the Flamdor mana technique, but there were many spells in Brent's ring.

‘I just have one opportunity.’

Roan inserted mana into his ring.

Light shone from his ring.

“Die!”

Vernon, fortunately didn't seem to realize it, and was still pressing down with his sword.

Roan looked at Vernon's eyes fixedly.

At the same time, his mouth lightly moved.

“Light.”

At that moment.

Paat!



A marble of light appeared in front of Vernon's right eye.  
It was a small but very bright marble of light.

“Kugh!”

Vernon unconsciously shut his right eye and shook his head.  
He lost his balance in an instant.

Roan twisted his body as if he was waiting for it, and after he knocked the sword away he swung his spear.

Pushuk!

The spear stabbed deeply into Vernon's side.

“Kuk!”

Vernon staggered while still having his eyes closed.  
Roan pulled out the spear and then twisted his wrist.  
The spear split the air and flew towards Vernon's neck.

“I will pay your eye later on.”

A cold voice came out.

At the same time, the sharp spear cut off Vernon's neck.  
At that moment, an amazing amount of blood flowed out.

Slash. Tuk.

The head rolled on the floor.

He still had his right eye closed.

The body that had lost its head staggered for a moment and then fell over.

“Whew.”

Roan let out a long sigh and roughly cleaned off the blood on his face and body.

‘My mana is all spent.’

Even so, it was the mana that was almost dry.

The moment he executed a skill with Brent’s ring, it ended up finishing up.

‘The efficiency is too bad.’

It wasn’t an item he could use as he wished until after the level of his mana rose to some degree.

Roan shook his head and checked his surroundings.

The front of the 7th corps entered midway into the slope.

“Retreat! We are passing through the forest on the right!”

Aaron certainly had good eyes in grasping the situation of the battle.

He also thought of retreating into the forest instead of the mountains, just like Roan.

The soldiers of the 7th corps moved into the forest one by one.

And the infantry that was in charge of the rear also arrived at the destination.

Roan hurriedly chased their back.

‘It’s time for the enemy to climb down.’

His steps became quicker.

Then.

Puuuuuuu!

The sound of the horn trumpet was spread through the forest.

At the same time, dust clouds arose below the cliff.

He couldn’t see Teise, but the commanders that were at least adjutants were leading the soldiers.

Roan yelled towards Austin.

“Retreat! Get inside the forest!”

Austin realized that returning back was strange, and he quickly made the soldiers of rose troop enter the forest.

‘If their force is only that small, we can easily block them in the forest.’

It obviously wouldn’t be easy.

‘The losses will be enormous.’

Roan took in a deep breath.

he roamed the battlefield for 20 long years.

He knew how gruesome and miserable it was taking care of the rearguard.

‘It seems like today will be really long.’

The day of bloody color had just started.

## Chapter 73 : Danger Inside The Danger (4)

---

The ones chasing and the ones chased.

The chase of Istel kingdom continued persistently.

As the retreating route was inside Istel kingdom's territory, the pursuers increased as more time passed.

The 7th corps broke through Istel kingdom line that came running from the sides and the front and moved towards the west.

“Pant. Pant. Pant.”

The soldiers were clearly exhausted.

Their armor was covered in blood.

The soldiers that amounted to 4,000 were now 2,000.

Already, half of the soldiers have left the world.

“A little bit more.”

Aaron encouraged the soldiers.

He also was in a situation where he could also collapse at any moment, but he ground his teeth and endured.

He moved faster than anyone and at everyone's front.

Step. Step.

When the back of his foot swept the ground, white dust rose up.

When he moved three or four more steps.

Puuuuuuu.

The sound of a horn trumpet was heard.

It was the sound they had heard the past few days that made them feel the creeps.

The faces of Aaron and the soldiers turned pale.

“Is it the end.....”

In the end, a half giving up sound was also heard from Aaron's mouth.

Roan, who was leading the infantry of rose troop at the back, stood to the front.

“We will stop them.”

He spoke in a daring and composed voice.

Roan also had an exhausted look but his situation was better than the other commanders.

And that was also the same for the infantry of rose troop.

They, who had trained with the latest training methods of 20 years from now on, had more stamina than the other soldiers.

On top of that, because of the repeated troop strategy training, the waste of their energy was low.

Roan stood at the front and gripped his spear.

‘There’s not much until we leave the territory.’

If they won this skirmish, they’d be able to get into friendly territory.

‘Let’s endure it one more time.’

Roan bit his lower lip.

His sight moved over the hill.

Puuuu.

The sound of horn trumpet rang in his ear.

Dudududu.

Followed by that, horse clops were heard.

Flock!

At the same time, a sharp flag appeared over the hill.

“Ah.....”

At that moment, a low exclamation came out of Roan’s mouth.

The magnificent troop flag waved in the wind, which the cavalrymen at the front were holding.

That flag was familiar for his eyes.

Roan turned to look at Aaron and yelled.

“They aren’t of the Istel kingdom. They’re friendlies!”



In that instant, the faces of Aaron and the soldiers turned to become that of relief and surprise.

Roan's voice was heard.

“It's Count Lancephil!”

\*\*\*\*\*

It was fate that he met Lancephil's army.

The army was patrolling the eastern region and annihilating Istel kingdom's army.

Meanwhile, they had met with the 7th corps.

“Baron Tate. You've done well.”

“No, Count Lancephil. We could keep our lives because of you.”

Aaron bowed.

Io looked at that and smiled.

‘I thought that the movements of the enemy had become more hesitant, but it was that the 7th corps were attacking the supply lines.’

They were rendering such great merits they couldn't even think of.

Io was astounded.

His sight naturally moved over to the one next to him.

'Roan.'

Roan was standing next to Aaron.

A vice troop commander was next to him instead of the other troop commanders.

And that was because of Aaron's consideration and Io's petition.

Following Aaron's report, most of the merits they have rendered was because of Roan.

'Even at this retreat, they were in charge of the rear and rendered a distinguished merit.'

It was a merit that became more surprising the more you heard of it.

Only that not him, nor anyone of Lancephil's territory knew that he was learning mana.

And that was because of Aaron's consideration.

He thought that it may somehow affect Roan and sent the order of never revealing it outside before Roan revealed it himself.

And the soldiers of the 7th corps, who could keep their lives because of Roan, kept that promise thoroughly.

"For now, rest for a couple days."

"Thank you."

At Io's words, Aaron bowed once again.

And Roan also did the same.

Below their heads, a sigh of relief flowed out.

Although they had lost half of their forces, thinking about it differently, they had rescued half of their forces.

'Although we suffered a big blow because we fell into their trap.....'

They couldn't stop like this.

'In war, it's normal for there to be mistakes and defeat.'

One couldn't always win a perfect victory.

'It's enough if you learn from the mistakes and defeats.'

Looking at it from another point of view, there was also a part where he unconsciously became careless just because he returned to the past.

'In the past, in the present, and in the future, war is still war.'

It was normal that lives were lost.

He always had to think and act prudently.

It was the first time Roan experienced a bad thing since he returned to the past.

'In the first place, I'm not a strategist.'

In his past life he was merely a spearmen squad commander.'

Roan clenched his fists.

'Istel bastards. Although you would be laughing right now.....'

Fire appeared in his eyes.

‘I will make you shed tears of blood next time.’

He returned as much as he received.

No, he would certainly return it with interest.

That was the rule of a war.

After Io left his tent, he went to the camp of the 7th corps that was located at the rear.

After he crossed over two entrances and was about to enter the camp.

Aaron, who was walking in front of him, abruptly stopped.

“Mmm.”

A low exclamation flowed out of him.

Roan stayed close and looked in front.

‘Ah.....’

He barely gulped down the exclamation that was about to come out.

He looked at the ground in front of him.

Troop commander Richard of the special troops and his soldiers were over there.

They had tied their bodies with a tight rope and were kneeling.

It was the look of sinners.

They discovered Aaron and then bowed towards the ground.

Aaron moved and stood in front of Richard.

Soldiers of other troops gathered over to the surroundings.

“Richard. What are you doing?”

At Aaron’s words, Richard replied while not being able to raise his head.

“Because of me, more than 2,000 soldiers had died.”

He replied in a serious voice.

His shoulders trembled.

“Cut off my head. Only, save my underlings as they solely acted at my orders.”

“Richard.....”

Aaron bit his lower lip.

If there was a merit reward, there would also be a punishment for when you made a mistake.

Especially in this case, you had to punish Richard who had the most responsibility in a public showing.

“Whew.”

A long sigh flowed from Aaron’s mouth.

Then Roan, who was looking at the situation from the back, kneeled down between Aaron and Richard.

“The one that proposed to attack the enemy’s supply line and storage in their territory was me. The cause of all this was me. Rather, punish me and save troop commander Richard’s life.”

They had lost more than 2,000 lives.

In this situation, they couldn't kill the best troop in the 7th corps.

On top of that, although Richard had made a mistake in this battle, the merits he had accumulated couldn't be seen lightly.

If you slew a commander for only one mistake, who would stand at the front and face the enemies?

Roan bowed towards the ground.

Then, a loud voice was heard.

"If that's the case, it's also difficult for me not to receive the punishment."

The owner of the voice was Gale.

He passed over the soldiers and kneeled down next to Roan.

"It's also a big sin not having taken care of troop commander well."

Kennis and the adjutants of rose troop, followed his back.

"We will also receive the punishment."



The soldiers of rose troop that were looking, kneeled down next to the special troop's soldiers.

“We will also receive it.”

“We didn't fare that much better.”

These were the 2,000 soldiers that had survived.

They struggled desperately and became more persistent and firm.

Soon, all the adjutants and soldiers kneeled down.

The only person standing in the camp was Aaron.

He looked at the soldiers of the 7th corps and slowly kneeled down.

“I also became careless and made a mistake, so I must also receive a punishment.”

Aaron bowed.

At that look, Richard and the troop commanders yelled in one voice.

“Corps commander!”

A strong heat flowed out from them.

Aaron raised his head once again and looked at everyone.

“We all made a big mistake. And because of that, many of our allies have died.”

There was a strong resonance in his voice.

“We will fight by carrying the names of the friends that left first.”

He stood up and unsheathed his sword.

A sharp sound hit their ears.

Slash!

Aaron sliced the tight rope that was tying Richard.

“This isn’t the place for us to die.”

He raised up the soldiers and yelled.

“We are dying on the battlefield! Raise some merits and be exempt from the punishment!”

His voice became louder.

“Let’s tribute the heads of the enemies to the ones that left ahead of us!”

Roan and the other soldiers stood up.

Chuk!

They saluted.

“Sir!”

They lost half of their force.

But they wouldn’t forget.

They would carry the names of their comrades and fight.

It’s not like they would be fighting alone.

The 7th corps was reborn.

No, it evolved.

\*\*\*\*\*

Rarely enough, there was a shaman in the camp of Count Lancephil.

The injured ones of the 7th corps could receive treatment from the shaman because of Io's consideration.

The other troops of the 7th corps heard the news that they fell into the ambush of the fake storage and started to regroup one by one.

Because of that, the number increased to 6,000 again, and the morale became so high it was about to sunder the sky.

Aaron controlled the troops that were annihilated or suffered losses and reorganized them.

As this was the middle of a war, they put the formal promotions for later on, but Roan was named as troop commander.

They made a 2nd rose troop by gathering the infantry that originally received strategy training and some cavalrymen of other troops.

As Gale recently became Aaron's staff officer, his role was transferred to Roan.

“When the war ends, I will formally give you a troop.”

After that, some more good news was heard.

And one of them was that the capital of Miller dispatched the elite troops that amounted more than 50,000 to face the Byron kingdom.

On top of that, as they had joined hands with the Dies kingdom, the 40,000 soldiers that were in the south were moving towards the east to help them.

Because Roan knew the future, the army of the central and southern region could depart before they got their eastern region taken.

The situation was becoming better as time passed.

Aaron and the commanders of the 7th corps didn't pass the day negligently.

They gathered in the tent of the corps commander everyday and reviewed the battle of the fake storage.

Richard, the troop commanders that got attacked, and the ones that weren't with them were carefully reviewing to see what went wrong that time.

“Now that I see it, the movement of the wagons were certainly strange.”

“On top of that, even if we were in a hurry, we had to first grasp the number of the soldiers in the storage.”

“Rather than going inside, it would have been better to fire arrows and set it on fire.”

Several opinions came and went.

Now the troop commander, no, Roan was being treated as the most senior among troop commanders because of the merits he had accumulated until now, organized the contents and was filling in the lacking points.

‘I can’t make the same mistake.’

Roan’s strongest point and virtue was his endless effort.

He recognized the points he lacked in and knew how to fill them.

Then, the doors opened up and one soldier showed up.

“Corps commander. Count Lancephil is looking for you. He says that troop commander also has to assist.”

“Understood.”

Aaron wasn’t perplexed at the sudden meeting.

‘Even so, I wanted to go and find him once.....’

He had rested plentifully.

And had reviewed his mistakes enough.

Now was the time to move.

Aaron and Roan went to Io’s tent.

Excluding Io, you could see Kali Owells, the leader of the mages Tairon Bess, Perry Wison who was the leader of the territory’s army, and other important people.

Their expressions were kind of flushed.

“Corps commander Tate. Come sit over here.”

Io brightly smiled and sat in the empty seat.

He also had a flustered face.

Aaron slightly tilted his head.

On the other side, Roan’s interest was in a weird place.

He looked at the youth standing alone at the other side of the table.

The youth that seemed to have three or four years over than him seemed quite familiar.

‘Who was he?’

He had a tickling feeling that he was on the tip of his tongue.

Then, Io’s voice was heard.

“The name of that youth is Oren. He’s someone sent from the Phillip’s family.”

At that moment, Roan opened his eyes roundly.

‘Oren Part.....’

His tickling feeling was refreshed. .

The moment he heard the name, he could remember.

‘The vice director of the agency.’



One of the existences that helped Chris lead the agency was Oren.

If Chris was Ian's right hand, then Oren was Chris's right hand.

Oren bowed deeply and said in a composed voice.

“Hello. I'm called Oren and i'm serving Sir Ian Phillips. I'm the one responsible for the information agency Sir Phillip's has established in his plans.”

“If it's Ian Phillips, he's an existence shaking the kingdom nowadays.”

Io nodded with a gratified expression.

Oren continued speaking.

“I received Sir Phillip's order and focused on grasping the movements of Istel kingdom in the eastern region through the agents. And we finally succeeded in obtaining the information you wanted.”

Io continued saying.

He looked at Aaron and Roan and said.

“They have found the location of the supply storage of Istel kingdom.”

“Ah.....”

Aaron let out a low exclamation.

And that was the same for Roan.

But the meaning of the impression was different.

Different from Aaron, who was surprised at the fact that they had found the supply storage, Roan was more impressed at the truth that Ian Phillips made an information agency and operated it more quickly than what he had thought.

‘On top of that, to have already have found Oren.....’

In his past life Chris discovered Oren while he was gathering information and chose him as his right hand man.

It was a famous thing that in that process, Chris found Oren more than 10 times enough to have convinced him.

That was the start of the agency.

‘How did Ian meet Oren and find him? Would he have convinced him more than ten times like Chris?’

He had many questions.

No, he was amazed one more time at Ian's abilities ahead of his questions.

'To use the information agency running in the capital of Miller and find more information in the territory and faster than us.....'

A genius was a genius.

But of course, he would have to check if that information was true or not.

Then, Io's voice was heard.

"Originally, it seems like he went to the eastern army first, but it seems like commander Doyle wasn't that interested."

He just said that he wasn't interested, but it actually meant that he was ignorant.

If it wasn't for the name of Count Phillips, he wouldn't even have been able to meet him.

As Io gave the signal, Oren took out two pieces of paper from his chest and gave it to Aaron and Roan.

Quite a well drawn could be seen with a some information.

“In the case of the 7th corps, as they went through the fake storage, I wondered if you would act together with us.”

“Hhm.”

At those words, the head of the knights, Kali Owells, showed a blatantly displeased look.

And Io also knew that, but he just feigned ignorance.

He couldn't refute his retainer in a place like this.

“Will we be able to do so?”

Aaron asked.

Io faintly smiled and shook his head.

“In the first place, it was the 7th corps that had attacked the supply lines and was cutting it off. If we see it in another way, it's just like snatching away the merits of the 7th corps.”

At those words, Aaron looked at Roan.

Roan was still checking the contents on the paper.

‘It's information that's organized really well.’

He thought that it certainly was Ian.

‘However, this could also be another trap of the enemy.’

He felt Aaron’s gaze late and slightly shook his head.

Aaron realized Roan’s meaning in an instant.

They had clearly grasped their mistakes while reviewing the attack that they had suffered last time in the fake storage.

Whether this information was true or not, they couldn’t just bite it.

“For now, we will have to investigate thoroughly if this information is true or not.”

“Right. As there’s also what happened last time.....”

Io nodded.

He looked at Aaron’s eyes fixedly and said.

“Will the 7th corps take care of that?”

At those words Aaron wasn’t modest anymore.

“If you give us the opportunity, we would like to.”

The decision was set.

He grabbed the opportunity to take revenge on the Istel bastards.

He wanted the 7th corps to start that.

Io brightly smiled and nodded.

“Good. I’ll believe in you and entrust it to you.”

“Thank you.”

Aaron replied shortly afterwards and stood up.

Although he felt Kali’s hot gaze, he forcefully ignored it.

“Then. We will leave.”

Aaron and Roan bowed towards Io and then got out of the tent.

The moment they did, that stuffy feeling cleared up in a moment.

The steps returning to their camp was light.

“For now, we’ll have to gather the troop commanders.”

At Aaron’s words, Roan nodded.

“I will send the gathering order.”

“I’ll be troubling you.”

Aaron hit Roan’s back once and then returned to his own tent.

Roan moved inside the camp to gather the troop commanders.

Then, a familiar faced man approached quickly.

‘Pens?’

He was the one responsible for the information troop Roan created and was a staff member of Chris’s agency.

He ran with a really excited expression.

“You seem really bright.”

At Roan’s words, Pens nodded and took out a piece of paper in his chest.

“We finally found the location of the storage supply.”

“Ah.....”

Roan let out a low exclamation.

He received the paper Pens was giving him.

‘Chris’s agency doesn’t fall back at all.’

He had a proud and satisfied feeling.

A smile appeared on his mouth.

But the moment he checked the contents of the paper, his smile completely disappeared.

He had a stiff face.

Perplexed eyes.

Roan took in a deep breath and ground his teeth.

‘The location is different.’



# Chapter 74 : Danger Inside The Danger (5)

---

Aaron and Roan went to Io's tent along with Pens.

“Mmm.”

Io looked at Pens's report and fell into his thoughts.

Pens and Oren.

Even if the locations were different, it was just too different.

On top of that, they were sure that it was the top option and not the 2nd or 3rd in reserve.

There was a high possibility for one of these to be the enemy's trap.

No, perhaps both of them could be it.

Then, Oren mumbled with a blunt voice.

“Our organization is made up through the support of the Phillip's family and has steadily expanded its force. There are more than 300 active members. It's a tolerably small squad.”

His eyes moved to Pens.

“We started gathering and analyzing information in the eastern region the moment war started. There are high possibilities for the storage we found, to be the real one.”

Pens didn't show any reaction.

‘We gathered and analyzed information even before war started.’

He wanted to say that but he couldn't.

It was better to hide Chris's agency the more they could and not expose it, while thinking of the future.

But Aaron wasn't planning to just endure it and let it pass.

“It seems like this young friend is ignoring our information squad.”

He continued saying with quite a displeased voice and expression.

“Just looking at the staff number, our side certainly has less. However, he had already found several supply lines of Istel kingdom. On top of that, we grasped their surprise attack beforehand and annihilated them by counterattacking. It's a squad that already has its history.”

At those words, Oren shut his mouth.

Even if he was receiving the support of the Phillip's family, he was still a commoner.

He couldn't say anything back at Aaron yet.

Only, there was a displeasing look in his eyes and pride about his organization mixed in it.

Then, Roan's voice was heard.

"Anyways, we are in a situation that we have to check the two places."

At those words everyone nodded.

Roan looked at Oren and continued saying.

"We decided to check if the information you brought us was true or not, so how about you go check if our information is real or not?"

"We?"

Oren had a confused expression at the unexpected proposal.

Io, who was listening, hit his knees.

“That would be good.”

If the concerned parties checked it themselves, they would be convinced more easily.

Aaron and Oren, who pondered for a moment, nodded at the same time.

“Certainly, if we check it with our own eyes, there wouldn’t be useless trouble.”

There wouldn’t be saying such as stealing away the merits, or upturning the truth.

They had to block fighting between themselves in front of a big battle.

“Then. Go and check the truth with your own eyes.”

These were Io’s order.

Aaron, Roan, Oren and Pens bowed at the same time.

“Yes. We understand.”

It was a short reply, but with strength.

The four people were composed and confident, just like one person.

Roan left Io's tent and grabbed Pens' shoulders.

“Mister Pens.”

Pens slightly turned his head and looked at Roan.

Roan looked at Pens' eyes fixedly and continued saying.

“I believe in the information you, Chris's agency, and the information squad has brought me.”

“Ah.....”

Pens let out a low exclamation.

Roan looked at him and smiled faintly.

“Let's show everyone which information agency is the real one and the best.”

He was confident.

But it wasn't because he remembered things related to the storage.

When he first came running to him bringing the paper with the location written in it.

The expression from back then.

‘An expression filled with confidence.’

Pens was overly careful and meticulous.

Because of that, his words and actions were heavy, and the expression of his face was consistent.

But that him was smiling brightly.

‘If I don’t believe in my people, who will?’

Roan trusted Pens.

The Pens that smiled more brightly than anyone.

\*\*\*\*\*

The next day, the small scaled squad left Lancephil’s territory.

As they had the role of just checking the location of the storage, the number of the soldiers was quite low.

As they picked the nimblest soldiers and the ones with the best stamina among the 12 squads, that number amounted only to 40.

And the one leading them was none other than Roan.

He was sent off by Aaron and moved towards Istel kingdom.

Roan divided the 40 people again in groups of 5 and only moved when the sun had set or at dawn.

The reason he split the already small squad.

It wasn't only to dodge the eyes of the enemy.

'If the location of the storage is true, we have to secure a road to approach them secretly while evading their eyes.

Roan wasn't thinking of only checking the location and returning.

He was thinking beyond that.

Because of that, the movement speed was really slow.

However, Roan didn't rush and that was the same for the soldiers.

They obeyed Roan's orders.

And after nine days passed like that, they could arrive at the storage located in a deep place in the enemy territory.

It was a storage located between mountains.

'They are located in a normal location.'

It wasn't that far from the front lines and was a comfortable location to come and go.

On top of that, the main road was well extended from east to west.

It was the optimal place to store their supplies.

On top of that, different from the last time, there were quite a lot of guards in it.

It had an amazing number of tents, sacks, and soldiers.

'Is this the real location?'

Roan sent the soldiers to the sides of the hill for now and ordered them to check the storage thoroughly.



At the same time, he climbed to the peak of the mountain.

‘Fortunately, there’s nothing covering my sight.’

As he climbed to the peak of the mountain, he could see the entire storage in his eyes.

If you were a normal person, you’d only be able to see its shape.

But Roan was different.

He had Kalian’s tear with him.

‘It’s quite a solid camp.’

Roan concentrated his sight on several places of the storage.

And every time he did so, the place he looked at seemed as big as if it was in front of him.

Quite some time passed by.

But he didn’t discover anything wrong.

‘The abilities of the organization are quite gre.....’

When he thought up to that point, one scene caught his eye.

A middle aged soldier, who was circling the surroundings as if he was patrolling, approached a young soldier.

At first glance, it was a really natural scene.

However, the problem was the thing the young soldier was holding.

‘Report?’

It was a pile of documents made with mixed old paper and rough leather.

It obviously was a report.

Although he couldn’t see the exact contents, what was filling the side were letters.

‘A normal soldier can read?’

When Roan revealed that he knew how to read and write, Aaron, Gale, Mendel, etc. were really surprised.

That’s how much strange it was for a normal soldier, and a

normal soldier at that, that had to battle while putting their life on the line, to know how to read.

The middle aged man swept through the papers for a moment and then, made a handsign towards the soldiers.

The guys that were circling the surroundings started to gather one by one.

And then, they started to read the report in turns.

‘All the soldiers know how to read?’

At this point in time, it was almost impossible for more than tens of soldiers to know how to read.

‘Something’s not right.’

The ones that knew how to read and fight.

At this point in time, only knights knew how to do it.

‘If they really are knights.....’

He had a method to check it.

Roan inserted mana into Kalian’s tear.

At that moment, the world was dyed in a golden colour.

“Ah....”

Roan let out a low exclamation.

The golden stream was filling the camp, the mana.

And the mana of that place moved really roughly compared to other places.

On top of that.

‘Mana flows in the bodies of the patrol guards.’

They certainly weren’t normal soldiers.

‘They were the knights of Istel.’

And quite skilled ones on top of that.

Their number surpassed 500.

‘It’s a force that amounts to more than two knight squads.’

Even if the storage was important, there was no reason to dispatch 500 knights at the rear like this.

On top of that, it was even weird for the knights, who had strong pride, to be wearing the armors of normal soldiers.

‘It’s a trap.’

The thought filled his head.

As there were thousands of normal soldiers protecting the outside of the camp, at first glance it seemed a real storage. But there were hidden knights at the center.

‘If it wasn’t for Kalian’s tear, it would have been dangerous.’

A sigh of relief flowed.

‘I’ll have to use Kalian’s tear more earnestly from now on.’

He wasn’t using it much because of the pain it inflicted him until now.

‘But after that day, much of that pain has disappeared.’

The moment he escaped the fake storage.

After the chill exploded out of his body, it became easy for him to handle mana.

It was a feeling that the explosive and rough mana became calm.

And maybe it was because of that, that when he inserted mana to the tear, the pain wasn't that severe.

‘Although I couldn't find the cause in the end, it became easier to learn the Flamdor mana technique.’

But of course, the speed of accumulating mana was still slow.

Roan wrote out the deployment of the soldiers in the storage and climbed down the mountain.

Soon, the soldiers were all gathered up.

The results of asking their opinions was that most of them couldn't find strange points.

They just replied that the feeling it gave wasn't good.

But Pens was certainly different.

“Looking at the location of the camp, the deployment, and the number of soldiers it seems like a real storage. But.....”

He seemed to hesitate for a moment and then, continued saying.

“Looking at the armors, weapons, movements, and military discipline, they are an excessively powerful force. Although it’s true that the location of the storage is important, taking into account that the front line is in a deadlock, it doesn’t make sense that they are leaving this strong force in the rear.”

At those words Roan faintly smiled and nodded.

Although Pens couldn’t grasp the flow of mana as he didn’t have Kalian’s tear, but instead, made the same conclusion after looking at the equipment and the faces.

“Yes, I also think like that. They don’t look like soldiers protecting the storage.”

Roan replied in a low voice.

“They have an attacking posture that seems like they may be attacked at any moment.”

He took in a deep breath.

His sight moved to below the storage.

“Even so, this place.....”

He smiled bitterly towards Pens.

“Seems like a trap.”

Oren and his agency would probably also have analyzed and checked the storage thoroughly.

‘Even I was about to get tricked.’

Roan looked at Pens.

‘But Pens found weird points even without Kalian’s tear.’

He was amazed at his abilities.

‘Why wasn’t someone like this known in my past life?’

The most famous people in the agency were Chris and Oren.

He didn’t have any memories about Pens.

And Roan also didn’t know until now.

That his role was quite big in making Pens bloom an ability he hadn’t even thought about in this life.



\*\*\*\*\*

Roan, Pens, and the soldiers safely returned to the camp of Lancephil.

And Oren and the others also did.

Aaron, Roan, Pens, and Oren found Io's tent once again.

'It's been decided.'

Io could know the results even without asking.

Aaron, who was smiling faintly, and the stiff expression of Oren.

But even so, he couldn't make a decision beforehand.

"Has the truth and fake been revealed?"

At those words Aaron hid his expression and bowed.

"Unfortunately, it was shown that the location Oren's agency found was a trap."

He gave the information Roan gathered, analyzed, and organized

to Io.

Io looked at the pile of papers and asked Oren.

“How was your side?”

At those words Oren smacked his lips for a moment and then replied with a low voice.

“The results of our agency having checked on the storage the 7th corps found.....”

He let out a short sigh and continued saying.

“We speculate that it’s the real deal.”

At those words, Aaron’s expression became even brighter.

On the other hand, the expressions of Roan and Pens didn’t have any change.

Io checked the pile of paper Oren gave him thoroughly and then nodded.

“You all have done well. Because of that, we could separate the storages between fake and real.”

He looked at the knights, mages, and the captains that were seated at his side and continued saying.

“The opportunity to finally end this war has come.”

They exchanged opinions and talked about tactics and strategies about how to attack the supply storage.

“Whew.”

Io let out a long sigh with a relieved expression.

“Then, each commander is to prepare to depart.”

“Yes!”

At the order, everyone replied in one voice.

Only then could Aaron, Roan, Pens, and Oren get out of the tent.

Even before they could take some steps, Oren blocked Pens.

“Mister Pens.”

He spoke in a blunt expression and voice.

However, his eyes were shining strongly.

He extended his right hand.

“This time, we.....”

Oren hesitated for a moment and then continued saying.

“No, I lost. I realized that I still lack a lot.”

Pens grabbed the hand Oren extended.

“As I paid too much attention on the number of the soldiers, the location, the formation, and the composition, we were neglectful in observing the people.”

Roan, who was listening at the sides, was slightly surprised.

‘Oren also realized his mistake.’

Certainly, someone that was born with it was born with it.

Oren looked at Pens’ eyes fixedly.

“Next time, I won’t lose.”

At those words, Pens who was absentminded, said with a casual

expression.

“It’s fine if you win the next time.”

At the unexpected words, Oren frowned.

‘Is he feeling sympathy for me?’

When he thought like that.

Pens continued saying.

“I just hope for our allies to win.”

He spoke one heavy sentence.

Oren’s face stiffened.

He looked at Pens’s expression for a moment and after letting go of the hand, he started to walk away.

Aaron looked at Oren’s back, who was getting further away, and mumbled in a low voice.

“He took one, no, two blows by Pens.”

At those words, Pens just laughed.

Roan hit Pens's shoulders and smiled.

“The location of the storage you and the information agency found with difficulty.....”

He put strength in his voice.

“I will pay you back with victory.”

At those words, Pens replied shortly.

“Yes. That's enough for me.”

## Chapter 75 : Danger Inside The Danger (6)

---

After two days, count Lancephil and the 7th corps organized their camp and fell back to the west.

No, precisely speaking, they pretended to fall back.

Actually, the army consisting of more than 10.000 divided in small troops and moved towards the supply storage the 7th corps discovered.

In this process, the gathered and analyzed information Oren and Pens brought was of great help.

The army charged through enemy territory while using the safest and secret route.

They didn't only move.

Differently to the main force, a troop consisting of 2.000 soldiers went to the fake storage Oren's agency found on purpose.

They moved to pretend they had fallen in a trap.

Lastly Io, that remained at the rear of the camp, sent a report to Benjamin saying that they would attack Istel kingdom's headquarters.

They were precautions to raise the chance of victory even a little bit more.

Meanwhile, the 10.000 soldiers that were divided in small troops used the night and dawn and moved to the east little by little.

Their destination was the entrance of a plain located near the boundary of the east.

Because the location of Istel kingdom's storage was between mountains, it was difficult for Rinse kingdom to grasp that location.

Rinse kingdom's army made a turn on a mountain at the west

and went to a deep part of enemy territory.

Based on the reconnaissance of the information troop and Oren's agency, most of the enemy forces were gathered at the eastern part of the mountain.

Because of that, they didn't face them head on but aimed for their back.

Rinse kingdom arrived at their destination only after 10 days had passed.

And there were also many cases that the small troops got discovered by the enemies and got killed or fled.

The soldiers that arrived at the appointed time was 9.000.

They hid themselves and didn't move until the sun had set and darkness fell.

Roan looked at the storage located at the end of the plains.

The preparations certainly seemed solid.

'However, the number of knights is lower than the fake storage.'

Istel kingdom had used too many resources on carving the trap.

'The number of soldiers that have mana in their bodies are merely 30.'

It was plain night, but because of Kalian's tear he didn't have any problems on checking the camp.

'Compared to that, the knights of count Lancephil are more than 50.'



On top of that, there were also 10 mages.

Although Istel kingdom had more normal soldiers, in the side of soldiers quality, they were quite ahead.

‘But of course, what they show won’t be everything.’

They wouldn’t manage a place so important it may determine defeat and victory so sloppily.

But even so, Roan was confident.

‘In their position, it would be a surprise attack at an unexpected direction and one which they wouldn’t even have been able to think of.’

On top of that, the morale of Rinse kingdom was as high as the sky.

‘But even so, we have a need to check if there are other traps or not.’

Roan checked the storage thoroughly to not make the same mistakes as before.

‘Hm?’

His sight got fixed in one place.

A wooden fence that was at the left of the entrance.

‘The flow of mana is strange.’

Precisely speaking, the air above that was weird.

‘There’s a fixed flow above the empty air of the fence.’

Normally, if it was a place filled with mana, it would move everywhere without any rules.

‘Maybe?’

What he had to be suspicious of in this situation.

‘Magic array?’

Roan frowned.

The weakest point that was related to wars and battle.

That was the things related to magic.

His sight moved once again to the air above the fence.

The mana that flows just like a whirlpool.

‘It seems like the core of the magic array.....’

But he couldn’t be certain.

He didn't know anything about that field.

Then, he saw the leader of the mages, Tairo Bess, moving busily, Roan pretended to take care of the soldiers and followed his back.

Tairo went to find Kali Owells, that was in charge of the supreme commanding.

“Commander Owells. In the process of mana scanning, we discovered a magic array.”

It was just like Roan had thought.

Kali frowned.

“Magic array? What kind of magic?”

“It's Grand Shield.”

Grand shield.

A huge scaled protection magic.

It was the specialty of a school that used magic as it's theme.

Although they were useless existences in a 1vs1 battle or surprise attacks, but they accomplished quite an outstanding role at defending, just like right now.

“Mmm. They are more thoroughly prepared than what I thought.”

Kali exclaimed and shook his head.

‘If we can’t make the grand shield powerless, this tactic becomes a failure.’

There were two methods.

‘One is to attack the grand shield until it breaks.’

Although it was a solid shield, it wasn’t that it couldn’t break.

However, you needed quite a lot of time and effort in a situation where you didn’t have siege weapons and cavalrymen.

‘The second method.....’

Is to destroy the core of the array.

The core was the center and essence that permitted the magic array to be maintained.

“Have you found the core of the array?”

At Kali’s questions, Tairo shook his head.

“It’s impossible to scan it at this distance.”

Kali nodded.

He also knew about this truth.

‘For now, we can only approach the most we can.’

They couldn’t just wait time by waiting.

The moment they discovered that the other party that attacked the fake storage was a bait, the tide would change once again.

They had to end the battle before that.

A situation where they had to hope for the mages to find the core of the array quickly.

‘Tch. If the skills of the mages was a bit better.....’

He smacked his lips at the regretting feeling.

If the abilities of the mages were great, they would be able to use mana scan, dispel, and attack magics to make the grand shield powerless.

However, the level of Lancephil’s mages wasn’t that high.

No, it wasn’t only them.

Right now, it was difficult to find high classed mages.

‘After all the dragons disappeared, they started to decay little by little.’

Even so, as many schools appeared and developed in their own specialties, they became able to preserve their existence.

However, it was true that the effectiveness in wars and battles declined even more.

‘Rather, the shamans are giving treatments.’

Kali sighed and shook his head.

‘If it becomes like this, we can only fire thousands of arrows without stop.’

If they were lucky, one of them may pierce through the core.

He organized his thoughts and raised his right hand.

“We are getting the closest possible to the storage.”

In the end, they could only clash.

The soldiers placed their right fist in their chest instead of replying.

Sususu.

The wind of the dawn shook the grass.

Meanwhile, Rinse kingdom army started to move stealthily.

The knights of Lancephil were at the front, behind them the region’s army, and behind them the 7th corps followed. And at the rear, there were the 10 mages taking place.

Kali, that stood at the front, soon arrived near the storage.

“Mages.”

At the lowly calling sound, the mages that were at the rear started to come to the front.

The two arms that appeared below the robes.

They executed the mana scan in front of the huge storage.

Silence.

The nasty silence just continued.

Rinse kingdom couldn't even breathe loudly for fear of getting discovered.

However, even after quite a lot of time had passed, the mages couldn't find the core.

Tairo's expression stiffened even more.

In the end, Kali couldn't endure it and asked.

"You still couldn't find it?"

"I'm sorry."

Tairo bowed.

The size of the storage was too immense.

For only 10 mages to scan all that place thoroughly was nearly impossible.

Kali took in a deep breath.

'We can't keep wasting time like this.'

If it wasn't the best option, they had to go with the second best one.

“The mages are to keep looking for the core.”

“Yes. Understood.”

Tairo nodded and fell to the sides.

Kali pulled his long sword.

“Prepare to fire. We are pouring arrows.”

“Yes.”

The leader of the territory’s army, Perr Wilson, replied shortly and prepared the archers.

Chiiik!

Fire was put on the tip of the arrows.

“Fire!”

Right before he finished the order, the archers fired off their arrows.

Sweeeeee!

Thousands of arrows split the wind along a sharp sound.

It was an intent that seemed to pierce through the tents, and sacks.



However.

Cheng! Checheng! Cheng!

A displeasing sound of metal.

The thousands of arrows hit on the empty air above the fences like a lie and fell to the ground.

The arrows that fell caught fire.

“It really was grand shield.”

Kali frowned.

Then.

Piiiiiii!

A sharp sound that carved in their ears.

“They even prepared an alarm magic?”

Certainly, there was no way they would protect the storage sloppily.

At the sound of the alarm magic, the soldiers of Istel started to gather one by one.

Anyways, the surprise attack was now useless. But even so, it wasn't a hopeless situation.

Because the grand shield didn't differentiate between inside and outside, friend and foe.

Just like Rinse kingdom couldn't get inside the storage, Istel kingdom also couldn't get outside of it.

'We have to finish it before their reinforcements come.'

If the day was bright, the enemy troop would come to assist them.

They had to break the grand shield before that.

Sweeeeeeeek!

Hundreds, thousands of arrows split the night sky.

Then.

Tat!

One young soldier got out of the ranks and ran towards the storage.

"Huh?"

"What is it?"

Kali and the knights all frowned.

"Roan!"

Aaron, that discovered the identity of the young soldier late, yelled in a loud voice.

At that moment.

Roan took a big step with his left leg and threw away his spear.

Swaaaaaa!

A sound that was different to the arrow.

The spear shook like a fish and flew towards the grand shield.

“That stupid bastard.”

“He thinks that a spear may do it because an arrow can’t.”

The knights clicked their tongues and shook their heads.

However, Roan’s expression was quite calm.

He could see something others couldn’t.

‘Right. Just go like that!’

Roan’s sight moved over the core of the array.

He put an earnest desire behind.

The spear split the air and precisely pierced the core of the array.

Bang!

A sound exploded.

At the same time.

Craaaak.

Just like ice was breaking.

Poong!

The grand shield, that received a dent, got completely destroyed and disappeared.

“Huh?!”

“What?”

“Uh?”

At that moment, an awkward atmosphere fell on the battlefield.

It was obvious for Rinse kingdom, but Istel kingdom was also hugely surprised at the sudden situation.

The two sides just blinked with their mouths hanging open.

Then, Roan yelled towards Kali.

“Commander!!!”

Only then did Kali get a hold of himself.

“Ah, Ah!”

Still a confused expression.

‘Fo, for the grand shield to break!’

He raised his long sword high.

‘I will have to check if he was lucky or if he has something else after the battle.’

As soon as he got a hold of himself, suspiciousness came first.

But that was something for later.

Now was the time to attack the open storage.

Kali raised his sword.

“Charge!”

The order that got finally sent.

The 10.000 soldiers charged towards the storage with a fierce intent.

“Block them!”

“Fire arrows!”

The counterattack of Istel kingdom also wasn't light.

‘If we get this storage taken over, everything ends!’

They were desperate.

‘Damn. For the grand shield to break this quickly.’

The grand shield was to protect them in case they got attacked until reinforcements came.

But that grand shield got broken by only one spear.

What was fortunate was that they could prepare to some degree because of Grand shield and the alarm magic, even if it wasn’t perfect.

Bang!

The entrance and the fences broke and Rinse kingdom entered above that.

“Son of a bitches!”

“Die!”

Rinse kingdom ground their teeth.

Swords, axes, and spears split the air.

Cheng! Checheng! Cheng!

Sparks flung along with the sound of metal.

Sweeeee!

Arrows flew without stop from both sides.

Flaaaaame!

The inside and the outside of the storage started to transform to a sea of fire.

“Fireball!”

Here on, the mages of Lancephil attacked.

Following the extended arms, fireballs split the wind.

‘KuK! Dman. It was our mistake to have sent most of the knights and mages to the fake storage.’

The commanders of Istel kingdom clenched their fists.

‘We certainly, heard that the Rinse bastards were heading to the trap we had prepared, but were we the ones that took the blow?!’

Their bodies trembled.

At the sides, the voices of Rinse soldiers was heard.

“Set it on fire!”

“Let’s show an example to the Istel bastards!”

Bonfired crumbled and torches flew over.

At the same time, thousands of fire arrows covered the sky.

Pung! Pubung!

The tents caught fire and started to spread to the insides following the wind.

“Put the fire off!”

“Protect the supplies!”

The commanders of Istel yelled and urged the soldiers.

“Hmph! Useless sounds!”

Kali was a problem because he was narrow minded and fought desperately, but at least his skills were great.

He lead the 50 knights and massacred the soldiers of Istel.

“We are the knight guards of Lancephil’s family!”

A loud yell.



It was a voice filled with proudness.

Then, a serious voice was heard at the other side.

“Bastards! We are the cool breeze knights of Istel kingdom!”

30 knights came running with a fierce intent.

Bang!

Knight against knight.

Knight squad against a Knight squad.

A confrontation occurred in the middle of the fiery storage.

Leaving them in the middle, the soldiers of both sides started to fight in confusion.

Flaaaaaaame!

The fire burned more fiercely.

Finally, it gulped down the tents that had the provision sacks in it.

Tadak. Tadak.

Fire and sparks flew to the air.

A dark smoke blew with the wind.

It seemed like a rain of fire was raining inside the storage.

‘This is a battlefield.’

Roan looked at the fire laying down over his armour and took a breath.

It was because he felt full of vitality even when he hadn’t operated Flamdor mana technique.

The red flames surging up at his sides.

The scattering fire.

This place was just like heaven for him.

A battlefield of fire.

Roan gripped his spear.

Behind him, rose troop appeared with Austin and Harrison at the front.

“Troop commander.”

Austin’s voice was slightly trembling.

And not only him.

THE apple of adam of all the other soldiers was moving roughly up and down.

Roan slightly turned his head and looked at the nervous expressions of the troop’s soldier.

The eyes that were as hot as the flames.

Roan’s mouth slightly moved.

A smile that made you feel assured.

Soon, a low voice but with strength was heard.

“Just trust in me and follow me.”

# Chapter 76 : Danger Inside The Danger (7)

---

Rose troop and the 2nd rose troop was clearly different to the other troops.

They didn't lose their ranks and formations even in the middle of the chaos.

A well ordered look.

Everyone moved as if they were one.

Slash! Stab!

Every Time the spear split the air, one soldier of Istel fell hopelessly.

“Where!”

The attacks of the enemies aiming for the openings got blocked by the soldiers at the sides.

“Scatter!”

At Austin's orders, the soldiers that were gathered like a rock got scattered everywhere.

The soldiers of Istel, that were pushing stubbornly, got their feet tied at the sudden change.

That short instant.

At the moment that was created, the archers at the rear fired arrows.

Pubububuk!

“Kuk!”

“Kugh!”

The soldiers of Istel became porcupines and collapsed.

As Austin clenched his fists again, the soldiers that were scattered gathered once again to become a rock.

Their stabbed their spears at the hearts of the confused enemies.

There was no mercy in a war.

Then.

“Then!”

One young knight of Istel came charging in with a high intent.

As the performance of rose troop and the 2nd troop was too eye catching, he was planning to cut them off.

The sword that had mana behind in came stabbing towards Austin.

A situation of life and death.

But even so, not even one soldier of rose troop retreated or stepped back.

They rather glared at the young knight in front of them.

“Ridiculous things! Mere normal soldiers dares to a knight.....”

When he talked up to there.

A sharp spear appeared from the sides.

Kang!

A heavy sound of metal.

The spear hit the side of the sword of the young knight precisely.

“Kugh!”

The young knight frowned at the numbness felt in his palms and turned his head.

‘What kind of bastard dares to!’

The man that fended off his sword.

He had a childish face, but the moment he saw his face his breath got clogged.

‘Fi, fire?’

The owner of the spear resembled a red flame.

“Who, who are you?”

The young knight was asking unconsciously.

The owner of the spear swung his spear first, instead of replying.

“Kugh!”

The young knight stepped back hurriedly and swung his sword.  
Sparks flew along the sound of metal.

The owner of the soldier charged the ground like that and closed the distance.

“I’m troop commander Roan of the 2nd rose troop belonging to the 7th corps of the eastern army of Rinse kingdom.”

At those words the young knight frowned.

“Tro, troop commander?! Not a knight?”

He stabbed his sword towards Roan that was already in front of him.

Roan twisted his body calmly.

The sword split the air.

At that moment.

Roan’s left hand carved in the left armpit of the young knight.

“Uhh!”

The young knight staggered because he was perplexed.

Roan flung his waist while still having his arm in his side.

The young knight drew a line and flew to the air.

Boom!

He rolled in the ground along a heavy sound.

“Kugh.”

His back and waist felt numb.

Roan stepped on his chest with his right left.

The young knight struggled to stand up.

‘Kuk! Just how strong is he.....’

However his body didn’t move as he wished.

At this point, curses of wanting to live surged up.

“I, i’m a disciple of a noble family of Istel and a knight. If you capture me, you will be able to.....”

But he couldn’t continue his words.

Stab.

Because Roan’s spear had already pierced his throat.

There was no mercy in war.



‘Especially, even more in battles like this one.’

Roan pulled his spear and faced the soldiers charging into him.  
Every Time his spear danced, three or four soldiers fell.

“Ah.....”

A low exclamation came out of Austin’s mouth.

It kind of felt that the fire of the surroundings was dancing along with Roan.

He mumbled in a half absent minded expression.

“Perhaps, perhaps.”

Keep, that was right next to him, frowned.

“Did you say something?”

Austin followed Roan’s back and said.

“We may be looking at a start of a legend.”

However Keep couldn’t listen properly because of the loud noise of the battlefield.

“What did you say!”

But Austin didn't mind.

He now mumbled in a voice so low it couldn't be heard by anyone.

“No, we are being together with the start of a legend.”

He felt his chest heave up.

Austin raised his spear high.

“Follow troop commander Roan!”

At that order, rose troop took formations once again.

Roan had already opened a path.

The soldiers aimed for that and massacred the enemy.

Austin yelled in a loud voice towards Roan.

“Troop commander Roan! We will follow you until the end!”

In this battle, and even after this battle ended.

You couldn't know if Roan knew that meaning or not, but he raised his thumb after he cut off the neck of an enemy.

And then, he slightly turned his head and looked at his troop.

“I told you before.”

There was a comforting smile still in his mouth.

“To follow me while trusting in me.”

The battle was coming to a close like that.

\*\*\*\*\*

The dawn that could be seen from the east.

The battle had ended.

The supply storage of Istel had been swept up by red flames.

Huge flames that seemed to be there forever.

However they didn't have time to rest while extending their limbs.

“We will chase the bastards that escaped to the southwest of our Lancephil's territory.”

The soldiers that were protecting the storage, fled to the sides when the battle was coming to an end.

It didn't matter for the ones that fled to the east, but they couldn't just stay still at the ones that fled to the west.

At Kali's words, Aaron nodded.

“My 7th corps will also chase and kill them and after that go to the headquarters of the eastern region.”

A short farewell.

Kali lead his army first and departed to the southwest.

Aaron hurriedly gathered the troop commanders and reformed it.

“Our actual number is approximately 4.000. We will divide the army in two.”

The decision was fast.

Although they had burnt the supply storage, it was still too early to relax.

There was still the main army of Istel kingdom, and there were still many knights and soldiers in the fake storage.

‘If we stay here any longer, we may get left behind in enemy territory.’

They had to chase the ones that fled the quickest possible and regroup with the main army.

“I will be leading one, and the other one will do it Roan. I will go to the southwest, so Roan, you go to the west.”

Several troop commanders had died in battle.

Now, even by taking into account the merits, performances, trust, etc. there was no such commander like Roan.

Although there also was Gale, he was performing the role of staff

officer next to Aaron.

So Roan became the provisional vice corps commander.

“Yes. I understand.”

He didn’t dare to decline.

‘I receive moderately what needs to be received.’

That was Roan’s way of thinking.

The reforming of the group was done quickly.

“have a good fight.”

“Let’s meet at the headquarters of the east.”

Aaron and ROan looked at each other and smiled faintly.

Each troop put the burning storage behind and went to the south and the southwest.

\*\*\*\*\*

The 2.000 soldiers conforming the 2nd rose troop.

They received Roan’s command and annihilated the scattered forces of Istel.

In this process, the abilities of Pens and the information agency shone once again.

Although it wasn't systematized properly, they found the feeling route and traces of the enemy and their tracking ability was towering above the rest.

“It seems like we took care of most of them.”

Austin's report.

Roan looked at the corpses of Istel's soldiers and nodded.

This was already the 13th subjugation.

Meanwhile, they had perfectly annihilated the small and big groups.

‘The side of corps commander Aaron would already have regrouped with the main army.’

Looking at the direction, Aaron's side was closer to the headquarters.

Roan turned his head and looked at the south.

‘Here on, it would be better to leave the western region to the army of count Lancephil.’

It was now time to return to the headquarters.

‘The main force of Istel won't be able to last much either.’

They were out of supplies, and the supply line got cut off.

On top of that, excluding the main army, all the other groups were getting massacred.

Although they still had many soldiers left in the headquarters, they didn't have the leisure or the morale to do so anymore.

On top of that, the supreme commander leading Istel kingdom's forces was Mark Istel.

He was a royalty that was quite close to the king of Istel.

They wouldn't leave someone like Mark in the cave of a tiger.

Retreating was a clear thing.

“We are going to the south.”

A voice with strength.

Austin and the soldiers saluted shortly and bowed.

They put the battlefield under control and moved towards the south.

As most of the soldiers were infantry, the movement speed wasn't as fast as he had thought.

On top of that, most of them were exhausted at the continued battle.

Roan rested moderately and moved.

‘Soon, the last battle will happen.’

He needed to save energy for that.

The second day of travelling.

He could finally see the camp of the eastern army.

Roan, that was at the front, frowned.

Because the camp seemed kind of weird.

‘Something’s lacking.’

The camp was empty.

His footsteps became quicker at the uneasy feeling.

“Stop!”

The guards that were protecting the entrance crossed spears and yelled.

Roan stood at the front and yelled.

“It’s the 7th corps!”

The guards checked the flag and the rank badge.

“Ah! It’s troop commander Roan of the 7th corps!”

On top of that, Roan’s face was quite famous.

The guards hurriedly opened the gates.

“Sir!”

Roan lead the troop and got inside the camp.



He ordered the soldiers to rest and moved towards the centre of the camp.

A place that had tents for the corps commanders.

However, most of the tents were empty.

‘Ah!’

Then, someone got in his eyes.

It was corps commander Phillip Hass of the 5th corps.

“Commander Hass!”

“Mmm?”

Phillip turned his head at the sound calling out to him and then smiled.

“It’s Roan of the 7th corps.”

“Sir.”

Roan approached even more and saluted.

“I heard the notices. You have raised quite a big merit.”

“Thank you.”

At Phillip’s compliment, Roan bowed and then looked at the camp.

“But the camp feels quite empty.”

At those words, the smile in Phillip’s face became even denser.

“Everyone went to chase the main army of Istel.”

“The enemy’s main army? They had already retreated?”

Although he certainly expected for a retreat, the time was just too fast.

As Roan asked back in a surprised face, Phillip’s nodded.

“Right. Although it was yesterday that we realized that they had retreated, actually it was way before that since they retreated.”

“Can you tell me in detail?”

Roan wanted to know where the situation was flowing to.

Phillip explained with a composed voice.

“Corps commander Aaron regrouped in the camp and a force also regrouped in Istel’s headquarters. They say it was the force waiting in the fake storage.”

He looked at the east.

“Not even preparing to retreat, but they had regrouped? We certainly thought that they would be preparing for the last attack.

Although small troops of each side has clashed against each other, it didn't have that big of a meaning. Because we thought that the real battle would happen later on."

Phillip looked at Roan once more.

"But four days ago, the small scaled battles got cut off. They didn't come out of their camp. Instead, they just hit jings and drums. We thought that it was to raise the morale for the last battle. But that was a completely mistaken thinking."

A hopeless look was in his eyes.

"They didn't move even after 4 days had passed. So we sent a troop to their camp and provoked them. But even so, they didn't show any reactions. We fired arrows and threw rocks but it was the same. In the end, we got determined to die and charged in their camp. But....."

"It was empty."

At Roan's words, Phillip nodded.

"The sound of the jing and drums was a fake sound made with a recording magic. They had retreated rather early. Just like when we retreated in the region of Bink."

"Mmm."

Roan gulped the exclamation.

‘It’s earlier than what I thought.’

It meant that the situation was that bad.

‘Or they may have summoned Mark Istel a bit in a hurry.’

Although you couldn’t do anything about a defeat, you had to save the life of a royalty.

If the supreme commander was a normal soldier instead of a royalty like Mark, they would have continued doing war regardless of dying.

‘Anyways, even if they returned to their kingdom, there was a high possibility to get beheaded or lose a territory.’

Defeat in a war was that much of a sin.

‘However, a severe punishment isn’t always a good thing. ANYways.....’

Roan’s eyes slightly trembled.

‘Recording magic.....’

It certainly was uncommon.

But even so, retreating more than 5.000 soldiers without getting

caught was quite a difficult thing.

‘Was there a commander that outstanding in their ranks?’

He had perfectly grasped the situation of the commanders of Istel while preparing for war and while the war progressed.

However, there wasn't that kind of dangerous existence among the commanders.

‘Now that I see, the strategy of the fake storage wasn't that easy.....’

As he reviewed it again, he thought that there were many things he had thought of lightly.

A feeling a lightning thundered in his head.

Roan rummaged through the memories of his past life.

Several battles and wars passed through his head.

‘Among the outstanding existences in Istel kingdom.....’

In the age of great wars, geniuses appeared not only in Rinse kingdom, but in each continent.

Precisely because of that was that the age of great wars happened.

‘If it wasn't for that, a kingdom or empire would have gotten annihilated.’

Roan shook his head.

‘If it’s an existence of Istel kingdom, it would be at most the fox of the battle field count Peid Nail.....’

But there wasn’t a name like that among the names of the commanders Chris’s agency and the information troop provided him.

‘On top of that, he’s merely in his twenties.....’

When he thought like that.

Roan’s eyes opened.

“Ah!”

An exclamation came out of his mouth.

“What happened?”

Phillip tilted his head and asked.

However Roan didn’t even have the mind to reply.

He bowed towards Phillips.

“I’m sorry. An urgent thing occurred suddenly, so I will have to leave.”

“Huh? Right. Then.....”

Phillip couldn't end saying goodbye.

Roan was already showing his back.

“Cheop.”

Phillip smacked his lips with an awkward expression.

‘Just what’s the urgent thing.....Hhm.’

His sight followed Roan’s back.

Roan ran towards the place the soldiers were resting without stop.

“Mister Pens!”

An urgent yell.

Pens, that was resting between the soldiers, stood up.

Roan made hand signs with an urgent expression.

“Give me the register of Istel kingdom.”

Pens tilted his head at the sudden request.

“Register? If it’s the register, you would probably have.....”

Roan shook his head.

“Not commanders above troop commanders, but the registers of adjutants.”

“Adjutants? That was too massive so we couldn’t organize it yet.”

Pens replied with a perplexed expression.

Roan nodded as if it was fine.

“It doesn’t matter.”

“Wa, wait a moment.”

Only then did Pens realize that something wasn’t right.

He rummaged his bag and then took out a pile of papers the size of two palms.

“It’s here.”

“Thank you.”

As soon as he received the papers, ROan sat on the ground.

Flip. Flip.

The sound of flipping paper was heard clearly.

Pens and the other soldiers started to gather one by one.

However Roan didn’t mind and concentrated on the letters of the



paper.

“Peid. Peid. Peid.....’

For now, it was important to find that name.

The names that were written in a disorganized way.

His finger swept up the letters quickly.

How long has it passed.

Almost half of the papers were flipped.

‘Right. Please, don’t appear.’

Roan gulped dry saliva and flipped the paper once again.

Flip. Tuk.

At that moment, the finger stopped like a lie.

‘Peid.’

There was. The name he didn’t want to see was clearly written.

<Peid. Expected to be in his early twenties. Commoner. Adjutant of Port troop of the 2nd corps of the western army of Istel kingdom. There’s a rumour that he’s a descendant of a ruined noble family.>

The contents written was just that.

But it was enough even with that.

Roan's face stiffened.

‘It's that bastard. The fox of the battlefield. It is that guy.’

He abruptly stood up.

He couldn't think of it.

The geniuses that represented each kingdom in the age of great wars.

As he concentrated on the battles and the war, he had forgotten the truth of their existence for a moment.

‘The commanders had to ignore him and neglect him.....’

However, if it was him that incentivized the retreat, it meant that his position had risen to a place.

‘The fox of the battlefield wouldn't simply retreat.’

Even Ian, that was one of the genius strategists and the pride of Rinse, get done in by him 3 times.

‘I have to chase the army of the eastern region.’

He had to stop them so they couldn't chase them anymore.

Roan gave the papers to Pens and called Austin.

“Get ready to depart the quickest possible.”

“Charging?”

Austin asked back with an expression as if what had happened.

Roan looked at the east.

“We are going to the east.”

At those words, some soldiers said.

“Are we chasing the enemy?”

“Are we chasing the main army of Istel?”

Expressions and voices that were a bit excited.

They had finished the war and were quite excited.

However Roan was calm.

No, it rather felt like he was kind of low.

He said in a voice he seemed to be mumbling.

“We are rescuing our allies.”

# Chapter 77 : Overflow (1)

---

The fox of the battlefield, Peid Neil.

Area Britch, the venomous spider of Melland.

The black shark, Jeff.

The existences he could think for now were these three.

‘The geniuses that lead Istel kingdom into the age of great war.’

Roan shook his head while riding his horse.

‘Now, I also have to worry about the geniuses of other kingdoms.’

He didn’t know if the age of great war would come a bit quicker or slower because of his influence.

‘Although I’d like it if it didn’t happen at all.....’

Anyways, it was true that he had to put in more attention than now.

Roan looked back.

The soldiers looked exhausted.

But even so, he came out with the ones that knew how to ride a horse.

‘Right now, speed is life.’

He ran and ran without stop.

Because of that, he could catch up with them in two days.

‘They were already done.’

Roan passed by the soldiers of the main army and ground his teeth.

There were too many injured for them to be the chasing ones.

On top of that, even the morale was a mess.

‘Where’s the 7th corps?’

He thoroughly checked the rear and went to the front, but he couldn’t see the 7th corps at all.

While he was frowning, he entered the commanding headquarters that was located between the center and the rear.

He saw Benjamin and the corps commander moving between the injured soldiers while riding their horses.

They had a look of failure.

Roan passed the reins to Austin and walked towards Benjamin.

“Commander!”

Benjamin, who was slowly riding his horse, looked at Roan and frowned.

He tilted his head for a moment and then put on a sickly smile.

“You are Roan of the 7th corps.”

“Yes. I’m vice troop commander Roan of the 2nd rose troop.”

“I heard the notices that your merits were excellent.”

He had a kind of reproachful expression.

Roan quickly went to the main topic.

“According to the analysis of the information troop, the rearguard of the enemy.....”

When he talked up to there, Benjamin shook his hand with a blunt expression.

“Again with that information agency?”

He had already heard of the performance of the information of the 7th corps through the corps commanders, staff officers, and even the soldiers themselves.

Benjamin didn’t like that the 7th corps had achieved a more remarkable merit than himself.

He said with a brusque voice.

“It’s already after we fell into their trap and ambush.”

Benjamin’s sight moved over the injured soldiers.

‘Certainly.....’

The fox of the battlefield was a fox even when he was young.  
Roan bit his lower lip.

‘I have to stop him now.’

Saying his opinion to a supreme commander.

And having to speak back with his opinion was not complying to the military discipline.

On top of that, Benjamin was narrow minded and still lacking.  
He wasn’t someone to receive Roan’s opinion.

‘Anyways, can’t do anything about it.’

He couldn’t let their allies suffer a big blow even while knowing that it couldn’t be done.

“We have to stop the chase immediatel.....”

Roan couldn’t finish his words once again.

Benjamin put on an even sicker smile than before and interrupted him.

“Aaron Tate already went to the chase while leading the 7th and 6th corps.”

“Yes?”

Roan opened his eyes wide at the unexpected words.

‘The 7th corps went to the chase?’

He thought maybe when he didn’t see Aaron, Gale, and the several adjutants and soldiers.

‘Damn. I thought that if it was Benjamin, he wouldn’t give the chance for the 7th corps to accumulate more merits.’

He felt stifled.

Benjamin, who was looking at that Roan, had quite fierce eyes.

‘At first, I stood at the front and gave chase.’

It was to accumulate merits.

Compared to the 7th corps that had accumulated small and big merits, Benjamin and the eastern army hadn’t done much.

However, he’d be able to gain an incredible merit by slaying the supreme commander Mark at the last moment.

But of course, it wasn’t simply to accumulate merits.

‘There’s a rumour of Count Lancephil reporting the merits to the royal palace himself.’

If he made a mistake, he could get his territory taken away by Aaron.



And not only that.

‘There’s also movements of the corps commanders of the region gathering around Aaron.’

A new force could be made in the eastern region.

For Benjamin, who wanted to make his basic force more solid and climb to somewhere higher, the 7th corps became a thorn for him.

Benjamin could stand up for the chase for several reasons.

However.

‘For the Istel bastards to install traps, ambushes, and fire tactics even while fleeing.’

And it wasn’t at the level where they could block it even if they knew about it.

Their attack was that scary.

In the end, he just ended up losing soldiers instead of raising merits.

Meanwhile, some corps commanders praised the 7th corps and made him feel annoyed.

In the end, Benjamin changed his thoughts.

‘Rather than approaching the eastern boundary that becomes the plains, let’s put the 7th corps at the front of the chase.’

He was planning to pass the dangerous places like rivers, mountains, and forests to the 7th corps.

‘If in that process they get done in by the Istel bastards, the merits they accumulated until now will become foam....’

The commanders that wanted to gather around Aaron would also lose their intent.

On top of that, he could lower the retreating speed of Istel kingdom.

In Benjamin’s situation, it was three birds with one stone.

‘If we just get to the plains, they won’t be able to use tactics such as ambushes or surprise attacks.’

By then, he was planning to stand at the front and sweep them all up.

‘I’m finishing the war with my hands.’

The fantastical finishing touch was drawn in his head.

He put a sickly smile towards Roan.

“If it’s Aaron and he 7th corps, they already have what they showed until now.....”

But the cynical voice lost it’s direction and dispersed.

Tat!

Roan charged the ground and grabbed the reins.

He didn't have time to listen to Benjamin's nonsense.

'I have to chase the 7th corps before it gets too late.'

They could still be safe.

'No, they certainly are.'

He didn't want to think about bad things.

The faces of Aaron, Gale, Keniss, Dosen, and several soldiers appeared in front of his eyes.

Roan pulled the reins and looked back.

He saw the faces of Austin and the soldiers of 2nd rose troop.

"I'm going to rescue the 7th corps."

He spoke in a heated voice.

And eyes that were even hotter than that.

"It probably won't be an easy thing."

The gazes of Roan and the soldiers interlocked.

"The ones that want to stay, can do so."

At those words, Austin and the soldiers looked at each other and then burst out in laughter.

“Troop commander. What are you talking about?”

There was no hesitation on their faces.

“You said to follow you while trusting in you.”

Austin hit his armour with his right fist.

“We’ll only follow troop commander until we die.”

At those words, Roan didn’t say anything.

He just nodded and looked towards the east.

He yelled loudly before kicking his horse.

“Well then. Let’s go and take back the 7th corps!”

Hiiiiing!

The horse cried roughly and charged the ground.

“Yap!”

“Chase them!”

Austin and the others followed his back.

Horses and soldiers.

Although both of them seemed exhausted, the morale was excellent.

The 500 soldiers faced the sun with their backs and ran towards the east.

\*\*\*\*\*

Two middle aged men looked at the plains while riding their horses.

The man with a thick face and clear eyes and nose smiled.

“The one who came up with the rearguard tactic was an adjutant called Peid?”

At those words, the man with small eyes bowed.

“Yes. He was the senior adjutant of the fort troop Teise Martin was leading.”

“Did you say he’s merely 22?”

“Yes. He’s still a complete greenhorn.”

“Can you call someone that could think of that tactic a greenhorn?”

The clear eyed man pointed at the plain and shook his head.

It was a sea of fire.

The plain was swept up by an amazing fire to the point that you couldn't know where it started and ended.

“Uaaaaak!”

“Sa, save me!”

Inside of that, horrible yells were heard.

However, there wasn't any change in the expression of the two men.

“If I knew before that there was a guy like that below me.....”

The clear eyed man smacked his lips as if it was regrettable.

“That isn't your fault. It's the fault of troop commander Teise who wanted to steal the merits.”

“Abel. It was me that made someone like Teise a troop commander.”

At those words, the small eyed man Abel Glishi, shut up.

He looked at the man fixedly.

‘Corps commander Tereise.’

The clear eyed man was a viscount named Daniel Tereise, and he was responsible for the rearguard.

Daniel, who was also the commander of the 2nd corps of the western army of Istel, was quite calm and prudent and on top of that, didn't know fear.

“Even so, he's gets more amazing the more I think of it.”

Daniel was astounded with a surprising expression.

“It was also like that with the mysterious retreat tactic, and the surprise tactics and ambushes that tied up their feet and the several traps. For a mere 22 year old adjutant to think of all of this by himself.....”

“It was also impressive that was defeated three or four times on purpose to bait them into the plains.”

“Right. Because of that, we could put them inside the sea of fire.”

At Abe's words, Daniel nodded with a proud expression.

“He's a real fox. A fox.”

Then, a blue light shined inside the sea of fire.

Abel's light slightly rose.

“It seems like the grand shield was activated.”

At those words Daniel slowly nodded.

“Prepare the soldiers at the rearguard. We are annihilating the enemies that got out of the fire.”

“Yes!”

Abel replied in a loud voice and then fell back.

Daniel, who was left alone, looked at the plains that was swept up in fire and smiled faintly.

‘Friends of Rinse. Don’t chase us anymore. If you make a mistake then.....’

His smile became denser.

‘You will be possessed by the fox.’

\*\*\*\*\*

They ran and kept running.

Faster than the wind.

‘Please, don’t let anything happen.’

For Roan, the 7th corps wasn’t simply the corps which he belonged in.

‘They’re nice people.’



Corps commander Aaron at the front with the commander of rose troop Gale, the adjutants Keniss, Dosen, Johnson, etc. and the several soldiers he roamed in the battlefield while he put his life on the line.

They were all good people.

They laughed, cried, got happy and angry together.

‘Expressing it in one way, they’re like family.....’

On top of that, the 7th corps was the starting point of this life.

It had a special meaning for Roan.

‘That’s why nothing bad has to have happened!’

He stuck his chest to the horse and kicked it.

Then, Roan’s expression stiffened.

‘Damn!’

Because of Kalian’s tear, he could see the entrance of the gorge that was far away like it was right in front of him.

There were many corpses.

‘It’s not the 7th corps.’

They would probably be of the 6th corps.

It seemed like they had received a surprise attack before they

entered the gorge.

Roan kicked his horse once again.

Soon, the head of the horse entered the entrance of the gorge.

‘Mmm.’

The entrance was crueler than what he had thought.

He saw the hundreds of soldiers that became porcupines.

Most of them were soldiers of Istel.

Roan didn't move around in the gorge hurriedly and used Kalian's tear and to check his surroundings thoroughly.

He even checked the flow of mana.

‘There's nothing.’

What he could see were only corpses.

Certainly, most of them are corpses of soldiers of Rinse.

“We are charging through.”

“Yes! Understood.”

The soldiers didn't talk back.

They believed in Roan.

Roan and the 500 soldiers rode towards the gorge.

There were several arrows stuck into the sides of the mountain.

‘Did they pour the remaining things without any care?’

Roan ground his teeth.

He felt uneasiness increase the more time passed.

‘Just where is commander Tate.....’

Then, a really faint war cry was heard.

‘Maybe?’

Roan looked at the exit of the gorge fixedly.

When he used Kalian’s tear again.

‘Ah.....’

A low exclamation came out.

‘It’s Rinse kingdom!’

Roan ground his teeth.

They were at the scenery that spread outside the gorge.

But there was a problem.

‘What an amazing fire!’

The plains was a sea of fire.

‘Damn. Was it also the fox of the battlefield?!’

Roan consecutively hit the horse.

Hiiiiiiiiing!

The horse brought up all the strength it had and charged forward.

Behind him, the 500 soldiers followed his back.

Dudududu.

Roan left the gorge first alongside the sound of horse clops.

At that instant, the huge plain was spread out in front of him.

Flaaaaaaame!

A hot wave came surging.

He could still feel it even when he was using Brent’s ring.

“Kugh!”

“Kuk!”

Followed by him, the normal soldiers that left the gorge ground their teeth at the amazing fire.

Everything he saw was a sea of fire.

The soldiers of Istel kingdom were inside that hell of a sea.

“Evacuate the soldiers to the gorge!”

“Ye, yes! Understood!”

The 500 soldiers endured the strong heat and moved inside the path of fire.

‘Fortunately, I can’t see any enemies.’

The fire was that strong and rough.

Roan sent his horse that was suffering back to the gorge and moved towards the fire.

Then.

“Troop commander! To, to the east!”

“Corps commander got caught at the front!”

The soldiers of the 7th corps yelled with all of their strength.

Roan hurriedly moved his sight to the east.

Kalian’s tear showed its might once again.

‘That’s? Grand shield?’

It was an unexpected situation.

A huge scaled magic barrier was taking place inside the path of fire.

“Ah!”

At that moment, a yell close to astonishment was heard.

“Corps commander! Troop commander!”

Aaron, Gale, and the other commanders were inside the grand shield.

But there was a problem.

‘Fox of the battlefield. You crazy bastard!’

There was an amazing path of fire surging inside the grand shield.

It was a situation that Aaron, Gale, and etc. couldn’t even dodge it as they were trapped inside of it.

Peid had used the defensive grand shield as a way of attack.

Tat!

Roan charged the ground.

As he pulled mana, an amazing energy overflowed.

The fire in his surroundings danced.

Pat!

As he inserted mana into Kalian's tears, the whole world was dyed in golden light.

‘That’s the core!’

As the size of the grand shield wasn’t that big, the core was located in a place could be broken with a throw of the spear.

However.

“No!”

A scream came out of Roan’s mouth.

The moment he threw the spear.

The fire inside the grand shield covered Aaron, Gale, and etc.

Swaaaaaaa!

The spear split the air along with an amazing sound.

Chung!

The spear precisely pierced the core.

Chujujug. Pung!

The grand shield broke alongside the loud sound.

Whooooosh!

The fire that was inside the grand shield exploded to the sides.

Roan executed the Flamdor mana technique and ran while piercing through the path of fire.

‘Kugh!’

As the fire touched his skin directly, he felt a disgusting pain.

Brent’s ring was also useless at this point.

However, he never stopped or fell back.

Waaak!

He arrived at the place the grand shield was taking place.

“Ah.....”

A hopeless look.

Roan moved his feet as if he was dragging it.

There were burnt corpses in the place the grand shield was.



There was nothing alive.

The place his sigh stayed.

Several people turned over themselves and were making a round shape.

Roan moved the corpses that were outside one by one.

“Kugh.”

Emotions overflowed.

His front was cloudy and something hot surged up.

Roan unconsciously clenched his fists.

The blackly burnt corpses that you couldn't even recognize.

Even so, the corpses that were inside were maintaining their shape to some degree.

Then.

“Uhh...”

A weak groan was heard.

Roan opened his eyes wide.

The cloudy eyes found their focus again.

He carefully moved the corpses and in the quickest possible speed.

‘Ah! Adjutant Dosen, Adjutant Keniss.....’

They were familiar faces.

They died while getting half burnt.

And a familiar back was seen below them.

“Troop commander Gale!”

Roan grabbed him carefully and turned him over.

“Uhh...”

A low exclamation came out of Gale’s mouth.

He was still alive.

Still.

“Troop commander Gale!”

Roan called out Gale’s name.

His face was half melted.

Gale breathed out roughly and barely opened one eye.

“It, it’s Roan.”

“Yes. I’m Roan. I have come!”

Roan wiped out the tears that came out and nodded.

Gale forced a smile.

“I saw you coming in from the outside of the grand shield.”

He kept moving his body.

“Corp, corps commander Tate?”

The reason he tried to turn his head.

He was curious about Aaron’s state, who he was covered up.

And fortunately, Aaron’s state wasn’t that bad.

His face and skin were slightly red, but it didn’t seem like he had any wounds.

Roan hurriedly extended his hand and he measured his pulse.

‘It’s beating.’

He was alive.

It was because Mendel, Gale, Keniss, and the adjutants had covered him.

They had sacrificed themselves and saved Aaron.

“He’s alive.”

“Ah.....”

At Roan’s words, Gale let out a sigh of relief.

He extended his still fine right hand and caressed Roan’s face.

“Roan. It seems like I’m done.”

“Don’t say such things.”

Roan put on an angry face on purpose.

Gale shook his head.

“It’s a life that already should have been dead. But I could come up to here because of you.”

If it wasn’t for Roan, he would have already died at Ale gorge, Pedian’s plain, and Slen region.

“I, I wanted to see you soaring to the skies.....Kugh.”

“Stop speaking. I will bring some soldiers.”

Gale extended his hand and grabbed Roan’s arm.

“Just, just stay by my side like this.”

Roan just grabbed Gale’s arm instead of replying.

A temperature hotter than the fire was transmitted.

“I lived without regrets.....”

Gale’s voice lowered.

And his roughly heaving chest also seemed to have found comfort.

It was a situation where he didn't have much time left.

“There's no death more suitable for a commander than dying in the battlefield.”

His mouth slightly rose up.

“Roan. Take care of Rose troop.....”

Those were his last words.

The light in his eyes had disappeared.

“Kugh.”

Roan extended his hands and closed Gale's eyes.

He was dead.

He tried to save him but he couldn't.

The mana that was spinning in his body moved roughly.

Flaaaaaame!

The flames that were gulping down the plain already moved near him.

‘Troop commander Gale, adjutant Keniss, adjutant Dosen.....’

And the several soldiers.

Everyone was dead.

“Uaaaaaaaaa!”

A loud scream came out.

A blood boiling rage exploded.

‘Monarch my ass! I can’t even protect my own people!’

Powerlessness and rage.

Following Roan’s emotions, the mana moved more roughly.

The flames in his surroundings danced towards him.

The hot wave entered his body through his nose, mouth, and skin.

The mana that lost it’s balance once was like a storm.

His entire body trembled.

The mana sucked in the heat and became larger A disgusting pain filled him up.

Roan stood up and clenched his fists.

At that moment, the mana that was spinning roughly inside his body stopped like a lie.

“Kugh!”

His breath was cut off.

At that moment.

Bang!

The mana inside his body exploded.

At the same time, a red light emanated in Roan's entire body.

The fire that was dancing, fell backwards.

“Uaaaaaa!”

Roan screamed at the feeling his body was breaking up.

Then.

The red light that was being emanated from his body started to get sucked in inside of his body.

Flaaaame!

The fire that was burning the plain covered Roan following the red light.

This was a situation of life and death.

The crimson flame started to get absorbed inside Roan's body like a lie.

And that speed and strength was overwhelming.

Roan just stood still while he had his eyes closed.

An awkward and heavy silence fell.

Then.

Paat!

A red light emanated from Roan's entire body.

At the same time, his hair grew to his waist.

The brown hair changed to become bright red.

And it was the same for his brows.

This was a strange phenomenon.

After a while, the red light returned to his body once again.

Only then did Roan open his eyes.

Open.

Even his eyes that were brown turned to become red.

He smiled coldly and turned his head.

Istel kingdom's army was over there.

They were hiding themselves to annihilate the soldiers of Rinse kingdom that escaped the fire.

“Wh, just what's this!”

Viscount Daniel staggered with a perplexed expression.

‘For, for a human to absorb fire!’



He had never heard or saw something like that.  
Then, Daniel and Roan looked at each other.  
Roan took out Traviass spear from his waist.

Click! Cheng! Swuung!

The stick shaped Traviass spear became long.  
It had the shape of a perfect spear.  
The long spear shone with a red light.  
Roan looked at Istel's army and closed his eyes.

“Kuuuuuuuu.”

An unknown sound flowed out of his mouth.  
And that resembled the cry of a beast.

Tat!

Roan charged the ground.  
No, the moment they thought that.  
He was soon in front of Istel kingdom's army.

“Kuaaaaaa!”

A strange sound came out of Roan's mouth once again.

## Chapter 78 : Overflow (2)

---

2,000.

The number of Istel kingdom's army was 2,000.

And among them, there were ten knights that knew how to use mana.

Because Rinse kingdom received a loss close to annihilation, the number of the force wasn't bad by itself.

However, Daniel fell in a kind of despair the moment he saw the youth in front of him.

'We are not his opponents.'

He was famous as a commander who didn't know what fear was.

But this time was different.

He lost his breath at the nasty fear of Roan.

"Grrrrrrrrr."

The youth let out a cry that resembled a beast.

He had red hair, red eyebrows, and red eyes.

He was Roan.

"Kuaaaaaa!"

A cry exploded out.

Daniel stepped back and pulled his sword out.

“The knights are to face that bastard with me.”

He spoke in a calm voice.

“The normal soldiers are to escape without even looking back.”

“Corps commander!”

The soldiers yelled with a surprised expression.

“It’s an order! Flee!”

It was an order close to despair.

Daniel charged forward and ran towards Roan.

Abel and the knights followed his back.

‘A moment, if we can tie him up for a moment.....’

When he thought up to there.

Paat!

Travias spear split the air.

Swush!

At the same time, the spear became larger than before.

“Hup!”

“Impossible!”

Daniel and the knights looked at the spear that became three or four times larger and ground their teeth.

They swung their respective weapons and tried to block Roan’s attack.

Cheeng!

A heavy sound of metal clashing was heard.

At the same time.

Boom! Booboom!

Daniel and the other knights were flung to the sides.

“Kugh.”

“Cough!”

They rolled on the ground.

“Kuhuhuhu!”

Roan laughed strangely and then charged the ground.

He arrived in front of the knights that were on the ground in an instant.

As he held the spear upside down, the long spear shrunk to the size of a long sword.

Stab.

The spear pierced the chest of the knight like that.

“Grr.”

The young knight couldn't even fight back at all and died.

“Die!”

“Get him!”

Daniel and the other knights raised their intent.

Roan crushed the head of the dead knight with his right leg and lightly jumped.

Swush!

At that moment, the spear became larger.

Roan then jumped into the air.

Daniel and the knights just blinked while having lost their objective.

‘That spear is maybe.....’

Daniel looked at the spear that changed length as it wished and frowned.

As he remembered, there was only one spear like that in the world.

‘Travias spear?’

Then, the enlarged spear shrank quickly again.

It became the size of a normal spear in an instant.

Roan twisted his body in the air and balanced himself.

It was a soft and fluent movement.

He arrived at the back of the knights.

The backs of the knights were exposed to Roan in an instant.

Roan instinctively swung his spear and tried to cut off their heads.

Strength was put behind the wrist and palm by its own.

When Travias spear was about to split the air again.

“Kuhk!”

Roan suddenly bent his back and let out a strange sound.

Because he felt a sickening pain inside his body.

“Kuuuuuuu.”

A groan was heard.

The red color of his hair, eyebrows, and eyes became even more dense.

On top of that, even his skin started to turn red.

“Cough!”

Every time he coughed, flames appeared from his body and then disappeared.

Roan wasn't normal right now.

The cause was that he had operated the Flamdor mana technique unreasonably to save his allies.

Meanwhile, the heat in the plain entered his body and the balance of his mana collapsed.

As he saw the 7th corps and rose troop getting massacred in front of his eyes, his emotions stirred.

In that really short instance, he lost control over his mana. But that short moment was the problem.

The mana started to overflow on its own.

And the overflowing of the mana made his emotions shake even more.

Thanks to that, the overflowing became more and more severe the more time passed.

In the end, Roan lost himself to the mana.

Now, there was no way to control the mana that was jumping



everywhere.

If this state continued even a little bit more, the overflowing mana wouldn't be able to bear it and then his body would explode or split apart.

“Cough!”

Small flames appeared as he coughed.

Daniel saw that and raised his sword high.

“This is the moment! Kill him right now!”

They realized that Roan's body wasn't normal.

Daniel and the knights ran towards Roan.

A blue light flowed along the sword.

“Die!”

The knights yelled with all their strength.

Right before the sword was about to tear up Roan.

“Kua!”

Roan swung his spear and let out a strange noise.

At that moment, his surroundings were set on fire.

Cheng! Checheng!

A clear sound of metal clashing rang out.

The knights couldn't pierce through the path of fire.

“Press him down!”

However Daniel didn't fall back.

He thought that this was the last opportunity to kill Roan.

Cheng! Checheng! Cheng!

The sound of metal was heard continuously.

Sparks and fire appeared along the path of fire.

Spat!

Finally, Daniel's swords sliced Roan's wrist.

However, it was a really shallow wound.

“Kuaaaaaa!”

Roan let out a cry and held his spear.

Stab.

At that moment, the thickness of the spear became that of a wrist.

Woong. Woong. Woong.

A heavy sound sounded out.

Travias spear split the air.

Puk!

The knights were bounced off along with a loud sound.

“Kugh!”

Although they had raised their swords and blocked the blow, the strength behind the spear was too amazing.

Roan swung the huge spear as if it was nothing.

And every time he did that, the knights were flung to the sides.

At that moment.

“We will also help!”

A group of people appeared alongside the loud yell.

They were the veteran soldiers that had been with Daniel the longest.

Approximately 200 soldiers raised their weapons and appeared.

“I told you to retreat!”

Daniel yelled while swinging his sword.

The soldiers pushed back Roan without giving him any rest and replied in one voice.

“We are the rearguard army! Originally, the rearguard doesn’t have a life!”

This was their resolution they wouldn’t escape even if that meant death.

Daniel clicked his tongue.

“Stupid bastards.”

But he was quite proud and gratified.

‘I didn’t teach them wrongly anyways.’

He felt that strength was put into his limbs.

He yelled with strength.

“Fight with the resolution to die!”

“Yes! Understood!”

Anyways, the role of the rearguard army was to block the chasing of the enemy.

They just had to buy enough time for their allies to safely retreat.

‘Even if he seems to be a monster, a human is a human.’

He won’t be able to face all these soldiers and knights by himself.

No, even if that was possible, he would end up exhausted or get small and big wounds.

On top of that, Roan also wasn’t normal.

‘In the first place, we didn’t even hope for victory.’

Daniel was just planning to buy time.

That much was enough.

He charged the ground and ran towards Roan.

A blue light flowed along the sword.

Although it was faint and didn’t have a good shape, the strength of it was felt clearly.

Cheng!

Roan’s spear clashed with Daniel’s sword.

Below him, the other knights swung their swords.

Roan turned his body and swung his spear.

Cheng! Chencheng! Cheng!

Sparks appeared along with with the sound of metal.

Every time he turned his body, a red light appeared in his spear.

However, it was unreasonable to look at that as mana.

The red light became even more dense and it transformed to become a path of fire in the end.

Travias spear became a line of fire from the blade to its body.

“Damn! Is it fire again?!”

Daniel yelled and flung his body backwards.

And the other knights also did the same.

In an instant, only Roan was left alone.

Above that, the arrows the rearguard army fired poured down.

“Kuaaaaa!”

Roan let out a cry and spun his spear above his head.

No, he spun the line of fire.

Pubububung!

The rain of arrows exploded the instant it touched the line of fire.

“Keep firing! Keep firing!”

Abel yelled as if he had fallen in despair.

The archers fired arrows without stop.

However, not one of the archers could pierce through Roan's spear wall.

Then, Roan lightly rolled his foot and got in between the soldiers.

The spear that caught fire split the air and attacked.

“Monster like bastard!”

Daniel, who had fallen back, attacked while resolving himself to die again.

Cheng! Checheng!

However, their attacks were too easily blocked.

Roan fended off all of their swords with his spear and then swung it once more.

“Uaaaaak!”

“Kuk!”

The limbs of the knights were cut off cleanly.

The spear kept moving flexibly and then attacked Daniel's neck.

At that moment.

“Cough!”

Roan coughed with a painful expression.

He wriggled for a moment and then threw his spear away.

“Kuaaa!”

A scream mixed with pain.

An amazing fire surged up from all over his body.

“Die!”

Daniel and Abel brought all their last strength and stabbed him.

The moment the swords were about to touch Roan’s body.

‘Kug!’

An amazing repulsive force was felt at the tip of his hands.

Bang!

The path of fire exploded along with a loud sound.



“Kuhuk!”

Daniel and Abel couldn't endure it and were bounced off.

Their swords were half melted and there were flames on their elbows and shoulders.

“Damn it!”

Daniel and Abel fell back and after putting out the fire, they looked at Roan.

“Kuaaaa!”

Roan was still struggling while screaming.

The fire that emanated out of his body made a huge pillar of fire.

‘There's nothing we can do.’

Daniel clenched his fists.

Even the sword with mana behind it was useless.

He made eye signs to Abel and started to slowly fall back.

“We are retreating.”

The short order was sent to the soldiers.

The soldiers just nodded without saying anything.

They started to step back really slowly.

And fortunately, Roan didn't show interest in them.

No, he wasn't able to.

“Kuaak!”

Because the mana that was overflowing in his body had started to reach the peak.

‘It seems like the mana is overflowing.....’

Daniel looked at the pillar of fire emanating out of Roan's body.

‘It would be good if he died like this.’

Those were his honest feelings

For a monster like that to exist in Rinse kingdom was a horrible thing and a disastrous devil for Istel kingdom.

When the rearguard army was getting farther from Roan, contrary to them, the 2nd rose troop was running towards Roan.

“Troop commander Roan!”

They also saw Roan absorbing fire.

And of course, the look of his hair growing and turning red.

They felt awe at the look of battling the rearguard alone.

However, they realized that Roan’s situation wasn’t normal quite late.

‘We are saving the troop commander ourselves!’

When the 2nd rose troop moved quite close to Roan.

“Kuhok!”

Roan’s screams stopped.

At the same time, the fire pillar that was burning fiercely died off.

‘Di, did it turn fine?’

Austin looked at Roan with uneasy eyes.

Then, wind blew at his back.

But it wasn't the west wind.

‘This?’

Austin and the soldiers opened their eyes abruptly.

Swaaaaaa!

The wind blew towards Roan.

‘Kuk! Dangerous.’

Austin realized that something wasn't right.

He made a sign towards the 2nd rose troop.

They laid down on the ground as if they had practiced it.

At that moment.

Baaaaaang!

A huge explosion occurred with an amazing sound.

The wind that was blowing towards Roan started to spread towards the sides again.

Alongside that came the huge fire.

“Kugh!”

“Don’t raise your heads!”

The members of the 2nd rose troop buried their faces onto the ground.

And fortunately, the fire surged over the ground.

“Kuaaaaa!”

Roan cried out one more time.

He was burning his mana currently.

No, precisely speaking, he was sucking the heat scattered in the atmosphere and burning the mana above his abilities.

Because of that, the mana hole and the mana road inside his body ripped and regenerated, and repeated doing that.

If this continued, it was obvious that his entire body would explode.

But there was nothing that could be done.

Roan had lost his sanity and there was no method in which others could approach him.

At least, there was nothing a human could do.

Then.

Spat!

The fiercely burning fire was split up.

And among that split space, a beautiful woman appeared.

She had blue hair and really transparent skin.

She, who was wearing a sky dress, was barefoot but that was meaningless.

Because she was floating in the air just like a cloud.

“In the end, you became like this.”

She had a beautiful voice.

She was the woman that was looking at Roan inside Biate’s place.

“Although I don’t like you, I can’t go against Biate’s will.”

The woman approached Roan who was covered in fire and shook her hand.

At that moment, a huge orb of a blue light covered her and Roan. The fire that was spreading out was caught inside that orb.

“The one who has my tear.”

The expression of the woman was kind of stifled.

She softly covered Roan’s cheeks with her hands.

The red flame escaped her hands and fled.

The woman whispered with a clear and pretty voice.

“I, the water elemental king Ellaim, have come to rescue you.”

## Chapter 79 : Overflow (3)

---

Ellaim returned to the resting place again after Biate died in Poskein lake.

It was because of Biate's will.

<The one that enters my place and who fate has touched. Protect that person for me.>

Ellaim waited for 50 years to fulfill her will.

And if the one that entered the resting place was someone capable to follow Biate's back, she was planning to make a contract and lead him to the lake.

Because the last piece Biate left was over there.

But maybe it was fate playing with her, or a god teasing her, but the one that entered Biate's place was learning Reid's mana technique.

The mana technique of the enemy that killed Biate.

If that guy hadn't absorbed her tear, and if it wasn't for Biate's last will, Ellaim would have returned to the elemental world.

'Although it's displeasing and uncomfortable, this may also be

fate.'

Ellaim fulfilled Biate's will.

She watched the guy from a close place.

And on top of that, she had even wanted to help when his life was in danger.

But the guy overcame the difficulties by himself.

'But of course, being able to overcome that danger was also because of my tear.'

The overflowing of the Flamdor mana technique.

Every dangerous time, Ellaim's tear calmed down the overflowing mana.

'But this time it's different.'

Even before Ellaim's tear could show its strength, the heat in his body and the surrounding heat were mixed together and repeated exploding and overflowing.

It was a situation where you wouldn't be able to endure it with the body of a human.



If this situation continued a little bit more, it was obvious that his entire body would explode or tear apart and die.

‘I also thought about letting him die like this.....’

But she didn’t want to end Biate’s last wish like that.

On top of that.

‘Excluding that he’s learning the Flamdor mana technique, he’s quite a fine guy.’

The results of having looked after him until now was that he was a human worth saving.

Ellaim showed her hidden body like that.

She poured the essence of water over Roan’s head.

But it wasn’t at the level of what humans absorbed and felt.

It was the best of the best.

It was the cleanest and most perfect essence of water.

Swuuuush.

The fire that was emanating from Roan's body shook roughly.

It was resisting against Ellaim's water.

'The Flamdor mana technique wasn't made by a human.'

Ellaim shook her head at the rough repulsive force she felt at the tip of her hands.

Even she didn't know the exact identity of the Flamdor mana technique.

Only, she couldn't think that a mana technique was so strong that it was able to oppose the strength of a spirit king was made by a human.

'It's a disgustingly rough and strong force.'

Ellaim's face stiffened.

'Even Reid was eaten up by this strength.'

The deeper the achievements in the mana technique, the deeper his temperament would become more explosive and urgent.

The reason he came to find Biate all the way in her cave, regardless of her denial, was also because of this.

Ellaim looked at Roan's face.

‘My strength and the strength of my tear will calm down your Flamdor mana technique.’

Just looking at the growth speed of the technique, the speed could be a bit slower.

However, the heat inside his body wouldn't overflow as it wished or made him lose his nature.

‘On top of that, if you discover the mystery Reid and Biate realized before they died, you would be able to attain an unimaginable strength.’

Even Ellaim couldn't imagine that strength.

Because she only controlled one force, the essence of water.

‘One more reason has been added to look after him.’

Ellaim bent her fingers and brought up more essence of water.

Frrrr!

The fire that was emanating out of Roan's body resisted roughly one more time.

However, as the understanding of the technique was still shallow, it was still too early to beat the strength of an elemental king.

The fire died down even more.

Swuuush.

The fire that was caught in the blue orb was absorbed inside of Roan's body.

The flames that were moving around his body roughly found stability and then returned to the mana hole.

Even the red features returned to the original looks.

‘Because an overwhelming amount of mana overflowed, the mana hole and the mana road became bigger and more solid.’

From misfortune to a blessing.

Ellaim smiled bitterly and clenched her fists tightly.

As she had calmed down the fire, only her tear and the essence remained now.

After Ellaim woke up the strength of the tear, she mixed it up with the essence of water.

Paat!

Roan's body was filled with the essence of water in an instant.

Ellaim gathered the essence around him and covered Roan's mana hole gently.

Just as if she covered it with a thin cloth.

'If I do this, even if the fire essence explodes, it won't come out of the mana hole.'

Ellaim let out a long sigh and took off her hands slowly.

Roan's face seemed much more comfortable now.

Ellaim looked at that face for a moment and then pressed on Roan's forehead with her index finger.

She planted what had just happened inside Roan's memories.

It still wasn't time for them to meet and converse yet.

“I hope you don't disappoint Biate.....”

Ellaim's voice softly flowed out.

Swush.

The blue orb disappeared.

At the same time, Ellaim also disappeared.

Tuk.

Roan slowly fell.

Just as if he was asleep.

“Troop commander!”

The soldiers of the 2nd rose troop yelled in one voice.

Ellaim's appearance and retreat happened in just an instant.

Because of that, in the eyes of the soldiers, it was seen as if a blue orb shined for an instant and then the fire disappeared.

“Troop commander Roan!”

The soldiers ran towards Roan with weird looks.

‘What was that just now?’

‘I feel like there was someone over there.’

As it was a really short instant, they couldn’t even see Ellaim properly.

Austin and the soldiers kneeled down around Roan.

Roan was lying down like a dead rat.

Gulp.

Everyone looked at him with nervous looks.

Then.

Blink.

Roan abruptly opened his eyes and sat up with his upper body.

“Huhuk!”

The soldiers were surprised and gulped in air.

However, they got happy at the truth that Roan was alive and yelled.

“Troop commander! Are you okay?”

“You aren’t hurt?”

They had expressions filled with worry.

And extravagant voices.

But even so, Roan still had an absent minded expression. His eyes had lost focus.

He was concentrating on the voice Ellaim had left inside his head.

‘So that silver water drop was Ellaim’s tear.’

At this moment, the identity of the coldness inside his body was revealed.

‘Although the growth speed of the mana technique slowed down, it became stable.’



On top of it all.

‘If I can awaken the mysteries.....’

He may be able to attain a strength he couldn’t even imagine.

Roan took in a deep breath.

“Troop commander!”

“Can you hear my voice?”

The soldiers yelled even louder when they saw that Roan didn’t show any reactions.

Olly then did Roan brightly smile and look at everyone’s faces.

“I’m fine.”

At that moment, a smile blossomed on the worried faces of the soldiers.

“Ah! How great! What a relief!”

They let out a long sigh.

Roan tried to stand up.

Then.

Boom.

The body rose as if it was flicking and then fell forward.

“Troop commander!”

The soldiers supported Roan with surprised looks.

Roan had a confused expression.

‘My body feels light.’

It wasn’t that he was full of vitality.

He had a feeling that his muscles and strength improved to become much better..

Roan stood up with the help of the soldiers.

“Are you really okay?”

Austin asked carefully.

Roan nodded and moved his body everywhere.

‘This feels just like I was reborn again.’

A feeling like he just took off heavy armor.

Roan realized what kind of situation he was in.

‘As the mana overflowed, the impurities in my body were removed, and the muscles and bones became stronger.’

He had vaguely heard that there were cases like that when the understanding of the technique deepened.

But of course, in Roan’s case, it wasn’t that his understanding deepened but it was because of the overflowing.

‘Is it a blessing from a misfortune.’

Roan bitterly smiled and moved.

As he got a hold of himself, what he had to do now was to care of Aaron.

And fortunately, as Aaron was lying flat on the ground, he didn’t receive any injuries from Roan’s explosion.

“Corps commander.”

Roan carefully shook Aaron and woke him up.

“Mmm.”

A shallow groan came out of his mouth.

Aaron’s eyes shook.

He frowned and then slowly opened his eyes.

Soon, the soldiers that survived gathered around him.

“Mmm. It’s Roan.”

A weak voice.

Aaron flinched his shoulders as if he was trying to raise his upper body.

Roan extended his two hands and received him.

“Thank you.”

Aaron bitterly smiled and raised his upper body.

Only then could he see the scenery.

The burnt plains and the black smoke.

The corpses that were scattered in the surroundings.

‘Right. We fell into the trap of the Istel bastards.’

Aaron frowned.

His head hurt as if it would split.

The chasing army composed by the 6th and 7th corps quickly chased down the main army of Istel.

Although Aaron actually didn’t like the idea of chasing, as it was an order of Benjamin he couldn’t do anything about it.

Only, as the war had ended in their victory, he would just pretend to chase them.

However.

‘The rearguard army that we actually faced wasn’t really that much.’

They suffered defeat and retreated consecutively.

‘I felt that something was fishy.....’

Even before that, it was the rearguard that has given a big blow to the eastern army through perfect traps, surprise attacks, and ambushes.

But for that kind of rearguard to suffer consecutive defeats without any reasons was quite a suspicious situation.

Aaron wanted to stop the chase by then.

However, the thought of the commander of the 6th corps was different.

Rather, he brought up the morale and went off to chase and annihilate them perfectly.

In the end Aaron hid his fishy feeling and could only chase his back.

‘In that situation, the 6th corps that were in front fell in an ambush.....’

Aaron and the 7th corps could only charge forward to rescue them.

‘And in the end, we fell into a trap.’

Aaron clenched his fists.

‘The 6th corps commander died as soon as he fell into the trap.’

He felt bitter.

Because of a useless commander, several soldiers lost their lives.

He took in a deep breath and looked at Roan.

“Roan. What happened with the other commanders that were with me?”

He had plentifully guessed what could have happened.

But he could only ask just in case.

Roan took in a breath and then replied in a calm voice.

“They have all died.”

“Ah.....”

A low exclamation came out of Aaron’s mouth.

The moment they were trapped in the grand shield, Gale, Mendel, the troop commanders, and the adjutants ran towards him.

They covered him without any empty spaces from the fire.

The last words Gale left him rang in his head.

<Corps commander. Be sure to stay alive and lead the other soldiers.>

Aaron shook his head.

“Right. So they have all died.....”

His voice was wet.

Something hot surged in his eyes.

“I’m the only one alive. This useless piece of body survived.....”

These were words as if he was rebuking himself.

Roan and the others couldn’t say anything while they lowered their heads.



“Whew.”

Aaron let out a long sigh and started to shed hot tears.

But those weren't tears shed by a corps commander.

They were tears shed by a fellow comrade.

“I've lost good allies, excellent friends.”

Aaron raised his head and looked at Roan and the soldiers.

“We are gathering the corpses of the fellow soldiers. We won't leave this place until it's perfectly gathered.”

The chase was meaningless now.

“Yes. Understood.”

Roan and the others replied in a hot voice.

They slowly got up and moved.

It was to gather the corpses of their comrades prudently.

Roan first supported Aaron.

As his body still wasn't normal, he needed some rest.

The sound of a horn trumpet was heard at the side of the gorge.

Puuuuuuu!

Roan stopped his feet and looked towards the gorge.

At that moment, a displeased look appeared in his face.

‘Benjamin.’

The ones that appeared with the horn trumpet was the main army of the eastern territory.

They slowly crossed over the plains and then fell after they got on their formations.

After a while, they split to the sides and Benjamin appeared with several corps commanders.

“Commander Tate.”

Benjamín rode his horse and slowly approached.

His expression was quite stifled.

Happiness, anger, and annoyance.

There were all of those emotions in his expression.

“Just what is this look?”

A reprimanding sound.

‘They fell in the trap just like I thought.’

Benjamin yelled for delight.

‘I have to ask his responsibility.’

He was planning to cut off the accumulated merits of the 7th corps.

Aaron fixed his posture and bowed deeply.

“While we were chasing the army of Istel, the 6th corps fell in the trap set up by the enem.....”

When he talked up to there.

“Stop! Are you accusing the 6th corps right now! Who did I give the commanding rights to?”

At the rebuking sound, Aaron hesitated and then replied.

“Me.”

“Right. I gave the commanding rights to Aaron Tate of the 7th corps and not to the 6th corps. Then, whose fault is it that the 6th corps fell in a trap and your troop suffered a blow close to annihilation?”

“That.....”

Aaron couldn't reply.

Looking at it this way, it was his fault as he was leading the chasing troop.

However.

‘The commander of the 6th corps didn't listen to my order.’

The one that didn't obey the orders was the commander of the 6th corps.

Because of that, even the 7th corps suffered a blow close to annihilation.

As Aaron couldn't reply, Benjamin asked in a voice that had mockery mixed in it.

“Why can't you speak? Whose fault is it?”

In the end, Aaron replied in a suffering voice.

“It's mine.”

He couldn't endure it and shook his head.

Roan, who was observing at the sides, clenched his fists tightly.

‘Benjamin!’

He knew that he was a selfish and powerless bastard.

And even knew that he didn't like the 7th corps.

But he didn't know that he would step out this obstinately.

His entire body trembled.

Then, Aaron grabbed Roan's hand.

‘It's fine.’

Eyes implying that.

Roan forcefully breathed in and calmed down his emotions.

“On top of that, what’s this situation?”

Benjamin pointed at the plains.

The soldiers gathering the corpses of the allies.

Aaron replied in a calm voice.

“We are gathering the corpses of the comrades that died in this battle.”

“Corpse gathering? Tch!”

Benjamin frowned and clicked his tongue.

He was planning to keep pushing Aaron to a corner.

“I think I certainly laid the order to chase the enemy army and annihilate them?”

“However, our losses were quite severe, and I judged as keeping the chase was meaningle.....”

“Stop!”

Benjamin shouted.

A stiff expression.

His voice lowered down coldly.

“Judge? The judging is done by me and not you. You just have to follow my orders!”

Aaron clenched his fists.

He wanted to talk back immediately, but he couldn't do so.

They were still at war, and the place they were standing at was a battlefield.

Not obeying to the orders meant that you were committing a sin that could lead to punishments according to the situation.

‘Come on. Come with all the excuses and bark at me.’

Benjamin opened his eyes thinly and glared at Aaron.

He waited for Aaron to talk back.

‘I will confine you immediately.’

It was a tactic to make him be able in setting certain punishment perfectly.

However, Aaron endured it better than he thought.

Benjamin smacked his lips and sent another order.

“Stop the gathering of the corpses immediately and chase the enemy army.”

“Commander.”

Aaron looked at Benjamin fixedly.

Eyes implying to change the order.

However there were no changes in Benjamin’s thoughts.

“Tch. We can’t waste time for the ones that died stupidly.”

He looked at Aaron fixedly and continued saying.

“Are you maybe not able to follow my orders?”

This was a perfect threat.



But funnily, his expression and eyes was filled with a feeling for him not to follow his orders.

‘Benjamin.....’

Aaron ground his teeth.

If he only wasn't a corps commander, he would already have charged into Benjamin.

However.

‘If I do that here, I will also put my underlings in a bad situation.’

If it was Benjamin, he was someone that wouldn't be enough with that.

In the end Aaron chose to bow.

“Yes. I will follow your.....”

When he talked up to there.

Roan, that was looking at the situation by the sides, took one step forward.

“Commander.”

They were fierce eyes and a cold voice.

Roan looked at Benjamin’s two eyes fixedly.

“We can’t follow that order.”

## Chapter 80 : Overflow (4)

---

“What did you say just now?”

Benjamin frowned.

He put on an expression to show that he was displeased and angry.

However, there was delight in his two eyes.

‘Done. I will have to get rid of this thorn first.’

He knew that most of the merits done by the 7th corps were thanks to Roan.

‘If I can’t have him then it would be better to break him.’

He opened his two eyes abruptly and put on a threatening expression.

However, Roan was quite calm and composed.

“I can’t follow your orders in chasing the enemy’s army.”

A look without getting dispersed.

He continued saying with a calm voice.

“Our chasing troop suffered a blow close to annihilation. On top of that, we are already near enemy’s boundary. If we chase them now, it’s difficult to give them a big blow.”

It was quite a reasonable and appropriate words.

Aaron and some commanders nodded and then looked at Benjamin and cleared their throats.

“Thi, thi, this.....”

Benjamin’s face became red.

Roan stared at Benjamin for a moment and then turned to look at the 7th corps.

And naturally, the sight of everyone followed Roan’s.

“Mmm.”

Some commanders and staff officers exclaimed.

The 7th corps wasn’t in their normal state.

They were barely alive but the soldiers that suffered severe

injuries, the suffering soldiers that were looking at their deceased comrades, soldiers screaming for having their limbs cut off, etc.

Roan looked at the soldiers and got a firm resolution.

‘I will at least save them.’

He turned to look at Benjamin again.

“There’s no commander that lays an order to a corps that’s close to annihilation to keep chasing. Lay down your order.”

An earnest voice.

Some soldiers started to tremble.

‘If I make a mistake, the atmosphere will change.’

Benjamin felt urgent.

He opened his eyes abruptly and yelled.

“You! You dare to disobey the orders of a superior!”

The atmosphere turned serious.

Roan clenched his fists

He felt so stifled as if there was a rock on his chest.

The fire essence in his mana hole twitched and roamed in his body.

Roan looked at Benjamin fixedly.

“Commander. It’s not disobeying.”

“Shut up!”

Benjamin yelled with a red face.

In the end, even Roan couldn’t hold it anymore.

“Commander!”

A voice that could shake the mountain.

The mana that was inside his body exploded outside his body through his voice.

An amazing spirit emanated with Roan at the center.

Hiiiiiiing!

The war horses burbled and the commanders and soldiers had surprised expressions.

“Thi, what is.....”

Benjamin even staggered because he became really surprised.

‘This bastard even knew how to use mana?’

His face turned pale and his eyes trembled.

Roan looked at that Benjamin fixedly and slowly moved his feet.

Gulp.

Everyone gulped dry saliva and looked at that scene.

Roan stood in front of Benjamin and continued saying in a calm voice.

“Lay down a proper order. The war has ended. Commander.”

“.....”

Silence fell in an instant.

It was a silence that clogged your breath.

Even when there were tens of thousands of soldiers, you couldn't even hear a breath.

'Da, damn it!'

Benjamin got a hold of himself late.

'I'm the commander of the eastern region! I'm the superior in the eastern region!'

He looked at Roan fixedly.

"Impudent bastard!"

He barely managed to yell.

"All the judgements and decisions are done by me. You just have to follow my orders!"

He continued saying.

"The 7th corps will continue to chase the enemy's army. That's my decision and order."

Benjamin didn't back down.



Roan shook his head.

“Commander. Can you.....”

“Shut up!”

Benjamin yelled with all his strength.

In the first place, he didn't think of holding a normal conversation.

‘Benjamin.....’

Roan ground his teeth.

‘My past life also got messed up because of you.’

But even this life was getting messed up by him.

He wanted to kick him in the chin once.

But he couldn't.

He was a noble with the title of Viscount and the commander representing the eastern region.

He wasn't someone a normal person, and a mere troop commander at that, could do something.

'If I face him, I may get imprisoned or get exiled, to say nothing of becoming a monarch.'

Because of that, he endured the nonsense orders and kept enduring.

"Hmph! If you continue not wanting to follow my orders...."

Benjamin snorted lightly and shook his right hand.

Five staff officers that were behind him came running quickly.

They were the closest people Benjamin had and they all knew how to use mana.

"Arrest Roan and detain him in the rear of the camp. When the war ends, I will clearly name your sins and lay down a punishment."

The order has been laid down.

Benjamin planned to overthrow the thorn like Roan in this opportunity.

‘Next is Aaron.’

His forehead got carved.

“Yes. Understood.”

The officers replied in one voice and moved.

Then.

“You can’t do that!”

The soldiers of the 2nd rose troop that were behind Roan blocked them.

“Huh?”

“Uh?”

Benjamin, Aaron, and even Roan had surprised expressions.

Austin, who was at the forefront of the soldiers, looked at Benjamin fixedly.

“You can’t take away troop commander Roan!”

Followed by him, the other soldiers added.

“That’s right!”

“It’s unfair treatment!”

Roan raised up the clearest merits in the war against Istel kingdom, and more than anyone else.

On top of that, disobeying Benjamin’s order this time was because that order was just too unreasonable.

As the soldiers of the 2nd rose troop saw it, Roan didn’t make any mistakes.

‘He must be jealous of troop commander’s merits!’

‘Benjamin Doyle is originally this kind of person!’

The soldiers clenched their fists.

Their hard resolution, that they wouldn’t step back at all, was felt.

‘If troop commander Roan gets imprisoned…….’

‘Doyle commander will lay down an unreasonable punishment.’

In the first place, it was important to prevent him from

incarcerating Roan.

Austin bent towards Benjamin.

“Troop commander Roan has raised outstanding merits in several battles. Take that into account.”

“Hmph!”

Benjamin immediately snorted.

“Impudent things. It’s not a problem mere soldiers can butt in!”

He looked at Roan and the soldiers alternately and shook his head.

“That commander and his underlings. Tch tch tch.”

The sound of clicking his tongue was heard clearly.

Roan looked at the soldiers blocking his front.

“You fall back.”

At those words, the soldiers shook their heads.

“We can’t do that. We will stay next to you until the very end.”

“We can’t send you off like this!”

The tension rose up.

Then, Benjamin’s voice was heard.

“What are you doing! Are you just going to watch?!”

At those words, the officers that were standing confused started to move again.

“No, no!”

Austin and the soldiers blocked them once again.

“Fuck off!”

The officers didn’t endure it anymore.

The officer that was standing at the front swung his fist towards Austin.

And it even had mana behind it.

“Kugh!”

Austin ground his teeth when he looked at the fist swinging at him.

Then.

Tuk!

One hand appeared abruptly and lightly blocked the flying fist.

“Ugh.”

The staff that swung the fist ground his teeth.

But the fist didn't move an inch.

“A fist that has mana behind it for a normal soldier. Don't you think that's too much?”

The person that blocked the officer's fist.

He was none other than Roan.

‘Wh, what kind of strength is this.....’

The officer became perplexed.

Roan pulled up mana and put strength in his hand.

Uduk.

The tips of the fingers carved in the fist of the officer.

“Uhhhhhhhhh.”

The officer groaned with a painful expression.

“This son of a bitch!”

“Let go!”

The other officers yelled and approached.

They suddenly swung their fists.

Fists that also had mana behind it.

‘In the end it turns out like this.’

Roan let out a short sigh and slightly fell back.

At the same time, the fist of the officer he was holding onto was pulled towards his chest.

“Huh?!”



The guy lost balance and was pulled forward.

The fists and kicks of the other officers fell onto his body.

Pubuk! Puk!

“Kugh!”

A heavy hitting sound was heard with the groan.

Roan let go of the fist as if he threw it and charged forward.

“Uh?!”

“Hup!

When the four officers were surprised and fell backwards.

Pabat!

Roan’s two fists split the air.

The attack was so fast you could only see the remnants of it.

Pububuk! Puk!

The fists landed on their faces and stomachs.

“Grr.”

They couldn't even fight back once and collapsed.

Roan raised his head to look at Benjamin.

Casual eyes.

Benjamin trembled unconsciously.

‘Damn. I, I am afraid!?’

Humiliation surged up.

Then, Roan lightly kicked.

Pubuk!

The officers that were kneeling down on the ground were hit on their chins and fell like that.

They had perfectly passed out looks.

Roan let out a long sigh.

He wanted to endure it until the end.

There were plenty of methods to get out even if he was imprisoned.

In the worst of the cases, he was even thinking of leaving the army.

‘But I can’t endure looking my troop members suffering at all.’

He couldn’t stand watching his subordinates get hit because of something personal.

Roan looked at Benjamin fixedly.

“I will go to the rear of the camp as you wish. Instead, spare the fault of my troop members.”

Benjamin just blinked at the sudden situation.

“Roan!”

“Troop commander!”

Aaron and the troop members yelled with a surprised expression.

However, Roan's expression was still calm.

'There are plenty of methods to pull down that bastard to the bottom.'

Even if he didn't do so, he was gathering information through Chris's agency.

But for now, protecting his troop members came first.

Then, Aaron butted in.

"No, if it's responsibility we are talking about, I the corps commander....."

But he couldn't continue speaking.

"Commander."

Roan interrupted him and whispered in his ear with a really low voice.

"Are you going to make the deaths of the several troop commanders and adjutants to become useless? You should remain here and lead the soldiers."

"Roan....."

The end of Aaron's words dimmed.

Why wouldn't he understand Roan's words?

"If you start chasing, don't chase them hurriedly but only pretend to do so."

Roan smiled faintly and then looked at Austin and the soldiers.

"You too, fall back."

"Troop commander....."

The troop members all clenched their fists and trembled.

They had expressions that they couldn't endure it because they were angry and felt that it was unfair.

Roan and the troop members exchanged gazes.

'Everyone, don't worry.'

Roan was confident.

He wanted to dig a deeper hole and lead Benjamin over there.

'I will bury you so deep you won't be able to get out.'

Backing down once for the future.

Roan raised his head and looked at Benjamin.

Benjamin just smacked his lips as if it was regrettable.

‘It would have been good if I also got Aaron mixed up in it.....’

The opportunity just now was regretful.

He looked at Roan and nodded.

“Good. I will do as you wish.”

There was no need to imprison or arrest a normal soldier.

He only needed Aaron and Roan.

Right before he finished speaking, some soldiers approached.

Roan saluted shortly towards Aaron.

“I will see you later.”

“I have no honor.”

Aaron lowered his face.

Roan forced a smile and walked.

The soldiers of the 2nd rose troop looked at him with stifled expressions.

Then, Benjamin's voice was heard.

He looked at the surrounding battlefield and let out a sigh.

“Whew. Anyways, this is really a mess. They got charred black. Tch tch tch.”

Benjamin clicked his tongue in a big way and continued saying.

“This is what they call a dog's death. Because you only do what you are ordered to without thinking ahead, you die in such a way. If you are a person you have to know to think by yourself and lay your own judgements. Tch.”

He spat out and sent down an order towards the officers.

“Take care of the corpses roughly. We lack time to gather them all and....”

A fishy smile appeared on his face.

“They aren’t worth it.”

It was a voice filled with mockery.

At that moment, Aaron’s and the soldier’s expressions stiffened.

Their entire body trembled.

They wanted to cleanly pour out curses.

‘If we make a fuss over here, Roan’s look will become funny.’

‘Troop commander Roan chose to get imprisoned for us. We have to endure it.’

Aaron and the soldiers clenched their fists.

They gulped down the surging rage for of Roan.

Then.

Paat!

Something appeared in front of Benjamin.



“Huh?!”

Everyone opened their eyes roundly and put surprised expressions.

But of course, the most surprised one was Benjamin.

“Kuk!”

A feeling his breath got cut off.

He looked at the guy that was grabbing his throat.

“Ro, kugh. Ro, Roa. Just what is.....Kugh.”

It was difficult to even speak.

“Co, commander!”

“You crazy bastard!”

The surrounding officers and commanders opened their eyes abruptly and approached.

Roan grabbed Travias spear with his left hand while still grabbing on Benjamin’s throat with his right hand.

Cheng!

The hidden blade of the spear showed itself.

At the same time.

Swush.

The spear became longer and then was stuck in front of the feet of the officers and commanders that were approaching.

Puk!

The ground was dug into and rocks scattered with a loud sound.

Roan said in a cold voice while not even looking at them.

“Until there. The moment you cross that, I will take Benjamin Doyle’s life.”

“Kughhhh.”

Benjamin struggled as if the strength behind the grip was painful.

At that look, the officers and commanders couldn’t approach anymore and fell back.

Roan looked at Benjamin's eyes properly.

“Benjamin.”

There were no honorifics anymore.

“It's fine if you lay an unreasonable order. And it's fine if you badmouth me. I can endure everything else. But.....” His voice lowered.

“I can't endure you mocking the deaths of my deceased comrades at all.”

Roan ground his teeth.

He tried to endure it but in the end, he couldn't.

‘I can't turn back anymore.’

He took in a deep breath.

‘Now that I started it, let's pull the roots.’

He got resolved.

‘I was wondering whether I had to stay in the 7th corps after the war ends or leave.....’

Thanks to Benjamin, he could stop doing so.

‘Let’s leave. I’m leaving after I clear things up cleanly.’

Roan inserted mana in his fists.

A look that he would send his chin flying at any moment.

Then.

Sounds of the jing, drums, and horn trumpets were heard far away from the gorge.

Roan saw through the smoke and looked towards the entrance.

He could see a huge flag with a flashy symbol.

The symbol in the flag was familiar.

He let out a long sigh.

He smacked his lips and a really low voice flowed out.

“Count Lancephil.....”

# Chapter 81 : Overflow (5)

---

“Kugh. Le, let this go. Kugh.”

Benjamin smiled fishily and rolled his eyes.

‘However angry you may be, you won’t be able to do anything to me.’

He was a noble and a supreme commander at that.

On top of that, even count Lancephil showed himself.

At the slip, this problem could become bigger.

“Kugh. Can’t you let this go!”

The tension turned up.

But Roan just looked at that Benjamin fixedly.

“Do you think I won’t be able to hit you?”

He put more strength in his grip.

“Kugh.”

His breath got cut off.

‘Actually, it is something unreasonable.’

Roan put on a bitter smile.

This was an exhibition.

Resorting to violence to a superior, and a noble at that was something unimaginable.

It was a sin that could get you executed at the spot.

But regardless of that, Roan wasn’t planning on leaving Benjamin like that.

‘It’s been revealed that I am learning mana.’

There was no way that they would execute a soldier that knew how to use mana.

Someone at the level of a knight was quite important even at the center of the kingdom.

He may receive some punishment, but he would be safe from execution.

On top of that, if Roan only evaded the execution, he had plenty of ways to deal with the following problems.

‘And also, it’s already spilled water.’

Grabbing the throat of a superior was already a big thing.

And it wouldn’t change if he hit him some times right now.

‘Now that I started, I have to clearly end it.’

He did his best on what he already started.

That was Roan's temperament.

Because of that, he could remain as an ordinary spearman from an army for 20 years.

Udk.

Strength was put behind the fist.

Benjamin opened his eyes roundly.

'Thi, this bastard. Really?'

When he thought up to that point.

Roan's fist split the air.

Pagak!

"Kuk!"

Benjamin's nose sat down with a dull sound.

"Thi, this crazy bastard!"

The surrounding corps commanders and staff officers approached with surprised expressions.



Roan didn't even look at them and swung Travias spear.

Puk!

The spear got stuck ahead of them.

"I told you. That if you get any closer, I will snap Benjamin's neck."

"Kugh."

The commanders and officers couldn't approach anymore.

They didn't know what to do and just looked at Benjamin's face.

A face covered with blood.

"Uhhhh."

Benjamin gritted his teeth and trembled.

He didn't know that Roan would actually hit him.

"So, son of a bitch. Do you think you will be safe aft....."

But he couldn't continue speaking.

Because Roan swung his fist once again.

Puk! Pubuk! Puk!

Roan punched Benjamin's face with a casual expression.  
His teeth broke and his nose completely broke.  
His eyelids and forehead teared up.

“Uoooooooo.”

Benjamin was not himself.

He tried to dodge Roan's fists but it was useless.

But because Roan increased Flamdor mana technique to the peak,  
he couldn't move his body as he wished.

But even so, it wasn't that Benjamin didn't use mana.

‘Ho, how is he this strong!’

Despair appeared in his face.

“Kuhok.”

Benjamin breathed in deeply.

It was difficult to breath because of his broken nose.

‘Please, someone stop this bastard.’

An earnest look.

But there was no one that stopped him.

In the end, a regrettable sound came out of Benjamin's mouth.

“Kugh. Ple, please sto, stop.....”

But Roan didn't stop hitting him.

‘This isn't simply revenge for what just happened.’

His eyes became fierce.

‘My past life. Revenge for having ruined it.’

Pubuk!

Consecutive punches landed on his face.

“Kugh! Kugh!”

Benjamin now even shed tears.

“Pl, please. Please stop.....”

He had thrown away his dignity and pride.

Fear of not knowing if he may lose if life if he kept getting hit paralyzed his rationality.

“Sob. Sob. Sob.”

The sorrowful crying sound rang in the plain.

But Roan just ignored it.

When he raised his fist once again.

“What is happening right now!”

A yell hit his ear.

Roan turned his head while still grabbing on Benjamin’s throat.

‘Count Lancephil.’

The one that had yelled was Io.

However, Io’s sight moved behind Io.

‘Pens.’

Pens, that had separated with him after the thing with the fake storage, was standing over there.

‘Maybe, already?’

Roan had a surprised expression.

Pens looked at that Roan and slightly winked.

A look that was smiling faintly and even nodding.

Roan let out a short sigh.

‘It seems like it was done faster than what I thought.’

A smile appeared in his face.

Only then did Roan loosen the hand that was choking Benjamin.

Tuk.

Benjamin fell as if he collapsed and buried his face on the ground.

“Huok. Huok. Huok.”

He breathed in coarsely and poured out tears.

Roan just looked at that Benjamin and wiped off the blood in his face.

Meanwhile, Io walked and stood in front of Roan.

“What happened?”

A blunt voice and expression.

Roan just bowed instead of replying.

“Si, sir count. What just happened.....”

When Roan stepped in and tried to explain the situation.

“Sob. Count Lancephil.”

Benjamin stood up.

“Mm.”

Io looked at Benjamin’s face and let out a low exclamation.

‘He’s completely broken.’

He didn’t have even a fine place.

Benjamin yelled out.

“Count Lancephil! A mere commoner troop commander bastard has insulted me! On top of that, even the soldiers of the 7th corps have disobeyed my orders and rebelled!”

He wasn’t himself.

Io frowned and looked at Roan.

Then, Aaron walked to the front and bowed.

“Sir count. Actually.....”

The explanation happened for a while.

He explained everything that happened slowly.

As Io was here anyways, he didn’t need to be wary of Benjamin.

“Mm.”

Benjamin, that heard everything, glared at Benjamin.

‘Benjamin. You stupid bastard spilled the plate because of greed of merits.’

He could know why there were this many allied corpses even when they had won the war.

‘On top of that, to badmouth the fallen comrades.....Trash like bastard.’

Io clicked his tongue with a displeased expression.

As he was originally a soldier that roamed the battlefield, he thought of comrades and allies quite importantly.

Because of that, Benjamin’s doings made him really angry.

Benjamin, that didn’t know how Io was feeling, said nonsense.

“Chasing a retreating enemy army is a basic thing in strategy. The 7th corps commander didn’t have the abilities and is just putting up excuses. On top of that, it’s not that the corpses are going to disappear, so we can do it after we chase them.....”

When he talked up to there.

“Shut up!”

Io couldn't endure it anymore and yelled.

“Ye, yes?”

Benjamin staggered with a surprised expression.

Io looked at Benjamin's eyes fixedly.

“Because of your useless pride and your greed on merits, more than 10.000 soldiers lost their lives. It's not enough with apologizing while bowing but you even badmouth them? Trash like bastard.”

A cold voice.

“Co, count Lancephil. I, it's not that I.....”

Only then did Benjamin get a hold of himself.

He had realized what kind of person Io was late.

But even if it was late, it was just too late.

“Benjamin Doyle.”

Io glared at Benjamin scarily.

As he made a handsign to his back, the leader of the knights Kali Owells approached.

He took out a scroll from his chest.



Swush.

Io spread the scroll towards Benjamin.

“This is a dismissal order for you.”

At that moment, Benjamin, Aaron, Roan and the soldiers of the eastern army put surprised expression.

“Ju, just what is.....”

Benjamin received the paper with trembling hands.

It was clearly a dismissal order from his seat of the eastern region commander.

“Just why.....?”

Benjamin looked at Io.

Io’s expression was fierce.

“Setting up a formation at the rear Nerf region, instead of Bink region when Istel kingdom first started attacking. Battling against the enemy army more than 20 times and not being able to win. Cutting off assistance to the commanders that were patrolling while searching the eastern region to annihilate the enemy.”

The more he talked, the more Benjamin’s face turned white.

He kind of knew that Io was reporting the merits situation of the eastern region and the 7th corps to the royal palace.

However, he didn't know that he would have grasped all these things this accurately.

‘Count Lancephil wouldn't have had any mid because he was defending the eastern region. How.....?’

It felt like someone had organized the information and gave it to him.

‘Ah!’

At that moment, Benjamin turned his head and looked at Roan.

‘Maybe, this bastard?’

The information squad Roan set up.

If it was them, they would be able to urgently take care of the information of the eastern region.

Roan's and Benjamin's sights interlocked.

Roan smiled just as if he read Benjamin's thoughts.

“Ah.....”

Benjamin let out a low exclamation.

‘It was that bastard.’

The puzzle fitted.

It wasn't enough with annihilated the enemy army entering the eastern region and attacking the supply storage, but he even utilized the information troop and was perfectly grasping the situation of the eastern army.

‘Scary bastard.’

Roan was more amazing and scary than what he had thought.

Just like Benjamin thought, the one that reported the situation of the eastern army ro Io was Roan.

With Io's temperament, it was obvious that if he got to know Benjamin's failures he wouldn't sit still.

Roan judged as Io would certainly report it to the royal palace.

‘It would have been difficult if this bastard still remained as the supreme commander even after this war ended.’

Roan glared at Benjamin with calm eyes.

‘Although the order came faster than what I thought.....’

The reason why he was glad to see Pens appearing with Io was precisely because of this.

Benjamin wasn't his superior anymore.

Things were untying better than thought.

Then, Io's voice was heard.

“Although the orders of the royal palace was to chase you off the army and dismiss you from your seat.....”

He ground his teeth.

“I'm not planning to end it with just that. It wasn't enough to lay an unreasonable order to the chasing troop and suffer an amazing blow, but you even badmouth the deceased allies.”

Io made a hand sign to his back.

Two knights approached and grabbed Benjamin's shoulders.

I will carefully investigate and grasp your actions and behaviours and ask you your sin. Imprison him at the rear of the camp.”

“Yes. Understood.”

The knights replied in one voice and then moved away.

“Cou, count Lancephil! I, I feel it to be unfair! I just did my best for Rinse kingdom!”

Benjamin got dragged and yelled.

However Io didn't even look at him.

And that was the same for the other corps commanders and staff

officers.

They didn't need to be wary of Benjamin or flatter him.

Because Benjamin wasn't his superior anymore.

No, from now on, it would be better to take some distance.

If they made a mistake, they could get the same punishment as Benjamin.

“Roan.”

At Io's call, Roan bowed once again.

“Yes. Count Lancephil.”

Roan was composed even after making Benjamin's face to become a bloody one.

Io let out a long sigh with stifled eyes.

‘What to do.....’

He personally wanted to applaud him at his actions.

But military laws were laws.

If he let one thing pass, the discipline could crumble.

“I know what you were thinking when you did that. However.....”

Io let out a short sigh and continued speaking.

“Resorting to violence against a noble is a sin. I will ask you your sin after this.”

What was fortunate was that the dismissal order came ahead of this, so the sin of resorting to violence against a superior wasn't implied.

“Yes. I understand.”

Roan replied with a composed expression.

Aaron wanted to step up and tried to defend him, but Io closed his eyes and shook his head.

It meant not to step in.

‘There's nothing good by arguing in an open place.’

Aaron understood Io's meaning and shut his mouth.

Two knights approached and grabbed Roan's shoulders.

Then, Roan that was silent carefully opened his mouth.

“Count Lancephil.”

Io just looked at him as if implying what happened.

Roan hesitated for a moment and then bowed.

“I want to retrieve the corpses of my comrades.”

“Mm.”

Io gulped in the silence.

‘Even if he’s different to Benjamin, he’s just too much.’

Even the size of the plate was different.

The one that suited the position of supreme commander was Roan, and not Benjamin.

Io pondered for a moment and then nodded.

“Fine. Only, I will imprison you at the rear of the camp after the retrieving ends.”

“Yes. I understand.”

Roan bowed and then moved.

He carefully retrieved the corpses of the burnt soldiers.

Io looked at that and let out a long sigh.

‘What to do.....’

He felt stifled.

The deeper he thought, the pondering also deepened.

\*\*\*\*\*

The retrieval of the corpses was done quickly.

And Roan got imprisoned just like the order.

“Count Lancephil. Although Roan did something wrong, that’s all because of Benjamin Doyle. Take that into account please.”

Aaron earnestly defended Roan.

Io touched his chin and fell in his thoughts.

‘The reason we could win this war was because of Roan. That’s an irrefutable truth.’

Roan made a merit bigger than anymore.

If only this didn’t happen, he could even get promoted to corps commander.

‘On top of that, Roan’s ability is too precious to kill him like this.’

Io let out a long sigh once again.

Aaron looked at that and couldn’t open his mouth as he wished.

Because he also knew how deeply Io was thinking.

Then, Kali that was looking at the situation, said with a blunt voice.

“Violence against a noble is a sin. If you let this go, they will start talking at our backs even more.”



Those were right words.

Aaron said with an urgent voice.

“But shouldn’t we have to take into account Roan’s merits?”

Those also were right words.

“These aren’t merits to just be ignorant of and cover them.”

He fell in his thoughts once again.

Kali shook his head.

“Then, how about exile him to a dangerous territory and exempt him from the capital punishment?”

“Exile?”

Io showed a reaction.

Kali shrugged his shoulders and said.

“As everyone says that his talent is too valuable, can’t we send him to a fortress as a guard or as a slave?”

Aaron got surprised and shook his hands.

“We can’t make Roan’s talent rot in a place like that.”

At those words, Kali replied with a blunt voice.

“Laws are more important than talent. Law. On top of that.....”

Kali looked at Aaron’s eyes fixedly.

“If we exempt him from his sins and he remains here, will the other commanders see in a good way? They may probably try to harm him.”

“That.....”

Aaron couldn’t speak anymore and shut his mouth.

He didn’t have the words to refute back.

And even if he didn’t get harmed, it was obvious that he may get really handicapped in the merits awards.

Then, Io that was in his thoughts, showed a faint smile.

“I think that exile him will be good, just like commander Kali says.”

“Ah.....”

Aaron let out a low exclamation.

He wanted to fight back that he couldn’t do so, but he didn’t have a solution or a reason to do so.

Aaron bowed with a half absent minded expression.

Then Io stood up and lightly patted Aaron’s shoulders.

A faint smile appeared in his mouth.

“Corps commander Tate.”

A gentle voice.

Aaron raised his head and looked at Io.

The smile in Io’s face became even denser.

“Don’t worry too much.”

He put more strength in his hands grabbing his shoulders.

“I thought of something good.”

# Chapter 82 : A New Opportunity (1)

---

With Istel kingdom's retreat, Byron kingdom also started to get cornered down.

Thanks to Roan's plan, of suffering consecutive defeats, they had entered quite a deep region of Rinse kingdom.

And the supply line also got quite large.

On top of this, the central region of Rinse kingdom also joined up.

But a bigger problem than this exploded at the rear.

The orcs that were half annihilated last spring, with the huge scaled subjugations, started to gather up suddenly and attacked the supply lines that were at the region.

And even if they hadn't done that, it was a big blow for Byron kingdom that were working really hard as the supply line enlarged.

They could only hurry to retreat and meanwhile, suffered a big blow.

Unfortunately, there was no such existence like Peid of Istel kingdom in the rear guard of Byron kingdom.

Actually, the orcs gathering and attacking the supply lines was all a plan of Roan.

Roan sent Chris to the southern region of Byron kingdom and visited the small and big orc tribes.

The orcs, that couldn't acquire harvests properly because of the subjugation tactic, showed interest at the information of the supply lines Chris brought.

And as they also entered a deep part of Rinse kingdom in this situation, the defenses became quite sloppy.

The orcs that were doubtful at first saw that the situation was

turning favorable and decided to attack Byron kingdom's supply line just like Roan and Chris wanted to.

So for Byron kingdom, they couldn't keep continuing the war and fled as all these things happened.

The only unfortunate thing was that Rinse kingdom wasn't aware that the attacks of the orcs was all devised by Roan and Chris.

And it was because Chris was retreating while evading Byron kingdom that he still couldn't send the notices of it.

For Roan, that committed the sin of violence against a noble was quite an unfortunate situation.

If this merit was known, his punishment would have become a bit lighter.

“Roan.”

“Yes. Sir count.”

Roan was kneeling while tied with ropes.

A look of a sinner.

Io looked at him with unfortunate eyes.

Io let out a short sigh and said.

“Violence against a noble is a really big sin. It's a sin which the last resort of punishment can be applied.”

Roan didn't show any reaction.

Io continued speaking.

“However, bringing victory in this fierce war is also another truth. We can’t kill the hero of the kingdom.”

The corps commanders that were assisting all took in a deep breath.

Expressions they couldn’t guess at all how the situation would flow.

Io touched his chin with his fingers.

“I, Io Lancephil, will lay down the punishment instead of the supreme commander of the eastern region.”

His mouth raised.

“I will demote troop commander Roan of the 2nd rose troop of the 7th corps to that of a normal soldier and exile him.”

“Ah.....”

A low exclamation came out of the mouths of the commanders.

It was a fiercer punishment than what he thought.

As they originally knew that Io appreciated Roan, they had the suspicions that he would just let it pass.

They just thought that the punishment would be a demotion and a cut of his salary.

‘He’s certainly count Lancephil.’

‘He’s someone that has it clearly differentiated.’

The commanders sent applauses at Io's fair decision.  
Like this, their shaken discipline would get firm.  
In the other side, Roan's expression was excessively calm.

‘Exile.....’

Actually, the punishment Roan thought of was getting sold as a slave.

Compared to that, an exile was quite a light punishment.

‘Although I was just planning to flee whatever I became.’

Roan had many choices.

Something possible as he knew the future.

‘The first was taking place here on the eastern region.....’

If it was possible, he wanted to stay in Lancephil's territory.

‘Because I thought that the big thing that would happen here was a big opportunity.’

There was a suitable opportunity to raise a force.

6 years from now on, a big disaster happens in Lancephil's territory.

The day that all the territory fell in chaos.

‘Then, an opportunity would certainly come.’

To grab that opportunity, he learnt Flamdor mana technique and returned once again to the eastern region.

But now, it wasn’t a situation that he could stay here anymore.

‘The second is going to Grain mountains.’

It was more difficult than the first one and complicated, but it still wasn’t something bad.

On top of that, as Grain mountain ranges was quite steep, it was a region where patrolling was almost impossible if he dedicated to hide himself.

‘It’s the most suitable place for a castaway.’

Although the situation was certainly difficult, it wasn’t that he didn’t have holes to escape.

Roan calmly organized the thoughts in his head.

Then, Io’s voice was heard.

“The place you will be exiled to is.....”

He dimmed his last words.

Aaron and the other commanders looked at Io’s mouth.



Io took in a breath and said.

“It’s the region of Tale.”

At that moment, the faces of several commanders contorted.

In the other side, there was surprise in Aaron’s face.

On top of that, his mouth was slightly raised.

Io looked at Aaron and lightly smiled.

Just like.

‘I told you not to worry.’

A feeling he was saying that.

Roan, that was maintaining a calm expression also put a surprised expression now.

‘Tale?’

Laughs kept coming out.

The countless plans in his head all crumbled.

‘If it’s Tale.....’

Roan took in a deep breath.

‘I won’t have to go to Grain mountains.’

The need to become a castaway and suffer the dangers had disappeared.

Region of Tale.

It certainly was a region where monsters appeared frequently and was left behind.

But the reason a smile appeared in Roan's and Aaron's mouth.

That was because the region of Tale was located inside Lancephil's territory.

\*\*\*\*\*

Region of Tale.

A dangerous region located at the southeast of Lancephil's territory.

It was close to Poskein lake and was surrounded by big and small mountains.

Different from the other regions, the soil wasn't that good and as monsters frequented a lot there weren't as many people habitating.

It was one of the several exiling places that even the Lancephil family didn't want to get involved with.

Most of the commander agreed that they should send him to an exiling ground of the west or south instead of the region of Tale.

However Io wasn't planning to back down anymore.

He was sending Roan to a place where he could reveal his talent and accumulate merits.

Several opinions came for 4 days.

In the end, both sides took a step back.

They decided that the soldiers of the 2nd troop should also get exiled along with Roan.

‘I have to send Roan with the army he was together with. So they won’t be able to think of nothing much when they come back.’

The commanders were excessively aware against Roan.

Most of them got the position of corps commander by inheriting it.

They were low humans that were worried for their seat to be taken away.

Roan and Aaron opposed to their opinions but they couldn’t go against the majority.

In the end, everything got decided like this.

Roan got exiled to the region of Tale and the soldiers of 2nd rose troop would be following him.

Meanwhile, Benjamin’s powerlessness got revealed and he got taken to custody in Miller.

He tried to get some commanders by his side while expressing his unfairness.

But the commanders weren’t by his side anymore.

No, they pushed back Benjamin more fiercely for in case, they would also suffer because of him.

In that situation, it was revealed that Benjamin laid an unreasonable order to several corps of the region, including the 7th corps.

Io sent his opinion paper to the royal palace that they should take away the title of nobility from Benjamin and that they should exile

him.

‘If my opinion gets received, Roan using violence against a noble doesn’t become that big of a problem.’

Aaron just hoped for the royal palace to make the right judgements.

And the situation got organized like that quite quickly.

The commanders all returned to their headquarters to organize the region.

They started to leave one by one and the only ones that remained were Io and Aaron.

“Commander Tate. Don’t worry too much.”

“Yes. I will just believe in you.”

Aaron bowed.

He saw Roan, tied in tight ropes behind Io.

‘It’s a region located inside of the count’s territory. If he takes care of him.....’

Rather, it can become an opportunity to reverse things.

Io patted Aaron’s shoulder and got up his horse.

Hiiiing.

Lancephil's army started to move with the cry of the horse.  
Their territory was Pavor, that had the lord's castle.  
Aaron just looked at the march while standing at the entrance.

“Roan.”

Roan passed in front of his eyes.  
Roan smiled faintly and nodded.

“Don't worry too much.”

A farewell like it was nothing.  
Aaron felt something in his chest and ground his teeth.

“I'm sorry.”

Words he hardly brought out.  
Roan just smiled faintly at that.  
The rope that was tied in the horse kept pulling him.  
Roan walked and meanwhile saluted Aaron.  
A composed and calm look.  
Aaron got moved for nothing and turned his head.  
He didn't have the courage to be looking at Roan anymore.  
Then, his eyes turned round.

“You.....”

He saw a familiar group behind the march of the count.

Austin and the soldiers of the 2nd rose troop.

They had packed their things and were following the march.

The soldiers bowed towards Aaron before leaving the camp.

“We decided to follow troop commander Roan.”

Austin’s words.

The other soldiers all nodded with resolute expressions.

“Are you saying that you will follow him to that dangerous place?”

“Yes. We got chased out of the army anyways. We don’t have anywhere to go anymore.”

Austin turned his head and looked at Roan’s back getting farther away.

“Troop commander became like that while protecting us.”

He took in a deep breath.

“As Troop commander protected us, now we should be the ones protecting him.”

At those words, Aaron slowly nodded.

“You are better than me.”

Hot sights were exchanged.

Austin and the others bowed once again and then started to move.

Aaron looked at them and clenched his fist.

“Everyone a little, wait really a lit bit.”

Flames appeared in a deep part of his eyes.

“I will certainly make you return to where you belong.”

\*\*\*\*\*

The march stopped earlier than what was thought.

As Io couldn't see the camp of the region, he stopped the march and went to Roan.

“Loosen his rope.”

At the short order, some soldiers gathered and cut off the ropes.

Behind Io, Kali shook his head with a displeased expression.

Io made a hand sign towards the soldiers of the 2nd rose troop

that were looking at themselves at the back of the march.

Austin and the others hesitated for a moment and then stood in a line behind Roan.

“What’s the reason you followed us?”

At those words Austin replied in a little nervous expression.

“We decided to be together with troop commander Roan.”

“Are you saying you are also following him to the exile place?”

“Yes. That’s right.”

Austin replied without hesitation.

Io smirked and shook his head.

“You can’t enter an exile place if you aren’t a sinner.”

At those words Austin and the soldiers hit their chests and said.

“Then make us one. Disobeying orders in a battlefield is also a sin.”

“Send us to the exile place too.”

A voice that was as hot and earnest as his eyes.

Roan looked at the expressions of the soldiers with a stifled expression.



An expression mixed with thankfulness and sorry.

He couldn't say anything.

Then, Io's voice was heard.

“There's no need to do so. I don't think of Roan as a sinner.”

He smiled faintly and said.

“Because the other commanders were watching and because of the army's discipline, I did say that he should get exiled but I don't think of Roan as a sinner. Rather, I think of him as an excellent commander.”

Io looked at the faces of Roan and the soldiers alternately.

“I'm planning to send Roan to a territory of a Lancephil's family territory. I'm going to give him a small troop and make him subjugate the monsters of the region of Tale.”

It wasn't a simple exile.

He was planning to entrust Roan with that region.

Roan and the soldiers put surprised expressions.

Io didn't mind and continued saying.

“Roan. Will you be able to do it?”

The region of Tale was a place that even the family of Lancephil

couldn't lay a hand on it as they wished. Making him subjugate that place was more dangerous and difficult than one could think.

However Roan didn't hesitate.

He bowed.

“Yes. I'm confident.”

As soon as he said that, Austin and the soldiers laid down on the ground.

“Sir count. Take us in your territory. We will subjugate the monsters of the region of Tale along with troop commander Roan.”

“Take us into account.”

At those words Io smiled faintly and looked at Roan.

“What do you want me to do?”

At the question, Roan copied the soldiers and laid down.

“I want to be together with them.”

An earnest voice.

Silence laid for a moment.

Io slowly nodded.

“Good. I will take in all these soldiers.”

“Ah.....”

A low exclamation came out of the mouths of Roan and the soldiers.

A bright smile appeared in their faces.

Contrary to that, there was displeasure in the face of Kali.

‘How can he take such care of him?’

He couldn’t understand Io’s treatment.

But it seemed like Io didn’t mind at all.

“I will make a completely new troop for you.”

It was the moment that the 2nd rose troop, no, the rose troop got newly born.

Io looked at Roan’s eyes fixedly.

“Troop commander Roan. Will you use Rose as the name of the troop?”

At those words, Roan fell in his thoughts for a moment.

His thoughts of wanting to remain with the dead Gale, the adjutants and the soldiers was just like a chimney.

However, the name of rose troop was still that of a troop belonging to the 7th corps.

Roan slowly shook his head.

“I want to use another name.”

“Did you think of something?”

At the question, Roan nodded.

He turned his head and looked at Austin and the soldiers.

“Amaranth, we will be the Amaranth troop.”

A low voice but with strength.

An exclamation came out of Io's mouth.

“A flower that doesn't wither.....It's a really good name.”

It meant that although he couldn't use the name of rose troop, he would never forget his dead allies.

‘And I will never again lose my troop members.’

Now, the flower won't be dying at all.

Because the newly born rose troop won't eternally wither.

## Chapter 83 : A New Opportunity (2)

---

Roan and the Amaranth troop were directed to the region of Tale.

There was a small troop in the region of Tale which not many people chose to reside there.

The Sollum troop.

It was a troop composed of sinners that were exiled and they were the ones responsible for not letting the monsters of the Tale region trespass.

The numbers amounted to only 500 people, it was being in charge of the adjutant by the troop commander.

‘They’re guys with lots of problems.’

The soldiers that composed the Sollum troop were all sinners that made some sort of trouble.

Io wrote an order himself and assigned the Sollum troop below the Amaranth troop.

‘But there’s no way they would follow me easily.’

Roan had to first make Sollum troop follow him.

‘I have to raise a force with the Tale region as the base.’

They had to become a force that would be able to be picked in the eastern region in at least six years.

And fortunately, Roan was confident in being able to do so and he

had the plans to do so.

‘That’s why I was protecting the eastern region.’

He could feel that it was unfair because of the unreasonable treatment he received and could have fled to another kingdom.

But if he did so, all the things he remembered about the future would all become useless.

‘The things I remember clearly are things that happened with Rinse kingdom as the center. On top of that.....’

There was no guarantee that he would keep getting promoted just because he fled to another kingdom.

Especially for Roan, who had already amassed big merits for Rinse kingdom, this was even more so.

‘The commanders that fled from another country receive quite the harsh treatment.’

You wouldn’t know it if you had the force or the abilities to beat that treatment, but at least it wasn’t easy for Roan as of now.

‘Even the trial that’s called to be a tyrant was thrown away after being exiled.’

The exile was a last resort.

In the end, raising a force inside Rinse kingdom was the most

reasonable thing.

‘But right now, we don’t have the strength necessary to raise an independent force.’

He was still a noble and his rank was also a mere troop commander.

‘For now, I have to build my strength below the shadow of the Lancephil family.’

The Lancephil family would suffer big changes in six years anyways.

‘I have to become a person that can lead that change.

Roan clenched his fists.

He saw the entrance of Tale region from far away.

The entrance was surrounded with loose wooden fences.

There was a warning note written around it that you shouldn’t enter thoughtlessly.

‘Is it really starting?’

A smile appeared on his face.

He, who was a mere greenhorn spearman of the 13th squad of rose troop, was now a commander of a troop.

On top of that, he also became responsible for a region.  
Compared to his past life, it was a commendable growth.

‘Then, shall we go meet the Sollum troop?’

His steps were light.

A faint expectation was seen in the faces of the troop members following his back.

A cool wind blew.

Soon, even autumn was coming to an end.

\*\*\*\*\*

It was a leisure afternoon.

It was a leisure he hadn’t felt in quite a while.

A man that wasn’t big but strong was humming below the shade of a tree.

“Hmm. Hm. Hmm.”

A relaxed expression was on his face.

‘I, I would like it if this went on for four more days.’

He extended his arms while yawning.

However, his hopes crumbled because of the youth that was



running to him from far away.

“Troop commander Semi!”

A voice as big as his body rang out.

The man, Semi, slightly raised up his head and looked at the youth.

“What? Did monsters appear again?”

At those words, the other man shook his head.

“No. Not that.....”

“Then?”

Semi frowned.

The youth continued saying.

“The people sent by the Lancephil family have come.”

“What! Lancephil family?!”

Semi stood up abruptly and had a surprised expression.

‘Ah! Am I finally getting out of this disgusting region?!’

A smile blossomed on his face.

Semi.

He was the troop commander in charge of the Sollum troop.

Semi danced and hugged the youth.

“Hamon. It was nice unti... bullshit. Anyways, thanks for what you’ve done until now.”

“Yes? Um, troop commander.....”

The youth Hamon awkwardly smiled and pushed off Semi.

“It seems like you have thought of the wrong things. The people that the Lancephil family sent.....”

His voice became lower.

“Are the superior troops that will be leading us.”

At that moment, Semi, who was dancing, abruptly stopped.

“Huh? What did you say? What?”

He frowned and asked back.

Hamon let out a sigh instead of replying back and pointed to the entrance.

He had eyes that meant that he would know if he went over there.

“This fuc.....”

At that moment, curses came out of Semi's mouth.

“They put us in here without contacting us at all but what? A superior troop? They're really speaking bullshit.”

The pent up anger surged out.

Because of his hot temperament he made small and big accidents and was exiled to the Tale region, but his temperament didn't change easily.

“Be it Count Lancephil or what, it's so dirty that I will throw everything. Pth!”

Semi spat on the ground and started to walk.

‘So the guy that would lead us came, right? Good. Let's see him once.’

His anger had already surged up into his head.

Hamon, who was looking at that, let out a short sigh.

“He's out of himself again. He will regret it all later on. Tch.”

Meanwhile, Semi arrived at the entrance.

At that moment, his face became even rmore red.

‘This fuck. That greenhorn wouldn’t be my superior, right?’

The place Semi’s sight was staying at.

It was none other than Roan who was standing over there.

Semi moved his feet and stood in front of Roan.

“What are you guys?”

It was a rough talking to.

It was a rude and conceited attitude.

But Roan didn’t say anything.

Austin, who was at the back, walked to the front and gave him the order.

Semi spread the order roughly and started to curse.

“Damn! It’s so dirty, I won’t be able to do this!”

He shook the order and snorted.

“Hmph! So this troop that’s called Amara-what is really a superior troop than ours?”

Only then did Roan slowly open his mouth.

“It’s just like the order says.”

At those words, Semi looked at Roan's eyes fixedly.

“And you are the troop commander of Amaranth?”

“That's right.”

Roan's expression and voice was composed.

Semi had an expression that it was absurd.

‘I have to follow the orders of this greenhorn?’

The anger surged up once again.

‘I would rather go to jail.’

Jail and the region of Tale.

When they told him to choose one of the two, he chose the Tale region.

And that was already two years ago.

From the past two years, he subjugated the monsters.

‘It was dirtily exhausting, and dirtily annoying, but even so, I was the king here.’

The ones managing the Tale region were only the Sollum troop and the one leading that troop, himself.

With just that one thing, he could endure the hell-like times.  
However, even that seemed to get taken away.  
He couldn't let that happen.  
He couldn't let that be taken away.

‘Here the Sollum troop is, I am the king!’

He looked at Roan's eyes fixedly.

“We have to take your orders? Don't speak bullshit.”

Semi snorted.

“Even at first glance you are a greenhorn bastard that just finished his training. I don't know how you bought Count Lancephil's interest, but we have this region grasped tightly.”

At that moment, Austin got angry and stood up.

“Troop commander Semi! Your words are too.....”

“It's fine.”

However Roan raised his hand and stopped him.  
Roan looked at Semi's eyes fixedly.

“So what do you want me to do?”

“What should you do? You and your Amaranth troop just have to shut their mouths and suck your fingers behind us. Why? Do you feel it unfair? If you do.....”

“If I do?”

“Try to fight back with that childish and soft hand of yours. Kukuku. Instead, I don’t hold any mercy to the ones attacking me, so take that into account.”

It was a voice filled with confidence.

Roan just thought of that as funny.

‘As expected.’

When he first heard stories about the Sollum troop, he had kind of expected this situation.

They were troublemakers.

The worst of the worst.

There was no way those kind of guys would simply follow his orders.

“Can’t let you like this. Let’s hit you for now.”

“What?”

At Roan’s words, Semi frowned.

Then.

Roan’s fist split the air.

“Hup!”

Semi was surprised and fell back.

The fist barely stopped in front of Semi’s nose.

Huk.

Wind pressure was felt on the tip of his nose.

“This son of a bitch!”

Semi’s face became red.

He ran towards Roan.

You could see that his anger was already boiling over his head.

His movements were as fast as his hard body.

Whong! Woong!

His two fists and legs split the air continuously.

It was an intent that wanted to drop Roan onto the ground.

However, all of Semi’s attacks only hit the empty air.

Roan dodged all of his attacks with the minimum amount of movement possible.

“So slow.”



Roan smirked and moved.

He dodged Semi's fist and closed in on him.

“Huh?”

When Semi had a surprised expression.

Roan's fists split the air.

Pububuk! Pubuk!

He didn't use mana.

But even so, his bones and muscles that were restructured after the overflowing mana were more outstanding than a normal person's.

“Kuk!”

Semi was hit in the chest and abdomen and fell down.

“Troop commander!”

Hamon yelled.

He glared at Roan and ran towards him.

Hamon was enduring it well until now, but actually, he was as hot tempered as Semi.

Woong.

A huge fist split the air.

Roan twisted his body and lightly dodged him and then hit Hamon in his crotch.

Pagak.

“Kugk! Thi, this bastard!”

Hamon lost balance and tottered, but he still cursed out.

Roan grabbed Hamon’s throat like that.

A thread of mana surged up from the mana hole.

Uduk.

The muscles in his right arm swelled up.

“Kuk!”

Hamon struggled when he felt that his breath was getting cut off.

His two feet were separated from the ground.

‘Wha, what kind of strength.....’

Hamon and even Semi who was looking from the sides had

surprised expressions.

This was because a small Roan raised up Hamon with one hand.

Hamon struggled while being up in the air.

However he couldn't free himself from Roan's grip.

‘He, he’s a monster.’

Semi unconsciously stepped back.

The anger that surged up over his head quickly died out.

‘Did I make a mistake?’

He woke himself up too late.

‘Now that I see it, even the guys of the Amaranth troop.....’

Even when a fuss was happening, there was no one among the soldiers that moved.

The intent hidden inside the solid formation.

‘They are elite soldiers. It’s a powerful army.’

Cold sweat flowed down his back.

Semi inwardly blamed his hot temperament.

Gulp.

Dry saliva passed down on its own.

Nervousness could be seen in his face.

Roan looked at Semi and put on a smile.

‘It’s just like what Count Lancephil said.’

Although the Sollum troop was composed of sinners, they weren’t vile people.

Rather, they believed in their own abilities or talents and acted as they wished.

If he could make Sollum troop come to his side, it would be of great help for his force.

‘Anyways, it’s comfortable as I don’t have to hide my mana anymore.’

Roan talked with Io about things related to mana techniques before separating.

You wouldn’t know about other places, but the Tale region was quite a secluded place and was the most suitable place to train in his mana.

In Roan’s position, there was no need to be aware of other people anymore.

“Listen well.”

His voice was quite calm.

“I’m troop commander Roan of Amaranth troop. Although it was the order of Count Lancephil, I have no thoughts of forcefully commanding you.”

Roan turned to look at Semi.

“Come find me when you want to be commanded by me. Until then, I won’t butt into your things.”

He loosened the strength in his grip after saying that.

Tuk.

“Kek. Kek.”

Hamon started to cough after he fell onto the ground.

He didn’t think of attacking him again and fell back.

Roan saw that and put on a bitter smile.

‘I didn’t want to use force like this.....’

But there was a need to show a suitable amount of strength to control the troublemaking soldiers.

And of course, he wasn’t planning to forcefully make them follow him after pressing them down with strength.

‘I will make them follow me on their own.’

He wanted to make them follow him first with their hearts, and then with their thoughts.

Now was the start.

Roan turned back.

Amaranth troop followed his back while maintaining formation.

“Whew. I thought I would die.”

Hamon let out a long sigh and touched his neck.

Semi, who saw Roan and the troop disappear into the distance, frowned.

‘What to do.....’

He couldn’t make a decision.

If Roan used force and tried to forcefully command the Sollum troop, they would have all rebelled roughly.

‘Because the 500 people of Sollum troop are all like that.’

But as Roan made one step back, he felt somewhat frustrated.

Even if he wanted to rebel, the reason to do so had disappeared.

On top of that, the truth was that Roan was too strong to the point that he was able to easily toy with him and Hamon. This made him feel uneasy.

“What kind of guy could he have been? Even the soldiers that came with him seemed to be beyond normal.”

At Hamon's words, Semi's face contorted.

He was hit while not being able to resist properly.

As Hamon complemented Roan and the troop in that situation, Semi's anger surged up.

“How do I know that?! Go and do what you were doing!”

At the sudden rebuking words, Hamon smacked his lips.

‘He's taking it out on me.’

He hid his thoughts and saluted and then walked towards his headquarters.

It was best to hide himself when Semi was angry.

Today was quite an eventful day for Semi for many reasons.

‘Damn. I don't know. Don't know. I'll know if I keep watching them.’

This Tale region was different from the others.

It wasn't a place where a troop that popped up out of nowhere could get accustomed to and endure easily.

Even if Roan and the troop were strong, he had a need to check if

they could adapt well to this region.

‘Even Sollum troop took three years in taking a place.’

At least in this place, Sollum troop was like the elites.

Roan and Amaranth troop.

Semi and Sollum troop.

Two completely different troops were taking place in the same region.

A flower that never withers and soil.

The relationship started like that.

\*\*\*\*\*

Although the headquarters were quite old and shabby, it still had useful buildings.

Amaranth troop checked the buildings thoroughly and made a place for themselves on the opposite side of Sollum troop.

Roan remembered the continued forced march and ordered a rest for two days.

Meanwhile some soldiers of Sollum troop approached their headquarters and made some fuss, but no big incident occurred.

Even Roan started to “rest” in his place.

He started to inspect his plans and trained in the Flamdor mana technique.

The current level of Roan’s mana level was like that of a novice knight.

And it was all thanks to the overflowing of his mana that his mana hole, mana road, bones, and muscles were reconstructed and



strengthened.

As he didn't know much about mana techniques, he was lacking comprehension about it.

‘When the troop stabilizes, I will have to buy books and accumulate them.’

There were many things he had to do.

He had to bring books and goods from the house that was in Beno castle, and he had to earnestly manage Chris's agency and the five invested people and make them grow.

But most of all, what he had to do first.

‘I have to change the structure of the troop.’

It was a roughly made up troop.

‘Although I couldn't touch the formation as I wished until now, but now the situation has changed.’

Amaranth troop was completely Roan's.

He was planning to apply one of the formations developed after the era of the great wars to Amaranth troop.

‘To lead a small scaled troop effectively, it's good to use groups of ten.’

He would group 10 soldiers to become one and give the commanding rights to one person.

‘I’m going to make hundred-man squads with the groups of ten as the base.’

Actually, the number of soldiers in Amaranth troop amounted to 400.

If he reorganized them as groups of ten, four squads of 100 and four commanders to lead the hundred-man squads.

‘I’ll use the basic strategies of the troop as the hundred man squad.’

Although the basic formation was that of ten men groups, what could become the basis of the strategy was a hundred man squad.

Roan quickly wrote down his thoughts on a piece of paper.

At first glance it felt like nothing, but it was the basics of the basics.

However what Roan was thinking about wasn’t only this.

The conditions of becoming a strong army wasn’t only composed by the soldiers.

‘I will have to slowly start some madmen of the small rooms.’

Madmen of small rooms.

People called them like that and fingered at them.

But they called themselves with other names.

A faint smile appeared in Roan's mouth.

‘Alchemists.’

# Chapter 84 : A New Opportunity (3)

---

The madmen of small rooms or alchemists.

They were scientists, engineers or magicians that tried to convert minerals to become gold.

But the research of the alchemists that lasted tens and hundreds of years ended up in failure and their research started to make a weird turn.

They wanted to grasp the characteristics of the minerals itself and find methods to refine it, mixing minerals with other minerals, combining it to become weapons, equipments, and other stuff to make it more comfortable or reconstruct it to become stronger.

But of course, this was something of 10 years later.

Actual alchemists were hidden in deep forests or empty villages to research and experiment on weird things and were getting judged as crazy people.

And that was because there were small and big accidents involved in it.

Because of that, people naturally got far from them.

‘I have to gather them starting from now.’

It would be late after their research starts to show accomplishments.

By then, the influential people of the kingdom or empire would gather them and set them up as the base.

‘When there aren’t guilds like right now is the most suitable

time.'

Different from the knights or mages that had headquarters, alchemists didn't even have a guild.

Roan was planning to make a guild for the alchemists near Tale region.

One of the conditions for a strong army.

'I also need outstanding weapons and not only outstanding soldiers.'

Roan was planning to entrust that to the alchemists.

'On top of that, if I can gather engineers or blacksmiths.....'

But it probably wouldn't be easy.

He was still exiled in the region of Tale.

He couldn't come and go to other regions as he pleased.

'In the end, I will have to resort to the help of mister Chris once again.'

He needed the help of Chris's agency.

Roan was first planning to establish Chris's agency near the region of Tale, and use them as a means of contact.

'Good. Let's make one step slowly.'

Roan took in a deep breath and stood up.

The plans he would face were now somewhat organized.

His heart beat.

The blood in his body circulated quickly.

‘Let’s make history.’

A blue light lit up in his eyes.

\*\*\*\*\*

“It’s somewhat amazing.”

“It’s a formation I hadn’t thought at all.”

The troop members looked at each other and put surprised expressions.

Austin, that was pondering, raised his right hand.

“Is there a need to change formations? We are all accustomed to the current formation actually.”

At those words, some soldiers nodded.

Their sight moved to Roan.

“That formation was filled with weak points.”

A composed voice.

Roan walked among the troop members and started to make a long explanation about the formation.

He also explained how roughly made was the formation used in the squads, troops and corps.

As his explanation became longer, a convinced look appeared in the faces of the soldiers.

“Ah! That’s why until now the troop was operated in several divided sections.”

“Now that I see, we moved in more small scaled groups than the other troops.”

“Can it be that that was like the ten men group?”

Several conversations could be heard.

‘They are all quick to catch.’

Roan smiled faintly and nodded.

When they still belonged to the 7th corps, the 2nd rose troop invested a lot of time in small group training and operation.

And that was all for the pre establishment of the hundred men squad.

“If the entire formation changes then the positions of troop commander, adjutant, squad commander will also be changed.”

Especially, the adjutants that were crudely called as commanders would be clearly differentiated from the ten men leader and hundred men commander.

If the size of the troop becomes larger, the thousand men commander and ten thousand commander will also be implemented.

Here on, each task will get the role of staff officer.

“For now, I will name the four people that will become hundred men commanders.”

At Roan’s words, nervousness was seen in the faces of the soldiers.

Especially on the faces of the squad commanders, a faint expectation appeared.

“I name Austin to become hundred men commander to command and lead the entire troop instead of me.”

“Ah.....”

A low exclamation came out of Austin’s mouth.

The manager was a position that basically worked instead of the vice troop commander.

‘For me to become a manager.....’

Just a few months ago, he was working hard to get promoted to become a squad commander.



That Austin became a commander that would lead hundred soldiers.

He slowly stood up and moved.

Roan lent him the declaration paper he had already prepared few days ago.

Although there was no rank badge that suited with the new formation, Austin got deeply moved just with the declaration paper.

“I will do my best.”

An earnest voice.

Roan patted Austin’s shoulders once and smiled.

‘If it’s Austin, he will work well.’

Followed by that, the naming of the second commander took place.

“I name Tane as the 2nd hundred man commander.”

Tane, that was a squad commander of the 13th squad of rose troop stood up with a half absent minded expression.

“Squad commander Tane! Congratulations!”

Pete whistled and yelled while shaking his right arm.

And all the other troop members also clapped.

Because they all recognized Tane's skills and merits he had accumulated during the small and big battles.

“Let's work well from now on.”

Roan gave him the declaration paper and smiled.

Tane made a short salute.

“Sir! I will do my best!”

A voice with strength.

‘Relationships are really fun.’

Roan smiled.

Just before a few weeks he was a newcomer spearman of the 13th squad which Tane lead.

But now, he became a commander and a superior that lead an entire troop and named Tane to become his second hundred man commander.

‘Who would have known that a greenhorn spearman would become a troop commander.’

Now that it turned out like this, there was no law that said that

he wouldn't be able to become a monarch.

Roan felt the emotions surging up and named the 3rd commander.

“I name Pete as the 3rd hundred man commander.”

At that moment, silence fell.

Even Pete, that was whistling towards Tane, froze like that.

Pete, who threw a fist towards Roan that couldn't grasp the situation when he first returned to the past.

He had passed over several squad commander ranked soldiers and became a hundred man commander.

The surrounding soldiers all looked at Pete with surprised expressions.

Pete got a hold of himself and pointed at his own face.

“Do, do you mean me?”

Roan just nodded.

At that moment.

“Waaa! Pete! You completely succeeded!”

“Amazing!”

“Pete, no. Commander! Congratulations!”

Several cheers were heard from everywhere.

Amaranth troop was at much 400 people.

They had established quite a solid relationship after the battles they faced together.

There was no one that felt displeased or were against Roan's decision.

"Huh? Yea. E, everyone thanks."

Pete nodded with a shaking face and stood in front of Roan.

Roan gave him the decree and patted his shoulders.

"Let's work hard."

The reason he declared Pete as the third commander.

'If Austin and Tane have the ability to command and lead, Pete outstands in the part of strength.'

A brave general that could face the enemies at the front.

That was Pete.

"I, I will do my best."

Pete still had a half absent minded expression.

He moved his feet and stood next to Tane.

Tane smiled brightly and poked Pete's side.

“Congratulations.”

“Th, thank you.”

Pete smiled awkwardly and bowed.

He didn't even know how to read but was staring at the decree as if his gaze would pierce through it.

‘I'm a hundred man commander?’

Based on the original formation, he was a mere adjutant.

Emotions overflowed.

‘I can't disappoint him.’

Resolution that he had to act according to Roan's expectation surged up.

Meanwhile, Roan was naming the last commander.

Everyone was concentrating on Roan.

Although Pete was kind of unexpected, the hundred man commander until now were kind of expected.

‘Now that Pete was the third, the fourth may be a really unexpected person.’

‘Who?’

Everyone gulped dry saliva.

Only then did Roan feel the strange gazes and slowly opened his

mouth.

“I name Harrison as the fourth commander.”

Boom.

At that moment, even a worst silence fell than when Pete was declared.

The gazes of the soldiers naturally fell in one place .A childish faced soldier.

It was Harrison.

‘M, me?’

He couldn’t even bring those words out.

Harrison was asking towards Roan while opening and closing his mouth.

Roan smiled faintly and nodded.

Harrison slowly stood up and carefully moved.

The surrounding was still as dead as a rat.

‘Harrison?’

‘He surpassed all the other squad commanders?’

Everyone had surprised looks.

Then.

“Harrison certainly has the proper qualifications to become a hundred man commander!”

Pason, that was one of the basic squad commanders, yelled out.

“Right! Just looking at his skills in archery, he was the best of the 7th corps!”

“He even saved the life of troop commander several times!”

The other squad commanders added and yelled.

They knew really well what their role was.

Because of that, the heavy silence got blown away like a feather.

“Right. Just looking at his merits, he’s the best of the best.”

“Well, just looking at skills the one that is the most suitable in the seat of hundred man commander is Harrison.”

The soldiers all started to nod with convinced expressions.

Cheers and applauses were heard everywhere.

‘Everyone…….’

Harrison looked at the troop members with an absent minded expression.

Compared to the other soldiers, he wasn’t even from rose troop.

He had joined in late because of Roan.

‘For everyone to recognize me like this.’

One corner of his heart became hot.

His sight naturally turned to Roan.

‘Troop commander. I’m really thankful.’

Just a few months ago, he was a mere novice spearman.

However, because Roan recognized his talent in archery and taught him that, he became able to live a new life.

‘I won’t forget this grace even when I die.’

Harrison bowed towards Roan.

Roan lent him the decree and patted his shoulders.

“Harrison. Let’s keep working hard from now on.”

The words Roan said when he first met Harrison.

Harrison nodded with a moved face.

“Yes. I will stay with you until I die.”

His voice trembled slightly.

Roan smiled faintly.



Harrison wiped off the tears and stood next to Pete.

Like this, the naming of the four commanders ended.

Continued by that, the naming of the 10 men commanders and staff officers followed up.

The most important thing was the naming of the commander that would lead the information squad.

Pens, that originally lead the information squad, couldn't enter the exile region of Tale and because of that he had to name a new responsible one.

Roan named Keep, that was the nimblest of them all.

And like this, the restructure of Amaranth concluded.

Roan dissolved the troop and opened up another meeting between commanders.

“You all should know it, but we are no different from sinners.”

The hundred men commanders and the information leader all nodded.

Roan kept talking.

“We have to face the monsters of the region of Tale.”

A voice with strength.

Roan looked at Keep's eyes fixedly.

“For now, the information squad will thoroughly investigate the region of Tale. You have to investigate the rivers, nests, mountains and woods really carefully.”

He pointed a wooden desk with his finger.

“I’m planning to make a map so you can grasp the region of Tale in one sight.”

“You mean a map?”

Austin asked back with a surprised expression.

Drawing up a map was quite a dangerous thing in this era.

If you slipped, you could even get the misunderstanding that you were a spy.

“This region of Tale is a really secluded place, different from other places. Because of that we are free from even the gazes of the people. There’s no need to worry that much.”

At those words several people nodded.

However, they couldn’t do anything that they still felt a bit uneasy.

Tane asked back with a careful expression.

“But do you have a need to do that?”

As the appearance of monsters in this region was quite low, there was no need for the troop to act first.

They would come attacking first if you just guarded the headquarters.

Roan clenched his fists at those words.

“I’m not planning to wait the monsters still.”

“Then.....?”

Everyone looked at Roan’s face.

A faint smile appeared in Roan’s mouth.

“We are attacking the monsters first.”

He grabbed the table with both of his hands and then stuck out his head towards the commanders.

A voice and expression that overflowed with confidence.

However, a low voice but with strength was followed.

“I’m planning to dry them up.”

# Chapter 85 : A New Opportunity (4)

---

‘Damn.’

Curses came out by its own.

Semi glared in front of him.

The monsters that amounted to 1.000.

And they were even various in races.

‘Goblin, kobolt, nork.....’

Although most of them were small sized monsters, you could see about 10 little ogres that were exactly double the size of a human adult at some parts.

‘I was crazy. Fuck.’

Semi cursed out his stupidity, no, his rashness late.

‘I just had to guard the headquarters....’

Originally, there wouldn’t have been any problems if they just subjugated or chased away the monsters that approached the entrance.

But as they saw Roan and his troop getting out of the camp from an early morning, he couldn’t endure it.

‘Not being enough with making an information squad to investigate the region and changing the formation to a strange one they also go out to subjugate monsters.’

It was an action he hadn't thought at all.

He kind of felt that he and the entire Sollum troop were cowards.

‘The owners of Tale region were us.’

A feeling that the ownership got passed over in an instant.

On top of that, competitiveness he didn't want to lose to Roan arose.

And fortunately, that was the same for the members of Sollum troop.

They didn't want to see Amaranth troop, that were no different from a rock that rolled over, to just act as they pleased.

In the end Semi left 100 men to guard the camp and charged out.

They charged over to the regions where monsters appeared quite frequently.

And the start wasn't bad.

They annihilated the monsters that appeared at times and rose their spirit.

They arrived to their destination, that was a hill.

It was when he was resting and treating the wounded ones.

The forest below the hill started to shake.

The dense forest shook roughly and a sound shaking the ground hit their ear.

When Semi and the others were looking at the forest with a

nervous look.

Pat!

An amazing number of monsters appeared from the forest.

An attack they hadn't expected.

That was what just happened right now.

“Wh, what do we do?”

Hamon had a really nervous look.

Only then did Semi throw away all the useless thoughts and bit his lower lip.

“What do you want to do? Of course we have to fight.”

The monsters had already approached near the hill.

In this situation, they could only fight against the monsters.

‘Although its 400 vs 1.000 they are mostly small monsters. On top of that, we are positioned in a high place so it's not that we don't have chances.’

Semi, that was quite hot tempered, got his head cleared up in front of a big fight.

Because he knew that if the commander lost his rationality here, the entire troop would get annihilated.

“We are getting the little ogres first.”

“Yes. Understood.”

The adjutants answered in one voice and stood in front of their respective squads.

400 soldiers raised their weapons with nervous looks.

“Kuaaa!”

“Kiek!”

The monsters cried out.

The ground shook and white dust surged up.

“Charge!”

And the order of charging also fell from Semi’s mouth.

His eye became red.

And a strange heat surged up in his entire face.

“Kill!”

Yells that were to raise the morale on purpose poured out.

Bang!

Finally, Sollum troop clashed against the monsters.

Slash! Stab!

The limbs of the monsters started to get cut off with horrible sounds.

“Kiek!”

“Kek!”

The goblins or kobolts that were a lot smaller than an adult couldn't resist properly and collapsed.

The personal strength of each troop member was that strong.

However, their performance was only up to there. The limit for Sollum troop was clear.

Because it was the first time they faced a big scaled battle.

“Little ogre! Aim for the little ogres!”

“Infantry! To the right! Not there! Right! Right!”

Semi yelled with all his strength.

But the order couldn't get executed properly. Each adjutant moved their respective squad as they wished.

No, they couldn't even command the squad members properly.

A really sad level to say that it was one troop.

The formation that had a rectangle shape was now separated in several pieces.



And monsters charged in from those spaces.

“Kok!”

“Kuk! Your side got pierced through!”

“The formation of the front crumbled!”

The formation that got turned aside once started to collapse even more.

Anyways, if their individual strength wasn't good, they would already have gotten annihilated.

‘Damn! We endured well for 2 years but what is this!’

Semi swung his blade while grinding his teeth.

‘Although monsters appear frequently in this region, it's the first time a troop as big as this has appeared.....On top of that, this isn't a simple attack.’

Just like they were getting chased by someone.

“Uak!”

“Kok!”

Several yells were heard at the surroundings.

Semi's face stiffened.

‘Because of my powerlessness, my troop members.....’

His eye trembled.

Although he blamed himself, it was already late.

‘Am I dying like this.....’

A moment of life and death.

Then.

Sweeee!

A sharp sound was heard.

“Kiek!”

“Kek!”

The cries of the monsters was heard this time.

Puuuuu!

THE sound of the horn trumpet that’s heard at the same time.

Semi and the troop members looked back.

A group of people that were attacking the monsters appeared.

A flag that was high.

A short letter was written in the flocking flag.

<Amaranth.>

At that moment, joy appeared in everyone's faces.

'Amaranth troop!'

'They are here to rescue us!'

Their sight gathered at one point.

Bang!

Monsters got pushed back to the sides with a loud sound.

The place that was separated.

Roan was over there.

"Annihilate!"

A short order and the several signals that get transmitted.

The flagman that was next to him shook two flags of different colors.

Puuuuu! Dung. Dung. Dung. Dung.

The sound of horn trumpet and drums was heard.

Amaranth troop took a triangle formation as if they were waiting for it.

And of course, the one at the peak was Roan.

He pulled Travias spear and emanated valor.

There was no need to hide his mana anymore.

The spear with a transparent light split the air and danced.

Slash. Spat!

And everytime that happened, a horrible sound was heard.

“Kiek!”

Small monsters like goblins and kobolts couldn't be Roan's opponent.

And that was also the same for the little ogres.

They got perplexed at the mysterious movements of Roan's spearmanship and stepped back.

The moment their formation crumbled.

The troop members of Amaranth ran to the sides.

Stab!

The weapon that gets stabbed in the sides of the little ogres.

“Kuang!”

A cry exploded out.

A look that he was at least trying to struggle.

However, followed by that, the troop members swung their spears.

Slash!

The spears, swords, axes and daggers stabbed the head, neck, chest and abdomen consecutively.

A perfect attack.

Boom!

The little ogre couldn't endure it anymore and fell.

“Charge!”

The cry that shakes the battlefield.

The peak of Amaranth troop easily charged over the group of monsters.

Roan and the vanguard grouped up with the hopeless looking Sollum troop.

“Are you fine?”

Lightly asking words.

‘I didn’t know they would copy us and go out to subjugate.’

Roan sighed shortly.

After Amaranth troop departed, the monsters got subjugated and they executed a big performance.

In that process, the small groups of monsters evaded Amaranth troop and fled to the west.

But Sollum troop had to be over there.

Several small groups gathered and that number amounted to 1.000.

Sollum troop was performing the role of anvil between a hammer and an anvil.

‘Anyways, i’m glad we aren’t late.’

Roan smiled faintly and looked at Semi.

Semi also got a hold of himself late.

“Yes. I, i’m fine.”

Actually, even the members of Sollum troop were half absent minded.

And that was because only 300 men were pushing back and massacring the monsters that amounted to 1.000 lightly and pushing them back to the sides.

‘I, is this the strength a troop has to get?’

Semi gulped dry saliva.

Roan looked at that Semi once and shook his right hand to the back twice.

At that moment, the groups of hundred that were pushing back the monsters started to fall back.

The widely spread triangle shape shrank in an instant and then got a rectangle formation.

“Kiek!?”

“Kek?”

The monsters tilted their head when they saw the space that suddenly got empty.

Then, the flagman shook the flag to the sides.

The infantry that were at the front lowered their body and kneeled one leg.

The archers that were at the back, poured arrows as if they were waiting for it.

Sweee!

A sharp sound.

Tens of arrows split the air consecutively.

Pubububuk!

Monsters collapsed after becoming porcupines.

And even among the archers, the one showing the most amazing skill was Harrison.

Harrison, that was leading the archer squad and some infantry was hitting up the medium sized monsters, compared to the other archers that only hit small monsters.

Puk!

A look that their forehead got precisely pierced.

“It, it’s an amazing ability.’

The members of Sollum troop all opened their mouths.

It really was an ability close to marvelous.

“Kieeek!”

“Kuaa!”

As the monsters started to get pushed one sidedly they let out cries and tried to rush in without any plans.

Roan took out Traviass spear as if he was waiting for it and then charged the ground.

Amaranth troop followed his back.

“Ah.....”



At that moment, Semin and his troop members let out low exclamations.

A shudder passed by their bodies.

The scene occurring in front of their eyes.

Amaranth troop that was facing hundreds of monsters.

Their backs got fixed in their eyes.

“Kek!”

“Kugh!”

Amaranth troop clashed with the monsters.

The members of the troop moved in an ordered fashion.

If one person attacked, another put more strength in that attack, and the remaining ones filled in the flaws after the attack.

‘So this was what they trained on everyday at the training field!’

Semi got amazed and kept getting more amazed.

His sight naturally moved towards Roan.

The front of the front line.

The place you could say that was dangerous had Roan over there.

Pabababat!

Travias spear moved as if it danced.

Pubuk! Puk!

The monsters that were close by got hit consecutively by fists and kicks and got bounced off.

A feeling that a long line of light was drawn following the spear.  
Roan's movements weren't only destructive, but beautiful.

'They aren't my opponents.'

Semi realized Roan's and the troop's skills.

They weren't opponents he or Sollum troop could do anything about.

But strangely enough he didn't feel powerless, rage or despair.

'I want to get in there and fight together with them.'

He wanted to display more power than what he had, just like the strength Amaranth troop had.

His face turned red at the boiling emotions.

But that wasn't only about Semi.

'Will we also be able to move like that?'

'How good would it be if I also had that kind of allies.'

Everyone of Sollum's troop looked at the battlefield with excited expressions.

Desire surged up in their eyes.

The opposition and antipathy they felt when they first met Amaranth troop had long since disappeared.

‘He said that he would wait until we wanted.....’

Semi remembered Roan’s words clearly.

He turned to look back at his troop members and took in a deep breath.

‘It seems like that time is now.’

He laid the decision.

His sight moved over once again to the battlefield.

The fight was already coming to an end.

Complete victory.

It was a complete victory for Amaranth troop.

And it was also the first battle of Amaranth troop that one day will let know of its name to the continent.

\*\*\*\*\*

‘Lost. Completely lost. Even the plate is different.’

Semi shook his head.

The place his eyes reached.

Roan was over there.

‘Just by rescuing our troop and safely returning us back is thankful enough.....’

Roan ordered Amaranth troop, that comparatively had fewer damages, to look after the injuries of Sollum troop.

In this situation, Semi got surprised at three things.

The first.

‘The troop members have absolute obedience in the orders of the troop commander.’

The second.

‘The level of treatment is higher than what I thought. Although it’s not at the professional level, they know really well how they have to treat injured ones.’

It was all because of the various experiences of the battles they had faced until now, but there was no way Semi could know that.

But most of all, the reason he got more surprised than anything was because of the third cause.

‘It’s been exactly 20 days since Amaranth troop came here. But.....’

Semi’s sight moved over to Roan.

Roan was checking on the conditions of Sollum troop's members.

"If you rest for a while with a splint you will be fine, James."

Words he said calmly.

The soldier that was laying on the ground asked back with a surprised expression.

"How did you know my na.....?"

At those words, Roan just smiled instead of replying.

He stood up and checked on the condition of the next soldier.

"Darren. Check the condition of Lork. It seems like he's lacking on bandages."

"Bent. You lack water."

"Kolp. You can't move yet."

The names that come out without stopping.

Roan was memorizing the names of Sollum troop members.

And they got surprised each time their name was called.

"Troop commander. You even memorized the names of Sollum troop soldiers?"

Austin, that was treating the injured ones next to him, got astounded.

At those words Roan shook his head.

“I still couldn’t memorize everyone’s names.”

But even so, there was amazement in the faces of the surrounding soldiers.

‘There were a lot of things to do during the past 20 days.....’

‘We changed the troop’s formation, repaired the camp, and even trained on the troop’s strategies.’

‘Meanwhile, he even memorized the names of Sollum troop’s soldiers that don’t have any relationship with us?’

Roan was really moving busily, as if he was really in need of ten extra bodies.

‘I have to do everything I can, and the best I can.’

For a commander to memorize the name of a soldier.

Roan thought that was the first thing a good commander had to do.

If you kept doing war and battles countless soldiers die and get hurt.

Different from the commanders, most of them can’t even leave behind their short name.

‘At least, I can’t let my soldiers die without a name.’

Of course, if the size of his army became the size of a corps, and then he became a supreme commander, he obviously won't be able to memorize the names of everyone.

'By then, I will leave the names of my dead allies in words.'

So that people could remember and history also could remember them.

When his thoughts continued up to there.

A presence was felt at his back.

"Troop commander Roan."

A familiar voice.

As he turned back, he saw Semi and the adjutants in a line.

And their expression was really hard.

You could see nervousness in their faces.

Roan immediately grasped their intentions.

'It's faster than I thought.'

Perhaps, cutting his morale in the first day would have been the most effective thing.

The deeply bowed head.

The armor that was covered with the blood of monsters was shining.

“Our Sollum troop.....”

His voice dimmed.

Semi raised his head and looked at Roan.

“Please command us.”

At that moment, silence fell on the entire camp.

It was obvious for Sollum troop, but even the members of Amaranth troop were looking at Roan.

Roan didn't hesitate.

He smiled brightly and nodded.

“Fine.”

Roan looked at his surroundings and continued saying.

“From today on, Amaranth troop and Sollum troop are one.”



# Chapter 86 : Establishing A Base (1)

---

The Amaranth troop and the Sollum troop really became just like one.

They named four more hundred-man commanders with the newly entered troop.

Meanwhile, Semi recognized Austin's solid commanding.

And this was possible because Semi, who was a troop commander, took one step back.

There weren't many troubles because the Sollum troop wasn't forced to follow them, but they chose to do so themselves.

Roan mixed the troop members among themselves, even while taking into account to decrease the manpower.

And of course, after that, they continued to become stronger every day.

Now, Sollum troop existed no more.

Only one.

Amaranth troop became the only troop in the region of Tale.

Flock! Flock!

Two flags of different colors waved.

And at the same time, tens of hundred-man squads moved busily.

Infantry and archers gathered and separated.

Even when there were approximately 800 soldiers, you couldn't hear anything noisy.

They only gave and received orders through the flags and signals.

And Roan looked at that from a high place.

‘They became accustomed to it faster than I thought.’

A faint smile appeared on his face.

Actually, he was kind of worried when he first received Sollum troop.

He was worried about them not being able to catch up with the training.

But fortunately enough, the Sollum troop members showed great skill in adaptability.

‘In this region of Tale, you get weeded out if you can’t adapt, and if you get weeded out, you die.’

Roan, who was looking down at the training ground raised his right hand.

Flock!

The flags that were waving at the sides crossed each other.

At that moment, the members of Amaranth troop took formation and organized themselves properly.

This was the end of troop training.

The movements were smooth and quick to the point you became amazed, but there were no changes in Roan’s expression.

“After finishing training, study the signals between each ten man groups.”

“Yes! Understood.”

Several hundred-man commanders replied in one voice.

Roan nodded with a satisfied expression and moved away.

“Pant. Pant. Pant.”

Rough breaths were heard in several places, as if they were waiting for it.

And most of them were made by the members of Sollum troop.

‘It’s really an unbelievable training.’

They had the feeling that they wanted to lay down immediately.

But they couldn’t do so.

No, they didn’t want to do so.

‘Anyways, we’re getting strong.’

‘We’re starting to coordinate.’

They had the feeling that they were getting stronger.

Although it was physically exhausting, their mentality at least was clear.

“We finished training with the hundred-man groups.”

The voices of the hundred-man commanders were heard.

The nine squads moved busily.

The troop members caught their breath and cooled down their muscles when Roan got out of the headquarters.

The place the head of the horse was heading to was the north entrance.

You could see sloppy wooden fences over there.

‘Because of Count Lancephil’s consideration, I can properly breath a little better.’

Originally, there had to be surveillance soldiers following the boundary of the territory.

However Io trusted in Roan and the Amaranth troop.

‘But even so, I can’t act as I please.’

Roan didn’t leave the Tale region as he wished.

As he approached the fences, he saw a familiar face.

“Troop commander.”

“Mister Pens.”

It was Pens of Chris’s agency.

Roan shook his hand at the welcoming feeling.

They exchanged greetings with the fence between them.

“Is the establishment going well?”

Roan was training the troop, subjugating the monsters, and at the same time, proceeding with the work of Chris’s agency.

Pens laughed awkwardly and fell to the sides.

“Talk that between you two.”

“Huh?”

When Roan tilted his head, he saw a familiar face behind Pens.

A smile appeared on Roan’s mouth.

“Mister Chris.”

“It’s really been a while. Troop commander Roan.”

A bright and clear voice.

The owner of the bright face was Chris.

\*\*\*\*\*

The torch in the walls pushed back the darkness.

A disgusting smell pinched the tip of your nose.

There were chains in the dirty wall.

Prison.

It certainly was a prison.

“What is this look.”

A regretful voice and expression rang out.

A middle aged man with luxurious clothes put his hand inside the bars.

Although there was a guard behind him, he didn't stop him.

“Count Chase. There's really no face.”

The dirty look of the middle aged man who was bowing.

Surprisingly enough, he was Benjamin Doyle.

Chulg.

Every time Benjamin moved, the chains on his wrists, neck, and ankles shook.

“Count Chase. Pl, please don't throw me away. Ge, get me out of here.”

The expression and voice that couldn't be earnest and was even mean.

The middle aged man with luxurious clothes, Jonathan Chase, patted Benjamin's hand.

“Don't worry. Is our relationship a normal one?”

He pretended to be aware of his surroundings and then lowered his voice.

“I’m convincing some nobles myself. In this situation what the seat of supreme commander of the eastern region, that bastard Io Lancephil, took away as he wished, will be yours.”

“Ah.....”

Benjamin bowed with a moved expression.

“Thank you. Really thank you. I will certainly pay back this grace.”

“Oho. How can you use that word in our relationship?”

Jonathan laughed.

“I prepared good food aside, so you just take care of your body.”

He spoke in a warm voice and with consideration.

Benjamin was now about to cry.

“I will only believe and follow Count Chase until I die.”

“Hahaha.”

Jonathan burst out in laughter.

“Then, let’s meet outside of the prison next time.”

“Yes. I will accompany you to a good place then.”

Benjamin bowed.

Jonathan looked at that sight for a moment and then slowly moved his feet.

The guard who was at the back, followed Jonathan.

Clunk!

The entrances that were closed stiff opened up consecutively.

“Mm.”

Jonathan frowned at the bright sunshine.

He took out a small glass bottle from his chest.

The expression that was warm and that of a good person had disappeared instantly.

A fierce and scary eyes.

“Get rid of him without any mistakes.”

Jonathan handed over the bottle to the guard.

The guard just bowed without saying anything and moved inside the prison.

Clunk!



The entrance closed alongside the sound of metal.

“Benjamin you stupid bastard.”

Jonathan started to curse aloud.

Then, a long shadow appeared from the sides.

“Is there a need to kill him?”

The owner of the voice was an old man starting to age.

He was an underling serving Jonathan and the chandler of the Chase family, Hoose.

“Don’t speak of what you don’t know. It’s not one or two things he’s messed up. If he says that he would keep his hereditary title, even I would be in danger.”

“Well, it’s something Count Lancephil is cautious about.”

The chandler slowly nodded.

Jonathan’s expression stiffened.

“Io Lancephil. Who was the bastard that old man got interested in?”

“He’s called Roan.”

He replied with a short answer.

Jonathan moved his feet and spit on the ground.

“Roan. Thoroughly investigate into that bastard.”

“He’s merely a commoner and a troop commander.”

At the chandler’s words, Jonathan stopped walking.

He turned to look at the chandler and said in a fierce voice.

“Benjamin Doyle was done in by that mere troop commander commoner? On top of that, his merits and rumors aren’t normal. I’m also bothered that he’s got the interest of Io Lancephil.”

By then, the chandler could only step back.

“I understand. I will thoroughly investigate like you said.”

Only then did Jonathan start to walk again.

You could feel his annoyance in each of his steps.

‘Io Lancephil.’

Ududuk.

He ground his teeth.

‘As you cut down one of my men, I’ll also do the same for you.’

The adversary was his political enemy and a rival of another family, Io Lancephil.

He didn't think at all to let it pass.

The wind that started to blow in the eastern region of the kingdom also blew in the capital of Miller.

It was a cooler and sharper wind than the wind of winter.

\*\*\*\*\*

Roan and Chris held hands and asked how they had been for quite a while.

"I have been a bit late because I was befriending the orcs of the southern region in Byron kingdom."

"You've really worked hard."

Roan appreciated Chris's hard work.

Because of Chris, he could finish the tedious war faster than what he thought.

"From now on, I will proceed with the work of the agency."

At Chris's words, Roan nodded.

They were trustable and relieving words.

"For now, I'm planning to establish a point near the region of

Tale.”

At Roan’s words, Chris shook his head.

“I think it would be better to wait a bit more for that.”

It was composed, but had some expectations in his expression.

Roan saw Chris’s face and tilted his head.

Chris smiled faintly and said.

“By now, the trial of Benjamin Doyle is occurring in the capital of Miller.”

“Ah.....”

A low exclamation came out of Roan’s mouth.

Chris continued saying.

“It seems like with the help of Count Lancephil and corps commander Tate, everything Benjamin messed up is coming out. The chances of his title of nobility being deprived is high.”

At those words, Roan nodded.

He had kind of expected that part.

“On top of that, there’s a report saying that the reason Byron kingdom retreated is because of your plan.”

“Huh?”

Roan had a surprised expression.

He bitterly smiled and shook his head.

“That’s something you worked hard to do. It’s not my merits.”

“That’s not right.”

Chris hurriedly shook his hands.

“I just did as you ordered me to do so.”

He smiled brightly and continued saying.

“Anyways, if Benjamin gets his title deprived and your merits get reevaluated, the exile can become a bit lighter.”

Lighter.

It was only that.

Even if it was an unreasonable and stupid order, when he resorted to violence, Benjamin was still a noble.

Because of that, it wouldn’t happen that Roan would be completely withdrawn from the exile.

But there were high probabilities of his penalty being lowered.

Chris’s voice became low.

“With that condition, Count Lancephil has given the opinion of getting you in charge of the region of Tale.”

Right now, Io had given the punishment with the authority as a Count.

But if it proceeded as Io's will, Roan would get his punishment decreased by the orders of the royal palace, and formally get appointed to the subjugation of the monsters of the Tale region.

Also, he would become free in deciding the entrance and the coming and going of the region of Tale.

But of course, he couldn't do anything about him being labeled as a sinner until it was completely pardoned.

"If only that happens, won't it be good to move your agency's headquarters all the way to this region?"

There was no need to put it in a nearby region.

"For now it would be best to check the situation."

"Yes. That would be good."

At Roan's words, Chris nodded.

Roan fell into his thoughts for a moment.

'Establishing an alchemist guild, the head office of Chris's office, and the offices for each branch in the region of Tale is the most beneficial thing.....'

He had already planned to establish a force in the region of Tale anyways.

On top of that.

‘The end of the southern region of Tale meets with Poskein lake.’

Although there was quite some distance with the village of Perr, where Daiv was located at, it was the most suitable place to enter Poskein lake after this.

Roan ended his thoughts and looked at Chris.

“Good. For now, let’s wait until a decision is made in the capital. But before that....”

Just because of that, he couldn’t just wait while sucking his fingers.

He calmly told Chris all the plans he had set up until now.

Chris hurriedly started to write down notes at the plans that were more complex than what he thought.

And among them, there obviously was the investment on the five merchants, the investment in Daiv and the sailors association, and the gathering of alchemists and other skilled people.

“Oh, how is mister Ford’s progress in the mining industry?”

The only one that kept failing consecutively among the five was Ford.

Chris smiled faintly and replied.

“Fortunately, he did discover a small metal mine. The size isn’t

that big but as the abilities and skills are good, there's more production than the other mines."

"He certainly was a person with talent."

Chris nodded at Roan's words.

"Yes. He's someone that will become big if he only finds a proper and a big mine."

"Then....."

Roan said as if he was whispering and said.

"There's a mountain called Montea in the western part of Count Lancephil's territory. It's a mountain that no one has put their hands on yet."

"Montea mountain....."

Chris noted it down meticulously.

"Buy mining rights with the jewels I gave you."

"It seems like there's something over there?"

Chris asked with a nervous expression.

'There's a magic stone mine over there.'

It was a mine that would be discovered three years from now .



He clearly remembered it as it was news that could make the entire continent tremble.

‘But of course, I don’t know the exact location.....’

Finding the exact location was Ford’s job.

Roan forcefully hid his emotions and shrugged his shoulders.

“Even I don’t know that. I only heard that several miners wanted to mine in it once.”

This was the truth.

But of course, it wasn’t because they were certain or anything.

Wanting to try, thinking of maybe, that was the bigger side.

“Then, I think that quite a lot of miners should already have tried.”

These were Chris’s words.

Roan shook his head.

“No. That’s not true. Because the Lancephil family doesn’t sell mining rights.”

And it wasn’t only for Montea mountain.

Excluding three or four mountains that were in the territory of the Lancephil family, they didn’t sell mining rights at all.

Because there was no need to mine anymore and in the first place, they weren't interested in that part.

“Ah.....”

A low exclamation came out of Chris's mouth.

Roan took out a small envelope from his chest.

“It's a letter i'm sending to Count Lancephil. It's a kind of recommendation letter. Take that and go find the count.”

“You're telling me to go and convince him.”

“Yes. If it's you, you will be able to do it.”

No, precisely speaking, the convincing finished with Roan's letter.

If it was Roan who Io appreciated, he would send the mining rights without problems.

On top of that, there were also other contents written in it.

‘There are more reasons as to why we have to develop Montea mountain.’

Several things happen in the Lancephil family five years from now on.

And one of them is the territory battle with Count Chase, who was located at their west.

One year after this battle occurred.

A change happens in the Lancephil family.

‘If it’s Count Lancephil, he would understand the contents very well.’

Roan wrote that they should raise a fortress with Montea castle as the center.

He also included the reason why they should build a fortress and the things that would happen after that day.

Because he didn’t know how the future would change.

For now, he could only prepare for that.

‘If our side is the one to build the fortress.....’

The gathering of skilled people would lighten up.

The scale of this was getting bigger.

‘We are in a time where we slowly need more geniuses.’

The geniuses that were still hidden would start to appear.

Roan clearly remembered their existences.

‘If it gets remitted and the entrance to the region is allowed, I have to find the hidden existences.’

But that wasn’t all.

‘What’s as important as that is raising those people myself.’

He also had to slowly focus on the education of his troop members.

“Whew.”

A long sigh came out on its own.

There were just too many things he had to do.

But because of that, it wasn’t that he was annoyed.

Rather, his entire body heated up.

He had a feeling that he was accomplishing things.

‘Let’s work harder.’

Now was the time to work more earnestly.

Roan looked at Chris and extended his hand.

“Mister Chris. I will be asking of you.”

“Yes. I will do my best.”

Chris grabbed his hand and bowed.

The papers he was holding were felt heavily.

The notes written down meticulously.

Chris was really amazed.

‘If troop commander Roan’s plans all succeed.....’

He would be able to establish a more solid base than anyone.  
Chris took in a deep breath.

‘He’s not someone to just end as a troop commander, or as a corps commander.’

His heart beat.

‘The best thing I did since I was born.....’

Chris raised his head and looked at Roan.  
The hand he was holding felt hard and warm.

‘Was grabbing troop commander Roan’s hands.’

A smile appeared on his face.  
He wanted to run to Lancephil’s territory right away.  
He wanted to do anything for Roan.

“Then. I will see you later.”

Chris bid his farewell and left to the castle.  
And Roan also returned to his HQ.  
The two people waited for the judgement to be laid down in the

capital of Miller and they did their best in their jobs.

And five days flowed by like that.

## Chapter 87 : Establishing A Base (2)

---

The station was a distinctive spring.

Wind blew over the camp.

Flock!

The high flag fluttered with strength.

<Amaranth>

Amaranth troop was marching below the flag.

And the one leading at the front was Roan.

His armor was really wore down because of the continuous subjugations and battles that happened over the past five days.

But the eyes shining below the helmet were clearer and deeper than before.

“You have done well!”

“Hurray Amaranth troop!”

As they entered the camp, the troop members who were standing guard shouted cheers.

The morale was as high as if it would poke the sky.

“Troop commander.”

The centurion (hundred man commander) Semi, who was

guarding the camp while the troop was away, approached.

‘Huh?’

Roan opened his eyes roundly.

Because he saw a familiar face behind Semi.

‘Baron Hape?’

A middle aged man with neat and tidy clothes.

He was a retainer of the Lancephil family, Jerom Hape.

Because he came once per two weeks to provide them with food and provisions, he was familiar with Roan.

Semil said in a low voice.

“Baron Hape has come. But it’s not because of the supplies.”

He spoke in a voice that was a little excited.

Roan slowly nodded and bowed towards Jerom.

“Baron Hape.”

He exchanged light greetings.

“Troop commander Roan. You came just now.”



Jerom brightly smiled and grabbed Roan's hands.

Greetings came and went for a short while.

“Troop commander Roan.”

Jerom's voice became lower.

He had a faint smile.

“Receive this.”

He took out an envelope from his chest.

A high class paper.

Roan carefully tore open the envelope and took out the letter inside of it.

“Ah.....”

A low exclamation flowed out.

His eyes stopped on one sentence.

I'm naming troop commander Roan of the 2nd rose troop who was exiled to Tale region as the vanguard of the subjugation of the monsters.

The letter he had waited for five months.

It was a letter that informed him of his remission.

‘It seems like the situation finally concluded.’

Roan heard about the situation in the capital of Miller through the staff of Chris’s agency.

‘As Benjamin died in prison, the final judgement was suspended.’

No, it wasn’t merely a suspension.

But rather, the situation took a great turn.

The atmosphere of having to reevaluate Roan’s merits and remit him from his exile turned into a situation of inquiring about the conspiracy theory behind Benjamin’s death.

Even when Io paid attention to laying down the final judgement, the nobles showed more interest in other stories.

In the end, it took five months until he received the judgement of remission.

Roan breathed out a long breath.

‘Anyways, the results are better than what I thought.’

In Roan’s situation, there was nothing bad.

Although he still was a sinner, compared to the exile situation, he became a lot more free.

‘Is it the real start.’

His mouth slightly rose.

He bowed towards Jerom for now.

“Much thanks.”

“Hahaha. What did I do? Thanks anyways.”

“I will cleanly subjugate the monsters in the region of Tale.”

Roan said it as if he was determined and then looked towards Semi.

The troop members had already gathered behind him.

Roan looked at the members with a nervous expression and put on a faint smile.

Because he thought of another thing that was written in the letter.

“Count Lancephil has forgiven the sins of all those soldiers who received the punishment by him.”

“Re, really?”

Semi and the ex-Sollum troop members had surprised expressions and asked back.

Roan faintly smiled and nodded.

“Right. You’re not sinners anymore.”

“Ah.....”

Semi and the others let out low exclamations.

Originally, they were soldiers that belonged to a troop in the Lancephil territory but were punished because they made small and large mistakes.

Originally, there were even sinners that were exiled from other places but the ones that didn't belong to the camp had already died.

“Ah! Only now do I feel my chest clear up!”

“Damn! Am I also a common resident now?”

“Kuk! It feels good!”

Cheers poured up from everywhere.

Roan looked at that for a moment and then cleared his throat.

“Hm!”

The troop members shut their mouths like it was all a lie.

However, they couldn't hide their happiness.

Roan smiled faintly and continued saying.

“The soldiers that want to, can return to Pavor castle.”

As soon as he finished saying that.

“Troop commander!”

“What do you mean?”

The expressions of Semi and Sollum's troop members stiffened.  
And the happy look also disappeared.  
They shook their heads with an angry expression.

“Return to Pavor castle?”

“Don't say such things.”

Their voices became bigger every time.  
Semi took in a deep breath.

“Troop commander. We.....”

He continued saying after he looked at the soldiers at his back once.

“Are of Amaranth troop.”

Everyone's expressions turned red.  
The soldiers yelled with all their strength.

“We aren't going anywhere!”

“We will remain here!”

They shouted with composed voices and expressions.  
But of course, there were some that stepped back and wanted to return to Pavor castle.

But they were the minority.

‘If we return, we will get treated as returnees anyways.’

‘Patrolling the castle is tedious and boring.’

‘Tch! I don’t want to return to where those helpless bastards are.’

In the first place, the members of the Sollum troop didn’t have normal temperaments.

Because of that, they could keep guarding the Tale region even after they were punished.

If they were normal people, they would have thrown down everything and become farmers.

“Mmm.”

Roan had a satisfied look at the ex-Sollum troop.

He became surprised at the reactions that weren’t expected.

It had only been five months since Sollum troop joined them.

Roan thought that they would choose the safe Pavor castle instead of one of the most dangerous places, the region of Tale.

But most of them chose to remain here.

It felt like Roan’s actions until now had proven to be correct.

A feeling that the spirit of the members were poured into his entire body.

He brightly smiled and nodded.

“I’m glad. I also didn’t want to lose outstanding soldiers.”

What Roan wanted to see was this.

Pressing down with strength and make them submit through rank, power, and honor was an easy thing.

However Roan didn't want to increase his force through that method.

‘I'm gaining their hearts.’

He wanted to make the contents and not the shell to be at his side.

‘At least I made the feelings of Amaranth troop to be mine.’

He felt moved.

The wind blew past him.

‘Then, shall I start earnestly?’

He received the commission and the troop members also became one.

Only work remained now.

‘The first is certainly.....’

Many plans were drawn before his eyes.

And Chris's agency was at the top of that.

‘I have to establish an agency.’

It was now time to become proper eyes and ears for Amaranth troop.

Roan clenched his fists tightly.

His eyes moved to the north, where Pavor castle was located.

\*\*\*\*\*

An earnest change started to occur in the region of Tale.

Chris’s agency, the alchemists guild, and the associations of skilled people entered the region.

As it started on a small scale, the migration ended only after one month.

“We are finally together.”

Chris sat facing Roan and tilted his tea cup.

And Chris also smiled while remembering the past.

“Many things really have happened.”

Until now, quite a few things had happened.

In the first place, he whose dream was running a travel agency, opened his eyes in gathering and analyzing information and roamed the entire kingdom.

He had also roamed the battlefield and even entered enemy



territory.

His life had changed entirely after meeting Roan.

‘He’s my top benefactor.’

Then, Roan’s voice was heard.

“I’m thinking of moving more earnestly from now on.”

“Earnestly.....”

“I will leave your travel agency separately for international uses and establish another organization that will gather and analyze information.”

“Ah.....”

Chris let out a low exclamation.

Even so, it was something he had pondered about.

He couldn’t keep running the information agency in a size this small.

“I’m planning to call the group “Agens”. What do you think?”

“Agens.....Good.”

Chris smiled faintly and nodded.

Roan kept speaking.

“You’d be the head of Agens. From now on, you will have to be the ear and eyes for our Amaranth troop.”

“Yes. I will do my best.”

Chris clenched his fists with a resolute expression.

After that, conversations about the operation of Agens continued for a while.

It was decided that the members of Agens would learn basic martial arts and stamina training and get a more organized system.

“Agens will work as an affiliate of Amaranth troop.”

“Yes. I understand.”

Chris took in a deep breath.

Magnificence kept surging up.

Roan saw that and extended his right hand.

“Let’s keep working hard.”

Chris hesitated for a moment and then said with a careful expression.

“Troop commander Roan.”

He had a kind of serious and solemn expression.

“Agens has now formally become an affiliate of Amaranth troop. From now on, please speak comfortably.”

“Ah.....”

Roan nodded with a low exclamation.  
Because he realized Chris's intentions.

‘Right. We can’t maintain this relationship forever.’

Chris’s relationship was different with the other members.

As they each started in different situations, they became accustomed to speaking formally to each other.

However, now that Agens became part of Amaranth troop, there was a need to clearly differentiate the ranks.

“Fine. From now on, I will speak comfortably.”

“Yes. That’s the right thing to do.”

Chris brightly smiled and bowed.

In the first place, Chris received Roan’s help when he established his agency.

And after that, most of the inversions were provided by Roan.

Chris’s agency was just like Roan’s.

There was no displeasure or rejection about the ranks of superiority.

‘Rather, I feel more secure now that a branch was formed.’

Roan’s voice was heard.

“Then. Let’s work hard from now on.”

“I will do my best.”

The two people smiled while looking at each other.

Like this, the best information agency in the continent in his past life took its first step.

\*\*\*\*\*

Tang! Tang! Tang!

Hammering sounds were heard.

A wide plain spread out at the south of Amaranth troop’s HQ.

Tens of houses were being made in the place that didn’t have humans in it because of the frequent appearance of the monsters.

“Is there a need to go up to this point?”

Austin had an uneasy expression.

On the other side, there was a faint smile on Roan’s face who was watching the houses being built.

“The Tale region becomes more fertile the more we go to the south. We can’t just let this good soil go to waste.”

“I do know that. But compared to the north, the south has many more monsters appearing in it. Will people move to this dangerous place?”

Austin let out a short sigh.

The smile in Roan's mouth became even denser.

“We have to make it so they do want to move.”

A composed voice and with strength replied back.

‘I have to make the residents in the north migrate to the south.’

Although the Tale region was one of the most dangerous ones and an exiled place, it wasn't like it didn't have residents at all.

With the permission of the Lancephil family, about 2,000 people were placed to live in a comparatively safe zone located at the north.

It was a measure to provide supplies and for the comfort of the ex-Sollum troop, who protected the region and subjugated the monsters.

‘Because there's a limit with the supplies given by the count's family.’

The residents of this region gave some of the harvested crops to the troop and made a living like that.

Even in that situation where life wasn't easy and you didn't know where monsters could appear, the residents didn't leave the region of Tale.

‘Because the Lancephil family exempted them from taxes.’

Tang! Tang! Tang!

The sound of hammers became clearer.

The ones building the houses were the carpenters belonging to the artisans associations.

And they were also really uneasy when they first moved over to the region of Tale.

But after they realized that the surroundings were safer than what they had thought because of the subjugation of Amaranth troop, they became a bit relaxed.

On top of that, they started to build tens of houses according to Roan's plans and gained quite the good profits.

Roan looked at the construction and fell into his thoughts.

'I will build the houses first and make the rent to have no compensation to the ones that decide to move over. On top of that, I'm stationing two companies (hundred men squads) over here.'

These were the methods to make the residents of the north migrate to the south.

The establishment of houses was one of the main businesses of gold master Sale, in his past life.

Normal commoners made their own houses with their own hands.

But this was a difficult thing and lasted longer than what they thought.

Because of that, commoners just raised up a wall roughly so it didn't collapse and covered it with weeds and branches to make a

roof so rain didn't leak in.

They were really sloppy shaped houses.

If a strong wind blew, the roofs would get blown up and the walls would crumble.

And everytime that happened, they had to repair it or make a new one.

In this situation, gold master Sale made tens of units to build houses and started a business that consisted of lending it instead of a certain rent.

Roan was planning to use Sale's house business.

'I will provide them with a house a lot better than what they are living in right now.'

It certainly was a condition they would get charmed by.

'On top of that, if they are farmers, they won't ignore the fertile grounds of the south.'

If only security was assured to some degree, they would come running immediately and start farming.

'For now, I will have to meet the residents of the north.'

He was planning to meet them, reveal his plans, and convince them.

But of course, he didn't think of forcefully making them move.

“Austin. Keep guard thoroughly and protect the carpenters.”

At those words, Austin , who was looking at the situation, made a short salute.

“Sir. Don’t worry about here.”

He had a reliable look.

Roan slightly bowed and mounted his horse.

As he pulled the reins, the horse turned to the north.

“Hiyat!”

As he kicked the horse, it started to ride with strength.

Dudududu.

Horse clops were heard along with a white dust that rose up.

Roan stuck his chest to the saddle and took in a deep breath.

Then, he saw black smoke surging up consecutively.

At that moment Roan’s face stiffened.

He knew what the identity of the smoke was.

‘Beacon?’



## Chapter 88 : Establishing A Base (3)

---

Although the region of Tale was one of the most dangerous places, just looking at its size, it wasn't that big.

Even with the farthest place, that was Poskein lake that was at the south, it took a quarter of a day to reach it.

Because of that, if they could only grasp the appearance and movement of the monsters quickly, they could subjugate them perfectly without suffering that many losses.

That's why the beacon was made.

With the HQ at the center, the beacons were lined up in a long fashion to the four cardinal points, and thanks to that, they could quickly realize that monsters had appeared.

‘Not the east, west, and south but the north?’

Roan kicked his horse and frowned.

The north was the region where people resided.

Because of that, it was the place where they had to subjugate more perfectly than other places.

And actually during the past five months, monsters appeared only three times in the north.

But even so, they were perfectly annihilated before they reached near the village.

Dudududu.

The sound of horse steps was heard clearly.

You could see the HQ from far away.

The entrance, that was closed stiff, opened up as if they were waiting for them.

The guard had discovered Roan coming closer.

“What happened?!”

Roan yelled with all of his strength as soon as he entered the camp.

One of the centurions, Ant, came running quickly.

“Looking at the order the beacons were fired off, it seems like monsters are moving from the southeast to the northwest.”

He replied with an urgent voice and expression.

‘Monsters from the south going to the north?’

Roan frowned.

There was no reason for the monsters to move to the north, that was well guarded.

‘Has it already started?’

Roan could think of a reason for it.

He put more strength in his hands that were grabbing the reins.

“And the centurions?”

“Just like we trained recently, Semi, Tane, and Pete each lead their companies and marched! Even centurion Harrison, who was patrolling in the north, would have moved after seeing the beacon.”

“Good. Then, I’m entrusting the HQ to you!”

“Yes. Don’t worry!”

Ant made a short salute.

Roan hurriedly turned the head of his horse.

And soon, the cavalry appeared.

Their numbers were merely 50.

However, they were the best among the best in Amaranth troop.

“We are moving quickly towards the village in the north! Don’t fall behind!”

“Yes! Understood!”

At Roan’s orders, the cavalymen replied in one voice and kicked their horses.

The chest that moved closely to the saddle.

The fifty cavalymen ran while splitting the air with Roan at the front.

Their destination was the village in the north.

It was the place that still hadn’t fired up the beacon.

\*\*\*\*\*

Hans, who was exactly 60 this year, lived a life filled with despair.

The stories tell that he was born as a vassal of a wicked and stupid noble family, lived on while being pressured, and exploited and became a vagabond at the age of 49.

He was wandering in the eastern region of Rinse kingdom and then became a vassal of the Lancephil family thanks to Io's consideration.

He was placed in a barren land in the northern region with people with similar circumstances as him, but he couldn't live calmly at all because the people of Byron kingdom invaded without stop.

Then, he heard the notices that the Lancephil family was selecting people to immigrate to the region of Tale.

On top of that, he even heard that they were going to exempt them from taxes and provide them some money for the settlement.

The foreigner Hans, who didn't even know what kind of place the region of Tale was, applied for it, and got elected.

That was when he was 53 years old.

Hans migrated to the northern region of Tale along with 3,000 people.

Only then did he realize that the region of Tale was heaven for monsters, but he believed in the territory guards that were settled in together with them.

But merely after two years that they settled in, thousands of residents and most of the guards lost their lives.

The region of Tale was really heaven for monsters and hell for humans.

Most of the surviving people trembled in fear and left the region

of Tale.

However, Hans stayed in place until the end.

This was because the support and the tax exemption was too sweet.

‘Even if I return to where I originally lived, it’s obvious that I will die at the hands of the Byron bastards.’

If he was going to die like this and like that, it was more profitable to stay in the region of Tale.

Fortunately, the Lancephil family provided soldiers consistently.

They even sent knights and soldiers to the north of Tale and subjugated the monsters.

Seven years has passed like that.

The number of the residents repeatedly increased and decreased and now they maintained a number of 2,000.

Although the number of the guards that first amounted to 3,000 was now 800, the north of Tale was quite the safe place.

Monsters didn’t appear that often and even if they did, they were close to the troop’s HQ so it didn’t turn into become a dangerous situation.

Thanks to that, three big and small villages set place following the boundary of the north.

And the village that was created first and had the most number of people was this place, the place was called the village of the north.

Hans was now enjoying his old and stable life as the chief of the village.

“Huh?”

Hans, who was taking some air at the high watchtower, frowned.  
A middle aged man was running towards him in an urgent manner.

‘Liss the herbman?’

Liss was someone that wandered around the safe places of the village and harvested good quality herbs.

He shook his arms with an urgent expression and movements.

‘What’s happening?’

As he paid more attention, he thought that he was yelling something. However, he couldn’t hear well because of the distance.

Only after the distance was closed did Liss’s words become clearly heard.

“Monster group! Monsters have appeared!”

At that moment, Hans’s expression stiffened.

‘Monster?! Why monsters so suddenly…….’

He almost hadn’t seen any monsters recently.

He first calmed down his surprised heart and then yelled towards the guards that were at the watch tower.

“Ring the bell! There are monsters!”

“Ye, yes! Understood!”

The guards nodded with a surprised expression.

Dong! Dong! Dong!

Soon, the sounds of the bell were heard clearly.

As Liss entered the village, the gates that were open, closed quickly.

Soon, Hans got down the watchtower asked with an urgent expression.

“You said monsters? Is that true?”

“Pant. Pant. It’s true. It is.”

Liss calmed down his breath and barely started talking.

“I was harvesting some herbs near the village and then saw a dust cloud surging up.”

His voice trembled.

“I wondered what was happening and climbed to the peak of a mountain and then saw a group of monsters that were approaching

with a black color.”

“Black?”

Hans asked back after he dry gulped.

Liss just nodded several times instead of replying.

Meanwhile, the villages people gathered around.

“Wh, what’s happening?”

“Chief. Did something happen?”

Everyone had expressions filled with worry.

Hans frowned.

‘Monsters are coming in a black group?’

His sight moved over to the high fences covering the village.

‘They were called Amaranth troop.’

This was the troop that was working instead of the Sollum troop to guard the region and subjugate the monsters.

Five months ago, the members of Amaranth troop sought the village and built an even higher fence and a watch tower inside of it.

‘Will we be able to hold on?’



There were about 100 guards inside the village.

‘No. It’s impossible.’

Although they had the newly build fence and the watch tower, it was impossible to handle the black group of monsters approaching them.

‘To the south, it’s better to escape to the south.’

When he thought up to there.

“Chief!”

The guards in the watchtower yelled in one voice.

A yell closer to despair.

Hans frowned and then moved up to the watchtower.

“Ah.....”

A low exclamation came out of his lips.

And that was an exclamation mixed with fear and discouragement.

“What happened?”

“What is happening!”

The villages people yelled.

Hans looked outside the village while gritting his teeth.

‘There’s at least 2,000 of them.’

Just like Liss’s words, the group was pitch black.

And moved faster than thought.

White dust surged over them.

‘It’s impossible to escape.’

Going out of the village now was tantamount to suicide.

‘A fortress!’

They could only face the monsters inside the village.

He remembered the young troop commander of Amaranth troop he had met quite some time ago.

‘Was he called Roan.’

He was a really well mannered and confident youth.

‘Did he say that the defensive system of the north was perfect.....’

Expression and attitude filled with confidence.

That look was still fresh.

‘In the end, we can only wait and believe in the Amaranth troop.’

They could only hope for that perfect defense system to be of great strength for them.

Hans yelled below the watchtower.

“Prepare for battle! Move the women and children to the inner parts of the village and the guards and men all come up to the watchtower!”

He took in a breath for a moment and then continued saying.

“Monsters are charging in.”

At that moment, a heavy silence fell onto the villagers.

An unexpected thing came out of his mouth.

They were kind of relaxed because monsters hadn’t appeared until now.

Then.

“Kyaa!”

The yell of a young girl broke the silence.

“Ah! Hu, hurry!”

“Quickly!”

That was the start.

The residents moved quickly.

Although there was no control, they were residents of Tale.

Hans also hurriedly sent the order.

“Gather rocks and prepare hot water.”

“Yes? Ah, yes!”

The vice chief and the head of the guards, Carl, replied with an urgent expression and got down the watchtower.

Hans just stood still and watched the monsters.

The bastards were just lining up without any formations.

Kuang!

A cry was heard following the wind.

Although he tried to forcefully act calm, dry saliva was gulped down unconsciously.

Meanwhile, the guards and the men took place in the watch tower.

They raised the bows and arrows Amaranth troop provided them with and aimed at the monsters.

Gulp.

Their adam's apples shook severely.

Although they did stand up on the watchtower to protect their families, they couldn't do anything about feeling nervous.

As they saw the 2,000 monsters, their knees shook and became short of breath.

But even so, they couldn't escape.

'We protect our village ourselves.'

Everyone ground their teeth.

Then.

Woooooo!

The monsters let out cries and started to charge.

As 2,000 monsters kicked the ground at the same time, white dust rose up.

They closed the distance in an instant.

At that moment, several arrows were poured down from the watchtower.

Sweeeee!

A sharp sound rang out.

But they, who didn't have proper training in the bow, couldn't

put strength behind it.

Pubububuk.

Most of the arrows were stuck in the ground.

Kieek!

Monsters charged to the fences along with their cries.

“Fire arrows! Throw the rocks!”

Hans yelled with all his strength.

The guards used all their strength to throw rocks and fire arrows.

However, they couldn't stop the advance of the monsters.

They soon moved closer to the fences.

‘Ca, can't we block them?’

‘Is it the end?’

Everyone was thinking with expressions full of despair.

“Huh?”

“Uh?”

Sweeeeee!

Sharp sounds were heard.

At the same time, a dense shadow appeared before their eyes.

It was a darkness that seemed to cover the clouds.

Hans and the villagers raised their heads to look at the sky.

“Ah!”

A low exclamation came out of everyone’s mouths.

‘Arrows!’

At that moment.

Pubububuk.

A rain of arrows poured over the monsters.

“Kieeeeeek!”

“Kuek!”

The monsters, who were running towards the village with good spirit, started to fall.

They started to become porcupines one by one.

At the same time, the sound of the horn trumpet was heard

beyond the monsters.

Puuuuuuu!

It was a sound that made their chests boil.

White dust rose up.

A troop flag surged up from the back of the monsters.

&lt;Amaranth.&gt;

Hans saw that and said with a moved expression.

“It’s Amaranth! The Amaranth troop appeared!”

Despair filled with joy.

The villagers that were half absent-minded at the sudden situation yelled only then.

“Waaaaaaa!”

“Amaranth troop! Hooray!”

An amazing shout exploded out from them.

Hans took in a deep breath and covered his face with his two hands.

As his nervousness disappeared, his two legs trembled and tears started to pour out.



‘Ho, how could they come this fast?’

The herbman Liss had discovered the monsters and came running just now.

But Amaranth troop, who should be at the HQ, had already appeared.

Hans wiped off his tears with the back of his hand and looked at the troop flag.

‘There really was the perfect defense system troop commander Roan talked about.’

He became excited for nothing.

Then, a group in the rear started charging in while pushing back the monsters.

It was a really fierce charge.

It was Roan and the 50 cavalrymen.

Behind him, the infantry company followed him.

Tung! Tudung! Tung!

“Kuek!”

“Kek!”

At the charge of the warhorses, the small sized monsters were bounced off to the sides.

The cavalrymen and infantry took that opportunity and they made their spears dance.

Slash! Spat!

Horrible sounds were heard with the heads of the monsters falling to the ground.

Paat!

Finally, Roan and the troop members perfectly pierced through the monsters and stood at the entrance of the village.

Roan was fully covered with the blood of the monsters.

He raised his head for a moment and looked at the people on the watch tower.

“Ah.....”

The villagers let out a low exclamation.

They saw the faint smile on Roan's mouth.

The uneasiness that remained in a corner of their hearts completely disappeared.

Roan turned the head of the horse again and looked at the monsters.

He had a scary look.

His lips were shut.

Behind him, the soldiers took formation and organized

themselves.

Roan took in a deep breath.

The smell of the fierce battlefield entered deep into the lungs.

The lips that were tightly shut started to move.

Soon, a rather low and strong order fell out.

“Annihilate.”

## Chapter 89 : Establishing A Base (4)

---

The ghost of the battlefield.

That was the nickname given to Roan during the subjugation in the Pedian plains.

But the nickname back then was given because he accurately found the monster nests. Not because of his overwhelming and powerful strength and abilities.

A ghost that was a fortuneteller.

However, the Roan right now, he really resembled an amazing ghost.

Spat!

The Traviass spear split the air.

Because of the Flamdor mana technique, mana of white light flowed in the spear.

Slash! Stab!

“Kuek!”

“Kek!”

The cries of the monsters became mixed with the terrible noises.

Every time Traviass spear moved once, several monsters fell.

It was a spear drawing a line.

Blood flowed from the traces.

Paat!

The blood boiled the air of the battlefield.

At Roan's hand movements, the flagman moved his flags quickly.

Flutter! Flutter!

Followed by that, sounds of the horn trumpet and drums were heard.

Puuuuuu! Dun! Dun! Dun!

Four centurion squads that were spread in a rectangular shape pressed down the monsters.

Amaranth troop outclassed them by far in both spirit and force.

But the numbers of the monsters were more than double.

The battle became fiercer than what they thought.

“Injured ones to the back! Quickly fill in the collapsed formations!”

Roan yelled with all his strength at the front.

Each centurions operated some squads of ten in an organic shape.

It was a strange and weird movement.

Amaranth troop resembled a living being.

“If we fall, the village falls.”

Roan yell aloud.

He had a determined expression.

He put more strength in his hands.

And that was the same for the members of the Amaranth troop.

They had clearly grasped the nature and thoughts Roan had while roaming the battlefield with him.

‘We are protecting the villagers.’

‘They’re people we must protect.’

The troop members took in a deep breath.

The number of the monsters was still more than a thousand.

Roan and the troop members glared at them coldly.

In this situation, they couldn’t hope for luck.

Strength vs strength.

They needed a frontal victory.

“Charge!”

“Uaaaaaa!”

As Amaranth troop started the charge, the monsters also kicked the ground.

“Chwee!”

“Kek!”

The front of each side collided.

A great battle unfolded in front of the village.

Spat!

Roan’s spear danced and drew a line.

\*\*\*\*\*

“Whew.”

A long breath flowed out.

Roan was standing in the middle of the battlefield.

‘Did it end?’

It was fierce.

So much so that it could be considered the fiercest battle since he returned to the past.

The surroundings were filled with the corpses of monsters.

Blood flowed through his armor, spear, and helmet.

“There aren’t any monsters alive.”

“The monsters were exterminated.”

Semi and the several centurions approached and saluted.

They all looked terrible.

However, a faint excitement and pride was shown on their faces.

“Retrieve the corpses of the soldiers that died in battle and heal the injured ones.”

“Yes! Understood.”

At Roan’s orders, the centurions replied with strength and scattered to the sides.

Soon, the troop members started to move quickly according to their orders.

Roan looked at that for a moment and then went to the entrance of the village.

Kiiiiik!

The closed gates started to open as if it was waiting for him.

You could see Hans and the villagers from the opened crack.

Everyone had moved expressions.

Roan roughly shook off the blood on his armor and stood in front of the villagers.

“I’m troop commander Roan of the Amaranth troop.”



He said with his head lightly bowing.

At that moment, Hans and the others also bowed.

“Oh my. Tha, thank you!”

“We were able to keep our lives thanks to you.”

“Much thanks.”

At that look, Roan had a faint smile.

It gave off a somewhat lonesome feeling.

“I’m glad everyone’s safe.”

It was true.

He was glad that the people, the village, was safe.

However.

‘More troop members died and became injured than what I had initially thought.’

This was the fate of a soldier.

They were the ones that would end up dying while protecting what they had to.

‘I mustn’t forget their deaths.’

Roan took in a deep breath.

Then, Hans stood to the front and spoke in a low voice; almost as if he was whispering.

“How did you realize so quickly and come here?”

Roan faintly smiled and explained about the patrolling system and the beacons in a simple manner.

Hans, who was listening to it, nodded with an amazed expression.

‘He really has a perfect defensive system.’

The more he saw him the more he felt reliable and trustworthy.

“Ah.....”

Then he saw the soldiers retrieving the corpses of the fallen soldiers behind Roan.

At that instant, Hans’s expression turned dark.

“It seems like many soldiers died because of us.....It seems like you suffered a really big loss for a village that wouldn’t matter if it even existed.”

Hans looked at the villagers closely.

Just how much strength did the Amaranth troop put in protecting the village?

They couldn't forget their pathetic looks.

The villagers gathered both of their hands to their chests and slightly bowed.

Roan shook his head at that look.

“Our role is protecting your life and well being.”

There was strength in his voice.

“We are no different from a family.”

Roan looked at the faces of Hans and the villagers.

“I, and our Amaranth troop never forget about family.”

Even if he was powerful and rich, he wouldn't be able to live on as a monarch throwing away his citizens.

‘That's a real monarch.’

This was one of the principles of the monarch he thought that a monarch required and one of the most important things.

That was the loving feeling towards his citizens.

“Ah.....”

Hans and the villagers let out low exclamations.

‘I knew that he was a fine person.....’

When Roan first came to the village while leading Amaranth troop.

When they built an even higher and sturdier fence and even built a watchtower.

When they subjugated the monsters one step ahead.

By then, they had already felt that Roan was different from the ordinary commanders until now.

However, they didn't know that he was a person with such a big plate that he would even put his life on the line to protect the lives of the commoners.

Hans knew the reason as to why the troop members moved without any hesitation at Roan's orders.

‘If it's him, they can trust and follow him.’

Because it was to the point that even he felt like that.

Then, Roan's voice was heard.

“Chief. I have something to tell you in private.”

He spoke with a careful expression and words different from before.

Hans nodded.

“Yes. Let’s go to our house.”

He was the benefactor of his life.

He was planning to listen to him in whatever he said.

Hans walked in front and Roan followed him.

As they moved inside the fence, they saw an old and shabby but clean village.

The kids were looking at him with eyes filled with curiosity.

The ladies pulled those kids into their embrace.

It was a really peaceful scenery.

‘I did well in protecting them while putting my life on the line.’

He wanted to protect this small and simple happiness.

Roan took in a deep breath.

‘To keep protecting this happiness.....’

There was a need to migrate the villagers to a new place, the south.

But now, it wasn’t simply to harvest the rich soil.

‘The monsters migrating to the north was ahead of the timetable that I thought.’

Roan knew the reason why the monsters were moving to the north.

‘There’s not much left for the exodus of Poskein lake.’

The lights in his eyes sank down calmly.

The Poskein exodus.

It was a strange phenomenon that was revealed only after a really long time even in his past life.

“Whew.”

Roan took a long sigh and shook his head.

‘I’ll have to hurry up a bit more.’

It was now time to whip on the running horse.

For Roan, Poskein’s exodus was a danger and an opportunity.

‘And to turn the danger into an opportunity.....’

Several plans flowed down in his head.

A red light shined in his clear and deep eyes.

\*\*\*\*\*

The exodus of Poskein lake.

After the war between Rinse and Byron kingdom, the continent folded in a period of safety for a moment.

The kingdoms that waged war concentrated on cleaning it up, and the ones that didn't wage war focused on their livings.

At that moment.

Monsters started to pour out from Poskein lake to the ground.

The four kingdoms surrounding Poskein lake couldn't act properly at the sudden phenomenon and because of that, the region near the lake ended up getting destroyed.

The four kingdoms mobilized their forces late and went up to subjugate the monsters, and only after three months of war could they exterminate all of their enemies.

The four kingdoms that were each estranged with each other started to work together in this opportunity.

At first, the investigation team researched the reason why the monsters started to pour out to the ground so suddenly.

However, even after spending eight years on it, they couldn't reveal any clear reasons.

Then Ferb, who was the librarian from the kingdom of Estia's library, found out one interesting thing.

And it was that in a historical book that was in a romero in the library, the 'continental movement' was mentioned several times. Written in it, the 'continental movement' mentioned about the monsters from Poskein Lake pouring out into the land.

Although there wasn't any specific reason written in it, things about the omens were recorded in detail.

And one of the omens was that the water of Poskein lake, that was supposed to provide water to the soil of the Istel kingdom's ground, started to flow out into the sea through a passage; making

the harvest decrease. Also, it mentioned that an unknown disease would spread rampantly.

The next omen was that the monsters near Poskein lake moved to the sides to get further away from the lake.

The romero was recording this phenomenon of Poskein lake as the 'Poskin exodus'.

Only then did the research teams of the four kingdoms realize that the decrease in harvests of the Istel kingdom and the unknown movements of the monsters were all due to the Poskein exodus.

'Even the monsters in the region of Tale started to move to the north, evading Poskein lake in the south.'

It meant that there wasn't much time left until the exodus.

'The disturbance of the monsters will become more severe every time.'

As a result, the northern Tale region wasn't a safe place anymore.

If the three villages were scattered like this, there was a high probability in giving serious burdens to the defense system.

'It's safer to migrate them to a new village.'

The village that was being developed in the south had a proper defense and headquarters where the centurion squads could stay at.



In the position of the villagers, rather than entrusting their lives to a sloppy fence, watch tower, and inexperienced guards, it was safer to migrate to a new village.

And even if that place was closer to Poskein lake.

“Chief. What I want to tell you today is related to migration.”

Right after he finished saying that, Han’s face became solid.

“Do, do you want to kick us out?”

He had an uneasy expression.

At those words, Roan smiled faintly and shook his head.

“No. We want to migrate the residents in the north to the south.”

“To the south?”

These were words that he hadn’t thought would come out at all.

Roan slowly nodded.

“Yes. To the south.”

He explained for a long while the reasons why they should migrate to the south in great detail.

The fertile ground, houses provided with no compensation, a safe defensive system.

And at the end he emphasized that the northern region would

stop being a safe zone because of the commotion of the monsters.

But of course, he didn't talk about the Poskein exodus.

“Mmm.....”

Hans fell into his thoughts while he shut his mouth.

He couldn't decide this alone.

“For now, I will consult with the villagers.”

“Yes. Talk and debate the time you need and decide. And if perhaps.....”

Roan paused the last words for a moment and continued speaking.

“It would be better to leave the region of Tale momentarily for the ones that don't want to migrate to the south.”

“Is it because of the disturbance of the monsters?”

Hans asked carefully.

And Roan slowly nodded.

“Yes. The disturbance would probably become fiercer the more time passes. But there's a limit in the defensive system of our troop. It's impossible to guard all three villages set up in the northern region.”

“Right.”

Hans smiled bitterly.

He took in a deep breath and looked at Roan.

“For now, I will speak with the villages.”

“Yes. Then, I will be waiting for good news.”

Roan stood up from his seat.

The things he had to do here had ended.

‘For now, I’ll have to wait for the decision of the people and go subjugate some monsters.’

He was planning to sweep up everything he could before the Poskein lake exodus occurred.

‘For now, I’ll have to go find the alchemists and blacksmiths.’

He had many things to do.

He had to build and test the several weapons and tools being developed before the exodus.

And it was also time to move Daiv and the sailor alliance that was expanding in force in the village of Perr.

‘I need to do it one by one.’

Roan clenched his fists.

He already had some kind of a base.

And now was time to raise an axis and build a house.

And it was time to protect that house.

# Chapter 90 : Poskein Exodus (1)

---

The alchemists that research while hiding themselves deep in a forest or in a secluded room.

A necessary branch for the production of weapons and items.

At first glance, it was a really important job.

Because of that, it seemed as if it was treated quite finely but actually it wasn't like that.

First, in the cases of alchemists, you had to spend quite a lot of money for the researches and the results were poor and in the process of the researches bit and small accidents happened in consecution.

On top of this, alchemy was labeled as skills of the devil and the distance between them and the magicians and priests got wider and the rank of alchemists reached the lowest floor.

The reason why blacksmiths, carpenters, etc were treated more contemptuously was much simpler.

The kingdoms of this era didn't see the people that sweated while moving their bodies in a good manner.

Stupid bastards that only knew how to move their hands.

This was the thoughts of the nobles and powerful people.

Thanks to that the several branches couldn't get treated well and were exploited with manual labor.

In that situation, Roan promised a safe lodging and constant investments while gathering skilled people so soon quite a number of people gathered.

They built houses near the HQ of Amaranth troop and settled in, but there was no quiet day.

“I wonder. It’s like that because that’s not it. We have to put 20 steel pieces more!”

“If we do that, the durability decreases and only the weight increases!”

“Just believe in me and do it once.”

“Do you think I was deceived by those words once or twice? Hmph.”

A hot workshop.

Two people that gave completely different impressions were raising their voices.

The middle aged man with white skin was Oden.

He was an alchemist that specialized in the combination of minerals.

The middle aged man facing Oden was another middle aged man with a red face, called Vixx.

He was considered to be one of the best blacksmiths.

The two people were following Roan’s orders to make a lighter but stronger weapon and were combining forces.

The problem was that their thoughts were too different and that the clashing of opinions was too severe.

“But you don’t know, so try it once! You just have to do what I tell you to do so!”

“If you want to do it that much do it yourself!”

The voices became louder.

The surrounding blacksmiths clicked their tongues and shook

their heads.

Then, a shadow appeared in the entrance.

“Huh?!”

The surrounding blacksmiths bowed with a surprised expression.

“Troop commander Roan!”

The person that entered through the entrance was none other than Roan.

After he returned from the village of the north he went to find some blacksmiths.

‘They are also hard working today.’

Roan looked at Oden and Vixx and smiled.

Although it seemed like they would hit each other any time, he knew that they were actually sharing their opinions.

‘I was also taken by them at first.’

He sweated cold sweat trying to calm them down.

But it didn’t mean that the fierce quarrel disappeared just because he did that.

In the end, he just left them be and little by little, results started to show in.

‘After they fight like they would kill each other, they cleanly order things while drinking alcohol.’

The two people were a good match for each other.

“Oden. Vixx.”

Roan moved his feet and called the two of them.

“Ah! Troop commander.”

“Troop commander. Have you come?”

Although Roan was much younger than them, the ranks were clear.

The two people belonged to the alliance of alchemists and skilled people but in the first place, they were an institution belonging to a branch of Amaranth troop.

“You are also fierce today.”

At those words, the two people scratched their heads as if it was embarrassing.

Roan looked around the workshop and continued saying.

“It’s becoming time we have to start preparing. What happened with what I asked you last time?”



A soft voice but with strength.

Vixx opened his two eyes roundly.

“Ah! The new product is out.”

They hurriedly got to the inner part of the workshop and then took out a shapeless armor and a round shield.

The armor was quite ordinary and the shield had a size to barely be able to cover your upper body and it was even thin.

The two of them were of a black color and the texture was smooth.

“We did make it as you told us for now, but will the size of this shield of any use?”

It meant that it was too small.

If you covered your head, it revealed all your body, and if you curled up to protect your body it revealed your abdomen and the lower parts.

Roan made an eye sign as if it was fine.

“Ahem.”

Vixx put on the armor and shield while clearing his throat.

The shield was well fixed on his left wrist.

“Now, look.”

Vixx moved his body everywhere with a nervous expression.

He showed movements of swinging the shield and blocking and then moved his arm behind his back.

Then.

Click.

The shield took place at his back with the sound of metal.

Behind him, a hanger in his back interlocked firmly with a hanger at the insides of the shield.

Vixx turned back and showed his back.

“Just like you said, we made the shield so it could be attachable. Although it’s gonna be quite difficult before getting proficient. Even i’m failing 6 out of 10 times.”

He extended his arm again and moved the shield sideways.

Click.

The hangers loosened up with the sound of metal and the shield separated.

Vixx took posture once more and lowered his stance.

“And lastly.....”

His right hand hid behind the shield.

Srung!

A nice feeling sound of metal.

At the same time, a small sword the size of a forearm appeared.

“We hid one small sword.”

The demonstrations ended.

Roan nodded and clapped.

“Amazing.”

His mouth rose.

‘It’s a bit different to what Ian Phillips designed but if it’s this much it’s still amazing.’

The use of a small shield and the small sword.

It was one of the parts the genius strategist Ian focused on experimenting with.

‘When others were developing a longer spear, heavier sword, an arrow that could be fired longer, Ian rather focused on developing a short weapon that was light and yet strong.’

Thanks to that, Rinse kingdom could show an overwhelming strength at close combat.

‘If on top of this I can also combine the weapons of the other continents and kingdoms.....’

The strongest troop in history may be born.

But one unfortunate thing.

‘I just vaguely know the shape. I don’t know with what principles, ingredients, or methods those things were made.’

Those things were parts that the alchemists and blacksmiths had to fill in.

And because of that, he had gathered them faster than anyone and wasn’t petty on the inversions.

“First, you will have to mass produce that shield.”

“Yes. I understand.”

Vixx hit his shield with his right hand as if it was no problem at all.

Roan smiled satisfactorily and nodded.

“Thank you everyone for following an unreasonable order.”

Right before he finished saying that, Owen shook both of his hands.

“We are rather thankful for letting us research as much as we want.”

“Yes. It’s the first time we got treated like this since we were born.”

Vixx followed up.

Roan slightly bowed towards those people.

He wasn’t simply investing on them.

Roan and Amaranth troop members treated and respected them in a human way.

“Let’s keep working hard.”

At Roan’s words Oden and Vixx clenched their fists.

“Believe in us!”

A confident expression and voice.

Roan of the Amaranth troop, Oden of the alchemists guilds, Vixx of the skilled people association.

The three people looked at each other and smiled.

\*\*\*\*\*

“That’s not it. The angle you are stepping in is wrong.”

Roan’s voice rang in the training ground.

Amaranth troop members were tightly nervous.

They swung their spear while standing up in a firm line.

Pat!

Every time the spear split the air, a sharp sound was heard.

‘They are certainly having it difficult.’

Roan was teaching ROan’s spearmanship to the spearmen.

And he even taught the infantry, cavalry men and archers some separate things he knew.

Although the level of it was low compared to his spearmanship, even so it was a must to teach to normal soldiers.

‘I’m selecting new Squad commanders based on the merits until now and their progress on training.’

Stuck water rots.

Roan wanted to make a system that could promote anyone to a higher rank if they only had the abilities and capabilities to do so.

‘Reasonable and fair competition develops everyone.’

But even so, he didn't think of throwing away the soldiers that fell behind.

He was planning to teach them separately while putting in a little bit more of effort.

Using carrots and whips at the same time.

“Your spear fell! Put more strength in your arms!”

Roan yelled one more time with all his strength.

He could kind of see that the entire troop was becoming stronger.

Then, one man appeared at the entrance of the training ground.

A really familiar face.

‘Pens.’

He was Chris's right hand and the vice president of the agency.

Roan entrusted Austin with the training and moved.

“Pens.”

“Troop commander.”

Pens lightly saluted and put a smile.

Roan patted his shoulders and went towards his office.

“Is Chris well?”

“Yes. He's really busy right now.”

Pens smiled brightly and replied.

Roan put an awkward smile.

“I feel sorry for him.”

It was Roan that asked him things that took too much effort.

But Pens shook his head.

“No. He’s having a lot of fun right now.”

“I’m glad then.”

Roan let out a short sigh and then got inside his office.

Pens took out a thick pile of papers as if he was waiting for it.

It was the gathered and analyzed information centered in the eastern region of Rinse kingdom.

Roan lightly looked at it and then looked at Pens.

“Anything in particular?”

“That.....”

Pens hesitated for a moment and then continued saying.

“I’m talking about Montea mountain.”

If it’s Montea mountain, it was the mountain they bought a



mining right through the orders of Roan.

“Even so, we think it was in vain.”

They had roamed several places of the mountain for 5 months but they didn't discover any mine or minerals.

Roan asked back with a composed expression.

“What are the thoughts of the others?”

“For now chief Chris and the staff of our agency all judge that it was in vain. But....”

Pens paused for a moment and then said in a low voice.

“The responsible one, mister Ford, seems to think in another way. He says he's getting a feeling. That there certainly is something in Montea mountain.....”

“Something?”

Roan copied his words.

Pens smiled bitterly.

“He's asking to increase the inversions. To dig deeper.....”

Just by looking at the situation, it was no different to a helpless proposal.

But Roan, that knew that there was an incredible sized magic

stone mine put a proud smile.

‘Ford. He’s a friend with quite good senses.’

Roan hit the end of the table with his fingers.

“Good. Tell Chris to increase the inversions.”

“Yes?”

Pens asked back with a surprised expression.

He said in an urgent voice.

“With the current situation, we can’t have that much of a leisure. The jewels you have given us has already been invested in the agency of Amaranth troop, the fishermen association, alchemist guild, blacksmith guild and the five businesses. The incomes of our side is the income coming in from the four businesses excluding the mining one.....”

Just maintaining the current situation was tight.

And Roan also knew about that situation quite well.

“It’s fine. We will be lessening the incomes to Amaranth troop momentarily.”

Still a composed voice and expression.

But his eyes were filled with certainness.

“Invest in mister Ford. He will soon show some accomplishments.”

The decision has been made.

Pens took in a deep breath and bowed.

“Yes. I understand.”

“And tell mr. Daiv of the fishermen association to prepare to move out.”

“Prepare to move?”

At Roan’s words, Pens tilted his head.

“Yeah. I’m planning to make a port in the lake after subjugating the monsters of the south.”

His eyes shone.

“Ah...”

Pens let out a low exclamation.

He knew from way before that Roan showed big interest in Poskein lake.

“I will tell him that.”

Pens wrote down the contents thoroughly.

Roan stood up from his seat.

Although he wanted to have a meal with Pens, he didn't have the leisure right now.

“Next time, let's have a drink together.”

“Yes. I will be waiting for you.”

Roan and Pens grabbed their hands.

A strong heat was felt.

Then.

Dong! Dong! Dong! Dong! Dong!

The sound of the bell was heard from the HQ.

Jiing! Jiing! Jiing!

Followed by that, the heavy sound of the zing was heard.

Bell and jing.

It was a sign alarming about the appearance of monsters.

“I, is it monsters?”

Pens asked back with a little nervous expression.

Roan just nodded and then opened the door.

At that moment, wind came in.

That was the wind of the boiling spirit.

“Sir! We finished preparations to charge out!”

Austin saluted and bowed.

“Ah.....”

Pens opened his eyes roundly.

He let out an exclamation after seeing the firm and solid formation in front of his eyes.

‘I heard the sound of the bell just now but they already finished preparations.....’

He had never seen a troop moving this well until now.

But the expressions of Roan and Amaranth troop were composed and calm.

Roan hurriedly got on his horse and grabbed Traviar's spear.

Cheng!

The metal stick transformed to a long spear with the sound of metal.

“Monsters from the southeast are moving to the northwest!”

Austin’s report.

Roan nodded shortly and looked at the troop members.

The tightly shut lips and eyes.

They were already the strong among the strong.

“Amaranth troop!”

Roan raised the Traviar spear he was holding in his right hand highly.

“Charge!”

# Chapter 91 : Poskein Exodus (2)

---

Kiiiig.

The tightly closed gates opened up.

Amaranth troop entered the HQ with Roan at the front.

‘The battle is a victory.’

Roan raised his head and looked at the sky.

The sky was filled with black clouds and was dark.

“Whew.”

He let out a long sigh.

Roan’s feelings right now was just like that dark and black sky.

He turned his head to look at his Amaranth troop.

The battle was certainly a victory.

However.

‘The more the battle continues, the more injured soldiers appear and some even die.’

The soldiers were completely exhausted at the continued battles.

‘The size of the troop is too small.’

In the first place, Amaranth troop absorbed Sollum troop and started with 800 people.

Thinking about the scale of the monsters in the region of Tale, it was at a level where it was lacking too much.

He wanted to massively increase the numbers of the troop members.

However.

‘The number of residents in Tale is too small.’

It wasn’t a situation where he could increase the number of soldiers himself.

‘Although I can dispatch the soldiers of the Lancephil family....’

But in that case, another troop would be placed in the region.

It was a situation where a stifling problem could occur.

‘I have to find other methods.’

Roan looked at the faces of the centurions.

“The centurions are to grasp the number of injured ones and dead ones and gather to the conference room.”

“Yes! Understood!”



Austin, Semi, and the other centurions replied in one voice and then they each moved to their own squads and disappeared.

Roan just looked at that.

‘Mm.’

He saw the looks of the injured soldiers.

A bitter feeling rose up.

‘If we just had a shaman, it could have been of help in healing them.’

But there was no way a shaman would be dispatched into this barren land.

‘I have to at least set the weight of healing clearly.’

It was a problem concerning the lives of the soldiers.

Roan thought of several stifling things and then moved.

The place he was moving to was the office of the agency.

There was something he had to check before the conference.

‘It would be nice if we had a bit more time before the Poskein exodus.’

His steps became faster.

An earnest flame appeared in his two eyes.

\*\*\*\*\*

“There aren’t as many fallen soldiers as we had thought.”

“And the injuries ones are mostly ordinary.”

The reports of the centurions followed.

The battles were certainly complete victories and there was a small number of dead soldiers.

But the expressions of Roan and the centurions were dark.

Austin hesitated a moment and then opened his mouth.

“We are certainly winning several battles and the number of dead soldiers and injured soldiers is low. But at most there are two or three battles occurring in a day. The injuries are accumulating while not knowing that they are getting wet by the drizzle.”

Semi followed.

“And the exhaustion of the soldiers is at a dangerous level. If we keep this up, the morale will dive down.”

Roan just nodded.

He also had the same thoughts as them.

“Isn’t there a good method?”

At Roan's question, everyone closed their mouths.

However it wasn't because they didn't have any methods to propose.

It was because they were all difficult methods so they couldn't say it.

Roan looked at the faces of the centurions and said.

“What about bringing residents of the other regions?”

With no need of going far, there were quite a lot of residents wandering about in the territory of Count Chase.

On top of that, most of the wandering people moved in families.

If they were provided with land to farm and a house, they would be able to bring at least one adult son into the troop.

‘After the Poskein exodus concludes, we will have to increase the number of residents anyways.’

Taking that into account, bringing in residents of the other territories was the most effective.

But.

“We don't know if it's a small scaled one, but a huge scaled one won't be even worth talking about.”

“The nobles and lords won't just watch them leave.”

Several skeptical voices were heard.

Even so, as Roan started by saying his thoughts, the other centurions also started to say their own thoughts.

Semi scratched the tip of the table and said.

“How about buying slaves? If we tell them that they can become normal residents they will fight quite valiantly.”

Tane, who was listening to it, shook his head.

“We don’t have the leisure to do that right now.”

Most of the troop’s income was being invested in Ford’s mining business.

Then, Pete said with a rough voice.

“How about making a deal with mercenaries? After war ends, they won’t have a lot of jobs so we would be able to use them with quite the small amount of money.”

At those words several centurions nodded.

But Austin had his doubts.

“Anyways, we still need quite the sum of money for the mercenaries. On top of that, if we bring them to our troop, the morale will drop and there’s a high chance that the balance would become a mess.”

It was the truth.

It was frequent for the rough and free mercenaries to make everything messy.

‘Mercenaries are just like double edged blades.’

Roan took in a deep breath.

‘If you used them well they become a big weapon, but if you make a mistake then they can cut your hand.’

And really deeply at that.

The conference continued but a clear method couldn’t be thought up.

And the pondering deepened like that.

Then.

“Um.....”

The one that barely talked was Harrison.

He was the youngest centurion and the one with the least amount of experience.

He looked at his surroundings and carefully said.

“How about asking for a favor from the Lancephil family?”

At those words, Semi shook his head with a stiff face.

“If the soldiers of Count Lancephil come, then the weight of commanding is shifted to him and it rather becomes more comp.....”

“No, what I mean.....”

Harrison shook his hands and interrupted him.

He looked at Roan and said.

“How about bringing in residents of Count Lancephil’s territory?”

“Ah.....”

The centurions let out low exclamations.

And that was the same for Roan.

‘As it’s a migration inside his territory, there wouldn’t be any problems.’

In the territory of Lancephil, there weren’t as many wandering people compared to other places.

Because of that, they had to migrate residents from several regions.

But even so, it was a much easier method than bringing in wandering people of other territories.

Only, they needed Io’s permission.

‘For now, I will have to send him a letter.’

If there was even a little bit of successful possibilities, they had to try it.

‘I’m also trying the other methods.’

Buying slaves, migrating people from the other territories, contracting with mercenaries.

Although you didn’t know if it would succeed or not, it was better to try many things.

His head was spinning from this.

“The centurions are to combine all the opinions and proceed to do it.”

Roan looked at the faces of the centurions.

“Centurions, take care of the health and the morale of your members.”

“Yes. Understood.”

Austin, Semi, and the others all bowed.

Roan clenched his fists.

“It will be a difficult time. But our Amaranth troop.....”

Strength was put into his voice.

“Never gives up.”

The centurions swallowed dry saliva and bowed.

There was a resolute look in their faces.

‘Let’s trust in troop commander.’

Their loyalty and the loyalty of the troop members was absolute.

‘Whatever trial comes, if we have troop commander Roan we would be able to overcome it all.’

A strange heat roamed in the conference room.

And that was the hot military discipline.

\*\*\*\*\*

First, Roan wrote a letter for Io.

Contents about the migration of residents and the increase in the number of his troop members were written in it.

At the same time he ordered the staff of the agency, working in the eastern region, to buy slaves, form a contract with mercenaries and push forward the migration of other regions as secretly as possible.

As they still didn’t have financial leisure, the speed of it wasn’t that fast.



But Roan was still satisfied with just that.

Because the situation was improving and getting better even if it was by a little bit.

Puk!

Roan's fist crushed the trunk of a tree.

“Whew.”

A long sigh came out.

The surrounding was a real mess.

The trees composing the woods that couldn't stand the hits and kicks, collapsed.

Roan focused on training in Reid's battle techniques in a forest near the troop.

‘Troop training is important, but I can't slack in my own personal training.’

He was taking care of many things at once, so he didn't have time for personal training.

Although he still was training in the Flamdor mana technique, Roan's spearmanship and the several techniques he remembered in his head, he had kind of neglected in the technique that made Reid the strongest person on earth.

It was partly because he had never encountered the technique itself, but also because the level of the technique was just too high

and with Roan's current level, there were several parts that were difficult to understand.

‘Although it's still impossible to execute a perfect technique.....’

Even when he had just learned the basics of the movements, flow, operation of the mana technique, he became much stronger than before.

The movements transformed to have no unnecessary movements, the mana in his body became smoother, and he was able to operate it much faster.

‘The level of the operation is at the level of a knight?’

The level of Roan's mana grew exponentially after the past overflowing of his mana.

He passed the level of an apprentice or a basic knight and arrived at the level of an intermediate knight.

But the strength of his actual mana was at the level of a superior knight.

The Flamdor mana technique was that amazing.

‘If I can train a bit more in it, I could emanate an aura.’

It wouldn't just be covering his spear in mana, but he would be able to condense his mana to emanate an aura.

If he could only do that, there wouldn't be anyone able to match

Roan in terms of the level of mana excluding the knights of the royal palace.

Only.

‘There’s no spear technique able to bring out the strength of this aura properly.’

Roan’s original spear technique was Pierce’s spearmanship used by normal soldiers who didn’t have mana.

Because of that, he felt regret that it couldn’t maximize the strength of an aura.

‘This is the reason why I have to focus on training in Reid’s battle techniques.’

It was the only martial arts that could let him display the real strength of his mana.

Roan took in a deep breath and clenched his fists.

Pubububuk!

Five fists followed.

Boom!

The tree that was holding on finally collapsed.

As he shook his hands, pieces of wood fell.

Then, something entered Roan's sight.

‘Mm?’

As he focused on his sight, he saw the scenery that was far away as if it was in front of his eyes.

‘Troop?’

A troop was approaching the HQ.

He could see the symbol on the flag that was at the front.

It was a really familiar symbol.

‘Lancephil family?’

It was an unexpected entrance.

‘It should be before the letter reached him.’

Roan tilted his head and moved.

The HQ was right in front of him.

The guard, who confirmed the flag of the Lancephil family, rang the bell.

Deng! Deng! Deng!

Right before he entered the HQ, Austin and Semi came running. Austin made a short salute and opened his mouth.

“It’s the flag of the Lancephil family.”

Roan nodded slowly instead of replying back.

“What will it be so suddenly?”

Semi asked back with an expression full of curiosity.

But even Roan had nothing to say.

He took in a deep breath and then gave the order.

“Let’s prepare to welcome the guests.”

“Yes. Understood.”

Austin and Semi answered in one voice.

The two people moved busily with the soldiers.

Thanks to that, the preparations finished faster than what they thought.

The centurions and troop members arrived behind Roan.

It was an overwhelming sight.

He saw the flag of the Lancephil family through the open gates.

‘Ah.....’

At that moment, Roan let out a low exclamation.

Below the flag.

The person at the front leading the group.

He was really familiar.

Roan let out a short sigh.

‘Count Lancephil.’

A smile appeared on his face.

The person appearing with the flag of the Lancephil family.

It was none other than Io Lancephil.

\*\*\*\*\*

“The setting sun in the region of Tale has a different feeling.”

Io looked at the western sky while holding his luggage on his back.

A red sunset was spread out following the mountains.

He became amazed while looking at the high and solid fences and the watchtower surrounding the HQ.

“It’s a really solid and well made camp.”

At those words, Roan who was one step behind him, bowed.

“It’s an excessive complement.”

“It’s not. It’s really, really amazing.”

Io put strength in his eyes as if it was true.

Roan just smiled faintly instead of replying.

‘To have reached this point in only seven months.....’

Io looked at Roan and was amazed.

‘I did well in sending him here.’

He had brought the knights and soldiers because he was touring the eastern region.

It was because the movements of the monsters in the region that was close to the lake became even more fierce.

They had visited the region of Tale after thinking of subjugating the monsters.

‘I thought that the situation would be worse.....’

Monster heaven.

Because of that, he judged that the movement of the monsters would be severe.

And even if that didn’t happen, he thought that the impoverished and shallow land would be a mess.

But Io’s thoughts completely slipped off the mark.

The region of Tale was much safer and peaceful than any other region of the east.

When Io entered with his group, he hadn't seen even one monster in the region of Tale.

'I wondered if it was really the region of Tale.'

Io smiled.

He looked at Roan's eyes fixedly.

'This is all thanks to Roan. Roan did something that couldn't be done for several years in only seven months.'

Io grabbed Roan's shoulders.

"Roan."

"Yes. Sir count."

"Truly, thank you."

At the sudden words, Roan became a bit perplexed.

"Wha, what are you thankful fo....."

At the staggering words, Io put on a bright smile.

"For confirming me that my eyes of looking at people weren't wrong."



“Ah.....”

Roan let out a low exclamation.

Io hit Roan's shoulders and continued saying.

“While I was coming here, I received a letter.”

He took out an envelope from his chest.

It was the letter Roan had sent him through the agency.

‘Ah, they met in the middle.’

Roan had a nervous expression.

He was worried about the reaction Io would show.

But contrary to his belief, Io's expression was really bright.

He smiled brightly without thinking much and nodded.

“I will migrate a group of residents to the region of Tale just like you wanted.”

Io looked at his surroundings and said.

“There won't be a safer place than this, even inside my territory.”

On top of that, the exemption of taxes and providing of houses.

In the place of the residents, it was a condition that could pull them in.

“Much thanks.”

Roan bowed at the clear decision of Io.

It was a moment that a big problem was solved.

Io looked at that Roan and had a faint smile.

‘Migrate people to the region of Tale.....?’

His smile became even denser.

‘That was just what I wanted. And if perhaps Roan perfectly subjugates the monster of this region.....’

His eyes shined.

‘I will take Roan to the royal palace.’

Roan wasn’t an existence that could be left as a troop commander anymore.

Although he did commit violence against a noble and it was considered a big sin, perfectly subjugating the monsters in the region of Tale was a big enough merit to completely pardon his sins and still have some left over.

‘Roan.’

Io's eyes became soft.

His eyes stayed on Roan's face.

‘I will show you a completely new world. No.....’

He had a feeling that his chest pounded and his blood circulated faster.

‘I will open a completely new world in front of you.’

## Chapter 92 : Poskein Exodus (3)

---

Actually Io had half given up on the Tale region.

You had to deploy quite a lot of soldiers for a long time in order to subjugate the monsters.

But in the situation where they shared borders with Byron kingdom and Istel kingdom, it wasn't easy to deploy soldiers on a large scale.

Just blocking them so they didn't cross into another territory was the best that they could do.

‘Even the money invested in this region was a lot.’

Operational fees for the Sollum troop, settling fees for the residents, compensation for losses, and etc. made it so that a lot of money was put into it.

But even so, there wasn't anything that had changed for the better.

It was like pouring water into a poisonous swamp.

‘However Roan stabilized the region of Tale in only seven months.’

Actually, he did feel a bit strange.

How could he change this region of Tale, that didn't show any changes even after years of effort, in a mere seven months?

Io didn't know, but it was all because of Roan's strategies and tactics.

They made the defenses of the villages more solid and set up a beacon system in the region and after that they moved faster than the monsters and exterminated them.

On top of this, he used the agency earnestly to find the nests of the monsters and attacked them.

It was completely different to the passive and defensive Sollum troop.

“Let’s keep working hard from now on.”

At the lightly spewing words, Roan saluted.

“Leave it to me.”

He had a confident voice and expression.

And in actuality, Roan was indeed confident.

If people migrated and the number of residents increased, he would be able to subjugate the monsters more quickly.

‘I have to end it before the exodus starts.’

When the Poskein exodus started, he would have to concentrate all of his strength over there.

Roan clenched his fists.

‘I can do it.’

It was a feeling that all of his stifling situations were solved quickly.

Then.

Deng! Deng! Deng! Jing! Jing! Jing!

The sound of drums and the jing was heard.

“What’s this sound?”

Io asked back with a strange look.

And Roan lightly bowed.

“It seems like a beacon has been triggered. It means that monsters have appeared.”

“Ah.....”

Io let out a low exclamation.

Roan saluted like that.

“I will prepare to march out.”

“Ah, right. Go quickly.”

Io nodded late.

Roan moved away after that.

Quick movements.

Io looked at his back and had a proud expression.

‘He’s reliable.’

He felt really secure.

Io raised his head and looked at the sky.

The sky that was black even until the afternoon, it was now bright and clear.

It gave off the feeling that it cleared up your chest.

“The sky is really nice.”

Io’s voice flowed with the wind.

\*\*\*\*\*

“So he’s looking for mercenaries, right?”

“Not only that. Although it’s small scaled, it seems like he’s also buying slaves.”

The person that was talking as if he was whispering was the chandler of the Chase family, Hoose.

“Hmph!”

He had a displeased look.

The man that snorted was Count Jonathan chase.

“He was subjugating the monsters in the region of Tale successfully?”

“Yes. According to the reports coming up every day, it seems like he has made up some remarkable accomplishments.”

“He really is a pain in the ass kind of bastard.”

Jonathan chewed his lower lip.

Bang!

He smacked down on the table and then made a gesture to the Chandler.

The Chandler approached with a nervous expression.

“If we leave him be like this, he will become the main underling of that bastard Io.”

At Jonathan’s words, the Chandler just nodded.

“On top of that, looking at how the situation is turning there’s a high possibility that his sin gets completely pardoned.”

Jonathan’s voice became a bit low.

A fierce light appeared in his eyes.



“It’s good to thoroughly step on a leaf that has the possibilities.”

The chandler still kept on nodding.

Jonathan said in a whispering voice.

“Make a fake mercenary group with bright guys and send them to that bastard. I will have to plant some spies.”

“Ah.....”

The chandler let out a low exclamation.

Jonathan touched his chin with one hand and put on a fishy smile.

“Make them perform great and to grab his attention. Make them obtain his trust and get important roles and become the underlings for that bastard. And Roan, if that bastard gets to enter below Io then..... Kuku.”

A strange laugh came out.

Several plans were formed in his head.

The chandler looked at that look for a moment and then shook his head.

“Then, I will go to prepare as you ordered me to.”

He moved his feet and left the room.

Jonathan, who was left alone, crossed his arms and had a weird

smile.

‘Io. I will make the roots slowly rot.’

His chest kept heaving up.

This was an excitement that he couldn’t control.

Bang!

Jonathan smacked the table once again as if it was a habit.

His entire palm became numb.

And the smile in his face became even more dense.

\*\*\*\*\*

The subjugation of the monsters was proceeding as planned.

Roan and the Amaranth troop started to push back the monsters of the southeast as if they were hunting them.

Although the monsters fled from the lake to the north, they were hopelessly exterminated by the troop that was already waiting for them.

Because of that, Amaranth troop could face the monsters more easily than before.

“I can see Poskein lake.”

Austin pointed at the front and yelled.

Roan’s mouth slightly rose.

‘We finally came up to here.’

They still hadn’t completely secured the southern region.

However, there was a need to take over the lake sooner rather than later.

‘We have to move over the Sailor Association.’

Roan wasn’t thinking of simply waiting for the monsters until the Poskein exodus occurred.

‘On the contrary, we will charge over to the lake.’

Poskein lake had several islands in it, deserving of its huge size.

Roan was glaring at Exos island among them, located at the center of the lake.

‘I’m going to use Exos island as the port and control the whole central part.’

If it happened just like his plans, he would be able to secure a safe port and use it as the base.

“Austin.”

“Yes, commander.”

At Roan's call, Austin approached and bowed.

"We are going to set up a camp. I'm going to build a village here."

"Yes. Understood."

Austin hadn't showed a weird look or questioned him, he just replied back.

For him, Roan's orders were absolute.

Soon, Austin and the centurions started to set up a camp near the lake.

Roan looked at that for a moment and then turned the head of his horse.

'I'm entrusting this place to Austin.'

Roan and the remaining troop members had something separate to do.

'I have to check the villages built south of the HQ.'

Fortunately, Hans and the villagers all moved to the south at Roan's offer.

But of course, it wasn't that all the villagers had migrated.

'Originally, I wanted to evacuate the remaining people outside of the Tale region.....'

But now, there was no need to.

Because thousands of new people migrated at Io's order.

Roan settled them in a village to the north and established a new troop with the adult men as the selected ones.

But there was absolutely no coercion.

If the situation turned difficult he would have to resort to force, but there was no need to do that right now.

Because he offered quite an exceptional deal, quite a lot of men volunteered to get into the troop.

Roan put on a minimum condition of checking them thoroughly through a test and that only the ones that qualified could enter the troop.

And that number was close to 1000.

It was a number that was enough to create a new troop.

‘But even so, I can't deploy them into battle.’

Roan made a new training ground near the HQ and trained the newcomers.

And surprisingly enough, the one in charge of the training was Glenn.

‘If it's Glenn with his meticulous personality, I thought that he was going to be able to teach the newcomers well.....’

And Roan's judgement hit right on the mark.

Glenn performed more outstandingly than what he had predicted.

It was seen as if he had talent in teaching others.

‘When the size of the troop becomes bigger than now, I will have to entrust him with the training grounds altogether.’

Roan’s mouth rose up.

The migration of people and reinforcements for his troop.

The establishing of new villages.

Everything was getting solved to help with his plan.

‘On top of that, I now have some leisure.....’

It was thanks to Io migrating the residents and providing him with funds.

In the position of Io, all the money he was pouring went all to Roan and the troop, so he didn’t have any burdens at all.

‘Now.....’

Roan looked at the ground.

The bulky ground that was spread out as it wanted.

‘Is it time to set up a main road?’

Building a road in all of the Tale region was impossible.

‘I’m making a highway with the HQ as the center to all the four cardinal points. We will be able to move quicker only by connecting the villages.’

If only that happened, even if the Poskein exodus occurred, he would be able to respond to it more actively.

Roan took in a deep breath.

‘I have to increase the number of alchemists and skilled people.’

As construction were being done in several places, they lacked in workers.

And the more time passed, the more difficult it became.

But it wasn’t hard at all.

Rather, he felt more of happiness.

‘And end spearman ended up becoming the chief of a territory.’

Although his rank was merely troop commander and on top of that a sinner because of committing violence against a noble, if he just blocked this exodus well enough, he could aim for an even higher place.

‘I can do it.’

Roan clenched his two fists.

A red light shone in his eyes.

The sky was still clear without any clouds.

It just seemed like it was predicting Roan's upcoming days.

\*\*\*\*\*

“One! Two! Three!”

“Hap! Hap!”

Loud noises rumbled out.

Hundreds of soldiers were training in the training ground.

“Again! You're doing it again!”

The one yelling in front of them was Glenn.

His usual look of being soft and gentle had completely disappeared.

His eyes were fierce and his attitude was confident.

‘He's a completely different person when teaching newcomers.’

Roan, who was looking at him from the back, had a faint smile.

Roan had free time for the first time in a long while and came to the training grounds where the newcomers were at.

They all had shields on their backs.

‘Thanks to the blacksmiths working hard, we could fit the



numbers.'

The Amaranth troop could now charge forward with just using the shield with a small sword.

At first, everyone was awkward with it, but they quickly became accustomed to it thanks to troop training and personal training.

'As soon as this training ends, I will dispatch the newcomers to the villages.'

He couldn't bring them into a real battle right from the start.

Right now, even one troop member was precious.

Roan checked on the training of the newcomers for a while and then slowly moved.

As he was just looking, his body felt all itchy so he couldn't endure it anymore.

'Do I also have to..... huh?'

His feet that were moving towards the HQ, stopped.

'Pens?'

A welcoming expression was seen on his face.

Pens, who was at Pavor castle along with Chris, was walking from far away.

His expression was really bright.

After a while.

“Troop commander Roan.”

Pens approached and bowed.

“Pens. Why did you come all the way here?”

There were still ten days remaining to submit the regular report.  
Pens brightly smiled and answered.

“Mister Ford has finally done it.”

He had an excited voice and expression.

“He has discovered a magic stone mine in the Montea mountain!”

His voice became louder.

‘Ah, he finally discovered it.’

Roan was proud, but didn’t show it.

He nodded with a calm and composed attitude.

“Good. Mister Ford will be able to put down a bit of his burden.”

“Yes? Is that all?”

Pens rather asked back with a surprised expression.

His usual calm expression had completely disappeared.

“It’s not steel or gold, but magic stones. Magic stones! Do you know how amazing of a discovery is this?”

Pens even had saliva coming out of his mouth and explained things earnestly.

Roan looked at that and smiled.

As he always saw his calm side and now saw a really excited look, he felt good.

Then.

“Troop commander!”

A familiar voice was heard from far away.

Keep was running from the direction of the HQ.

Keep was in charge of the Amaranth troop’s information squad separate from the agency.

Different from the agency that checked on the entire territory, Keep’s information squad only checked on one place.

Poskein lake.

“Pant. Pant. Pant.”

Keep caught his breath while he was grabbing his knees.  
Roan didn't hurry him and just waited.

“Tr, troop commander.”

Keep said and looked at Roan.  
Roan slowly nodded meaning to speak.  
Keep's expression stiffened.

“Po, poskein lake.....”

His voice was slightly trembling.

“Poskein lake is boiling up. No.....”

He swallowed down dry saliva.

“It seems like it's boiling.”

Roan, who was listening to Keep's words, slowly closed his eyes.  
His eyes slightly trembled.  
He had an expression that was kind of nervous.

‘Finally.....’

Roan clenched his fists.

‘The Poskein exodus is occurring.’

# Chapter 93 : Poskein Exodus (4)

---

Dudududu!

The sound of horse steps rang out while the ground shook.

A luxurious carriage with tens of escorting knights were charging through a long road.

“Ugh!”

“Do, dodge!”

The people walking on the road moved their bodies sideways and dodged the carriage.

Their sight naturally followed the back of the carriage moving further away.

“That’s the carriage of Duke Webster, right?”

“It is. There’s the flag on it.”

The people murmured with serious expressions.

They perfectly remembered things like the flag and symbol of a noble, just like citizens of the capital of Miller.

“Just what happened?”

“Yeah. Already more than ten carriages have entered the palace.”

“And really urgently at that.”

Their eyes, following the carriages, moved to the high palace.  
There was a fear they couldn't hide in their eyes.  
The capital of Miller was covered over in a cloud of tension.  
Because tens of nobles' carriages entered the royal palace for exactly two days.  
But this kind of thing had only happened once.  
The invasion from the Istel and Byron kingdom.  
At that time, the big noble families gathered at the palace to have a meeting.

“Is there going to be another war?”

Words you didn't want to hear came out from someone's mouth.

“Ei, that can't be.....”

And a denying sound was heard afterwards.

But the nervousness and fear in their eyes became even denser.

Gulp.

Their adam's apples trembled.

The citizens looked at the palace in dead silence.

\*\*\*\*\*

Bang!

The thick door opened up abruptly.

The person that appeared was an old man wearing luxurious clothes.

He was one of the four dukes of Rinse kingdom and the person with the biggest force in the western region of Rinse kingdom, Bradley Webster.

“I was late because I was subjugating the monsters in the Grain mountain range.”

He had an urgent voice and expression.

He moved his feet and sat in an empty seat.

There were already tens of nobles seated in the huge conference room.

Bradley and the other dukes were positioned in the upper seats.

“Let’s proceed with the meeting.”

He spoke with a voice and expression that wasn’t satisfactory.

The center of the upper seats was for the representing nobles and at the top of the ranks, and in that place Duke Edwin Voisa was seated.

Edwin and Bradley didn’t seem to be on good terms.

No, precisely speaking, among the four dukes Edwin Voisa, Bradley Webster, and Liss Kowan had a relationship of being political enemies.



Only Francis Wilson maintained a good relationship with the other dukes.

And that was because of the stifling situation in the royal palace of Rinse kingdom.

The current king, Deni Von Rinse, had seven wives and he obtained one son from three of them.

Three princes.

Their grandfathers were Edwin, Bradley, and Liss.

The actual king Deni III wasn't interested in politics and power.

On top of that, he was an improviser and fickle.

Although he wasn't that bad of a mess, he still wasn't an excellent king.

Compared to him, the three princes had outstanding abilities and their ambitions were also great.

As they were all born at the same time, based on the situation, anyone could become the king.

Because of that, the nobles of Rinse kingdom were currently in a battle of strength with Edwin, Bradley, and Liss at the center of it.

“Just like I told you, monsters moved onto the land from Poskein lake. It's known that they are all strange and odd monsters and their battle strength is a bit stronger than the ground monsters.”

This was the report of a noble.

Followed by that, another noble said.

“The monsters on the ground are moving to the inner parts of the country evading the lake. Because of that, the damage caused

by the monsters isn't only occurring in the lake, but in the entire kingdom."

Several reports followed.

Edwin, who was listening to it still, asked back with a serious expression.

"Was the cause revealed?"

The answer was quick.

"Based on the opinions of the residents near the lake, they said that the lake boiled for four days before the monsters poured out. Aside from that, there's nothing else revealed."

This meant that in the end, they couldn't find the cause.

Then, Bradley who was silent, turned his head and looked at a noble near the upper seats.

"I heard that the damage in that region is insignificant....."

An existence even a duke of the palace couldn't speak freely.

"Yes. Fortunately, we could react quickly."

The noble replying modestly.

He was none other than Io Lancephil.

‘This is all because of Roan.’

His mouth slightly rose up.

Actually, it was also a perplexing thing for him that monsters poured out from the lake.

But Roan, who was patrolling the region of Tale, moved quickly to set up a defensive line and block their advance.

Thanks to that, contrary to the other regions that became a wasteland, Lancephil’s territory didn’t suffer much damage.

“You said that the one that raised this clear merit was called Roan?”

Bradley continued to show interest.

Io nodded and answered.

“Yes. He’s the troop commander that was remitted to some conditions and is now in charge of the region of Tale.”

“Mmm.”

Several nobles let out low exclamations.

They also very knew clearly about the actions.

The performance of Roan and the Amaranth troop.

‘He’s defending one region without damages with only thousands of soldiers?’

‘From the subjugation of the Pedian plain, the war with the Istel and Byron kingdom, and the movement of the monsters from Poskein lake. He’s someone who I hear his name mentioned a lot recently.’

‘If only he didn’t strike a noble, by now he would be a noble himself?’

‘He was someone that had clear abilities.’

‘He is following Count Io Lancephil.’

‘If he crosses over to another side.....He would have to be removed by then.’

They all thought about similar but slightly different things.

Bradley’s expression brightened up.

“I heard that he is achieving victory alone when all of the other territories are suffering damages. Actually, now that we started talking about him, aren’t the merits he had achieved until now, amazing? By now, we will be able to completely pardon his sins and entrust him with leading an army at Poskein lake.”

This was an exception proposal.

Bradley was the one with the most affection for Io among the four dukes.

Bradley was thinking of being the strength to Io and Roan with this time’s merit.

Io bowed.

“As he has plenty of abilities, if you believe and entrust him, I.....”

When he spoke up to then.

“I don’t think it’s something to decide that urgently.”

A cold voice spoke out.

The one that interrupted him was Edwin.

‘You thought I would let you do as you pleased.’

A fierce light roamed inside his eyes.

“For now, let’s decide on how to suppress the monsters and subjugate them.”

The change of the topic.

“That would be good.”

Liss added on as if he was waiting for it.

Bradley was about to say one more thing but he decided to shut up.

If he made a mistake he could get pincer attacked and get driven to a corner.

“Now, if you have any good ideas, say it without hesitating.”

At Edwin's words, the nobles that were aware, started to state their opinions one by one.

But when one side said an opinion, another side butted in.

A battle of force had started with the dukes as the center.

Io, who was looking at the situation, let out a short sigh.

‘Whew. It’s like this again.’

Now, the conference would become a mess because of the battle of force among the dukes.

This was the reason why they couldn’t come to a quick conclusion when the Istel and Byron kingdom invaded last time.

“We can’t do that!”

“The opinion you said right now is nonsense!”

The voices became louder.

Then.

The stiffly closed doors opened up.

“The sun of the kingdom, he’s the representative of the god Crea, His Majesty Deni III is entering. The vassals loyal to the kingdom are to show your manners.”

The Grand Chamberlain Logan Deil hit the floor three times with a huge staff.

“Your Majesty.”

“Your Majesty.”

The nobles who were arguing just now all stood up and bowed.

And that was the same for Edwin, Bradley, Liss, and Francas.

An old man moved his feet with a smiling face.

He stood at the highest seat that could control all of the conference room.

It was a seat that was adorned with gold and only the king could sit in.

“Hohoho. You’re all working hard.”

Deni III laughed.

“Is the conference proceeding well?”

It was a light asking question.

“Yes. Your majesty.”

Duke Edwin replied after stepping up and kissing the ring of Deni III.

The luxurious ring was the seal of the king and a symbol of power.

“Hohoho.”

He once again laughed.

But the laughter didn't last long.

The expression of Deni III turned stiff just like the laugh from just now was fake.

“When I was listening outside you were all quacking like fucking geese, and a proper plan didn't come out but it's proceeding well?”

At the rebuke of Deni III, all of the nobles quieted down.

However, this cold rage didn't last long.

Deni III was this type of person.

“Hohoho, that may also be politics. I understand all of your burdens.”

“We are ashamed, your majesty.”

The nobles replied in one voice.

They all had cold sweat.

Then, Deni III closed his eyes and had a funny expression.”

“That's why I was saying, I have a good method.”

He looked at three young men that were standing at his back.

The heads of the nobles moved following Deni III's head.



“And that method is these three princes.”

Three young people.

They were the three princes of Rinse kingdom.

Their eyes were deep and clear and they all looked really beautiful.

They were all born in the same year, but the months were different.

The one at the right of Deni III was the first, Simon Rinse. The second was the one left of Deni, Tommy Rinse, and the one next to him was Kallum Rinse, the third prince.

Simon’s grandfather was Bradley, Edwin for Tommy, and Liss for Kallum.

Deni III brightly smiled and said.

“I’m entrusting the subjugation of Poskein lake to these three princes.”

“Yes?!”

The nobles that were listening silently had surprised expressions. Deni III continued speaking.

“The north to Simon, the central region to Tommy, and the south to Kallum.”

“Yo..., your majesty. The movements of the monsters are too fierce. At the smallest slip up, the three princes can become greatly in.....”

When Edwin stood up and expressed his thoughts.

“It seems like Duke Voisa doesn’t find us to be trustworthy.”

Simon interrupted him with a comical face.

“No, I didn’t mean it that way.....”

Edwin awkwardly laughed and dimmed his last words.

Simon brightly smiled and hit his chest.

“Trust us. We are confident in doing well.”

“Yes? Ah, yes.....”

Edwin had a confused expression.

Deni III, who was looking at that funnily, stood up.

“I know that the nobles split up based on following the three princes and fighting among yourselves. Let’s now stop this enmity and go to the battlefield yourselves. I will be giving a big reward to the prince that has the best merits.”

“Mmm.”

Several nobles let out exclamations.

A faint smile appeared on the mouth of Deni III.

“The seat of Grand Duke in Grain is still empty. You don’t know but what kind of influence this subjugation will have is based on the results.....”

“Ah!”

At that moment, the nobles looked at Deni III with surprised expressions.

Grand Duke of Grain.

It was the land of the god Crea and had the best mountain ranges in the kingdom.

It was the land that the successor for the throne was going to get.

Until now, Deni III has never named the takeover of the throne.

Because of that, the nobles were more than shocked.

They were all absentminded.

On the other hand, Deni III had an expression that he was somewhat enjoying this.

He looked at the faces of the nobles and then yelled towards the escorting knights.

“Let’s go! Today, we are hunting hawks!”

His walk was smooth and confident.

Deni III and the knights disappeared outside the conference room.

It really happened in an instant.

“Your majesty.”

“Your majesty.”

The nobles started to bow late and showed their manners.

A heavy silence fell over the conference room for a moment.

It was just as if a storm had passed by.

The three princes that remained in the conference room had stifled and strange expressions and looked at their faces.

‘My brothers. Let’s battle as much as we please.’

‘I have to raise a merit that’s eye catching enough.’

‘If I make a mistake, I may drop out of the competition.’

Stifling thoughts passed in their heads.

Edwin, who was looking at the situation, cleared his throat.

“Hm!”

Things have already been spilled anyways.

“Then. Just like his majesty had said, the three princes will be participating in this subjugation.”

His eyes trembled.

And that wasn’t only for Edwin.

Bradley’s and Liss’s head became complicated.

‘I have to make the situation to become the most favorable.’

‘I’m pouring in all the strength of my family.’

‘I will even have to gather the nobles that crossed a line with me.’

The atmosphere in the conference room changed.

The outward appearance was as calm as a still lake.

But below that, a fierce battle was happening.

The conference continued night after night like that.

\*\*\*\*\*

‘He’s someone I can’t grasp.’

Io looked sideways to his left.

He was looking at a good looking youth riding a good war horse.

It was Simon Rinse.

‘For the prince that was advised by the king to be prince Simon among the three.’

After the conference ended, the nobles had a separate meeting with the princes they were supporting.

As Io usually followed the inheritance rule, he went to find Simon.

And of course, it was also because of his thick friendship with Bradley.

Simon revealed that it was himself that made the subjugation plan.

But of course, he had never expected that Deni III would also be providing the Grain mountain range.

‘This subjugation became the most important moment for Prince Simon.’

Even if he didn’t do so, Simon was the person that was the most supported by nobles following the inheritance rule.

If he only raised a big merit in this battle, he would have a greater advantage.

By then, no one would be able to stop Simon.

‘Fortunately.....’

Io’s expression faintly changed.

‘Prince Simon has great interest in Roan.’

Roan was a big of subject of interest even in the royal palace.

Their interest and curiosity was activated from the consecutive victories.

‘It’s also a big opportunity for Roan.’

If Roan could enter Simon’s eyes, even if Io didn’t use his hands,

he would be able to get pardoned for his sins and climb to an even higher position.

“Compared to the other regions, the region of Tale is really peaceful.”

This was Simon’s voice.

He had an amazed expression.

They had passed several regions while moving from the capital of Miller to the region of Tale.

Tranquility. Silence.

Several regions were suffering severe damages because of the movement of the monsters that appeared out of Poskein lake.

But only the region of Tale was clean.

Traces of burnt monster corpses were everywhere and big and small camps sprinkled about.

On top of that, the road made of gravel and sand made it more comfortable for the soldiers to move much faster.

He had a feeling that he was getting more impressed the more he saw.

“What kind of person is this guy called Roan?”

Simon asked as if he was really curious.

“Roan.....”

Io smiled faintly and started to speak stories about Roan.

“Ha! It seems like all the reports that were submitted were lacking.”

Simon was greatly amazed after listening to the stories.

He had read the reports about Roan and the region of Tale.

‘I thought that the merits and the situation of the region were exaggerated.’

But after actually looking at the region of Tale, he realized that the reports were really humble.

“I want to meet that Roan quickly.”

Io just smiled instead of replying.

Then.

“I can hear some yells.”

One of the escorting knights frowned.

The really faint sound was heard from the surroundings.

Simon tilted his ear for a moment and then nodded.

“It seems like a battle is occurring.”



A smile bloomed on his face.

He made a gesture with his head towards Io and then pulled the reins.

“Roan, I think he’s somewhere close.”

He spoke with a humorous tone.

At the same time, he kicked the horse.

Dudududu!

Soon, horse steps were heard clearly.

The escorting knights quickly followed his back.

And Io also moved his chest towards the horse.

How long had they ridden for?

As they moved up a hill, a wide plain was spread out below them.

Puuuuu!

The sound of a horn trumpet was heard.

“Ah....!”

Simon and the several knights let out low exclamations.

A battle was occurring in the plain.

No, the battle was now coming to an end.

“The entire troop is moving like one.”

Amazement.

Simon looked at the soldiers pushing back the monsters fiercely and had a surprised expression.

Io, who arrived late, looked down the hill and put on a smile.

“They are the Amaranth troop.”

# Chapter 94 : Poskein Exodus (5)

---

“Mmm.”

Simon and the knights nodded with in exclamation.

‘It’s a more outstanding troop than what I had thought and heard.’

Even so, Simon and the several people had never seen a small scaled troop like the Amaranth troop utilize strategies actively.

They had a look of scattering, gathering, splitting up, and gathering again.

Amaranth troop resembled a huge stream of water.

It was a complete victory.

The battle ended with victory for the Amaranth troop.

Gulp.

Simon dry swallowed.

“Count Lancephil. the Amaranth troop is really amazing.”

His thoughts came out like that.

Io just smiled instead of replying back.

Then.

Dudududu.

One warhorse ran towards Simon with the sound of the horse clops.

He had a confident expression and spirit.

The troop flag that was on his side, instead of the spear, fluttered with strength.

Io, who was looking at that, said in a small voice.

“That’s the troop commander of Amaranth troop, Roan.”

“He looks truly majestic.”

Simon nodded with a satisfied expression.

Meanwhile, Roan finally reached the front of the group.

Hiiiiing!

As he pulled the reins, the war horse softly stopped.

Roan dismounted from the horse and quickly stuck the flag into the ground.

Puk!

The flag of the troop was finely extended and emanated a confident spirit.

Roan rose from his kneeling position and saluted.

He had a mannered look and at the same time, roughless.

“Troop commander Roan of the Amaranth troop greets Prince Simon Rinse.”

He spoke in a voice with strength.

Roan bowed and caught his breath.

His expression was kind of stifled.

‘To be able to meet him this quickly.’

A strange light appeared in his eyes.

‘Simon Rinse. The first prince of the kingdom and.....’

His heart pounded.

‘The person that someday becomes the mad monarch.’

\*\*\*\*\*

After Roan returned to the past, one of the things he had to do was to stop the mad monarch.

‘Originally, the one that should have become the next king was him.’

But in the end, his seat was taken by his brother.

‘And he became crazy.’

After that, he killed his supporter and grandfather, Bradley Webster, and caused a commotion in the northwestern region of the kingdom.

As he lead a force and caused a commotion himself, he was called the mad monarch.

And as his original abilities were outstanding, the commotion couldn't be easily suppressed.

With that reasoning, even after the geniuses Pierce and Ian appeared, Rinse Kingdom was unable to rise up in the empire ranking list of the continent due to the internal disturbances that it suffered.

‘If we only didn't have the mad monarch, we could have combined the northeastern region of the continent.’

Because of that, Roan was planning to stop Simon from going crazy.

But he was a prince of the kingdom.

He wasn't someone a mere troop commander, and a sinner on top of that, could easily meet.

But of course, he knew that he would get dispatched to the northern region because of the Poskein exodus.

But in his past life, he had gone to Pavor castle instead of this place.

‘Certainly, the future has changed a bit because of me.’

He hadn't expected today's encounter at all.

"The defenses are really outstanding."

Simon, who was checking out the village's fences, watchtower, and etc. nodded with an amazed expression.

"That's an excessive complement."

Roan hurriedly gathered his thoughts and bowed.

"No. It's really outstanding."

Simon looked at the fences and watchtower once again and had a satisfied expression.

The two people inspected the village that had the HQ of the troop located in it for quite a while.

'It's a mere countryside but the road, houses, and etc. are being built really well.'

The defenses weren't the only things that were good.

The road crossing over the village was both smooth and hard, and the houses built with wood were clean and well built.

Most of all, the expressions of the people were really bright, even when it was a dangerous situation where monsters were going

wild.

Simon nodded with a satisfied expression.

“You are maintaining the region of Tale really well. The expressions of the people are good.”

“I just did as much as i could as it is my job.”

Roan humbly replied and bowed.

Simon kept checking the houses and the camp after that.

“You said the village still doesn’t have a name?”

He lightly asked a question.

“Yes. As it was created just recently, everyone is calling it the central village.”

At Roan’s question, Simon pondered for a moment and then had a bright expression.

“How about Mediasis?”

It meant that it was the center and the base.

Roan didn’t have a choice anyways.

“It’s an excellent name.”



He faintly smiled and bowed.

Simon looked at that Roan and then asked.

“Roan. This subjugation is a really important thing for the nobles and for me. It’s something we must raise a big merit in.”

He had a really serious expression.

It was obvious. Because this could be a war that would decide the next king of the kingdom.

For Simon, it was something that he had to pour everything that he had into.

“The northern region of Tale is no different than the front line. If we completely block this part, the organization of the rear doesn’t become that difficult. Followed by that, our army is planning to subjugate the monsters with this point as the base. But we don’t know much about this region.”

Some kind of expectation was behind his voice.

“Compared to that, you’ve raised up really incredible achievements as the one responsible for this region. So I.....”

A moment’s silence.

Simon caught his breath and continued saying.

“Do you have any good thoughts or plans regarding the

subjugation?”

It was a question he just threw out, but it was a really impressive thing.

The first prince of the kingdom asked the opinion of a mere troop commander.

Truly, this was an unprecedented thing.

If they were escorting knights or nobles, it was a thing that would cause a commotion.

But Simon was really calm.

‘If have the abilities, you don’t differentiate between slaves or sinners.’

This was Simon’s thoughts.

He needed an influential person to win in the competition for the throne.

Roan organized his thoughts for a moment and then raised his head to look at Simon.

“I don’t know if it’s good but I have something prepared.”

He spoke with a calm voice and expression.

Roan took out two scrolls of papers from his chest.

He spread out one of them and placed it on a wide table.

“This?”

At that moment, Simon had a surprised expression.

He eyes widely opened as if it was something he hadn't expected at all.

On the other hand, Roan nodded with a calm expression.

“Yes. That's right. It's a map of the region of Tale.”

The identity of the map was a map made by the agency.

‘A map.....’

Silence fell between the two people.

The designing of a map was labeled as being a really dangerous thing.

Because you could suffer great damages if it was leaked to another kingdom.

Roan looked at the stiff expression of Simon and said in a low voice.

“The value of a map in battle is really big.”

He spread out the second scroll.

Likewise, it was a map of Tale, but the thing that was different with this map was that it had several dots and arrows on it.

“The dots are the places where the subjugations occurred and the

arrows are the records of the movements of the monsters.”

His finger moved around busily.

“Based on the results of the analysis, the monsters are moving to the north through the mountain ranges spread from the west to east. Aside from that, they tend to move through the road between Mediasis Village and the plains of the west.”

Simon nodded unconsciously.

The scenery of a battlefield he imagined was done only through senses, and it was felt as if it was spread in front of his eyes.

The dots and arrows were of big help in grasping the entire flow of the battle.

Roan spread the first map again.

“We set up several traps, obstacles, and camps with the gathered and analyzed information as the background.”

“Ah.....!”

At that moment, a low exclamation came out of Simon’s mouth.

It was just like Roan said.

On the first map, there were records of camps, traps, and bases for the troop, and those places were on the moving routes of the monsters.

‘He wasn’t just fighting blindly!’

Simon unconsciously swallowed down dry saliva.

He was once again amazed at Roan's abilities.

'It's a waste to just leave him as the commander of a single troop.'

He became certain of this.

Roan looked at the stifled expression of Simon and bowed.

"I know what the prince is worried of. And because of that, we are managing it so that this map isn't taken outside."

"Mm."

Simon nodded with a low exclamation.

"If we have this map, it will certainly be of great help."

It was a positive reaction.

Roan nodded.

"Yes. It will be of great help in the dispatching of troops and grasping movements."

At those words, the eyes of Simon softly loosened up.

"Good. Making a map as you please is a punishable action, but as the situation is like this I will forgive you. No....."

His mouth slightly rose.

“Actually, I think that it is really amazing. Because if we only have this map, we can perfectly control the region of Tale.”

Simon patted Roan’s shoulders with a proud expression.

‘Whew. Did it turn out well?’

Roan let out a short sigh.

Actually, showing him the map was one of the risks for him.

The making of a map was that much of a problem.

But he thought that when the Mad Monarch Simon saw this in this situation, it would be of help for him.

‘He was a really reasonable person and someone that valued personal strength before he became the mad monarch.’

Because of that, commoners with great ability could get an important job without the courting of the nobles.

“Roan. Shall we return now?”

He had finished observing.

“Yes. I will take the lead.”

Roan quickly took back the maps and after he put it near his chest, he started to walk.

Simon had a faint smile and followed his back.

The two people arrived in the conference room of the HQ where several nobles were gathered.

“Did you finish observing?”

Io smiled brightly and asked.

Simon glanced at Roan once more and then nodded.

“He was really amazing.”

At those words, several nobles nodded.

Just like Simon’s words, they were also greatly surprised at the power of the troop and the defenses of the central village, no, Mediasis Village.

Simon sat on a seat that Io had prepared.

And Roan humbly stood behind the nobles.

“Just like everyone of you knows, I decided to subjugate the monsters of the north with this point as the base.”

“Yes.”

At Simon’s words, several nobles nodded.

“Because of that, this region of Tale became more important than anywhere else. I can’t give the commanding right of this kind of place to anyone.”

He paused for a moment and then a faint smile appeared on his face.

Then, Simon’s sight moved to Roan.

“Roan. I’m planning to give the commanding right and strategy right to you.”

“Ah.....”

Roan and the several nobles let out low exclamations.

Because they knew the weight Simon’s words had.

‘Prince Simon entrusted Roan with the key of an army!’

Io bowed with a grateful expression.

But the protests of several nobles was too fierce.

“Prince. Roan is a sinner. To entrust the key of an army to someone like that. That can never happen.”

“Although it’s only limited to the region of Tale, but to give that to a mere commoner..... Some nobles may have to follow his orders.”

They had expressions where they were almost in tears.



Simon had a humorous look on his face.

‘If it wasn’t only for the competition of the throne, I would have already thrown them away.’

They were insect-like bastards that lived by sticking themselves onto the families without having any abilities.

But now was a situation that he had to lead even those nobles.

‘If you are saying that he’s a sinner.....’

Simon shook his hand and made the nobles shut up and then looked at Roan.

“In this moment I, Simon Rinse, act instead of his majesty Deni III to completely pardon Roan’s sins.”

“Prince!”

The nobles yelled with surprised expressions.

“Prince. You can’t decide to pardon the sin that easi.....”

“Stop.”

Simon shook his head and stopped them.

Strength was shown in his eyes.

“Speak. Is there someone that has raised some clear merits from

the Pedian monster subjugation until the subjugation of Poskein lake?”

“But the sin of violence against a noble.....”

“Noble? Are you speaking about that rotten guy? After several investigations, his sins were clearly revealed. But you are defending that kind of guy?”

He had a presence like a column.

The nobles wavered and in the end, they shut their mouths.

In the first place, they were the ones that decided to follow Simon.

There was no need to be seen badly here.

“Everyone listen closely.”

Simon said with a strong voice.

“I like people with abilities. If he just has that, I wouldn’t care if that person was a sinner or a slave.”

“Yes. Understood.”

The nobles bowed and replied in one voice.

The importance of ability.

This was Simon’s philosophy.

‘Because of that, he couldn’t stand getting his throne taken away by someone that had less abilities than him.’

But of course, the decisive case that drove him crazy was another thing.

As he thought about that cruel case, his chest became heavy.

Roan let out a short sigh.

Then.

“Roan.”

Simon’s voice was heard.

“Come here.”

At those words, Roan carefully moved his feet and stood in front of Simon.

A heavy silence fell over the conference room.

Simon slowly stood up and loosened up the dagger he had on his waist.

It was a really luxurious dagger that didn’t look all that useful.

He gave the dagger to Roan.

“This dagger was something given by his majesty when I became an adult. It’s something made by famous blacksmiths and lapidaries of the capital of Miller. It’s my symbol I call Regate dagger and it’s an object proving the status of the 1st prince.”

Simon’s sight moved to the nobles.

“I’m going to give this dagger to Roan. You are to follow Roan’s orders as if they were mine, at least in the region of Tale, and follow him loyally.”

At that moment, a breath taking atmosphere was felt.

Several nobles were conflicted with stifled expressions but in the end, they bowed their heads.

“Yes. We will.”

Only after that did Simon nod with a satisfied expression on his face and gaze at Roan.

“Roan. I’m giving this Regate dagger to you.”

“Ah.....”

Roan let out a low cry and hurriedly kneeled down.

He slightly bowed as he delicately extended both of his hands.

Tuk.

The dagger was placed above his palms.

“Roan. This Regate dagger.....”

He spoke in a low voice as if he was whispering.

“You have to return it to me along with the victory.”

A humorous expression was seen on his face.

Roan replied while he was still in the posture to receive the dagger.

“Yes. I will certainly win.”

His voice slightly trembled.

Roan was moved.

‘I, a mere commoner troop commander, got the commanding rights and strategic rights, that are the core for an army.’

He was recognized by the first prince, Simon, and obtained some nobles under his command.

Compared to his past life, this life was a really the perfect foil in comparison.

Roan placed the dagger on his waist with careful movements.

The luxurious shape received light and shined.

The sights of the nobles poured onto Roan.

Envy, displeasement, jealousy.

Their eyes were mixed with several emotions.

‘Now whether they can act as limbs or not.....’

He ground his teeth.

‘It’s all on me.’

His heart beat accelerated.

It wasn’t going to be easy, but he was confident.

He was planning to show his capabilities to these several nobles.

‘Not only because of the orders of the prince.....’

Flames appeared in his eyes.

‘I will make them want to follow me on their own.’

Soon, his quick beating heart returned to normal.

And even the excitement calmed down.

Roan looked at the faces of the nobles with a calm expression.

Several plans were set up in his head.

Now, Roan wasn’t just a normal troop commander anymore.

## Chapter 95 : Poskein Exodus (6)

---

The atmosphere of the conference room was complicated.

A calm and excited feeling pervaded the area.

It was the place to set up plans for the subjugation, but most of the nobles were thinking about other things.

‘I have to go to another region that’s not the region of Tale.’

‘If I remain here, I will be commanded by a commoner.’

Originally, they tried to be next to Simon.

They wanted to at least flatter him in someplace that he could see.

But now, the situation had changed.

Nobles above the rank of Count had a strong arrogance.

They thought that it to be difficult to receive Roan’s orders.

“I will be in charge of the west of Pavor castle.”

“I will take responsibility for the Peltin region.”

The nobles started to say that they would be in charge of the rear regions.

Because of that, five nobles with the rank of Viscount and Baron, who didn’t have any forces or strength, remained in the region of Tale.

But of course, there was one that proposed to remain in the region of Tale.

‘Viscount Delph Blick.’

He was a noble that was now 40 years old, was the size of a bear, and had a fierce temperament.

‘He was the one that followed the mad monarch until the end.’

Thanks to that, Roan could clearly remember him.

‘He excels in strength, but his problem is his hurried temperament and hot-bloodedness.’

So to say it clearly, he was similar to Semi.

‘If I can control him well enough, he will become a commander that would be of great strength.’

While Roan was thinking and pondering of several things, the conference was soon reaching its end.

“Fine. Then, let’s end the conference now.”

Simon nodded with a satisfied expression.

There was no way that he didn’t know about the plots and displeasures of the nobles.

But he was still satisfied even while taking that into account.



‘It’s because of Roan.’

This was because there was already a solid defensive line set up in the entire region of Tale.

Simon said while looking at the nobles.

“Each of you will perform your roles as the day brightens.”

“Yes. Understood.”

All the nobles stood up and bowed.

Their expressions were pathetic.

They were also very familiar with the meaning that this subjugation had.

‘I certainly have to raise a large merit.’

This was the method where everyone could stay alive.

Roan felt the heat of the nobles and bitterly smiled.

‘I thought that I just had to stop the exodus well-enough to take the upper seat in the competition for the throne.’

But the future didn’t flow that easily.

Roan took a deep breath.

‘The really fierce and cruel competition still hasn’t start.’

He had to prepare for that moment.

He had met Simon faster than what he had thought.

Because of that, he had to hurry in his remaining preparations.

‘I am confident.’

He had already polished some of his base.

Now was the time to stand up on that base.

\*\*\*\*\*

The morning of the next day.

As soon as the day brightened up, most of the nobles led their troops and left Mediasis Village.

The ones that remained were the five viscounts and barons.

Along with Simon’s army and Io’s soldiers.

Roan sent the leaving nobles off as the one responsible for the region of Tale and the HQs.

“Whew.”

Roan let out a short sigh when the nobles left with their troops.

“It’s not easy, right?”

Then, a familiar voice was heard from the back.

It was Io.

He approached with a proud expression and grabbed Roan's shoulders.

"They are all nobles filled with useless pride."

Io bitterly smiled and shook his head.

He looked at the nobles that were moving farther away and continued saying.

"Congratulations in getting the commanding and strategic rights for Tale. Now, you will be able to properly do your thing."

Although many nobles had left, just by combining the number of Simon's army and the soldiers of the other nobles, that number amounted to more than 20,000.

For Roan who had faced the monsters with only the 1,000 soldiers of Amaranth troop, it was a force just like a thousand war horses.

The opportunity to execute the several strategies and tactics he couldn't utilize because he lacked the numbers were now possible.

But of course, it wouldn't be easy.

Io looked at Roan and asked in a low voice.

"Although the nobles that remained are only viscounts and barons, a noble is still a noble. They won't be easy to handle. Are

you confident?”

At those words, Roan had a faint smile on his face.  
It was a look that was full of confidence and leisure.

“Now that I became the one responsible.....”

A red light shined in his eyes.

“There’s no differentiation between nobles and commoners.  
They are all soldiers.”

He spoke in a voice filled with strength.  
Io slowly nodded.

‘I can already see the look of a commander.’

A proud expression could be seen on his face.  
Roan and Io both faintly smiled and faced each other.  
Their sights became interlocked with a strong heat that flowed  
between them.

\*\*\*\*\*

After Roan returned to the HQ’s, he ordered Austin to gather all  
of the nobles that remained in the Tale region.

The gathering place was a secluded building outside the HQ.

It was because Simon was using it as an office and a conference room.

“Tch. Already pretending to be a commander.”

Among the nobles that remained in Tale and had the strongest force, Baron George Ant complained with an expression of displeasure.

This was because he had received Roan’s order to gather while he was setting up a camp and placing down his stuff.

“Hmph. Even if he’s outstanding, how outstanding could he be.....”

George had also read several of the reports and knew how outstanding Roan’s merits were.

But it hurt his pride to recognize him.

‘Tch. I dare you to make a mistake. I will kick you out from the seat as the one responsible for this region.’

He spat on the floor and kept moving.

He saw the gathering building from far away.

“You came.”

The guards that were in front of the building saluted once and then opened up the closed doors.

The soldiers that belonged to the Amaranth troop had manners and dignity in their actions.

‘Hhm.’

George smacked his lips for no reason and entered the building.

As he looked at the respectful posture of the guards, he felt his mood loosen up.

He moved up a few more steps and opened up the door of the conference room.

At that moment.

‘Damn it.’

His relaxed expression became rigid again.

No, instead, it became flustered.

His line of sight moved towards the upper seat of the conference room.

‘So you’re the commander, huh?’

Roan was seated at the head of the long table.

Next to him, the nobles and knights of Simon’s army and the nobles that remained with George were seated.

They also had scowling expressions like George.

He knew that he had to take orders from Roan because of Simon's orders and he agreed to it because he had no other options. But as he was facing the situation itself, it didn't feel that good.

‘Damn.’

George cursed inwardly and then moved.

He sat down in an empty seat with a heavy thud.

He had a feeling that his situation with Roan was being changing on a moment's notice.

‘Damn.’

Curses came out once again.

Then.

“We are all gathered here.”

He spoke in a low but composed voice.

Roan stood up and had a faint smile on his face.

He looked at the faces of the nobles and then bowed.

“I am Roan that was put in charge of the region of Tale with the orders of the 1st Prince.”

There was no applause.

There weren't even any friendly gazes.

But Roan didn't mind.

"I know that you are all displeased with this situation. But it's time to concentrate on making the subjugation become a victory rather than focusing ranks."

It was a completely true statement.

But the expressions of the nobles still hadn't changed.

'It's just like I had expected.'

Roan bitterly smiled and sat down.

He took out a thick roll of paper and grabbed a pen.

"Shall we grasp the number of the soldiers first? Exactly how many soldiers are in the army of the 1st Prince?"

Right before he finished his sentence, the leader of the knights that was sitting at his side spoke with a blunt voice.

"15,000. 2,000 are knights and 500 mages."

It was more solid and amazing of a force than what he was expecting.

Roan kept asking about the forces of the nobles seated at his side.



“3,000.”

“2,000.”

“3,000.”

They spoke in short replies.

The number of the forces was generally similar.

In the case of the nobles that had a territory, they didn't bring as many soldiers as they still needed some to protect their territory.

‘Adding up the soldiers of Count Lancephil, I have about 28,000?’

It was an army nearly 30,000.

Roan's mouth slightly rose up.

‘This much is enough.’

Several strategies and tactics he couldn't use until now sprang forth from his head.

He took out a scroll from his chest.

It was the map of the region of Tale.

Chwaruuk.

The map was spread out on the table.

“Mm.”

The nobles let out low cries.

They had heard from the conference that Roan had made a map.

But as they actually saw it with their own eyes, it was kind of perplexing.

‘He really made one.’

‘For a map to be this detailed.’

Everyone had surprised expressions.

But Roan didn’t care.

He spread out the map and raised up a pointing stick.

Tak!

The tip of the stick pointed at the troop’s HQ.

“This is Mediasis Village.”

The nobles unconsciously nodded.

Roan smiled faintly and moved his stick.

“This is Poskein Lake.”

An outline appeared even when he only pointed at places.

Roan continued to speak.

“We are going to set up a defensive line in the south with Mediasis Village as the base.”

The stick kept moving sideways on the map.

“I’m planning to set up a perfect defensive line that goes from the east to the west to block the path of the monsters.”

Roan pointed at the several dots drawn in the map.

“These are camps that are already set up. If you use this camps actively, it will be of big help in setting up your own camps.”

“Mm.”

The nobles unconsciously nodded.

This was because the camps, traps, and obstacles that Roan had prepared were more solid than what they had expected.

Roan smiled faintly and continued to speak.

“Then, I will speak about the dispatchment of the troops.”

The stick moved quickly.

“First, as the army of the 1st prince is the strongest.....”

Roan calmly laid down the plans that he had thought up.

It was a solid plan.

‘He’s just as amazing as the prince had said.’

Viscount Tío Ruin, who was ranked amongst the heads of the nobles, was greatly amazed.

But the expressions of the other nobles weren’t as excited.

“Lastly, I hope Sir Baron George Ant sets up a formation at the back of the eastern region of Tale.”

This was his last order.

“Hmph!”

George snorted with an expression of displeasure.

He could endure everything else because it was Simon’s orders.

But he couldn’t do so for this one.

“How come I get to set up a formation at the rear?”

He spoke with an upset voice.

He stood up from his seat and pointed at a certain part of the map with his finger.

“I will also be placed near Mediasis Village.”

Now that he had the chance to remain in the Tale Region, he wanted to stay near Simon.

He had to raise up merits where he could be seen.

Roan shook his head with a composed expression.

“That’s impossible.”

At that moment, George’s face became red.

‘This bastard!’

To ignore the words of a noble.

His anger was building up.

“Amongst the nobles that have remained in the region of Tale, I have the greatest number of soldiers. So isn’t it obvious for me to defend the center, that is Mediasis Village?”

This was the truth.

George had done the unreasonable by bringing soldiers from his territory to raise enough merits at this opportunity.

Thanks to that, he had greater numbers than the other nobles.

But Roan shook his head once again.

“Baron Ant has to guard the eastern region.”

He spoke with a composed voice.

“This is the moving route of the monsters.”

That’s why he had dispatched George, who had the greatest numbers, over there.

Bang!

George smacked the table with a red face.

“It seems like you became unable to see things properly because you became the commander through the prince’s orders! I am a noble of the kingdom.....”

When he talked up to that point.

Srung!

Roan pulled the dagger out from his waist.

It was the Regate dagger.

The fierce and sharp dagger showed itself.

“Huh?”

“Um?”

The nobles were surprised and stood up from their seats.

Roan didn't mind and stabbed the dagger down onto the table.

"Pant!"

George looked at the dagger stabbing towards the back of his hand and gulped down some air.

Puk!

It was like a heavy sound that resounded in your ears.

The dagger was precisely stuck at the tip of George's fingers.

"Uhhhhhhh."

George trembled and looked at Roan.

"You bastard, what are you doing right now?!"

Even his voice was trembling.

Roan properly looked at George and spoke with a fierce voice.

"This dagger is the Regate dagger that the 1st prince granted to me."

The dagger moved to the sides while being stuck into the table.

“The prince had certainly said to follow my orders like it was his own.”

His fierce voice became stuck in the ear of the nobles.

“Mmm.”

George had a displeased and stiff expression on his face.

But now that Roan had taken out the Regate dagger, he had no way to rebuke him anymore.

Roan was staring down at George.

“Will you disobey my orders?”

“Grr.”

George stepped back.

He wanted to grab his throat and raise him up, but he couldn't do so because of the Regate dagger.

“Damn it.”

George cursed aloud and sat down with a thud.

And the expressions of the other nobles weren't good.

There were also some nobles that had complaints in their dispatch locations but Roan's actions just now was ignoring the title of nobility.

Roan read the looks on their faces but he didn't care.



“Then. I believe you will all follow my orders.”

There were no reactions.

“With this, I will end the meet.....”

When he talked up to that point, some nobles stood up and left the room.

“The world is spinning backwards!”

“Damn it!”

“Does this make sense?!”

Some nobles complained loudly on purpose.

At the sudden situation, Roan smiled bitterly and finished speaking.

“I will end the meeting here.”

The conference ended like that.

Even the other nobles that had remained, they slowly stood up and left the room.

Roan stayed in the room and sent them off.

The conference room became empty in an instant.

Then.

“Did the meeting end up going well?”

Austin appeared with a familiar voice.

He had a somewhat worried face.

Roan smiled brightly and nodded.

“Better than I thought.”

A short and thick reply came out.

Austin bitterly smiled and shook his head.

“Will those high-nosed nobles follow your orders?”

He had a really skeptical reaction.

Roan smiled brightly and nodded.

“They have to. My orders are the prince’s orders. But.....”

He stared right at Austin.

“It wouldn’t be bad having one or two nobles not following my orders.”

At those words, Austin tilted his head.

“Why.....?”

Roan just smiled instead of replying back.

His mouth rose up and his eyes dropped.

He had a soft look on his face.

But there was a red flame in his eyes.

That was the revelation of a strong determination.

# Chapter 96 : Poskein Exodus (7)

---

Mediasis village became noisy once again.

Because the nobles that received Roan's orders started to move while leading their troops.

Roan ordered one centurion to go with each of the troops and lead them to the exact location.

‘A force of 30.000..... I really became a general.’

Roan looked at the troops scattering while being on top of a watchtower and put on a smile.

With this amount of soldiers, he would be able to plentifully stop Poskein exodus.

‘It will be different to my past life.’

They suffered great losses because they couldn't stop the monsters properly.

But this time, at least on the region of the north, they could get prepared to some degree because of Roan's performances.

Then.

“A beacon.”

A beacon surged up from the south.

After Poskein exodus started, the beacons surged up a few times in a day.

The drums and jings started to ring even before Roan laid the order.

Deng! Deng! Deng! Jing! Jing! Jing!

Amaranth troop took formations and prepared themselves as if they were waiting for it.

A really nimble and quick look.

Roan also hurried to get down the watchtower and prepared to charge out.

“A beacon surged up from the south!”

A loud yell.

Roan looked at the faces of the troop members.

“Amaranth troop! Charge!”

The order was laid down.

Amaranth troop charged out of the HQ with Roan at the front.

It was a really majestic look.

“This troop is certainly well trained.”

Simon, that was looking at the troop marching out, got amazed in a low voice.

Io, that was at his side, put a bright smile at the proud feeling.

“Yes. It’s a strong army that’s rare to see nowadays.”

At Io’s words, Simon nodded.

‘Roan. Amaranth troop. Perhaps they may be of great strength for me in the future.’

His chest became hot.

The subjugation to be one step ahead on the competition for the throne.

He thought that perhaps he would be getting a big treasure he hadn’t thought of.

‘If Roan decides to follow me.....’

He couldn’t just leave him as a troop commander in this kind of region.

‘He will have to be of strength for me.’

A strange expression appeared in his face.

Simon wasn’t looking today or tomorrow, but a distant future.

\*\*\*\*\*

The subjugation of the region of Tale was easier than thought.

Because Amaranth troop and Simon's troop got out to actively subjugate the monsters after setting up a defensive line that went from east to west.

It was certainly a really positive situation, but Roan didn't get careless.

"Even if it's easy, it's just too easy."

He looked at the map spread in the table and frowned.

Austin and the other centurions were next to him.

"What do you mean?"

Carefully asking words.

Roan pointed the southern part of Tale with his stick.

"It feels like the number of monsters decreased."

It wasn't just his feeling.

Actually, after Simon and the nobles came to Tale, the amount of beacons surging up had decreased.

At those words Austin smiled brightly and said.

"Isn't it time for the exodus to slowly end?"

Several centurions nodded as if they agreed.

But Roan's expression was still stiff and didn't seem like it would

loosen.

‘No, that’s not it. Poskein exodus occurs for 20 more days.’

He clearly remembered how long the exodus lasted.

Because it was a big case that made him do so.

‘In the last 3 days, about five times the normal amount of monsters pour out.’

What you call the final exodus.

In his past life, Rinse kingdom judged that the exodus was coming to an end because the number of monsters was slowly decreased.

And in the end, because of this carelessness, they suffered great damages at the last 3 days of the exodus.

‘It’s still not time for the exodus to end.’

There may be another reason on why the monsters decreased.

‘I told the information squad and the agency to search for the cause so there will soon be an answer.’

He couldn’t continue with the strategies while feeling like this.

Then.



Knock. Knock. Knock.

A knocking sound was heard in the conference room.

“Come in.”

Right before he said that, a familiar face appeared from the open door.

It was Keep and the staff of the agency.

“I finished the thing you ordered us.”

An urgent expression and voice.

Keep approached and stood next to Roan.

He looked at the map spread in the table and put an expression that it was nice that it was spread.

“Just you had told us, the movements of the monsters isn’t normal.”

The tip of his finger moved to a mountainous area ranging from the east to west of Tale.

“The monsters that were moving to the north until now are moving towards the mountain ranges.”

“Are they planning to cross the mountains?”

“Yes. We think so.”

Keep nodded with a serious expression.

The same went for Roan.

‘To think of crossing the mountains.’

The region of Tale was a perfect valley.

The mountains blocking the west and east weren’t that high, but they were harsh.

Because of that, there wasn’t a route in the mountains.

To go to the other regions, you could only use the plains in the north or the lake that was at the south.

“What’s the mountain they plan to cross over?”

At the shortly asking question, Keep pointed two mountains.

It was a far place from the current defensive lines.

‘I can’t let them cross over.’

They exterminate the monsters of the region of Tale inside of Tale.

That was Roan’s plans.

‘I will have to lower the defensive line to the south.’

He was planning to completely suppress the monsters so they couldn't even ride the mountain.

"I will have to change my plans."

Roan looked at the centurions and opened his mouth.

"Lower the actual defensive line to the south and then exterminate the monsters that get close."

Roan's orders continued to fall.

"Notify the nobles about the situation and make them move the camps to the south."

"Yes. Understood."

The centurions all nodded and replied in one voice.

Roan grabbed the table with his hands and peeked his head.

The eyes of Roan and the centurions got interlocked hotly.

"A big battle may occur in these days. Everybody, be prepared for it."

"Yes. We will take that into account."

The centurions ground their teeth and nodded.

Heat roamed in the conference room.

\*\*\*\*\*

Bang!

George Ant threw the apple he was holding.

“This fuc.....”

Curses came up to the tip of his tongue.

He glared at the soldier that made the report while being inside a wooden tub with water.

“Say that once again.”

“Th, tha.....”

The soldier staggered with a really nervous expression.

“Soldiers of Amaranth troop came from Mediasis village. Troop commander Roan said to move the defensive line to the south.....”

WHen he talked up to there.

Bang!

An apple flew once again.

George rose himself from the tub.

His swollen stomach and the stretched leg fat was seen.

The maidens that were serving him next to the tub approached and after they wiped off the water they wore him a gown.

George grabbed another apple.

“Roan. This bastard sure is having his fun. Real fun.”

A displeased expression.

George cursed for a while with an annoyed expression.

“How long has it been since we set up the camp that he tells us to lower it down again?”

The straight house has also been recently built.

He was planning to melt his body in warm water and have a hot night with the young maidens he had brought.

‘Son of a bitch. If I tell him I won’t follow his orders, he would pull out the dagger again.’

A fishy smile appeared in his face.

George shook his hand towards the soldier.

“Tell the members of Amaranth troop that brought the notices that I listened to it well.”

“Yes? Ah, yes. I understand.”

The soldier nodded with a surprised expression and then got out of the house.

George saw that and snorted.

“Hmph.”

As the order was laid, he was indeed planning to move the camp.

But even so, he wasn't planning to do it immediately.

‘The soldiers are also really exhausted after setting up the camp. It's impossible to make them move the camp right now.’

It was obviously a good excuse.

‘What will happen if only I get out of the defense line?’

A terrible mistake.

George took a bite of the apple and put a strange smile.

“Huhuhu. For a commoner to make a noble move here and there. Take a hit of this.”

His eyes became chilly.

It was a really stupid decision and thought.

Thanks to that, the situation began to flow to an unexpected direction.

\*\*\*\*\*

“They are all a mess, is it?”

Roan checked the several documents and smiled bitterly.

Austin let out a short sigh.

“Yes. Excluding viscount Delph Blick and the nobles under his command, they are all at the worst.”

At those words, Roan moved the documents to a side and looked at Austin.

“They bring women and clowns to a battlefield and they open up a party everyday?”

“Yes. It’s all true.”

Austin smiled awkwardly and nodded.

Roan clicked his tongue with a stiff expression.

“They are all out of their minds.”

He wanted to clearly curse out once.

“What about the reactions of my orders?”

“They were all displeased, but they said they would follow it.”

“I’m glad at least.”

Roan stood up and shook his head.

“The monsters will come out more fiercely when they realize that the roads to the mountains are blocked. Make everyone get a hold of yourselves.”

“Yes. I will certainly tell them that.”

Austin bowed and then got out of the conference room.

Roan smacked his lips once again and let out a sigh when he got left alone.

He felt his mouth bitter because of the nobles.

‘If I someday become a monarch, I will use people based on their abilities rather than ranks.’

A commoner from birth.

And at a really poor mountainside at that.

Because of that, Roan had realized the big disadvantage the title of nobility had.

‘I will give everyone a fair opportunity, regardless of ranks and titles.’

A world that everyone could realize their dreams.



That was the world Roan thought of.

\*\*\*\*\*

“kirr.”

A nork fell while making that sound.

Roan looked at his surroundings while putting away his spear.

Complete victory.

The monsters got exterminated without leaving even one.

“Retrieve the corpses of the fallen ones and treat the injured ones!”

A loud yell.

The troop members of Amaranth began ordering the battlefield.

Roan looked at the south sky and let out a long sky.

‘Because I lowered the defensive line to the south, the monsters lost their direction and are wandering about.’

Because the road to enter the mountains got completely blocked.

‘If it’s like this, we will be able to perfectly cut them of.....’

When he thought up to there.

Roan frowned.

‘Beacon?’

A beacon surged up at the end of the north.

But it wasn’t a normal one.

‘Two, three?’

There wasn’t black smoke, and three surged up consecutively.

It meant that it was that urgent of a situation.

He chased with Kalian’s tear and saw that the entire western region was a world of beacons.

“Troop commander! A beacon has surged up! And three at the same time at that!”

Austin discovered the beacon late and came running.

Roan aimed at the direction of the beacon and ground his teeth.

‘It’s the west. It’s a beacon surging from the end of the west. Then.....’

At that moment, the face of a person appeared in his head.

‘Baron George Ant!’

George was the one in charge of the defensive line of the west.  
Roan hurriedly got on his horse.

“It seems like something happened in the defensive line of the west. Amaranth troop get ready to move!”

“Yes! Understood!”

Austin replied and then sent a sign to the troop members.

Flutter! Flutter!

As the flagman shook a small flag, the troop members that were ordering the battlefield took formations and lined up.

Roan looked at the beacon burning up blackly and gripped the reins strongly.

‘George Ant. What the hell did you do.’

Flames appeared in his eyes.

# Chapter 97 : Poskein Exodus (8)

---

“That crazy bastard!”

Dass, a soldier of the information squad, cursed when he looked at the troop settling down in the mountain ranges.

“A beacon has surged up!”

It was a sound that hit your ears.

As he turned his head, he saw a beacon surging up from the west.

“Tch!”

Dass spat out on the ground and then walked towards the camp.

‘Damn. I have no face to see troop commander Roan. No face at all.’

He was a soldier of the information squad in charge of surveilling the front lines of the east.

He had the role of quickly informing Roan in case the nobles didn’t follow his orders.

And especially Baron George Ant who had a lot of complaints against Roan.

Because of that, he was putting in more effort and checked on him thoroughly.

‘I was a bit relieved when they moved the camp to the south as troop commander’s orders but.....’

He was a bit slower than the other nobles, but George had also moved the camp to the south.

It was a settling look in the defensive lines.

But after two days of having settled down, they started to show weird movements.

‘They started to suddenly withdraw the camp.’

For now, he sent the soldiers of the information squad to Mediasis village.

But as George’s troop kept moving towards the north, he couldn’t stand watching anymore.

In the end, he sent an information squad to a close beacon.

Meanwhile, George who kept moving towards the north, started to settle down in a mountain range.

‘Crazy bastard.’

It was a shape that he couldn’t understand at all.

Dass moved his feet towards George’s camp.

“Stop!”

The guards, that were at the entrance, raised their spears.

Dass took out a piece of cloth that had the symbol of Amaranth troop drawn in it.

“I’m a member of the Amaranth troop.”

They were already familiar with each other.

The guarded entrance opened up.

Dass hurriedly crossed the camp that was starting to take shape.

‘He’s there.’

As he approached the center of the camp, he saw George standing below a big shadow.

“Sir Baron Ant.”

“Huh?”

George, who was lightly casually up a grape, frowned at Dass’s entrance.

‘He was from Amaranth, right?’

It was obvious that he came because he pulled back the camp.

George shrugged his shoulders while feigning ignorance.

“What’s the matter”

“What’s the reason you broke the formation and fell back?”

Dass asked as politely and humbly as possible.

“Aha. You are talking about that.”

George brightly smiled and scratched his belly.

“I was looking at the position of the camp. I think that rather than the plains of the south, this mountain range would be much better. The back is blocked by the rough mountains and at the front it’s mere plains, so there was nowhere better than this place.”

He grabbed one more grape and put on a fishy smile.

“Even so, it seems like troop commander Roan made a mistake because he lacked in experience. For a general at my level, this is the most suitable place to set up the camp.”

Dass took in a breath and then carefully spoke.

“But if Baron Ant falls back alone, then all the other defenses will be put in danger.”

At that moment, George burst out of laughter.

“Hahaha. You worry too much. If that does happen, I will lead my troop myself and rescue them. Even if I look like this, i’m a renowned general. Hahaha.”

George was speaking nonsense as if it was nothing.

Dass was about to say something else but he didn’t.

Because he realized that he wasn’t someone he could hold a conversation with.

“I understand. Then, I will go back now.”

Dass bowed and then turned around to keep walking.

‘Damn. Stupid bastard.’

Curses roamed around in his mouth.

‘Because of you, the entire defensive line has become fragile! For even a villagers like me had realized it and a bastard that calls himself a noble doesn’t!’

He had an urgent expression on his face.

‘If monsters appear.....’

His face became red.



His annoyance and rage surged up.

Dass left the camp and went towards the close by mountain with the information squad.

It was to monitor the plains in the south.

“Ah.....”

At that moment, a low exclamation came out of Dass’s voice and the other members.

Their faces became pale.

“Monsters!”

A white dust cloud surged up from beyond the plains.

It would have been good if it was the Amaranth troop or another allied troop, but unfortunately, what appeared was an amazing number of monsters.

The monsters were charging through the south because the defensive line was opened up because of George’s troop falling back.

‘If I leave it like this, the northeastern region of Tale becomes a wasteland!’

Urgency appeared in Dass’s expression.

He made someone blow the horn trumpet through a handsign.

Puuuuuu!

A sound that made your heart beat beat faster while flowing through the wind.

But George's camp didn't show any movements.

'Why! Just what are you doing?! Stupid bastard!'

Dass ground his teeth.

Rage.

A chilly murdering intent appeared in his eyes.

"Go to the beacons! Tell them to light the beacons!"

An urgent voice flowed through the wind.

\*\*\*\*\*

"Kuak!"

"Kek!"

The cries filled up the entire battlefield.

Red flames surged up and black smoke covered your field of vision.

It was a cruel sight.

There were countless corpses that didn't have their heads on the

battlefield.

“Whew.”

Roan stood in the middle of the battlefield and let out a long sigh.

He had a stiff expression on his face.

He held the Traviias Spear upside down and looked towards the north.

“Son of a bitch.”

Curses came out on it’s own.

Then.

“For now, we have cut down the tails of the monsters!”

Austin’s voice was heard.

He was completely covered in blood.

Although they had obtained victory after the fierce battle, his expression wasn’t good.

“The troop of Baron Rael Piad was annihilated.”

Rael was right next to the west of George’s camp.

As George pulled back the camp on his own, the camp that was next to it suffered the attack of the monsters.

Because of that, they suffered damages close to annihilation and the strong defensive line crumbled down like a sand castle.

“And Baron Piad?”

“Fortunately safe. He has fled towards the camp of Viscount Blick.”

At those words, Roan slowly nodded.

Then, a group of people appeared at their north.

It was Dass and the information squad.

“Troop commander!”

They kneeled down as soon as they approached Roan.

“We are sorry!”

An earnest voice apologized.

Their shoulders trembled.

But Roan’s expression was composed.

“It’s not your fault.”

It gave a short response.

At those words, Dass and the others that were about to shed tears, forcefully help them back.

Roan looked at them and ground his teeth.

‘In a battlefield, the role of magicians diminishes.....’

After facing today’s scandal, he felt regret at the absence of magicians.

‘Even if we could use communication magic, we would have been able to move quicker.’

The magicians in Tale were the ones in Simon’s troop, and those amounted to a mere 500.

‘They are all attack purposed magicians, so they don’t even know communication magic.....’

In the current situation, they weren’t of much help at all.

“Everyone, stand up.”

He spoke in a soft voice.

Dass and the others hesitated and then carefully stood up.

Tear marks were seen on their faces.

“George Ant. That bastard?”

He didn’t even add the title.

Dass pointed to the north.

“He’s not even moving from the mountains.”

Roan slowly nodded and then moved.

His feet led his forces and went towards Viscount Tio Luin.

“Viscount Luin.”

“What happened?”

There was complete annoyance in the face of Tio, who was cleaning up the battlefield.

Because he realized that this battle occurred because of George.

“Lead your troop and chase the monsters that went to the north please.”

“And you?”

“I.....”

Roan glared at the north and said.

“I will have to go and find Baron Ant.”

“Mmm.”

Tio let out a low cry of exclamation and nodded.

He didn’t have any words to say anymore.

The two people looked at each other for a moment and separated.  
Roan got on his horse and raised his spear high.

“Amaranth troop, we are going to the mountains where George’s troop is at!”

“Yes! Understood!”

A loud voice rang out .

It was a voice that kind of had a chilly murderous intent inside of it.

Roan called to Austin with a handsign.

“Austin. When we arrive the camp.....”

He gave him orders in a low voice.

Austin nodded with a severe expression.

“Don’t worry.”

A short salute followed afterwards.

Roan looked at that and nodded, and then pulled the reins.

Hiiiiing!

The head of the horse headed towards the north with a cry.

“Move!”

The order fell.

Roan and the Amaranth troop moved over the corpses of their allies and moved towards the north.

Tio, who was looking at that scene, mumbled in a low voice.

“George Ant. My stupid friend. It seems like your power only amounts to this much.”

His voice was as lonely as the battlefield.

\*\*\*\*\*

&lt;Amaranth.&gt;

The flag covered in blood fluttered at the front.

Roan and the troop appeared at George’s camp located in the mountains.

The flagman ran a step ahead and then shook the flag.

“It’s the Amaranth troop!”

The soldiers, who were on the watchtower, quickly shook their hands.

Kiiiiig!



The closed gates opened up.

Roan looked at Austin once and then kicked the horse.

The Amaranth troop entered the camp with the cavalrymen at the forefront.

“It seems like they had a tough fight.’

“But seems like they won anyways.”

“Can we stay like this?”

The soldiers of George’s troop gathered up.

They conversed in nervous expressions.

But Roan didn’t even glance at them.

His objective was fixed.

‘Austin.’

‘Yes, commander.’

The two of them exchanged glances.

Austin shook his hands quickly to the sides and sent a sign.

At that moment, the troop members pulled their weapons from their waists.

At the same time.

Flutter! Flutter!

The flagman that was at the front shook his flag.

And the troop members charged to the front as if they had been waiting for it.

“Huh? Huh?”

“Wh, what is it?”

The adjutants of George's troop, that were looking at Amaranth troop, put surprised expressions.

They saw the members of Amaranth troop running towards them and opened up their eyes where they were as large as saucers.

“Capture them!”

Austin's voice rang through the battlefield.

It was a short order, but the troop members moved nimbly.

The Amaranth troop was the strongest among the strongest.

They weren't someone a troop like George's, who enjoyed partying in the middle of the battlefield, could face.

Cheng! Checheng!

The spears and swords were pointed at the necks of the adjutants.

“Hik!”

“Gulp.”

George's troop commanders couldn't even properly resist and raised their arms.

Surrender.

The capturing was so easy that it was disappointing.

“Thi, what is this?”

“Why are you like this?”

The normal soldiers of George's troop gathered up with half absent-minded expressions.

Roan dismounted the horse and pulled out the Regate dagger.

“I, Troop Commander Roan of &nbsp;the Amaranth troop, received the commanding and strategizing rights by the 1st prince. But Baron George Ant moved the camp as he pleased while ignoring my orders and broke the defensive lines. This is a severe violation of military discipline. From now on, I will name Baron George Ant as a sinner.”

He had fierce eyes and a cold voice.

Gulp.

The normal soldiers swallowed dry saliva with nervous expressions.

Roan kept talking.

“If there's someone trying to obstruct my actions, I will also treat

them as sinners.”

As soon as he finished talking, the members of the Amaranth troop raised their weapons.

Pat!

The tips of the sharp weapons were pointed at the soldiers.

“Uuuu.”

“We, we just did as we were ordered to.”

George’s soldiers already lost all will to fight back.

This was because the commanders above the rank of adjutant had already been captured.

Roan calmly caught his breath and then put back his dagger.

His sight naturally moved over to the center of the camp.

The remaining one was only George Ant.

“Austin.”

A low calling voice spoke out and he gave out a signal.

“Yes. I understand.”

Soon, 50 members of the Amaranth troop moved towards the

center with Roan at the front.

“Wh, what are you!”

“Stop!”

The soldiers, who were guarding the center, discovered the Amaranth troop and yelled.

‘Damn. I thought the camp was noisy. So it was because of them!’

Srung.

They pulled out their weapons late.

But Roan’s and the troop member’s movements were faster.

Cheng! Checheng!

The spears and swords hit their weapons.

“Kuk.”

The knights and commanders of George’s troop ground their teeth at the numbness they felt.

Roan moved in between them.

Pubuk! Pububuk!

He executed Reid's battle technique.

“Kuk!”

The knights and commanders kneeled down with a painful sound.

“Tie them up!”

The members of the Amaranth troop quickly came running over and firmly captured them.

It was a perfect suppression.

But they didn't have leisure to lower their steps.

Roan walked towards a huge and luxurious tent located in the center of the camp.

‘George Ant.’

He unconsciously ground his teeth.

Then, the stiffly closed gates opened up and five knights with big bodies appeared.

They moved out to check what was happening outside because it was too noisy.

“Huh?”

“Yo, you?”

The knights discovered Roan in front of them and had surprised expressions on their faces.

Roan didn't even talk and extended his hand to grab their throats.

His movements were filled with Reid's battle techniques.

Pubuk!

At one hand movement, their posture broke, and his fists hit them from the broken stances.

“Kuk!”

Five knights collapsed in just an instant.

“Uhhhhhh.”

“Yo, you crazy bastard.....”

Their grunts were filled with pain.

Roan glared at them with a composed expression and then opened up the doors.

At that moment, a luxurious place was seen inside the doors.

“Huh? Yo, you?”

In a fashionable chair located at the center.

George was sitting on that chair eating sweet fruits.

He was surprised at Roan's sudden appearance.

‘The reason why it was so noisy was because of you?’

The knights he sent to check what was happening weren't here anymore.

‘Maybe?’

Even if he had the commanding and strategic rights, a mere commoner troop commander laid his hands on knights belonging to a noble family?

George couldn't believe it.

“Was it you making the fuss outside of the tent?”

‘Even if you placed a hand on the knights, you won't be able to do anything to me. Kukuku.’

He laughed in a strange way and grabbed another grape.

He wanted to show Roan a look of leisure.

“It seems like you won't answer. A noble is asking you but you dare.....”

He couldn't continue speaking.



Because Roan suddenly charged forward.

“Son of a bitch!”

A sound exploded out where he was yelling with all of his strength.

At the same time, his right fist split the air and hit George’s chest.

Puk!

“Kok!”

George rolled on the ground with the chair.

“Cough! Cough!”

The coughs were clearly heard.

Roan moved his feet like that and stepped on his chest.

Kwak.

“Kugh.”

George struggled with a pained expression on his face.

But Roan’s foot didn’t move at all.

“You, you bastard. What are you doing right now?!”

George yelled.

“It seems like you forgot who I am! I am Rinse kingdom’s.....”

When he talked up to that point.

Roan’s mouth twisted.

“I know too well. You are the trash of Rinse Kingdom.”

He put more strength in the leg, pressing even harder on his chest.

George struggled even more at the feeling that his breath was getting cut off.

“You crazy bastard! Do you know what kind of thing you are doing right now! You are committing violence against a noble!”

“Noble?”

Roan suspiciously smiled and pulled out the Regate Dagger that he had on his waist.

“This is Regate Dagger that the 1st prince gave me while granting me the commanding and strategic rights. My orders are the orders of the prince. George Ant. You haven’t obeyed the orders of the 1st prince.”

“Th, that.....”

George was at a loss for words.

It was true that Roan had received the Regate Dagger.

‘Even so, for a commoner to place his hands on a noble!’

It was something that couldn’t be pardoned or comprehended at all for a noble.

Roan pressed down on the chest even harder.

“Why didn’t you follow my orders and move the camp as had you pleased?”

“That’s because this place is more advantageous in setting up a camp!”

A confident yell came out of George’s mouth.

Roan shook his head with a stiff expression on his face.

“Stupid bastard.”

“Wh, what?! This bastard..... Kuk!”

George shut his mouth in the middle of cursing at the feeling where his rib cage was breaking.

Roan glared at him with cold eyes.

“Why didn’t you charge out when monsters appeared in the

plains after you had set up the camp?”

“Th, that.....”

He couldn't say that he had gotten scared after looking at the scale of the monsters that was greater than what he had thought.

Naturally, he paused his words.

Fire appeared in Roan's eyes.

“Trash like bastard.”

Right before he finished saying that, his arm moved.

It was a fist with Reid's battle technique behind it.

Pagak!

Roan hit George's face with all that he had.

“Kuk!”

His nose became bent and all of his teeth broke.

“Grr.”

George spat bloody foam because of the severe pain.

“Because of you, allies that shouldn't died, have died. And the

ones that shouldn't have gotten hurt, became injured..”

At Roan's words, George yelled with abusive language.

“So, son of a bitch..... You hit a noble because mere common soldiers died?”

“Mere common soldiers?”

Roan frowned.

George laughed as if he had gone half mad and continued saying.

“Right! You bastard! You dare to hit me because some of your trash like allies died? Huh? Huhuhu. The life of a noble is worth a lot more than those trash-like bastards! Kuhuhuhu.”

At that moment, Roan's eyes shined with a red light.

That was a terrible killing intent.

“George Ant. Don't badmouth the fallen ones. If you do it one more time.....”

An ice-cold voice replied back.

“I won't leave you alone.”

It was a warning.

But George, who was half mad, wasn't planning on stopping.

“Trash-like bastards. As you are also trash, you get.....”

He couldn't continue speaking.

Spat!

The Regate Dagger split the air.

Stab!

A terrible sound rang out.

At the same time, the dagger stabbed George's right hand.

“Uaak!”

George rose himself up along with his scream.

And Roan hit him in the face just like that.

Puk!

“Kuk!”

George felt severe pain and his breathing was labored.

Roan glared at him with cold eyes.

“Shut up. Next will be your neck.”

# Chapter 98 : Poskein Exodus (9)

---

“Look over there!”

“Isn’t that baron Ant?”

“Is it because he pulled back the camp as he wished?”

“He looks really messy.”

The HQ of Amaranth troop that was located at the center of Mediasis village became really noisy.

Commanders and soldiers poured out and they all looked at one place.

<Amaranth.>

A group of people holding the troop flag.

Roan was at the front of them.

Behind him, one warhorse that didn’t have a person on it was moving.

The thick and tight rope tied on the saddle.

The rope continued a long way to the back.

“Pant. Pant.”

A rough breath.

At the end of the rope, one man was walking exhaustively as if he was being dragged while having his two arms and body tightly tied up.



George Ant.

He looked really bad, but he was certainly baron George Ant.

Right now he was a sinner that committed a crime.

He had been dragged from the eastern region of Tale to Mediasis village while being tied up.

At the back of George, two companies of Amaranth troop were showing hostile looks.

Kiiiig!

The closed gates opened up.

As Roan got in first, the soldiers that were gathered up scattered to the sides.

“Even if he has the commanding and strategizing rights, can a commoner troop commander treat a noble like that?”

“Don’t speak what you don’t know. The damages in our side is really big because of baron Ant.”

“Even so, treating a noble like that is a bit..... Will the other nobles stay still?”

“I wonder. We have to check that.”

Worried expressions and mumbling sound.

Roan didn’t tilt his ear to those words.

He had already decided what to do with George.

‘Because of George Ant, the entire defensive line crumbled.’

He had to set up a new defensive line to sweep up the monsters that had gotten through the defensive line.

Because of viscount Tio Ruin having moved fast enough, they could stop the charge of the monsters for a bit.

And Roan didn't miss that opportunity.

He used the information staff to send a new member to the nobles.

And the nobles of the east that suffered great damages because of George reacted quickly at Roan's orders.

Thanks to that, a new defensive line could be set up.

'Only, because we set up the defensive line a bit to the south, we ended up losing a most of the north.'

It was the same as having to start the subjugation again.

'To not admit his mistakes and mock the deaths of our allies in this situation.'

Ududuk.

Roan ground his teeth.

Then, a group of people appeared from a building located at the center.

'The aides of the 1st prince and the prince Simon Rinse. On top of that, the nobles that arrived first.'

Roan summoned the nobles to the HQ right after they finished setting up the defensive liens.

It was because of George's punishment.

Roan got down with soft movements and grabbed the reins.

One troop member approached quickly and took it instead of him.

“Roan.”

Simon's expression wasn't that good.

Because he also knew the situation really well.

Roan saluted towards Simon and then looked at the expressions of the nobles behind him.

‘Most of them seem to show no interest. They look bothered by it. They only ones that are angry are about the ones that suffered damages like baron Rael Piad and viscount Delph Blick.’

He put a bitter smile.

They didn't realize how severe the situation was.

‘I have to awake them from their rotten thoughts.’

Roan looked at Simon fixedly.

“I will punish baron George Ant.”

At those words, Simon took a breath and then nodded.

“Do so. You have the commanding and strategizing rights for Tale.”

His expression was hard but his voice was soft.

‘It will be whipping at most.’

Even Simon thought like that.

You wouldn’t be able to treat a noble, and a noble leading a troop, beyond that.

And that wasn’t only Simon’s thoughts.

‘Even if he does that, what will he be able to do.’

‘He won’t be able to treat a noble of the kingdom as he pleases.’

‘He just has to imprison him for a few days.’

Most of the nobles thought that nothing would happen.

Because Roan wasn’t a noble like them, but a commoner.

Roan didn’t know what the nobles were thinking and sent an order to his troop members with a hand sign.

Soon, wooden chairs were placed in front of the building.

Simon sat at the upper seat and Roan took seat in front of him.

The nobles were seated next to him.

“WHew. Whew.”

George was still breathing roughly.

He was kneeling up on the ground.

But differently from before, light returned to his eyes and his mouth was slightly rised up.

Then, Roan’s voice was heard.

“From now on, we will proceed with baron George Ant’s punish.....”

When he talked up to there.

“Do you think you will be safe after treating a noble like this!”

An exasperated voice.

George, that had his head lowered down until now, looked at Roan fixedly and yelled.

At the sudden situation, Simon and the nobles that were seated all put surprised expressions.

‘There are some nobles that are acquaintances to me.’

George had something to trust.

Now was a completely different situation to when he was alone in Amaranth troop.

There were many nobles that would side up with him.

And actually, some nobles mumbled with displeased expressions.

“Well, this is too much to do to a noble.”

“Is a noble a noble for nothing? Ahem.”

The atmosphere turned strange.

But even so, Roan’s expression was composed

He looked at George fixedly.

“Baron George Ant. You disregarded my orders as commander and moved the camp as you pleased, and gave great damages to your allies.”

“Hmph! The place I settled in was the safest!”

George spat the words he had said before as an excuse.

Roan didn’t talk back and continued speaking.

“You also mocked the deaths of the soldiers.”

“Most of them were commoners! You wouldn’t know if you were a noble like me, the death of commoner bastards aren’t that important!”

George yelled up.

Murderous intent appeared in Roan’s eyes.

“Trash like bastard. You still didn’t get a hold of yourself.”

He pulled Regate dagger from his waist.

“I, Roan, received the commanding and strategizing rights for the region of Tale by the 1st prince. At the same time, I also received permission about your punishment.”

His voice became colder.

“George Ant, I will bring down the punishment for your sins.”

As he glanced, five members of Amaranth troop approached and lined up behind George Ant.

The atmosphere wasn't normal.

“What, what! What are you planning to do!”

George tried to hide that he was scared by yelling.

Puk!

Roan stabbed the dagger on the armrest of the chair.

“George Ant. I'm cutting down your ear because you didn't follow the orders of the commander even after having heard it.”

“Wh, what?”

George asked back while getting surprised.

And Simon and the others all had surprised expressions.

“Roan. Even so, cutting off the ear of a noble is a bit.....”

Simon slightly said.

He had a perplexed expression.

But Roan didn't even look back and answered.

“We have to cleanse the rotten parts. I am just following military discipline.”

“Mm. Even so.....”

Simon tried to continue speaking.

Roan pulled Regate dagger and looked at Simon.

“If you don't want it, I can give back the dagger and the commanding and strategizing rights.”

The strongest method.

Roan betted everything on himself.

“Mm.”

Simon gulped.

He realized how outstanding of a commander Roan was while



looking through several battles, strategies, tactics and commands.

‘I can’t lose this kind of commander for a trash like noble bastard.’

To win the competition for the throne, an existence like Roan would be more advantageous than a noble that didn’t have any abilities.

‘But if the other nobles get shaken because of this.....’

The entire base could shake.

Then, the closest people to Simon and the ones leading troops Tio Ruin, Rael Piad and Delph Blick, that suffered damages thanks to George, stood up abruptly.

“My prince! Thanks to George Ant, a thousand soldiers died and more than thousands got injured.”

“The sin George committed can’t be forgiven, putting aside the nobility rank and commoner rank.”

“The soldiers of my territory ended up getting annihilated.”

Pouring impeachments.

Tio kneeled up one knee towards Simon.

“Military discipline is extremely strict on a battlefield. As you have given the commanding and strategizing rights to troop commander Roan, I think that it’s proper to give him strength.”

Delph and Rael followed up.

“If the military crumbles, there is no more victory.”

The atmosphere changed in an instant.

Even the nobles that were protesting shut their mouths.

‘Viscount Tio Ruin.’

A faint smile appeared in Simon’s mouth.

He had read Tio.

‘You stood up for me on what I was pondering about.’

Thanks to that, the flow had changed.

‘The bastards that will still say noble this and noble that in this situation.....’

His eyes became fierce.

‘They are useless bastards.’

Even if he turned their backs and supported the 2nd or 3rd princes, he would applaud them.

‘Bastards that don’t have any ability and stick up living on power are rather a big hole and a weak point.’

Simon let out a short sigh.

“Whew. The words of Tio Ruin, Delph Blick and Rael Piad are right. The most important thing in a battlefield are the orders of a commander and discipline.”

He looked at Roan’s eyes fixedly.

“Roan. I was short on my thoughts and got shaken for a bit. Do as you please.”

“Thank you.”

Roan replied with a short sigh and looked at George.

A long sigh flowed out.

‘I received the prince’s permission.’

The gains of having bet everything was also clear.

He had received the clear support from Simon and the three nobles.

The nobles that were filled with displeasement couldn’t say anything anymore.

Roan made a handsign towards his troop members.

The troop members that were standing at the back of George, pressed down his shoulders.

“Huh? Huh? Huh?”

George tried to struggle with a surprised expression, but he couldn't move at all.

He looked at the nobles at the surrounding with an earnest look.

“Ar, are you all going to watch? We are nobles!”

Trembling voice.

The nobles just shut their mouths and ignored George's sight.

“George Ant! Shut up and receive your punishment!”

Tio yelled with all his strength.

“Trash like bastard!”

Rael's curses followed up.

Meanwhile.

Srung.

One soldier pulled up a dagger.

“Uak!”

George yelled up at the chilly presence he felt behind his ear.  
At that moment.

Uak!

Both of George’s ears got cut off cleanly with a terrible sound.

“Uaaaak!”

George let out a scream close to despair.  
Red blood flowed from both his ears.

‘He, he really cut it off.’  
‘He cut off the ear of a noble!’

The nobles and the surrounding soldiers all put surprised expressions.

‘There’s no difference in ranks in military discipline.’  
‘If a noble makes a mistake, they also receive the same punishment!’

Every gulped dry saliva and looked at Roan.

Then.

Roan, that had his mouth shut, grabbed Regate dagger once again.

“George Ant. I’m carving your two eyes because you, one of the commander in the defensive lines couldn’t read the flow of the battlefield properly and not marching out when monsters attacked the allied troops.”

“Huhuk!”

Even the surrounding nobles gulped air.

Simon also got surprised, but as he had entrusted everything to Roan, he didn’t stand up.

“Uooooo!”

George was half insane.

The troop member holding the dagger quickly carved out his two eyes.

“Uaaaaaak!”

Despair followed up longly.

However Roan wasn’t planning to stop with this much.

“George Ant. I’m cutting up your tongue because of having mocked the deaths of your allies.”

“Mmm.”

The nobles now had a pale face.

They looked at George, that was covered with blood, with restless looks.

“Uok! Uk!”

George, that got his tongue grabbed, shook his head, but the members of Amaranth troop grabbed his head firmly so that he couldn't move.

Slash.

As the dagger moved, the long tongue fell to the ground.

“Kuk!”

He was now about to get cut from oxygen.

George trembled like a person that got infected with malaria.

Roan looked at him and stood up.

His hands moved over to Traviass spear.

“George Ant. Lastly, I will behead you for not having respected the military discipline set up by Rinse kingdom.”

Cheng!

The spear showed itself with the sound of metal.

The soldiers that were grabbing George firmly fell back.

“Uoooo.”

George trembled and started to get inclined to the front.

Roan swung Travias spear as if he was waiting for it.

Slash!

The spear cleanly cut off the head.

A strange silence fell in the surroundings.

Meanwhile, Roan stabbed George’s head and raised it high to the sky.

A face that had it’s ears, tongue and eyes cut off.

George’s head was covered in blood.

“Everyone listen attentively. Military discipline applies to everyone in a fair way.”

Roan looked at the nobles and soldiers and said.

“I’m punishing the ones that committed a sin and lay a prize to the ones that rendered merits.”



A declaration.

Everyone gulped dry saliva at Roan's words.

Especially the nobles, that were drunk in their power, seemed to have woken up.

'A commoner troop commander has cut off the head of a noble but the prince isn't saying anything.'

'No, it won't be weird for the heads of anyone to be cut off.'

'If I make a mistake, my head will also get cut off.'

The nobles touched their necks.

"Those are right words!"

"He didn't say anything wrong!"

Tio, Delph and Rael yelled with strength.

They were backing up Roan's words so they couldn't think of anything weird.

Roan handed over George's head to the troop members.

"Place it on the entrance of the troop and put it as an example."

"Yes. We understand."

A loud yell.

Respect was seen in the eyes of Amaranth troop.

‘Even nobles of the kingdom can’t do anything in front of troop commander.’

‘At least in the region of Tale, troop commander Roan is the best!’

Actually, even they haven’t expected that he would come out this strongly.

Roan smiled faintly towards the troop members and then turned hi head to look at Simon.

The camp still had the heavy silence.

Roan put back Regate dagger and kneeled up.

A really courteous attitude.

“I finished the punishment for George Ant.”

At those words, Simon got a hold of himself late.

“It was an excellent decision.”

George was dead anyways.

As he decided to back up Roan, it would be better to be thorough with it.

Simon looked at the expressions of the nobles once and then smiled towards Roan.

“From now on, I will still entrust you with the merit rewards and the punishments for the region of Tale.”

“Thank you.”

Roan didn't decline.

He knew how big of a weapon and what kind of strength this would give him.

“Then. Keep working hard from now on.”

Simon patted Roan's shoulders and then returned to the troop building with his vassals.

Even the remaining nobles glanced everywhere and then disappeared to their own buildings.

Roan, that got left alone, took in a deep breath.

‘Now even nobles won't be able to disobey my orders.’

He had certainly overpowered their spirit.

He thought up of the pale faces of the nobles.

‘Now that I used the whip once, is it time to give them the carrot?’

Roan also knew that the nobles were the biggest support for Simon.

He had to stop them from shaking altogether.

The next plan was calmly set up in his head.

Then, a familiar face appeared among the soldiers surrounding

him.

“Huh?”

Roan, that didn't get surprised much, opened his eyes roundly.  
A really welcoming face.

“Chris.”

“Troop commander.”

Chris, that was working in Pavor castle as his stage, had appeared in Mediasis village.

The two people held hands and didn't speak for a long while.

The soft smile and warm eyes worked instead of the conversation.

“Troop commander.”

After a while, Chris said with a low voice.

Roan nodded.

Chris's voice became even lower.

“There's something I must check on.”

Roan just looked at Chris's eyes.

Chris started to carefully speak.

“Even so, it seems like there’s a spy among the remaining nobles in Tale.”

\*\*\*\*\*

“So you are telling me to hold hands with Kallum?”

“Yes.”

A short answer.

But the expression of the man that answered was gentle.

“Mm.”

The youth that listened to the answer touched his chin with one hand and frowned.

‘So I have to hold hands with my younger brother.....’

“Count Chase. Are you saying that the situation in my brother Simon’s side is that good?”

“Yes. If it goes on like this, the 1st prince will get really ahead of the competition for the throne.”

The man with a serious expression was count Jonathan Chase.  
He said in a low voice as if he was whispering.

“Actually, the 1st prince is staying in the region of Tale that’s at the north of the lake. The responsible for that place is someone called Roan, that beheaded viscount Benjamin Doyle. As he has quite the ability, it seems like he is blocking the monsters in Tale really outstandingly.”

“How do you know that precisely?”

“When the thing of viscount Doyle happened, I sent some commander underlings and made them infiltrate his troop.”

“Ah.....”

Tommy let out a low exclamation.

His eyes shone.

“If we connect them with our own spies.....”

“No. It’s much better for them not to know each other.”

Jonathan quickly shook his head.

“Because then, even if one side gets discovered, the other one will be able to stay alive.”

“Mm. That’s also right.....”

Tommy admitted it in an instant and nodded.

Jonathan let out a short sigh.

“Whew. For now, we have to concentrate on holding hands with the 3rd prince.”

“But will Kallum want to hold hands with me?”

“That.....”

A smile appeared in Jonathan’s face.

He said with a really confident expression.

“Send me to the 3rd prince. I will certainly convince him.”

“Oh! It seems like you are confident.”

Tommy smiled brightly and nodded.

Jonathan kneeled up.

“I’m just doing my best for the prince.”

A really polite and mannered look.

Tommy nodded with a satisfied expression.

“Fine. I will entrust that to you. If this just turns out well, I will give you a big reward.”

“Thank you.”

Jonathan hurriedly bowed.

The smile in his face became denser.

‘Kuk! Then, shall we start working earnestly?’

A kind of cold eyes.

That resembled the eyes of a snake.



# Chapter 99 : Poskein Exodus (10)

---

The black darkness.

Roan climbed a watchtower in the south by himself.

Even the stars and the moon were caught in the dim clouds.

‘A spy.....’

The news Chris brought two days ago was quite shocking.

‘I thought that I could have as many normal soldiers as I wanted.’

But he hadn’t expected that there may be a spy among the nobles escorting Simon.

‘And two nobles leading troops at that.’

There were two spies which Chris revealed through the agency.

They were Baron Elton Coat and Baron Luke Aip.

Among them, Luke was the spy of Tommy Rinse and Elton of Kallum Rinse.

And the two people didn’t know the identity of each other.

‘On top of that, this isn’t the end.’

Chris expected that one of the two spies would have at least two more accomplices.

‘For now, it’s important to discover the spies that weren’t revealed.’

Until then, he was planning to move Luke and Elton to the rear camp.

He was planning to examine how they were communicating with their respective princes and find the ones that showed similar actions.

“Whew.”

Roan deeply sighed.

He had a feeling that the situation was becoming too complicated too suddenly.

His rank was still a troop commander but the things he was doing was the same things a noble did.

‘From here on, after getting rid of George Ant, all of the other nobles are checking up on me.

Actually, just cutting off George’s neck was a big provocation.

If Simon was swept up in political reasonings, he would have been chased out of the army or he could have even lost his life.

But Roan trusted his decision.

No, He believed in his eyes in sizing people up.

He thought that if it was Simon, who viewed personal ability

with importance and was an ambitious person, he would take his side.

And fortunately, his gamble in betting everything on one side succeeded.

Simon had given wings to Roan.

Currently, most of the nobles were gulping down their complaints because of the declarations of Simon, Tio, and Rael.

Thanks to that, a strange atmosphere was flowing in the center of the troop's HQ.

Even while following Simon's orders and admitting Roan's abilities, it was difficult to easily recognize Roan who was different from birth.

It was just like you were walking on thin ice.

'Even so, obtaining the support of Baron Rael Piad is a great gain.'

Roan assigned all of George's soldiers to Rael.

Rael, who lost all of the soldiers he was commanding, became greatly moved at the unexpected treatment.

He thanked Roan in a big way and declared his support one more time.

'Is it now time to catch the hearts of the other nobles too?'

He didn't want to give them goods such as money or jewels.

'I'm showing them my abilities.'

It would be an outstanding ability that would make them want to follow him.

He was planning to show them that.

Roan looked at the plains spread out above the watchtower.

Although there was darkness, Roan could see everything brightly as if it was midday thanks to Kalian's Tear.

‘Now, shall we start enjoying this?’

He was planning to sweat a big one out.

His heart beat faster and his blood circulated quicker.

\*\*\*\*\*

First, Roan dispatched Luke and Elton to the northern boundary of Tale.

They couldn't understand why they had to move to the rear, but Roan put up a believable excuse and convinced them.

That was because of George, they lost a lot of ground in the south and the range of the movements of the monsters were spread out in the north.

At the words that it was a really important task, Luke and Elton moved towards the north without saying anything else.

Followed by that, Roan summoned all the nobles and set up a new subjugation plan.

For now, there was a need to move the defensive line to the south, now that it was pushed from the north.

Roan entrusted this task to Tio Ruin, Delph Blick, and Rael Piad.

They were a force strongly supporting him.

And Roan decided to take the nobles that felt antipathy against him and subjugate the monsters in the south.

The nobles didn't speak back and agreed on Roan's opinions.

They had already seen what happened to George after ignoring his orders.

The next day Tio, Delph, and Rael left the HQ's.

Simon, who had the largest force, led his troop and went on a personal subjugation around Mediasis Village.

Roan quickly gathered the remaining nobles and gathered for a conference.

“Based on the reports of the information squad.....”

When setting up tactics and strategies, they included the analyzed and gathered information of the information squad.

This tactic was also a really important one to Roan.

He was planning to show his abilities as a commander properly to the nobles that felt antipathy towards him.

He even took the night off to have a meeting with the centurions.

Roan smiled towards the nobles listening to his words.

‘I will show you that a battlefield can be designed.’

The conference continued like that for a while.

After a while, when the conference ended, the nobles started

leave from the meeting room one by one.

“How was it? The conference we just had?”

“I wonder. It was a kind of groundless feeling. Honestly speaking, they were all nonsensical words.”

“It seems like he got many things right and got the nickname of ghost of the battlefield, and he got lost in that name.”

Several nobles thought of the meeting they just had and laughed, ridiculing him.

“Monsters will appear in the southern plains of Mediasis Village before the sun sets, so be prepared beforehand and just scare them?”

“I just have to be hidden in the weeds of the northeast. Then the scared monsters will certainly flee over there.”

“Even so, you are all better than me. I wonder. I just have to take 100 soldiers.....”

“I.....”

Several words came and went as if they couldn't understand it at all.

“It seems like he's trusting that information something too much.”

“Yeah. For now, let's just wait until night-time.”

“If monsters really do appear.”

A cynical and fishy smile appeared on the faces of the nobles.

They hoped that Roan made a big mistake so he placed down the commanding and strategic rights.

And like that, the sun that was right above them started to move to the west little by little.

And just like a lie.

Deng! Deng! Deng! Jing! Jing! Jing!

The sound notifying the appearance of monsters was heard.

“Mo, monsters really appeared?!”

“It’s exactly before the sun set.”

“Mm.”

The nobles swallowed in silence with surprised expressions on their faces.

But they couldn’t stay like that forever.

“Charge!”

“Charge!”

They quickly charged like Roan’s orders.

Each commander that had 2,000 soldiers led their troop and charged out.

Roan stood at the watchtower and saw that.

A smile appeared in his face.

‘Everything will flow just like how I want it to.’

\*\*\*\*\*

The battlefield did indeed flow following Roan’s plans and expectations.

The monsters that appeared in the southern plains became perplexed at the attacks of the nobles and fled towards the weeds in the north.

But the nobles who received Roan’s orders were already waiting for them in ambush.

On top of that, the camps, traps, and obstacles they had set up before the exodus had started were being used everywhere.

Kiek!

The monsters scattered to the sides at the unexpected ambush.

“Don’t chase them! Our role is only up to this point!”

The soldiers that were waiting in ambush, protected their place instead of chasing after them.

A surprised look could be seen in their eyes.

‘Everything is happening like Troop Commander Roan had said.’



The monsters that fled while scattering to the sides had to change direction again while not being able to move much.

Roan had precisely read their route.

Soldiers that amounted to 100 and 500 were being placed on several roads.

Jing! Jing! Jing! &nbsp;  Deng! Deng! Deng!

The surged flag flew and the noisy jing and drum rang.

The monsters were surprised and ran towards the east where they couldn't feel any presences.

The monsters that were scattered, gathered up once again.

And they finally arrived at the end of the eastern plains.

Their front was blocked with the harsh mountains and the surroundings only had long weeds.

“It's really surprising.”

“The movements of the monsters are exactly the same as troop commander Roan had said.”

“I, is it possible to guess this precisely?”

They weren't even humans, but monsters.

The monsters moved with instincts rather than rationality.

They were an existence that was that much harder to guess.

Then.

“They appeared precisely.”

“There’s not even an ounce of a mistake.”

The noble’s sights moved towards the west.

The high troop flag surged above the weeds.

<Amaranth.>

The Amaranth troop had appeared at the rear of the monsters.

At the same time.

Sweeeek!

Thousands of arrows split the dark sky.

Pubububuk!

The dry weeds caught fire.

Kiiiek!

The monsters were swept up in flames in an instant.

And.

Tat!

Roan charged and entered the path of fire.

He had a valiant and overwhelming look.

Cheng!

Travias Spear became longer accompanied by the sound of metal.

Mana of a faint light flowed in the spear.

The Flamdor Mana Technique skyrocketed his body temperature.

Flaaaaame!

The fire burning the plains made Roan stronger.

Hwak!

On top of that, the red flames moved following Roan's movements and spear as if they were dancing.

“Ah...”

“Ahhh.”

The nobles that were looking at that all opened their mouths with shocked expressions.

The fire danced alongside the spear.

That felt just like looking at the owner of fire, at the fire monarch.

Gulp.

Everyone gulped down their dry saliva.

As they saw Roan performing martial arts right before their eyes, one part of his heart became chilled.

‘Ri, right. The 1st prince wouldn’t have named an unsophisticated person as the one responsible for a region.’

‘Outstanding insight, strategy, and tactics. On top of that martial arts!’

They got goosebumps.

Meanwhile, the fire that was covering the monsters was dying out little by little.

The sound of the horn trumpet was heard as if it was waiting for this moment.

Puuuu!

At the same time, the Amaranth troop that was waiting at the rear, ran in.

They looked like they were charging while they were holding a small shield in front of them!

Bang!

The clash of Amaranth troop and the monsters.

The battle had just started, but it was already coming to an end.

The monsters weren't an opponent for Roan and the Amaranth troop.

\*\*\*\*\*

The battle already ended with the complete victory for the Amaranth troop.

The monsters were exterminated without being able to properly resist.

Roan and the nobles returned to the HQ while leading their troops.

“Waaaa!”

“Amaranth! Amaranth! “

“Roan! Roan!”

The soldiers guarding the HQ cheered at the returning troops.

Roan went to the building of the troop with a composed expression.

And the nobles deployed in this battle followed his back.

Their expression was kind of awkward.

‘We did win, but I don't know if we have to feel good or not.’

‘I had hoped that he would have slipped up.’

‘It feels like he just did everything alone.’

It was an uncomfortable feeling.

Then, Roan who sat at the upper seat of the conference room, stood up and saluted.

“We could win this battle thanks to you.”

He had a polite and well-mannered look to him.

“Huh?”

At the sudden situation, the nobles had puzzled expressions.  
One of them spoke with a bit blunt voice.

“Isn’t Troop Commander Roan the one that raised the biggest merits anyways?”

At those words Roan shook his head.

“It was thanks to you performing your roles perfectly. I had just taken care of the remaining things. The ones that raised the biggest merits this time.....”

He paused for a moment and bowed once again.

“It’s you.”

“Ahem.”

Awkward coughs were heard everywhere.

They hadn't expected to hear Roan complimenting them here.

'He isn't that bad of a guy.'

They slightly thought like that.

'On top of that, the martial arts we saw on the battlefield was also outstanding.'

'He's a guy that has the possibilities to become bigger than this.'

'After the subjugation ends, he may be able to become a noble.'

Then, Roan's voice was heard.

"I will record this well and report it when the merit awards happen."

"Ahem. This wasn't that much. Hahaha."

It was a laugh that seemed like they didn't dislike what they heard.

The nobles were satisfied.

Currently, Roan was receiving Simon's support and recognition.

If that Roan reported the merits himself, there was a high possibility to catch Simon's eyes.

'It's a good opportunity.'

‘Right. If it’s only for this, we can still pretend to be on good terms with Roan.’

The nobles smiled in satisfaction and nodded.

But of course, not all the nobles were thinking of the same thing.

‘Hmph! Insignificant bastard.’

‘Is he using the carrot and the stick? Hmph!’

Displeasure was seen in some nobles.

But they forced themselves to not show it.

Because it was still Roan who was the responsible one for Tale.

‘Anyways, some are showing goodwill.’

Roan looked at the expressions of the nobles and put on a smile.

He knew that he wouldn’t be able to capture the hearts of the nobles with just this amount of his show of the carrot and the stick.

But the relationship of pulling and pushing the nobles had just started.

‘I will make you not be able to get a hold of yourselves.’

A faint smile appeared on his face.

Roan stood up and slightly bowed.



“Everyone, you have done great today.”

The after-battle conference ended like that.

The nobles started to move out of the room one by one.

And some of them even approached Roan and shook hands.

Roan, who was left alone, didn't rest and took out a thick roll of paper.

Even when big and small battles were occurring, he didn't neglect studying.

‘There are still a lot of lacking points.’

There were many things he couldn't do with just his talent and effort in his past life.

Because of that, he lost his life as a squad commander.

But in this life, he became responsible for a region and was able to dream of something bigger.

‘I have to learn more, and put in more effort.’

He needed to have a grand foundation.

He didn't want to become someone that only shined.

“Well, shall I organize the situation of the 2nd and 3rd princes for now?”

Roan grabbed a pen and took in a deep breath.

Scribble. Scribble.

For a while, only the sound of the pen's scribbling was heard from the conference room.

\*\*\*\*\*

“Hahaha!”

Simon boisterously laughed and nodded.

He was really satisfied with the current situation.

Even when the defensive line was greatly pushed to the south because of George Ant, he thought that the subjugation was going in the wrong direction.

On top of that, because Roan got rid of George, the internal conditions greatly shaken up.

If this was notified to the political circle, several nobles could have expelled him.

At the slip, he could get this entire base shaken up.

Simon soon contacted his supporter, Bradley Webster.

Bradley, who was keeping the other dukes in check, moved quickly at Simon's call.

He roamed among the society of Miller and spread George Ant's self-indulgent attitude and incapacibilities.

He didn't only do that, but he also exaggerated Roan's merits, who he had selected and was supporting and reported it to several nobles of the royal palace.

Thanks to that, Simon was rumored to be an insightful person that recognized someone with ability and also as a brave general.

But of course, the one getting the most interest was Roan.

Roan had started to spread his name even when he didn't know that was happening.

‘The only problem left are my two brothers.....’

After the subjugation ends, Tommy and Kallum will probably bet on the case where Roan cut off George's head.

‘But by then it will already be too late. Huhuhu.’

He had a method he had thought of.

Simon's eyes twisted scarily.

‘For them to grab hands .’ (E/N: join together)

He hadn't expected for his two brothers to join forces.

Thanks to that, the difference between him and his brothers wasn't that wide.

‘Even so, it's clear that I'm far ahead of the subjugation.’

Even if he wasn't immediately named as the successor for the throne, he would be a lot further in the competition.

‘I did well in entrusting Roan with Tale.’

This was all thanks to Roan.

Roan grasped everything that happened in the region of Tale as precisely as if it was happening on his palms and moved according to it.

Thanks to that, different from the other regions, the monsters in Tale couldn’t even properly raise their spirits up.

The defensive line that was pushed to the north was set up again in the south, where Poskein Lake was, and the monsters that were fiercely stirring also started to reduce as more time passed.

‘It’s about time the subjugation ended.’

His chest swelled up.

“Hahaha!”

Simon couldn’t endure it anymore and burst out in laughter.

The commander of the knights Ralph Tains, who was escorting him from the back, smiled brightly.

Then, someone knocked on the door.

Knock. Knock. Knock.

At the same time, a welcoming voice was heard.

“Oh! Come in.”

Right after he permitted it, Roan entered the room.

Although he did seem tired because of the continued battles, his eyes were still shining brightly.

“Hahaha! Roan. It seems like the subjugation is beginning to end! The number of monsters has decreased a lot! Hahaha!”

“Right. What did you come for today?”

He asked back after he laughed aloud.

If he had a favor, he was planning to listen to everything.

Simon was that happy and was reveling in his victory.

On the other side, Roan’s expression was quite dark.

“Strange information has come to us.”

“Information?”

Simon frowned.

Roan continued saying with a calm voice.

“Even so, we will have to make the defenses more solid.”

“Why that so suddenl.....”

Recently, the number of monsters had decreased by a lot.

And Simon thought that the subjugation was coming to an end.

But Roan had rather said that they should strengthen their defenses.

He couldn't understand it at all.

Roan took in a breath and slowly replied.

“It seems like the monsters are preparing for the last strike.”

His low voice contrasted the silence that followed.

Roan's eyes shone.

He couldn't say it honestly but it was now time for that to happen.

‘Now the final exodus will start.’

# Chapter 100 : Salvation (1)

---

“Mm.”

Simon swallowed his saliva contrasting the silence.

His happy face had now become dark.

“That more monsters that have appeared until now will pour out?”

“Yes. Based on what was analyzed by the information squad, it seems like there will be at least five times as many monsters.”

Roan replied calmly.

He knew that the final exodus happened in the last three days thanks to the memories of his past life.

Thanks to that, making up the information and convincing Simon wasn't a difficult thing.

“Will you be able to stop it?”

His question came straight to the point.

Roan nodded.

“There are no problems.”

It was true.

You wouldn't know if you were annihilated because you didn't know, but in a situation where you knew it would happen, the

preparations for it had already been finished.

Only, what had Roan worried wasn't the region of Tale.

“We have to notify the other regions.”

“Right. We should.”

Simon smiled faintly and nodded in reply.

Right now, he wasn't only in charge of the region of Tale that was located towards the north of the lake.

At least for the other nobles supporting him, there was a need to notify them of this a bit quicker.

But what Roan wanted didn't amount to only that.

He took in a breath for a moment and then carefully spoke.

“We also have to notify the sides of the 2nd and 3rd princes.”

“Mm?”

Simon frowned.

Roan quickly added.

“The two princes will also think that the stir of the monsters has ended. And naturally, the defenses will also become sloppy. In this situation, if five times the number of monsters appear, the region around the lake would become a mess. And the citizens that were relieved in the subjugation will also suffer great damages.”

“Mm.”



Simon gulped in the silence.

‘Those things are important even when the competition for the throne is happening?’

He knew that Roan had great interest in the lives and well-being of the citizens, as a commoner troop commander.

But he hadn’t expected that he would worry about their safety in this situation.

‘If Tommy and Kallum can’t properly react to it, they would suffer a big blow and I would become even more advantageous.’

It was true that Simon was more open-minded about ranks than other nobles.

But for this, he was an ambitious person.

To climb on the throne, he would make even the cruelest and most horrendous choices.

‘Even so, there’s no need to make Roan feel bad here.’

Roan was really outstanding.

He was someone he had to bring with him until he climbed up to the throne.

Simon erased the displeased look on his face and put on a faint smile.

“I understand. I will send a message to my two brothers.”

“Thank you.”

Roan was still bowing, so he didn't realize Simon's change in expression.

“Then, I will be going now.”

There were many things he had to do with the final exodus in front of him.

Roan saluted and then moved out of the room.

“Whew.”

Simon let out a long sigh.

The escorting knight, Ralph Tains who was behind him, asked in a low voice.

“Will you really send the message?”

At those words, Simon snorted.

“Hmph. I can't do that. For me, it's the perfect opportunity. As we have to trick Roan's eyes, just pretend to send it.”

“Yes. I understand.”

Ralph bowed and left the room after replying.

Simon, who was left alone, fell into his thoughts.

‘Roan. Your insight and ability is outstanding, and you treat your underlings really well. On top of that, you have a good heart and even love the citizens. But.....’

That kind of temperament was only suitable in times of peace.

‘You will have to get a bit dirty.’

If that wasn’t the case, he may stand up against him at the final point.

Simon closed his eyes.

‘Roan. At least until I become the king, stay next to me.’

After that?

That was something that only Simon knew.

\*\*\*\*\*

“Then. They are trusting you without any doubts?”

“Yes. They are.”

A handsome youth and a middle aged man were sharing a conversation in a low voice.

The youth was the 3rd prince of Rinse Kingdom, Kallum Rinse, and the man was surprisingly enough, one of the spies of Tommy

Rinse, Viscount Jonathan Chase.

“Brother Tommy acts all intelligent but he’s a really sloppy person. Hahaha.”

“If it wasn’t only for Duke Edwin Voisa, he would have already been eliminated from the competition for the throne.”

A fishy smile appeared on Jonathan’s mouth.

His eyes were certainly smiling, but it gave off a kind of cold feeling.

Tommy wouldn’t be imagining it at all.

That Jonathan, who proposed joining hands with Kallum Rinse, was actually a spy for Kallum.

“Prince.”

Jonathan’s nose frowned.

Kallum’s eyes shone.

“It seems like you have thought of something good?”

He knew that every time Jonathan had something good in mind, he frowned his nose.

And Jonathan nodded.

“There are two spies in the camp of the 1st prince that belong to the 2nd prince.”

“I know that.”

“And there are also two on our side.”

“Right.”

Kallum thought of the nobles he had won over to his side and nodded.

Jonathan’s voice became more covert.

“Send a letter to them and slightly leak the identity of the spies of the 2nd prince.”

“Oh!”

Kallum let out a low exclamation.

Jonathan continued speaking.

“If rumors enter the eyes of the 1st prince, then he won’t stay still at all.”

“Right. He would make a fuss to cut the heads off of those bastards.”

At Kallum’s words, the smile on Jonathan’s mouth became even fishier.

“And the spies of the 2nd prince wouldn’t just stay still.”

“Make the two sides fight each other?”

“Yes. We are just watching how the fight proceeds.”

A weird laugh was heard.

Kallum slapped his knees with his hands.

“Good. Start it right away.”

“Yes! Just leave it to me.”

Jonathan bowed deeply.

An ambitious fire appeared in his cold eyes.

‘The one to become the next king is the 3rd prince.’

Abilities or quality wasn’t important at all.

The only one among the three princes that could do as they pleased was Kallum.

And among the nobles of Rinse, the one with the most ambitions could be Jonathan.

No, perhaps, his ambition would be the same as Simon’s.

\*\*\*\*\*

A night which had a blue moon.

This was the night the final exodus started.

The first day really resembled hell.

The monsters poured out of the lake with cries.

They overflowed out of the lake as if they were really excited, no, perhaps stricken in fear.

But the northern region of Poskein Lake had solid preparations thanks to Roan.

Arrows poured over the heads of the monsters that appeared from the lake.

At the same time, fire surged up from their feet.

But this wasn't the end.

Tens, hundreds of oil barrels floated over the lake.

The monsters that tried to get out of the water couldn't move freely and had their legs tied up.

And above them, long spears that were set on fire flew.

Babang!

Poskein Lake became a sea of fire with a loud explosion.

It was a really perfect defense.

Even so, the monsters pouring out of the lake started to push the defensive lines little by little and charged towards the ground.

The number of monsters was that overwhelming.

But Roan didn't confront them head on.

They repeated hit and run tactics, and led the really excited monsters into traps and the troop's bases.

Thanks to that, the monsters couldn't properly resist and started to become exterminated little by little by the surprise attacks and traps.

"It's the Amaranth troop!"

"Open the gates!"

The guards that were left in Mediasis Village yelled with all of their strength.

They had discovered the Amaranth troop approaching from the end of the southern plains.

And Roan was at the front of them.

“Amaranth! Amaranth!”

“Roan! Roan!”

The Amaranth troop put the pouring cheers behind them and went to the HQ located at the center of the village.

Roan and the Amaranth troop, who should have been facing the monsters at the front lines, had appeared.

That was because of Simon’s call.

‘What happened so suddenly?’

Roan looked at the building in the center and tilted his head.

Although he was blocking the monsters well, it wasn’t a situation where he could have some leisure.

Thanks to that, he had left his main force in the front and came with only two companies.

“Have some rest and reorganize your stuff.”

“Yes. Understood”

Roan laid down the order to the troop members and went to



Simon's office.

It was the first visit since he came to report about the final exodus several days ago.

“Mm. You finally came.”

Simon raised his head with a stiff expression.

‘It seems like it's a really serious thing.....’

Roan looked at Simon's expression and took in a deep breath. Originally Simon was roughless and magnanimous. He had never seen an expression like this before.

“I came after receiving your call.”

Roan stood in front of Simon and saluted.  
Simon gave him some papers instead.

“Read it.”

Roan slowly read down the contents on the paper.

“Mm.”

‘Just what.....’

The paper was a kind of letter.

It was sent by Baron Elton Coat, who was in charge of the northern boundary.

‘That Baron Luke Aip and Baron Mito Posis are spies for the 2nd prince.....’

Surprisingly enough, Elton revealed the identities of the spies that Tommy Rinse had planted through the letter.

On top of that, he even added proof that they were working for the 2nd prince.

“What do you think?”

Simon was locking his fingers while lowering his head a bit.

He couldn’t see his expression but it felt rough and heavy, as if his voice would explode at any time.

“I wonder.....”

Roan paused the last words.

It wasn’t because he couldn’t be certain or not about Elton’s words being true.

‘Right two days ago, we grasped the identity of the spies of the 2nd prince through the agency.’

The names of the spies Chris confirmed were Luke Aip and Mito Posis.

It coincided with the contents of Elton's letter.

But there was another problem.

'It's that Baron Elton Coat is a spy working for the 3rd prince.'

The side of the 3rd prince had revealed the identity of the 2nd prince.

Roan thought that this would have some kind of meaning.

'On top of that, we still couldn't find the spy hiding from the 3rd prince's side.'

According to the analysis of the agency, there should be one more.

Because of several reasons like this he couldn't make any decision.

"In my eyes, they seem true."

Simon's voice.

It was still rough and heavy.

Roan placed down the paper and replied.

"Even so, I will have to investigate myself to know."

He showed a careful reaction for now.

One brow of Simon twisted.

“Really? Then, will you go talk to him yourself?”

And then, he shook his right hand.

Ralph Tains, who was at standing at the back, fell back and then appeared with another middle-aged man that had a familiar face.

‘Baron Elton Coat.’

The man with a nervous expression was the one that sent the letter and the one defending the northern villages because of Roan’s orders, Elton.

Simon stood up and made a gesture with his chin.

“Roan. If you have something to ask, do it now. If those results end up being revealed as truth.....”

His eyes got bloodshot.

“I will behead Luke and Mito myself.”

At that moment, a nasty murderous intent was felt.

Roan breathed quickly and slowly blinked.

‘Anyways, Elton Coat is also a spy.’

He was planning to reveal the spies of the 3rd prince through this opportunity.

And to do that, there was a need to protect Luke and Mito for now.

‘There’s nothing more ridiculous than a spy with their identity exposed.’

Roan chewed down his lips and looked at Elton.

“Sir Baron Coat. How did you know that these two people are working for another prince?”

“That.....”

Elton paused for a moment and then started to answer with clear words.

“I realized it after I started to defend the villages in the north with Luke Aip along with you. As we were quite close, I started to see some strange things.”

“Specifically?”

“He started to send letters with Baron Mito Posis, who he didn’t have any relationship with, and people came to find him from outside of the Tale region.”

Half was true and half was a lie.

Luke and Mito had never sent and received letters.

Only, there were some times that people sent by the 2nd prince Tommy, came to find Luke.

The agency and the information squad didn't miss that and it was revealed that Mito Posis was the other noble hidden as a spy after he started to show similar actions.

Roan, who already knew everything, asked back in a calm expression.

“If you see this, here is every letter sent by the 2nd prince and Baron Luke Aip, so how did you get this?”

“While I was patrolling, I discovered a suspicious person and thus, caught him. But this came out of his chest.”

This was a clear truth.

‘Actually, Viscount Jonathan Chase should have sent a separate one.’

Elton put on a smile.

Roan kept asking several things in detail after that.

And every time, Elton answered with confidence and without a hint of hesitation.

Just as if he had already prepared and memorized it.

Then.

Bang!

Simon, who was looking at this from the side, couldn't hold it in anymore and smacked the table.

His face was red.

“Roan. If it's this much, there's no need to listen to it anymore!”

His voice trembled.

He had a look where he was forcefully holding back his rage.

“I will immediately cut down this trash-like bastard!”

A killing intent, like a storm, came rushing in.

‘Fine. Done. Good.’

Elton yelled out in delight.

But it was lacking with this.

‘I will also have to spill this in the side of Aip and Posis.’

If he didn't do so, there was a high possibility for this to get cleaned up easily.

‘It will end when the prince calls them to the HQ and captures them.’

That wasn't what Elton and the 3rd prince Kallum wanted.

'They have to clash swords and fight. Kukuk.'

It was funny just thinking about it.

Then, Roan who was silent, said in a calm voice.

"That's impossible."

At that moment, the cold atmosphere became even colder.

Simon's face contorted with rage.

"What did you say right now?"

"Prince, think of the order of things. Monsters five times the normal amount are pouring out. For now, wait until the subjugation ends."

Roan looked at Simon's eyes fixedly.

'If we get rid of them now, we won't be able to find the spy of the 3rd prince.'

The moment the neck of the 2nd prince's spies were cut off, the other spies would all be able to live.

"If Baron Aip and Baron Posis resist roughly, our entire force will break up. And in the end, we will take a blow by the monsters."



“Mm.”

Simon swallowed in silence with an uncomfortable expression on his face.

He didn't like that he had to wait to get rid of the traitors that served him by his side and not be able to do it immediately.

But Roan's words were true for several things.

‘Even if we do catch Luke and Mito, they can reveal themselves.....’

As he saw that Simon was calming down his rage, Roan nailed down a wedge.

“Four days!”

“.....”

“I will end up the subjugation in exactly four days!”

Roan's expression was calm.

There were now two days remaining in the final exodus.

If he took a day to take care of the remnants and another day to retrieve the battlefield, the subjugation would end.

“Fine. Roan. I will do as you say. Instead...”

Ududuk.

The sound of gritting teeth was heard.

“I won’t kill them that easily.”

Elton, who was looking at that, frowned.

‘Damn! That damned bastard!’

His sight moved over to Roan.

His plans that were about to succeed became foam.

‘Bastards that isn’t helpful at all.....’

When he thought up to that point.

Roan smiled bitterly and looked at Elton.

“Baron Coat, keep checking on the actions of Baron Luke Aip.”

Elton hid his thoughts and nodded.

“I understand. I will check up on him carefully.”

Elton nodded with a resolute expression.

A damnable act.

‘I have to reveal the spy of the 3rd prince as quickly as possible.’

He had to urge the agency and the information squad.

There were only four more days that remained.

‘Then I’m taking care of Luke, Mito, Elton, and the remaining one at the same time.’

Roan’s eyes shone.

Complicated plans were consecutively being raised up in his head.